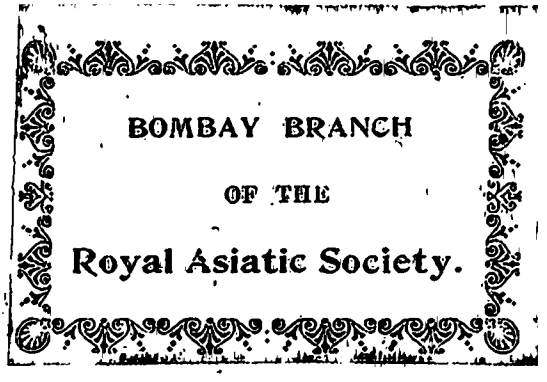
00042847




Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 26 June, 2018

# OBSERVATIONS

ON THE

# Language of Chaucer's Troilus

BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 13, UNTER DEN LINDEN.
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

# PREFACE.

THE following Observations are intended to furnish som materials for the large induction necessary to reasonable certaint in the matter of Chaucer's language, particularly his use of final - Other matters than final *-e* are of course dealt with from time time; but to this in particular the Observations are directed. other words, the study here presented to members of the Cha Society is a study in forms, not in phonology. This study begun in August 1887, and has been frequently interrupted. printing has of necessity extended over an unconscionable l of time. It is hoped that these facts may serve as the excu some trifling inconsistencies of typography, and perhaps ev some slight vacillations in plan and method. For actual b no excuse is offered; but it is hoped that the work may enough that is useful to make scholars indulgent for such as they may observe. Corrections will be gratefully receive

A paper by Professor John M. Manly, of Brown Un extending the method of inquiry here followed to *The L Good Women*, will be found in vol. ii. of the Harvard *Stu Notes in Philology and Literature* (Boston, 1893), pp. 1 relations of Professor Manly's paper to the present s explained in his Introductory Note. Both papers, it observed, are under special obligations to Professor Child' *tions on the Language of Chaucer.*

My acknowledgments are due to Professor E. S. Sh Professor J. M. Manly for a number of valuable sugg Dr. Furnivall, with his usual kindness, has furnished indispensable copies and collations. To Professor Chil suggested the investigation, and has furthered it by his and encouragement throughout, my obligations of every are inm rable.

G. L. K

*Cambrid arch 17th*, 1894.

TO

Professor Francis James Child

IN

GRATITUDE AND AFFECTION

42847

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.


PAGE

INTRODUCTORY NOTE ... ... ... ... xv

COMPARATIVE TABLES OF LINE-NUMBERS .. .. xix

ABBREVIATIONS AND SIGNS ... ... ... ... xxiv

## I. GRAMMATICAL CHAPTER.

### NOUNS.

§§ 1—5. Nouns of the *n*- declension ... ... ... 1—9
§ 2. Masculines ... ... ... ... 1—5
§ 3. Feminines ... ... .. ... 5—8
§ 4. Neuters ... ... .. ... 8
§ 5. *Lady, play, fo, feldefare* ... ... .. 9
§§ 6, 7. Masculine and neuter nouns with A.S. nominative in *-e* or *-u* ... ... ... ... 9—12
§ 6. Ending in *-e* in the *Troilus* ... ... 9—11
§ 7. Exceptions to § 6 ... ... ... 11—12
§ 8. Feminine nouns with A.S. nominative in *-u* ... ... 12—15
§§ 9—11. Monosyllabic feminine nouns with long stem-syllable in A.S. ... ... ... 15—34
§ 9. Ending in *-e* in the *Troilus* ... ... 15—27
§ 10. Nouns in *-ynġ, -ynġe* ... ... ... 27—31
§ 11. Ending in a consonant in the *Troilus* ... 31—34
§ 12. Apocope of A.S. *-n* in nouns ... ... ... 34—35
§ 13. *Hond, honde* ... ... ... ... ... 35—36
§ 14. Masculine and neuter nouns ending in a consonant in A.S. but in *-e* in the *Troilus* (including so-called dative *-e*'s) ... ... ... 36—47
§ 15. Germanic nouns, not A.S., ending in *-e* in the *Troilus* ... 47—51
§ 16. *Cle, se, stre, tre* ... ... ... ... 51
§ 17. *Body, day, iuy, wery* ... ... ... ... 51—52
§ 18. Masculine and neuter A.S. nouns ending in a consonant in the *Troilus* ... ... ... ... 52—63
§ 19. Other Germanic nouns ending in a consonant ... 63—[illegible]

PAGE

§§ 20—31. Romance nouns in *-e* mute ... ... 64—87
§ 21. Miscellaneous nouns : *-e* retained ... ... 64—74
§ 22. Exceptions to § 21 ... ... ... 74—75
§ 23. Nouns in *-aunce* ... ... ... 75—77
§ 24. Nouns in *-ence* ... ... ... ... 77—78
§ 25. I. Abstract nouns in *-esse* ... ... 78—7
II. Feminine *nomina agentis* in *-esse* ... 7
§ 26. Nouns in *-yce, -yse* ... ... ... 79—8
§ 27. Nouns in *-ure* ... ... ... ... 80—8
§ 28. Nouns in *-ère* ... ... ... ... 81—8
§ 29. Nouns in consonant + *re* ... ... 83—8
§ 30. Nouns in *-ye, -ie* ... ... ... 84—8
§ 31. Nouns in *-ye* (unaccented) ... ... 86—8
§ 32. Romance nouns that end in a consonant in French but take *-e* in the *Troilus* ... ... 87—88
§ 33. Nouns ending in Old French in *-é, -ée* ... ... 88—8
§ 34. Romance (and Latin) nouns without final *-e* ... 89—9
I. Nouns in *-er* ... ... ... ... 9
II. Nouns in *-our* ... ... ... ... 90—9
III. Nouns in *-ent, -ment* ... ... ... 91—9
IV. Nouns in *-aunt* ... ... ... ... 9
V. Nouns in *-s* ... ... ... ... 92—9
VI. Nouns ending in a vowel (not *-e*) ... ... 93—9
VII. Miscellaneous ... ... ... ... 94—9
§§ 35—37. Genitive singular of nouns ... ... 97—1
§ 35. Genitive singular in *-es* ... ... ... 97—
§ 36. Genitive identical in form with nominative (*lady, brother*, etc.) ... ... ... 98—
§ 37. Proper names in *-s* ... ... ... 99—100
§§ 38—45. Plural of nouns ... ... ... 100—110
§ 38. Plurals in *-ës, -is, -ys* (after consonants), *-s* (after *-e*) ... ... ... ... 100—10
§ 39. Exceptions to § 38 : words in *-aunt, -ent, -ioun, -en, -on, -an, -r* ; monosyllables in *-e* ... 104—10
§ 40. Plurals in *-en* ... ... ... ... 106—10
§ 41. Plurals in *-en* by imitation ... ... 10
§ 42. Plurals with umlant ... ... ... 10
§ 43. Plural identical with singular ... ... 108—
§ 44. Genitive plural ... ... ... 109—1
§ 45. Dative plural ... ... ... ... 1

## ADJECTIVES.

§§ 46—52. Singular adjectives in the indefinite use ... 110—1
§ 46. A.S. adjectives in *-e, -a* ... ... ... 110—1
§ 47. *Allone, lame* ... ... ... ... 113—1
§ 48. *Lyte, muche* ... ... ... ... 114—1

PAGE

§ 49. A.S. adjectives ending in a consonant that take *-e* in the *Troilus* ... ... ... 115—118
§ 50. Germanic (not A.S.) adjectives that show *-e* in the *Troilus* ... ... ... 119—120
§ 51. Romance adjectives in *-e* ... ... ... 120—121
§ 52. Romance adjectives with *-e* in the *Troilus* but none in French ... ... ... 121—122
§§ 53—54. Monosyllabic singular adjectives in the definite use ... ... ... ... 122—127
§ 53. Taking *-e* ... ... ... ... 122—126
I. Ordinals ... ... ... ... 123
II. Superlatives ... ... ... 123—124
III. Miscellaneous ... ... ... 124—125
IV. Words sometimes showing *-e* in the indefinite use (cf. § 49) ... ... 125—126
V. *owene, owen, owne* ... ... ... 126
§ 54. *-e* dropped ... ... ... ... 126—127
§ 55. Vocative singular of monosyllabic adjectives ... 127—128
§§ 56—62. Adjectives singular of more than one syllable in definite and vocative constructions ... 128—134
§ 56. Rules ... ... ... ... 128—129
§ 57. I. Dissyllabic paroxytones (following word accented on first syllable) ... ... 129—132
§ 58. II. Dissyllabic oxytones (following word accented on second syllable) ... ... 132
§ 59. III. Trisyllabic proparoxytones (following word not accented on second syllable) ... 132—133
§ 60. IV. Trisyllabic proparoxytones (following word accented on second syllable) ... 133
§ 61. V. Trisyllabic paroxytones (following word accented on first syllable) ... ... 133
§ 62. Vocative of adjectives of more than one syllable 133—134
§ 63. French inflection of adjectives ... ... 134—135
§ 64. Comparative degree ... ... ... ... 135—137
(*a*) *-er* (*-ere*) ... ... ... ... 135
(*b*) *lenger* ... ... ... ... ... 135
(*c*) *bettre, bet; lasse, lesse; more, mo, moo; worse, wers* ... ... ... ... ... 135—137
§ 65. Comparative and superlative with *more* and *most* ... 137—138
§ 66. Superlative (*-est*) ... ... ... ... 138
§§ 67—71. Plural of adjectives ... ... ... 138—149
§ 67. Monosyllabic adjectives : plural in *-e* ... 138—149
(*a*) Miscellaneous ... ... ... 138—142
(*b*) *fele, fewe* ... ... ... ... 142
(*c*) Monosyllabic superlatives ... ... 142
(*d*) Cardinal numerals ... ... ... 142—144
§ 68. Monosyllabic perfect participles standing in the predicate ... ... ... ... 144—145

PAGE

§ 69. Monosyllabic adjectives standing in the predicate : *e* sometimes omitted ... ... 145—1
Other exceptions to § 67 ... ... 1
§ 70. Adjectives of more than one syllable (in the interior of the verse) ... ... 146—1
§ 71. Adjectives of more than one syllable at the end of the verse ... ... ... 148—1
§ 72. Adjectives in A.S. *-líc* (*-lic*), O.N. *-ligr* ... 149—1

PRONOUNS.

§ 73. Personal pronouns ... ... ... ... 150—15
§ 74. Possessive pronouns ... ... ... 154—157
§ 75. Reflexive and intensive pronouns ... ... 157—16
§ 76. Demonstrative pronouns ... ... ... 160—16
§ 77. Interrogative pronouns ... ... ... 161
§ 78. Relative pronouns (and pronominal adjectives), and the interrogative (etc.) *which* ... ... 161—16
§ 79. Other pronominal words (*same, som, somwhat, other, ech, euery, euerychon, any, eyther, bothe, men, oon* (*o*), *noom* (*no*), *ought, nought* ... ... 161—16
§§ 80, 81. The adjective *al* ... ... ... 169—17
§ 80. I. Adjective use, singular; *al* ... ..
II. Substantive uses, singular; *al* ... ... 169—1
III. Singular *allë* ... ... ... 170—17
IV. Plural of *al* ... ... .. 171—17
§ 81. The genitive plural of *al* ... ... 17

ADVERBS AND OTHER PARTICLES.

§ 82. Adverbs in A.S. *-e* which preserve their termination ... ... ... ... 175—18
§ 83. Exceptions to § 82 ... ... ... ... 18
§ 84. Adverbs in *-liche, -lich, -ly* ... ... ... 180—1
§ 85. Adverbs without vowel-ending ... ... 187—1
§§ 86, 87. Comparison of adverbs ... ... ... 190—1
§ 86. Comparative degree ... ... ... 190—1
§ 87. Superlative degree ... ... ... 19
§ 88. Miscellaneous particles which sometimes or always have *-e* in the *Troilus* ... ... ... 193—2
§ 89. *Atwixen, -e, bytwyxen, -e, aweye, eke, often, -e, saue; here, there, where* ... ... 201—2
§ 90. *Ever* and *never* ... ... ... ... 206—2
§ 91. Particles in *-es* ... ... ... ... 208—2

## VERBS.


| | PAGE |
|---|---|
| §§ 92—98. Present indicative ... ... ... | 212—231 |
| § 92. First person singular ... ... ... | 212—215 |
| § 93. Second person singular ... ... ... | 216 |
| § 94. Third person singular in *-eth, -eth, -th* ... | 217—220 |
| § 95. Third person singular in *-t* (*abit, halt, stant,* etc.) ... ... ... ... | 220—222 |
| § 96. Plural in *-en, -e* ... ... ... | 222—229 |
| § 97. Plural in *-eth, -th* ... ... ... | 229—230 |
| § 98. Plural in *-es* ... ... ... ... | 230—231 |
| §§ 99—105. Preterite indicative (first and third persons) of weak verbs ... ... ... | 231—252 |
| § 99. First conjugation (Anglo-Saxon) ... ... | 231—240 |
| § 100. First conjugation (Old Norse, etc.) ... | 240—242 |
| § 101. Second conjugation (Anglo-Saxon and other Germanic languages) ... ... | 242—246 |
| § 102. Third conjugation (Anglo-Saxon) ... ... | 246—248 |
| § 103. Verbs strong in Anglo-Saxon ... ... | 248—250 |
| § 104. Romance verbs with syncopated preterites (*aspyde, caughte*, etc.) ... ... | 250—251 |
| § 105. Romance verbs with unsyncopated preterites | 251—252 |
| § 106. Preterite indicative, second person singular, of weak formations ... ... ... ... | 252—253 |
| § 107. Preterite indicative, second person singular, of strong verbs ... ... ... ... ... | 253—254 |
| § 108. Preterite indicative (first and third persons) singular of strong verbs ... ... ... | 254 |
| § 109. Preterite indicative plural of strong and of weak verbs ... ... ... ... ... | 255—260 |
| §§ 110, 111. Present subjunctive singular of strong and of weak verbs ... ... ... | 260—266 |
| § 110. Ending in *-e* ... ... ... ... | 260—265 |
| § 111. Exceptions to § 110 ... ... ... ... | 265—266 |
| § 112. Present subjunctive plural of strong and of weak verbs ... ... ... ... | 266—268 |
| 113. Preterite subjunctive singular ... ... ... | 268—272 |
| I. Strong verbs ... ... ... ... | 268—270 |
| II. Weak verbs ... ... ... ... | 270—272 |
| § 114. Preterite subjunctive plural of strong and of weak verbs ... ... ... ... ... | 272—273 |
| §§ 115—117. Imperative second person singular ... | 273—280 |
| § 115. Weak verbs (Germanic) ... ... | 273—276 |
| § 116. Latin and Romance verbs ... ... | 276—277 |
| § 117. Strong verbs ... ... ... ... | 277—280 |

PAGE

§ 118. Imperative second person plural of strong and of weak verbs ... ... ... ... 280—286
§ 119. Infinitive ... ... ... ... ... 286—301
§ 120. Present participle ... ... ... ... 301—303
§ 121. Perfect participle of weak verbs ... ... 303—311
§ 122. Perfect participle of strong verbs ... ... 311—317
§ 123. Præterito-present verbs ... ... ... 317—331
I. *wot* ... ... ... ... ... 317—319
II. *not* ... ... ... ... ... 319—320
III. *oughte* ... ... ... ... ... 320—321
IV. *kan* ... ... ... ... ... 321—323
V. *dar* ... ... ... ... ... 323—324
VI. *thar* ... ... ... ... ... 324
VII. *shal* ... ... ... ... ... 324—326
VIII. *may* ... ... .. ... ... 326—329
IX. *mot* ... ... ... ... ... 329—331
§ 124. Other irregular verbs ... ... ... 331—345
I. *to be* ... ... ... ... ... 331—334
II. *will* ... ... ... ... ... 335—338
III. *nyl* ... ... ... ... ... 339—340
IV. *do* ... ... ... ... ... 340—341
V. *go* ... ... ... ... ... 341—343
VI. *haue* ... ... ... ... ... 343—345

## II. METRICAL CHAPTER.

§ 125. Elision of weak *-e* ... ... ... ... 345—347
§ 126. Hiatus (exceptions to § 125) ... ... ... 347—352
§ 127. Elision before strong *h* ... ... ... 352—353
§ 128. Elision of weak *-e* in monosyllables (*thĕ*, *nĕ*) ... 353—355
§ 129. Elision of close *-e* (*me*, *we*, etc.) ... ... 355—359
§ 130. Elision (or slurring) of *-o* and *-a* ... ... 359—361
§ 131. Slurring of *-y* (*-ye*) ... ... ... ... 362—363
§ 132. Weak *e* in two successive syllables (syncope or apocope) ... ... ... ... 364—365
§ 133. Apocope or syncope of weak *e* after an unaccented syllable which is capable of bearing an accent 365—366
§ 134. Apocope of weak *-e* after a syllable bearing a secondary accent ... ... ... 366
§ 135. Apocope of weak *-e* immediately after the syllable bearing the main accent ... ... ... 366—372
§ 136. Syncope or slurring of *e* in final syllables when the noun-accent falls on the syllable immediately preceding ... ... ... ... 372—373
(*a*) *-es* ... ... ... ... ... 373
(*b*) *-est* ... ... ... ... ... 372—373

PAGE

(c) *-eth* ... ... ... ... ... 373
(d) *-de, -te, -ede, -ed* ... ... ... 373—374
(e) *-en* ... ... ... ... ... 374—375
(f) *-er, -ere, -re* ... ... ... ... 375—377
(g) *-el, -le* ... ... ... ... 377
(h) *-em* (*-me*) ... ... ... ... 377
137. Interior weak *-e-* ... ... ... ... 377—378
138. Other instances of syncope ... ... ... 378—381
1-5. Vowels (not weak *e*) ... ... ... 378—380
6. *whether, wher; other, or* ... ... ... 380—381
7. *euere, neuere* ... ... ... ... 381
8. *benedicite* ... ... ... ... ... 381
9. *comprehende* ... ... ... ... 381
0. *desespeir, despeir*, etc. ... ... ... 381
Apocope of consonants ... ... ... 381—384
1. *-n* in verb-forms ... ... ... ... 381—382
1. *-eth* in imperative ... ... ... ... 382
1. *-s* in proper names ... ... ... ... 382—384
Synæresis ... ... ... ... ... 384
141. Diæresis ... ... ... ... ... 384
142. Synizesis ... ... ... ... ... 384—387
143. Miscellaneous slurs and contractions ... ... 387—389
144-145. The "extra syllable" before the cæsura ... 389—405
§ 144. I. Cases of *-e* ... ... ... ... 389—398
II. Cases of unaccented terminations ending in a consonant ... ... ... ... 398—400
§ 145. Certain final syllables before the cæsura ... 401—405
I. Consonant + *-le, -me, -ne, -re* ... ... 402
II. *-ene, -ere* ... ... ... ... 403
III. *-el, -en, -er* ... ... ... ... 403—404
IV. *-we*, etc. ... ... ... ... 404
V. *-y, -ye* ... ... ... ... 404—405
146. "Nine-syllable" verses ... ... ... 405—421

DITIONS AND CORRECTIONS ... ... ... 422—426

# INTRODUCTORY NOTE.

The following Observations on the Language of Chaucer's *Troilus* are based on four MSS. A (Campsall), B (Harl. 2280), C (Camb. Gg. 4. 27) and D (Harl. 3943), as edited by Dr. Furnivall for the Chaucer Society.[1] When there is no indication to the contrary, the forms quoted rest on a consensus of these four MSS. in the verse referred to. Indications to the contrary are of several kinds: (*a*) an express note, either at the foot of the page or in parentheses immediately after the verse-number; (*b*) a general note as to disregard of variants; (*c*) the abbreviation "cf.", which signifies that in the references that follow variants are mostly or entirely neglected; (*d*) a list of variant spellings (marked "Var.").[2] Also some word not immediately under discussion has to be emended in order that the line referred to may afford the form registered, the necessary emendation is indicated in a foot-note or elsewhere.[3] In case a reference falls within a gap or omission of a stanza or more in B, C, or D, the gap is not noted. The following is a list of gaps in B, C, D.

In B one leaf containing (vv. 7708—91) is missing; 5370—6 not found.

In C the following passages of a stanza or more in length are wanting: 70 (*cut out*), 1037—1169 (cut out), 2843—98 (cut out), 4649—4774 (cut out), 5468—95 (omitted), 5615—5740 (omitted), 6329—98 (cut out), 7076—82 (omitted; two stanzas run together), 8065—*end* (cut out). The following single lines are omitted in C; 86 (no gap in MS.), 1701, 2 (no gap), 2707 (blank line in MS.), 3799 (blank line), 5752 (blank line), 6550 (no gap), 6557 (blank line), 7244 (no gap), 7285 (blank line after 7286).

For 890 D has a stanza not in ABC.

[1] B, and C in *A Parallel-Text Print of Chaucer's Troilus and Criseyde* (1881-2); in *Chaucer's Troylus and Cryseyde (from the Harl. MS.* 3943) *compared with Boccaccio's Filostrato translated by* Wm. Michael Rossetti (1873—83).

[2] E.g., for example, *wrecche* (p. 5, l. 3), note at the end of article *sonne* (p. 7), *tonge* (p. 8, l. ult.), *lady*, (p. 9), *wyte* (p. 11).

[3] E.g. foot-note 1, p. 33, indicates that in 3074 C has *wyst was woyd*, but that, as the last word has been changed to *woydel*, the line affords evidence for the form *woyd*. It will be seen that this is in effect but a means of registering corruptions easily emended.

In D the following passages of a stanza or more in length are wa
ing: 484—490, 4131—4270 (two leaves gone), 4586—4613 (omitte
8170—90 (omitted). The following single lines are omitted in D: 1
1594 (blank line). Vv. 1—70, 498—567, 4859—end, are in a late ha

Other MSS. than ABCD have been used for purposes of comparis
Those used most were Cp. (Corpus 61) and John's, a collation of
of which by Mr. Thomas Austin was furnished me by the kindne
Dr. Furnivall, and G (Additional MS. 12044), of which Dr. Furn
lent me a copy. Harleian 1239 (E), 2392, 4912, of which I have
specimens and partial collations, and Durham II. 13, Digby 281, Se
B, 24, Phillipps 8252, of which I have had specimens, have
compared occasionally. For all these collations and specimens I
indebted to Dr. Furnivall.

Rhyme-words are given in the form in which they occur in A, with
variants. Exceptions to this practice are signified when they occur.

In citing words from Anglo-Saxon and Middle English in illustrat
of words or forms from the *Troilus*, no attempt has been mad
anything more than a brief and handy reference, and no implicati
intended as to the particular dialect of Anglo-Saxon or Middle En
of which Chaucer's word is the descendant or representative. In
references *L.* means the *A-text of Lazamon*, and does not neces
imply that the *B-text* has the same form.

In marking elision, apocope, and syncope in the Grammatical Cha
it has been assumed that ten syllables (or eleven, when the rhy
feminine) are the normal number, and elision, syncope, etc., have
taken for granted when the preservation of a final or an interior *e* w
make a trisyllabic foot or an "extra syllable before a pause." Thi
merely for conciseness. There is no intention of maintaining
Chaucer never used a trisyllabic foot or that different slurs do not d
in the degree in which a sound is suppressed or modified. Special sec
(§§ 144—5) in the Metrical Chapter deals with the so-called "
syllable before the cæsura." This renders the marking of the c
in the grammatical part unnecessary; yet the sign ‖ has often been
to a form when occasion seemed to require.

In registering forms, the following signs, etc., are made use
indicate the presence or absence of the final *e* in writing or in sound
-e (Roman, without a diacritic sign) indicates a final -e pronou
before a consonant (not *h*) or -e in rhyme.[1] In the latter case

[1] This statement applies, of course, to -e in the word immediately under d
in any instance. If a fragment of context is quoted, I have not always t
superfluous trouble to mark what happens to all the -e's.

ttached to the verse number. In a considerable number of cases a faulty nal *e* in rhyme is registered without remark if the rhyme-word makes it ar that the -e is not pronounced.

-ë indicates a final *e* pronounced either (1) before a vowel or *h* (in ich case the fact that a vowel or *h* follows is always made clear), or (2) ore a consonant (in which case -ë is used merely for emphasis or out caution). In the interior of a word the diæresis indicates that the vel over which it is placed is pronounced.

-*e* (Italic) indicates a final *e* written but elided before a vowel or *h* (the rmer unless the contrary is indicated). Hiatus is always carefully and mistakably marked.

-e̥ indicates a final *e* written but not sounded before a consonant (not *h*). When not final, e̥ indicates syncopated *e* (and so of other vowels).

-(e) indicates an erroneous final *e* written but not pronounced. When ecessary this is distinguished as -(*e*),—*i. e.* before a word beginning with vowel or *h*,—and -(e̥),—before a word beginning with a consonant ot *h*); but this distinction is usually superfluous.

-[e] indicates that the metre requires an -e (pronounced) at the end of word which is written without -e in the MS.

-[*e*] indicates that a grammatically justifiable -e is elided before a vel or *h*, and is actually not written. This sign is seldom used.

[e̥] indicates that a grammatically justifiable -e is not pronounced ore a consonant (not *h*) and is actually not written. This sign is ldom used.

When the fact that a word ends in a consonant or any vowel but -e nders it impossible to indicate by any of the signs just explained ether the word that follows begins with a vowel or a consonant, the cessary information is given either in plain terms or by means of the s (i.) and (ii.). (i.) indicates that the forms that follow occur before nsonant (not *h*); (ii.) indicates that they occur before a vowel or *h* former, unless the contrary is mentioned). When neither of these is used, the forms that follow occur before consonants (not *h*) or yme (indicated by *f*) in the places cited. (i.) (ii.) indicates that no action as to following vowel or consonant is made in registering the . These conventions are used especially in the case of nouns and ves that properly or regularly end in a consonant (see §§ 11, 4, 49), and of adverbs without -e (see §§ 85, 86, 88, 91): see . In the case of forms as to which there is no possible interest ing whether a vowel or a consonant follows, no such signs are e §§ 35—42, 44, 93, 91, etc.).

The relations of the *Troilus* MSS. are complicated. In general th MSS. seem to fall into two groups, the first represented by ABCpG, t second by CEJ. $D_1$ (the old hand of D)[1] is closely related to C, $D_2$ (t late hand of D) has much in common with group i., but shows also so relation to C. Phillipps is closely related to $D_1$. H has close relati with both $D_1$ Ph. and $D_2$. There is excellent evidence for contaminat in the case of H, and, in general, it must be said that no genealogy the MSS. of group ii. can be made out that is free from difficulties. have made many notes on the relations of the MSS., and have e constructed a scheme which seems to satisfy most of the phenomen but the material in my possession, though considerable, is not sufficie to warrant definite conclusions. I hope to return to the subject late when opportunity for a complete collation of the MSS. concerned shal offer.

Of the MSS. of group i., Corpus is the best, though it makes som serious omissions. B is often better than A, but the grammatical form of A usually deserve the preference. Of group ii., J seems to be t best. C is copied from a bad MS., and is full of errors and corrections. $D_1$ and Phillipps have an extraordinary number of c ruptions, and were evidently written by scribes who had no feeling Chaucer's verse. Harl. 2392 is a poor MS. and E is apparently indifferent. Selden, Durham, and Digby are all poor, and Harl. 4 is far from good.

[1] There are three hands in D : a late hand (1—70, 498—567, 4859—end), and t earlier hands (one writing 3921—4480, the other writing the rest).

# COMPARATIVE TABLE OF LINE-NUMBERS IN THE *TROILUS*.

REFERENCES are made by *verses*, and for this purpose the lines have been nbered throughout the poem from 1 to 8232 without regard to the ision into books. The following table exhibits, in parallel columns, numbering here used and the corresponding book, stanza, and verse nbers in Furnivall (Campsall MS.)[1] and Morris (Aldine ed.).

—1085 = book i. The numbering used in the *Observations* follows rnivall's numbering (Campsall MS.) exactly. Morris inserts a stanza t found in A) after st. 127 (*i. e.* after v. 889). Hence, beginning ith v. 890, one must add 7 to Furnivall's verse-numbers (beginning ith st. 128, 1 to his stanza-numbers) to reduce them to Morris's umbering.

| | FURNIVALL. | | | | MORRIS. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Book | Stanza | Verse of Stanza | Verse | Agrees with Furnivall throughout this book. |
| 086 ... | II, | 1, | 1 | II, 1 | |
| 00 ... | | 3, | 1 | 15 | |
| 50 ... | | 10, | 2 | 65 | |
| 00 ... | | 17, | 3 | 115 | |
| 50 ... | | 24, | 4 | 165 | |
| 00 ... | | 31, | 5 | 215 | |
| 50 ... | | 38, | 6 | 265 | |
| 00 ... | | 45, | 7 | 315 | |
| 50 ... | | 53, | 1 | 365 | |
| ... | | 60, | 2 | 415 | |
| ... | | 67, | 3 | 465 | |
| ... | | 74, | 4 | 515 | |
| ... | | 81, | 5 | 565 | |
| ... | | 88, | 6 | 615 | |
| 0 ... | | 95, | 7 | 665 | |
| ... | | 103, | 1 | 715 | |
| ... | | 110, | 2 | 765 | |
| ... | | 117, | 3 | 815 | |
| ... | | 124, | 4 | 865 | |
| ... | | 131, | 5 | 915 | |
| ... | | 138, | 6 | 965 | |
| 0 ... | | 145, | 7 | 1015 | |
| 50 ... | | 153, | 1 | 1065 | |
| 00 ... | | 160, | 2 | 1115 | |
| 50 ... | | 167, | 3 | 1165 | |
| 00 ... | | 174, | 4 | 1215 | |
| 50 ... | | 181, | 5 | 1265 | |
| 0 ... | | 188, | 6 | 1315 | |
| ... | | 195, | 7 | 1365 | |
| ... | | 203, | 1 | 1415 | |
| ... | | 210, | 2 | 1465 | |
| ... | | 217, | 3 | 1515 | |
| ... | | 224, | 4 | 1565 | |
| ... | | 231, | 5 | 1615 | |
| ... | | 238, | 6 | 1665 | |
| ... | | 245, | 7 | 1715 | |
| ... | | 251, | 7 | 1757 | |

Bk. iv, st. 102 [= iv. 98, vv. 680—686 in Morris], though not in AB, is included rnivall in his numbering, and accordingly in the numbering adopted for these vations (vv. 5370—76).

| | Furnivall. | | | | Morris. | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Book | Stanza | Verse of Stanza | Verse | | Book | Stanza | Verse of Stanza |
| 2843 ... | III, | 1, | 1 | III, 1 | Proem | to III, | 1, | 1 Proem |
| 2891 ... | | 7, | 7 | 49 | | | 7, | 7 |
| 2892 ... | | 8, | 1 | 50 | | | 1, | 1 III, |
| 2900 ... | | 9, | 2 | 58 | | | 2, | 2 |
| 2950 ... | | 16, | 3 | 108 | | | 9, | 3 |
| **3000** ... | | 23, | 4 | 158 | | | 16, | 4 |
| 3050 ... | | 30, | 5 | 208 | | | 23, | 5 |
| 3100 ... | | 37, | 6 | 258 | | | 30, | 6 |
| 3150 .. | | 41, | 7 | 308 | | | 37, | 7 |
| 3200 ... | | 52, | 1 | 358 | | | 45, | 1 |
| 3250 ... | | 59, | 2 | 408 | | | 52, | 2 |
| 3300 ... | | 66, | 3 | 458 | | | 59, | 3 |
| 3350 ... | | 73, | 4 | 508 | | | 66, | 4 |
| 3400 ... | | 80, | 5 | 558 | | | 73, | 5 |
| 3450 ... | | 87, | 6 | 608 | | | 80, | 6 |
| 3500 ... | | 94, | 7 | 658 | | | 87, | 7 |
| 3550 ... | | 102, | 1 | 708 | | | 95, | 1 |
| 3600 ... | | 109, | 2 | 758 | | | 102, | 2 |
| 3650 ... | | 116, | 3 | 808 | | | 109, | 3 |
| 3700 ... | | 123, | 4 | 858 | | | 116, | 4 |
| 3750 ... | | 130 | 5 | 908 | | | 123, | 5 |
| 3800 .. | | 137, | 6 | 958 | | | 130, | 6 |
| 3850 ... | | 144, | 7 | 1008 | | | 137, | 7 |
| 3900 ... | | 152, | 1 | 1058 | | | 145, | 1 |
| 3950 ... | | 159, | 2 | 1108 | | | 152, | 2 |
| **4000** ... | | 166, | 3 | 1158 | | | 159, | 3 |
| 4050 ... | | 173, | 4 | 1208 | | | 166, | 4 |
| 4100 ... | | 180, | 5 | 1258 | | | 173, | 5 |
| 4150 ... | | 187, | 6 | 1308 | | | 180, | 6 |
| 4200 .. | | 194, | 7 | 1358 | | | 187, | 7 |
| 4250 ... | | 202, | 1 | 1408 | | | 195, | 1 |
| 4300 ... | | 209, | 2 | 1458 | | | 202, | 2 |
| 4350 ... | | 216, | 3 | 1508 | | | 209, | 3 |
| 4400 ... | | 223, | 4 | 1558 | | | 216, | 4 |
| 4450 .. | | 230, | 5 | 1608 | | | 223, | 5 |
| 4500 ... | | 237, | 6 | 1658 | | | 230, | 6 |
| 4550 ... | | 244, | 7 | 1708 | | | 237, | 7 |
| 4600 ... | | 252, | 1 | 1758 | | | 245, | 1 |
| 4650 ... | | 259, | 2 | 1808 | | | 252, | 2 |
| 4662 ... | | 260, | 7 | 1820 | | | 253, | 7 |
| 4663 ... | IV, | 1, | 1 | IV, 1 | | | 254, | 1 |
| 4690 ... | | 4, | 7 | 28 | | | 257, | 7 |
| 4691 ... | | 5, | 1 | 29 | | IV, | 1, | 1 IV, |
| 4700 ... | | 6, | 3 | 38 | | | 2, | 3 |
| 4750 ... | | 13, | 4 | 88 | | | 9, | 4 |
| 4800 ... | | 20, | 5 | 138 | | | 16, | 5 |
| 4850 ... | | 27, | 6 | 188 | | | 23, | 6 |
| 4900 ... | | 34, | 7 | 238 | | | 30, | 7 |
| 4950 ... | | 42, | 1 | 288 | | | 38, | 1 |
| **5000** ... | | 49, | 2 | 338 | | | 45, | 2 |
| 5050 .. | | 56, | 3 | 388 | | | 52, | 3 |
| 5100 ... | | 63, | 4 | 438 | | | 59, | 4 |
| 5150 ... | | 70, | 5 | 488 | | | 66, | 5 |
| 5200 ... | | 77, | 6 | 538 | | | 73, | 6 |

[1] Marked 1460 in Morris, but the error is not continued. Morris's 1470 is again.

| Furnivall. | | | | Morris. | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Book | Stanza | Verse of Stanza | Verse | Book | Stanza | Verse of Stanza | Verse |
| IV, | 84, | 7 | IV, 588 | IV, | 80, | 7 | IV, 560 |
| | 92, | 1 | 638 | | 88, | 1 | 610 |
| | 99, | 2 | 688 | | 95, | 2 | 660 |
| | 106, | 3 | 738 | | 102, | 3 | 710 |
| | 113, | 4 | 788 | | 109, | 4 | 760 |
| | 120, | 5 | 838 | | 116, | 5 | 810 |
| | 127, | 6 | 888 | | 123, | 6 | 860 |
| | 134, | 7 | 938 | | 130, | 7 | 910 |
| | 142, | 1 | 988 | | 138, | 1 | 960 |
| | 149, | 2 | 1038 | | 145, | 2 | 1010 |
| | 156, | 3 | 1088 | | 152, | 3 | 1060 |
| | 163, | 4 | 1138 | | 159, | 4 | 1110 |
| | 170, | 5 | 1188 | | 166, | 5 | 1160 |
| | 177, | 6 | 1238 | | 173, | 6 | 1210 |
| | 184, | 7 | 1288 | | 180, | 7 | 1260 |
| | 192, | 1 | 1338 | | 188, | 1 | 1310 |
| | 199, | 2 | 1388 | | 195, | 2 | 1360 |
| | 206, | 3 | 1438 | | 202, | 3 | 1410 |
| | 213, | 4 | 1488 | | 209, | 4 | 1460 |
| | 220, | 5 | 1538 | | 216, | 5 | 1510 |
| | 227, | 6 | 1588 | | 223, | 6 | 1560 |
| | 234, | 7 | 1638 | | 230, | 7 | 1610 |
| | 242, | 1 | 1688 | | 238, | 1 | 1660 |
| | 243, | 7 | 1701 | | 239, | 7 | 1673 |
| V, | 1, | 1 | V, 1 | V, | 1, | 1 | V, 1 |
| | 6, | 2 | 37 | | 6, | 2 | 37 |
| | 13, | 3 | 87 | | 13, | 3 | 87 |
| | 20, | 4 | 137 | | 20, | 4 | 137 |
| | 27, | 5 | 187 | | 27, | 5 | 187 |
| | 34, | 6 | 237 | | 34, | 6 | 237 |
| | 41, | 7 | 287 | | 41, | 7 | 287 |
| | 49, | 1 | 337 | | 49, | 1 | 337 |
| | 56, | 2 | 387 | | 56, | 2 | 387 |
| | 63, | 3 | 437 | | 63, | 3 | 437 |
| | 70, | 4 | 487 | | 70, | 4 | 487 |
| | 77, | 5 | 537 | | 77, | 5 | 537 |
| | 84, | 6 | 587 | | 84, | 6 | 587 |
| | 91, | 7 | 637 | | 91, | 7 | 637 |
| | 99, | 1 | 687 | | 99, | 1 | 687 |
| | 106, | 2 | 737 | | 106, | 2 | 737 |
| | 113, | 3 | 787 | | 113, | 3 | 787 |
| | 120, | 4 | 837 | | 120, | 4 | 837 |
| | 127, | 5 | 887 | | 127, | 5 | 887 |
| | 134, | 6 | 937 | | 134, | 6 | 937 |
| | 141, | 7 | 987 | | 141, | 7 | 987 |
| | 149, | 1 | 1037 | | 149, | 1 | 1037 |
| | 156, | 2 | 1087 | | 156, | 2 | 1087 |
| | 163, | 3 | 1137 | | 163, | 3 | 1137 |
| | 170, | 4 | 1187 | | 170, | 4 | 1187 |
| | 177, | 5 | 1237 | | 177, | 5 | 1237 |
| | 184, | 6 | 1287 | | 184, | 6 | 1287 |
| | 191, | 7 | 1337 | | 191, | 7 | 1337 |
| | 199, | 1 | 1387 | | 199, | 1 | 1387 |
| | 206, | 2 | 1437 | | 206, | 2 | [1]1438 |
| | 213, | 3 | 1487 | | 213, | 3 | 1488 |
| | 214, | 7 | 1498 | | 214, | 7 | 1499 |

[1] counts the signature *La vostre T.* as v. 1422; hence the verse-numbers by one, as indicated.

| | | | | | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Latin Thebaid argument following v. 7861 is not counted. | | | not counted. | | Here Morris inserts the Latin Thebaid argument as st. 215, vv. 1500—1511. | | |
| 7862 | ... | V, | 215, | 1 | V, 1499 | V, | 216, | 1 | V, |
| 7900 | ... | | 220, | 4 | 1537 | | 221, | 4 | |
| 7950 | ... | | 227, | 5 | 1587 | | 228, | 5 | |
| 8000 | ... | | 234, | 6 | 1637 | | 235, | 6 | |
| 8050 | ... | | 241, | 7 | 1687 | | 242, | 7 | |
| 8100 | ... | | 249, | 1 | 1737 | | 250, | 1 | |
| 8150 | ... | | 256, | 2 | 1787 | | 257, | 2 | |
| 8200 | ... | | 263, | 3 | 1837 | | 264, | 3 | |
| 8232 | ... | | 267, | 7 | 1869 | | 268, | 7 | |

[1] Morris counts the signature *La vostre C.* after v. 7994 (his v. 1644) as v. 1; hence his verse-numbers after 1644 increase by one.

---

[Professor Skeat's edition of the *Troilus* did not appear until this had been sent to the printers. His numbering corresponds with Morris's for Book I., and with Dr. Furnivall's for the other books.]

# ABBREVIATIONS AND SIGNS.

## *The Manuscripts.*

*A* : Campsall MS.
*B* : Harleian MS. 2280.
*C* : Cambridge University Library MS. Gg. 4. 27.
*Cp.* : Corpus MS., Cambridge, 61.
*D* : Harleian MS. 3943.
*Digby* : Digby MS. 281, Bodleian Library.
*Durh.* : Durham MS. II. 13.
*E* : Harleian MS. 1239.
*G* : Additional MS. 12,044, British Museum.
*Hl.* (*Harl.*) 2392 : Harleian MS. 2392.
*Hl.* (*Harl.*) 4912 : Harleian MS. 4912.
*John's* : St. John's MS., Cambridge.
*Phillipps* : Phillipps MS. 8252.
*Selden* : Selden MS. B. 24, Bodleian Library.

## *Miscellaneous.*

c (after the abbreviation for a MS. : as, $C^c$, $D^c$) : by the corrector.
*def. adj.* : adjective in the definite construction.
*-e*, *-o*, *-(e)*, etc. : see explanation, pp. xvi, xvii, above.
*f* (*as in* 1643 *f*) : in rhyme.
*L.* : Layamon (A text). $L^b$. : Layamon (B-text).
*n.* : neuter *in the etymological notes; elsewhere usually* nominative.
*O.* : Ormulum.
*P. Pl.* : Piers Plowman.
*rh.* : rhymes with (*but a colon is usually employed*).
*Var.* : variant spellings.
9-*syl.* : a nine-syllable verse (*i. e.* a verse lacking the unaccented part of the foot).
(i.), (ii.), (iii.) : see explanation, p. xvii, above.
' indicates the ictus.
‖ indicates cæsura.
: indicates *rhymes with*.
† indicates a word or a verse certainly wrong, either in sense or metre.
‡ indicates a word or a verse that may be scanned and makes sense but is shown by comparison of MSS. to be wrong.
A dot under a vowel indicates that it is suppressed in pronunciation by s or apocope.
[ ] indicates that something which is omitted in the MS. should be supplie
( ) indicates that something which is written in the MS. should be omitte
A slur or ellipsis different from the ordinary ellipsis of final weak *e* is often i by italicizing the final vowel of the first word and the initial vowel of the Thus,—lad*y* *e*nto (p. 9), pit*e* *o*n (p. 89), stor*ye* *i*t (p. 87).

# OBSERVATIONS ON THE LANGUAGE OF

# Chaucer's Troilus.

A = Campsall MS. B = Harl. 2280. C = Camb. Gg. 4.27.
D = Harl. 3943. E = Harl. 1239. G = Addit. MS. 12044.
Cp. = Corpus 61.

§ 1. Masculine, feminine, and neuter nouns of the *n*-declension in Anglo-Saxon end in the *Troilus* in *-e*.

§ 2. I. Masculine nouns of the *n*- declension (Child, § 3).

ape (A.S. apa), 2127 f (: iape *n.*).

asse (A.S. assa, O. asse), 731 (*-e* D).

bane (A.S. bona, bana, L. bone, L$^{b}$. bane), 1405 (-ë ‡ it C), 4995, 5436, 5569, 6965 f (ban C) (: the blood Thebàne, -bàn C).

bere, beere (A.S. bera), 6115 f (: stere *inf.* : ledère); *-e*, 4622 (-ë ‡ or D).

byleeue (A.S. ge-léafa, L. i-læfe, O. læfe), 6956 f (beleue BCD) (: greue *inf.* : leeue *adj. pl.*).

bowe (A.S. boga, L. boȝe, bowe), 208 (-[e] B, bow ‡ D), 1946 f (bow D) (: knowe *ind.* 3 *pl.*), 2620.

crede (A.S. créda), 6452 f (: Diomede : hede *n. head*).

drope (A.S. dropa, L. drope), 934 f (: hope *ind.* 1 *sg.*); *-e*, 23.

dryuke (A.S. drinca; but also drinc, *m.*, i-stem; L. $^{a\,b}$ drench, $^{a}$ drinc; $^{b}$ drinke, O. drinne, drinnch, drinnke), 1736 f (: synke *inf.*); -[e], 5437 (-e D); drynk and, 4057 (*-e* BD). [Cf. drynk[e]lees, § 49, n. 5.]

fere, feere (A.S. ge-féra, L. i-fere, O. fere), 13 f, 4133 f ‡ B, 4338 f, 5453 f (fer D).

Rhyme words.—cheere (13), dere *adj.* (4133 B, 4338), spere *sphæra* (4338), y-fere (5453).

galle (A.S. gealla, galla, O. galle), 5799 f (gall D) (: falle *inf.*); *-e* ys, 7095 f (galles = gall is D) (: halles : wallys).

grame (A.S. grama, L. grame), 372 f (gaine † C, game † D) (: shame), 3870 f (: name), 5191 f (game † D) (: blame *inf.* : shame).

hawe (A.S. haga), 3696 f (haue C) (: i-drawe *p.p.*).

hele (A.S. héla), 5390 f (heele B) (: fele *inf.*).

hope (A.S. hopa, L.O. hope), *-e*, 391 (*-e* he), 1895, 2392, 2408, 2414, 2418 (hoop D), 2425, 3257, 3268, 5240, 6092 (hope † B, hoope D), 6993, 7048, 7276, 7558, 7561, 7570, 7761 (loue ‡ C), 7763, 7801 (hoope D).—hope ‖ the, 1092; *-e* halt, 6711. [hope †, 2357 D.]

hosbònde (A.S. húsbónda, L. husbonde, L$^{b}$. hosebonde, P. Pl. hosebonde), 1839 (housebonde B, husbonde C, husbon[d][e] ? D).—hoùsbonde was, 7893 (hosbande C, husbonde D). [Cf. bonde, *adj.*, § 67, n. 2.]

knaue (A.S. cnafa, cnapa, L. cnaue, O. cnape-child), 3233 AC (sclaue B, own[e] D, felawë G).

knotte (A.S. cnotta), *-e*, 4574 B (knot ACD).

lappe (A.S. læppa, L$^{b}$. lappe (= L$^{a}$. bærm), P. Pl. lappe), 1533 (lape D), 2901 f (lape C) (: quappe *inf.*), 3584 f (: t[h]appe *n.*).

mone, moone (A.S. móna, L.O. mone), 524 f, 1017 f, 1159 f, 2005, 2397 f, 3391 f, 3466, 6638 f, 6740 f, 7011, 7012; *-e* hath, 4598; *-e* o, 7552.

Rhyme words.—to done (1017, 1159, 3391, 6638, 6740), soone (524, 1159, 2397, 6638), bone *boon* (1017).

name (A.S. noma, nama, L. nome, name, O. name), 251 f, 542 (Crisseide ‡ D), 870, 876, 880 CD, 895 f, 1069 † D, 1847 f, 3108 f, 3109 CD, 3160 f, 3871 f, 5226 f, 6129 f, 6228 f, 6243; *-e*, 99, 878, 880 AB, 3109 AB, 5819, 7418 (I mene † C), 7458, 8049.

Rhyme words.—shame (251, 895, 1847, 6129, 6228), blame *n.* (3108), to blame (3160), grame (3871), game (5226, 6129, 6228), defame *inf.* (5226).

nekke (A.S. hnecca, L. necke), 2071 (nek ‡ D), 5767; *-e*, 4417 (nek D).

oxe (A.S. oxa, O. oxe), *-e*, 7832 (ox B).

shawe (A.S. scaga), 3562 f (schawe C, sawe † D) (: slawe *p.p.*).

skathe (O.N. skaði, cf. A.S. sceaða, scaða, L. scaðe, O. skape-læss), 4869 f (schathe C) (: rathe *adv.* : bathe *inf.*), 7301 f (: rathe *adv.*).

stede, steede (A.S. stéda, stéda, L. stede), 1066, 1709 f (: blede *inf.*), 6669 f (sted D) (: to glede *n.* : hede *n. heed*), 7403 f (: nede *n.* : Diomede). [stedë † ire, 4545 C.]

stere (A.S. stéora *gubernator*, stéor *gubernaculum*), 4133 f (fere ‡ B) (: dere); *-e*, 7004 (-ee- B, ster(id) C, ster D). [Cf. ster[e]les, § 49, n. 5.]

Note.—In 4133 *stere* = pilot; in 7004 *in stere* = astern.

sterre (A.S. steorra, L. steorre, sterre, O. sterrne), 175 f (: derre *comp.*); *-e*, 7001.—lodë-sterre, 6595 f (lodis s. C, lode-sterr D) (: werre *n.*), 7755 f (loode sterr D) (: werre *n.*).

tene, teene (A.S. téona, L. teone, O. tene), 814 f, 1146 f, 4068 f, 5458 f (teen B), 6267 f, 6603 f, 8077 f.

Rhyme words.—grene (814, 1146, 6603), queene (814), kene *adj. pl.* (1146), to sene (4068), I wene *ind.* (5458), sustene *inf.* (5458, 6603), i-sene, sene *adj.* (6267, 8077), shene *def. adj.* (6267).

tyme (A.S. tíma, L.O. time), 155 f (: pryme), 351 f (: lyme *inf.*), 2074 f (: by me : pryme), 2178 f (: pryme), 2640 f (: pryme), 6833 f (: pryme).—tymë (*before consonants*), 703, 1057, 1075, 1877 ‡ CD, 2278 AC, 2682, 2806 BC (tyme y-se A, -ë se B; D †), 3050 ‡ A (?), 3350, 3360, 3450, 3738 C (-*e* ylost ABD, -ë lost C; cf. 5945), 4321, 4423, 4437, 4510, 4556, 4917, 4996 (-*e* † D), 5013, 5786, 5922, 6178, 6274, 6470 CD, 6584, 6713, 6757, 6758, 6767, 7109 BCD (tyme ypassed A, -ë passid C (presente † B) D).—tymę, 1228 (t. that AB, tydę C, tymë ‡ that D), 2296 (t. my AB, tydę by C, tydę my D), 2834 D (t. ‡ be), 3146 ‡ D, 3337 ‡ C, 5986 AB (t. ther), 7111 † C.—tymë (*with hiatus*), 1305 ‡ AB, 2386 ‡ D, 3472 † D, 7110 ‡ CD; tymë (*before h*), 1877 ‡ A, 3671 † A, 4501 † D.—tyme (*before vowels*), 474 ABC, 564, 1305 CD, 1807, 2068, 2278 BD, 2386 ABC, 2537, 2582, 2606, 2806 A, 2828, 2834, 3050 BCD, 3472 ABC, 3697, 3738 ABD, 3914, 4244, 4621 ABC, 4720, 4761, 4996 † D, 5576, 5593, 5945, 6274, 6349 (B †), 6712, 6987, 7109 A, 7110 AB, 7111 ABD, 7199, 7688, 8062, 8167.—tyme he, 2841, 3671 BCD, 4501, 6625, 7043, 7581; t. hem, 6713; by tyme his, 5767 (be t. CD).

somtyme[1], 747 AB (-ę C ‡ D ‡),[2] 1367 (B †), 2586, 3293 (-*e* [and] A), 4037, 5315, 6273; -*e* he, 314; -*e* han, 5967 (-ę (to) haue CD); -ę, 508 ‡ D, 2972 AB (-*e* CD).[3]

tyme *in the phrase* ofte tyme, 1877 CD, 6833 f ‡ C, 7172 (tymes D); -*e*, 913, 7946 (-ęs D), 8121 A (oft[e] t. B, ofte tymęs D); -*e* (before *he, his, hym, here* = her, *hath*), 1850, 1877 B, 3971, 5823 (-ęs D), 7939 (-ęs D); tymę that, 5986 AB (*reading doubtful*); tymë ‡ hath, 1877 A.

a thousand tyme, 531 f (: ryme *inf.*); a thowsand tyme he, 457 BD (-ęs A, sythis seyde C); a th. t. here (*eam*), 4094 (sithis C, tymęs D); sixty tyme a day, 441; a hunderid tyme, 4437 C (-ęs D, sithe A, sithe he B); tweynty tyme he, 6554 (-ęs D).—an hundred tymës gan, 4202 (-ys C); a thousand tymës selle, 4443 (-ë CD); a

[1] In this compound *som* is variously spelt, but always monosyllabic.

[2] Apparently we should read: Ek som tyme it ịs (i. e. it's) a craft to semë fle.

[3] Or, Ye woldę som tymë, etc.

th. tymës more, 5488 A (-ë B, -ęs D); a th. tymës mercy, 6162 (-ë B, -ys C); a th. tymës (*before vowels*), 2174 (-ys C), 3231 (-ys C), *so* twenty th. t., 3315 (-ys C, -ęs D).—Compare, tymës twyës twelue, 6460 (-ë D, B ‡ (?), C ‡ (?)). [Cf. sithe, § 14.]

welcome[1] (A.S. wilcuma, L. wilcume, wulcume, L.$^b$ wil-, wel-, wol-come, P. Pl. welcome, welcomen), he was wel-come, 6436 f (: i-come *p.p.*); wel come (*as interj.*), 6555 f (: nome *p.p.*); wher shal I seyę to yow wel come or no, 5493·A (wel com B, wheider shal I sey welcomë ‡ or no D).—wel-comę my knyght, 4151 (w. myn pes † C). [Var. wolcome, C 6436 and 6555.]

wele (A.S. wela), 5145 (welë knowe A, wele y-knowe BC, wel I knowe D †); *-e*, 4, 1951 (D †), 3662, 3678, 4314 (wel B; D †), 5144 (wel BD), 7693 (wel D). [welę for welę, 335 D (wel for wel AB), = well *adv.*]

welle (A.S. wella; but also wiell, *m.*, i-stem; L. welle, L.$^b$ wel, O. welle), 873 f, 1263 f, 1593 f, 5807 f, 6215 f, 7693 f (weH D), 7860 f (weH D), 7928 f (weH D); *-e*, 1926 (wel B), 4315.

Rhyme words.—telle *inf.* (873, 1263, 1593, 7928), dwelle *inf.* (1593, 5807, 7693, 7928), vnswelle *inf.* (5807), helle (873, 6215).

wille, wylle (A.S. willa, L. wille, iwille, O. wille), 125 f, 1316 f, 2687 (wil[le] D),[2] 2773 (wil[le] D), 4769 (willes B, wil[le] D), 6950 f (wiH D), 8168 f (wiH D). [His willë hath, 7905 C, is an error.]

Rhyme words.—stille *adj.* (125), stille *inf.* (1316), spille *inf.* (6950) Achille (8186).

The form *wil* (A.S. ge-will, *n.*, quasi jo-stem, common instead of gewile, *n.* (prob.), i-stem, see Siev. § 262. 2 and n. 3, Cosijn, Aws. Gr. II, 12; L. i-wil, O. will, P. Pl. wil) is common. Sometimes it is impossible to decide between *wil* and *wille*.—wil, wyl, (i.) 228 (willę B, will CD), 861 (willę B, wil [sche] C), 1355 (wyH A), 1564 (willę D), 3465 (wiH D), 4362 (willę BD), 7720 (wille C, wil [it] A), 8000. (ii.) 1939, 2294, 5175 (wiH D).

wone (A.S. ge-wuna, L. wune, i-wune, L.$^b$ wone), 1403 f (: sone *filius*); wonę to, 7010 (he was ‡ wont(e) D).

wrecche (A.S. wrecc(e)a, L. wræche, L.$^b$ wrecche, wrech, O. wrecchę), 798 f, 889 f, 1425 f, 1518 f, 1975, 4215 f, 5238, 5291 f, 6106 f, 6251 f, 6684 f; *-e*, 708, 777 (wreech D, -ë ‡ be A), 805, 4933 (wrich B), 5406 (wrech D), 5500 (-ë se CD), 7068 (wrech D).

[1] Confused, as is well known, with *wel, adv.*, and *come, p.p.*: cf. Icel. velkominn.

[2] ABG seem to have *yourë willë be*; ÇD read "ȝif (If) it ȝourę (ȝour) willę (wil[le]) be (were)."

Rhyme words.—recche *inf.* (798, 1425, 1518, 6251), recche *subj.* 3 *sg.* (5291), streeche *inf.* (889, 1425), kecche *inf.* (4215), dreecche 2 *pl.* (6106), feeche *imv.* (6684). [Var. BCD wreche; B wriche; D wretche.]

Note.—For *awe, bole, felawe*, see § 15. For *make-les*, see § 49, n. 5.

## § 3. II. Feminine nouns of the *n*- declension (Child, § 4).

arwe (A.S. arwe, arewe (mid arewan *Chron.* 1083; arwan *catapultas* Aldh. Gl.; see Sweet, p. 281), *earlier* ærig, earh, L. arwe, L$^{b}$. arewe), an arwe, 1726 (a narwe B), 6210.

asce (A.S. asce), 1624 (asshen B, asschin C, asshyn D).

belle (A.S. belle, L.O. belle), 2700 f (: telle *inf.* : dwelle *inf.*), 3031, 3040 f (beH D) (: telle *inf.* : dwelle *inf.*), 7425 (bel[le] B).

blase (A.S. blǽse, L. P. Pl. blase), *-e*, 4846.

cheke, cheeke (A.S. cēace, cēce), 4792 f (: eke : byseche *inf.* A, by-seke BD, beseke C).

dokke (A.S. docce), *-e*, 5123.

erthe (A.S. eorðe, L.O. eorðe, L.$^{b}$ O. erþe), *-e*, 2850 (erhte B), 2863 (erthe and [whom] B), 4586 (erith B, erthe ‡ hath E), 4603 (erth B).—erthe that, 8178 A (erth B). [Cf. ertheles, § 49, n. 5.]

harpe (A.S. hearpe, L. harpe), 731 f (: sharpe *adv.*), 2116 f (hare † B) (: harpe *inf.* : sharpe *adv.*).

herte (A.S. heorte, L. heorte, O. heorrte, herrte), 307 f, 792 f, 1987 f, 2016 f, 2064 f, 2181 f, 2372 f, 2717 f, 2940 f, 2989 f, 3578 f, 3746 f, 3789 f, 3843 f (C †), 3913 f, 3940 f, 4025 f, 4213 f, 4340 f (-t C), 4757 f, 4902 f, 4908 f, 5089 f, 5802 f, 5846 f, 6071 f (C †), 6111 f, 6161 f, 6282 f, 6426 f (-t C), 6496 f (-t C), 6564 f (-t C), 6618 f, 7085 f, 7413 f, 7588 f (-t C), 7687 f, 7707 f, 7783 f (-t C), 7857 f, 7897 f. (In many of the above cases D has *hert*.)—hertë (*before consonants*), 367 (-[e] BD), 1693 (-[e] BD), 2389 (-[e] D), 3881 (-[e] BD), 4052, 5338, 6149 (-[e] B), 7371, 7563 (-[e] B), 7570 (-[e] B), 7682; cf. also 228, 502, 599, 606, 749, 1006, 1063, 1664, 1783, 1845, 1894, 1985, 2007, 2016, 2035, 2067, 2193, 2326, 2406, 2411, 2442, 2677, 2885, 2899, 2952, 2969, 3198, 3453 B, 3616, 3642, 3645, 3685, 3730, 3750, 3752, 3830, 3845, 3885, 3911, 3928, 4023, 4120, 4123, 4146, 4191, 4263, 4330, 4391, 4407, 4433, 4486, 4536, 4674, 4981, 5242, 5269, 5361 A, 5871, 5936, 5973, 6079, 6190, 6214, 6252, 6591, 6808, 6816, 7275, 7490, 7552, 7676, 7684, 7694, 7746, 7931, 7934, 8022, 8060. (In some of these cases *hert*[*e*] is found in B or D or both. Even A occasionally has *hert*[*e*], as in 229, 453, 1652.) [Cf. herteles, § 49, n. 5.]

*herte* is occasionally found, but in nearly every case a comparison.

of MSS disposes of this apocopated form (so in 1759 C, 1941 C, 3189 C, 8022 C). The same is true of *hert* before a consonant (see, e.g., D in vv. 599, 2193, 2442, 3750, 4391, 5269; cf. also 278 A). The following lines seem to admit of two scansions:

As muchë ioie as hertę (hert D) may (myght D) comprehende (hertë . . . complende A), 4529 (-ë may comprende Cp.).

A kynges hertę (hert D) semeth bi hirę a wreche, 889 (or, hertë semeth). (Cf. 4674, especially CD.)

There are no cases of hiatus except such as a comparison of MSS easily corrects. Thus,—hertë ‡ is, 1957 A; hertë ‡ alle, 1956 B.

herte, 2456 (-t BD), 2911 (-t D), 2956 (-t D), 3849 (-t BD); cf. 250, 461, 1561, 2186, 2310, 2951, 2987, 3018, 3235, 3475, 3729, 3835, 3838, 4330 B, 4367 A; 5873, 6672, 6711, 6749, 8209. The spelling *hert* before a vowel is found in all MSS to some extent: see the above list and cf. the following lines, in which A has *hert*,—535, 928, 1954, 2014 (C hertë).—herte he, 2013 AB[1]; 3645 ‡ C, 5572 AB, 7141, 7937; *-e* hym, 3857 A; *-e* hath, 6501 (-t D), 7880.—hertë happe, 7159 (D ?).

Rhyme words.—conuerte *inf.* (307, 1987, 6071), peynes, sorwes smerte (792, 3789, 4908, 5089, 5802, 6161, 6564, 7085, 7687, 7783), smerte *adv.* (4902), smerte *pres. and prct. subj.* 3 *sg.* (2181, 2989, 3746, 3843, 5846, 6426, 6496, 7588), *prct. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2016) *inf.* (2372, 4025, 6111, 6282), asterte *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (7707), sterte, asterte *prct. ind.* 1, 3 *sg.* (2181, 2940, 3913, 4757, 6071, 6564, 7857, 7897), sterte *inf.* (2717, 3789, 4340, 4902, 6618), to-sterte *inf.* (2064), sherte *n.* (3578, 3940, 4213, 4757).

howue (A.S. húfe, P. Pl. howue, houue, houe), *-e*, 3617 (houe C, howe D), 6832.[2]

larke (A.S. láwerce, P. Pl. larke), 4033 (- [e] B).

[lilie (A.S. lilie), the lilie ‡ (*dissyl.*) wexith, 942 D (rose A, BC).]

lyne (A.S. líne, P. Pl. lyne), 2262 f (: dyne *inf.*), 2546 f (: dyne *inf.*: fyne *inf.*), 3070 (blyve ‡ D), 7140 f (: fyne *inf.*); *-e*, 1061, 3346 (lyne C).

Note.—In 2262 and 3346 a *line of writing* is meant; in the other instances, a *cord* or the like. In 7844, where *lincaye* is intended, A and B have *liyne*, D has *lyne* (*lyne* † C).

masse (A.S. mæsse, O. messe, P. Pl. masse), 2930 f (: neuere the lasse: passe *inf.*) [mes: les: passe D].

more, moore (A.S. more; also moru, *f.*, see Sievers, § 278, n. 1; P. Pl. more), 6388 f (moor D) (: forlore *p.p.*: euerem[o]re).

myte (A.S. míte, P. Pl. myte), 3674 f (: lyte), 3742 f (: lyte: white

[1] *herte rente* C is doubtless for *herte he r.* In D, read *hert*[e] *r.* (?). But cf. 5572, where *hertë* seems to have given rise to *herte he* in AB.

[2] A alone preserves the right reading. B has *houen*, C *emmy entendaile*, D *ouyne*, C *honde*. See Skeat's n. on P. Pl. xxiii, 172, ed. 1886, II, 280.

*adj. pl.*), 5346 f (: visite *inf.* : delite *inf.*). [For *myłe*, 4445 D, read *mot* (A.S. mot) with A (moote B, mote C).]

nettle (A.S. netele, nętle), 941 (nettyl C, nettle D); nettle in dokke out, 5123 (nettle B, nettił C, netjH D).

nyghtyngale (A.S. nihtegale, nehtegale), 4075 f (: tale *n.*); *-e*, 2003.

owle (A.S. úle), *-e*, 6682.

pride (A.S. prýte; also prýt, *f.*; L. prude, prute), *-e*, 230, 4643, 4647 (?).

rose (A.S. rósę), 942 (lilie ‡ *dissyl.* D), 2341 f (: suppose *ind.* 1 *sg.*); *-e* ‡, 7207 C.

shete (A.S. scéte (M.), scýte (L.W.S.), P. Pl. schete), *-e*, 3898 (*-e* hit = it D), 4412 (9-syl.). [Var. B shette; CD schete.]

side, syde (A.S. síde, L.O. side, P. Pl. syde-borde, sydbenche, syd-table), 185 f, 321 f, 3818 (*-e* BCD), 4308 f (biside D), 4577 f, 4826 f, 5354 f, 5486 f, 5740 f, 6012 f, 6053 f, 6128 f (s(e)yde B), 6947 f, 7062 f, 7115 f; *-e*, 4896, 7050; *-e* hym, 3078, 4431; *-e* here (*eam*), 3524 (*-e* [her] D).

Rhyme words.—I. Infinitives: gyde (185), hide (321, 5486), chyde (4308), betide (4577, 6128), byde (4826), abyde (5486, 6012). II. Subjunctives: gyde 3 *sg.* (5354), bytyde 3 *sg.* (6053, 7115), aspiede (aspie † A, aspied B, espied D) *pret.* 3 *pl.* (*sg.* ‡ C) (6053). III. Nouns: tyde (5740, 7062), Cupide (6947). [The rhyme with *seyde* (dixit) in 321 C counts for nothing; *seyde* is wrong.] (For *aside, beside*, see § 88.)

sonne (A.S. sunne, L. sunne, L$^{b}$. sonne, O. sunne), 1259 f, 1849, 1866 f, 1947, 1990 f, 2054, 2322 f, 2671 f, 3220 f, 3610, 4306 (sonnę Tytàn A, *but omit* to *and read* sonnë Tỳtan), 4446, 5029 ABD, 7024, 7648; *-e*, 1852, 3950, 5901, 6094, 6105 ABD, 6911 (forme ‡ C), 7249; *-e* hym, 4549 (*-e* ‡ hastith D). [sunnę, 5029 ‡ C, 6105 ‡ C.]

Rhyme words.—konne *ind.* 1, 3 *pl.* (1259, 1866, 2671), *inf.* (3220), by-gonne *p.p.* (1866, 2322, 2671), y-ronne (1990), y-wonne (2322), donne *pred. adj. pl.* (1990).

Note.—*Sonne* is the spelling of AB, *sunne* the usual form in C. D has both forms and also *sun* (2671 f, 3220 f).

swalwe (A.S. swealwe, swalwe), 1149 (-ow † D).

throte (A.S. þrote; also þrotu, *f.*, see Sievers, § 278, n. 1), 1410 (-ę ‡ A); *-e* here (*poss. sg.*), 4092.

tonge, tunge (A.S. tunge, L.O. tunge), 1315 (-[e] D), 1889 f (-g D, tunge(n) A), 3136 f, 5183, 5463 f, 5543, 6358, 6808, 7167 (C †), 7421 f, 7684 (-ę (?) D †), 8157 f, 8159 f; tonge, 1099 AB, 2766 (tung D), 3144 (tong B, tung D), 7926 BD (-ë may C, -ę ‡ A). [tung[ë] it ‡, 1099 D.]

Rhyme words.—ronge *p.p.* (1889 [runge(n) A], 7424), songe, y-songe *p.p.* (5463, 7424, 8157, 8159), to vs yonge (3136), tonge (8157). [AB have usually the spelling *tonge*; C has usually *tunge*, D usually *tunge* or *tung*.]

trappe (A.S. træppe, O. trapp), 3583 f (: lappe *n.*); trappë dore, 3601 (trap[pe] D).

wodë-bynde (A.S. wudebinde), 4073 f AC (wonbynde † B, woodbynde D) (: wynde *inf.*).

wyke, wowke, see § 8, p. 15.

wyse (A.S. wíse, L.O. wise, L.$^{b}$ wis, guyse), 81 f, 159 CD (*pl.* AB), 162 f, 275 f, 336 f, 363 f, 697 f, 952 f, 957 f, 985 f, 1114 f, 1359 f, 1471 f, 1764 f, 1806 f, 2001 f (gyse C), 2149 f, 2548 f, 2631 f, 2752 f, 2785 f, 2897 f, 2912 f, 2974 f, 3079 f, 3298 f, 3618 † f C, 3693 f, 3785 f, 3811 f, 3889, 4129 f, 4310 f, 4390 f, 4436 f, 4516 f, 4639 f, 4660 f (wys A), 4740 f, 4899 f, 5056 f, 5174 f, 5472 f, 5495 f, 5551 f, 6000 f, 6189 f, 7460 f, 7683 f, 7831 f; wyse, 61, 285, 440 ABC, 2006, 2154, 3336 † D, 6427 (guise D); *-e* his, 3797; *-e* he, 8197.—wyse ‖ soth, 3197 AB (-ë CD).

Rhyme words.—this wyse *sapiens* (81), wyse *adj. pl.* (697, 957, 985, 2001, 3693, 3785, 4390), seruice,-ise,-yse (81, 162, 336, 952, 957, 985, 1764, 2974, 4129, 4639, 4660, 5056, 5174, 5472, 5495, 7683), sacrifice *n.* (7831), deuyse *inf.* (275, 1114, 1471, 2149, 2631, 2897, 3079, 3298, 4436, 4516, 4639, 4660, 4740, 4899, 5472, 5551, 7460, 7683), deuyse *ind.* 2 *pl.* (6189), ryse *inf.* (275, 697, 2912, 3811, 4310), aryse *inf.* (2752, 3785), aryse *p.p.* (2548), auyse *inf.* (363, 2785, 4436), auyse *ind.* 3 *pl.* (1359), des-, dispise *inf.* (1806, 4310, 7381), dispise *subj.* 3 *pl.* (6000), suffise *inf.* (3693, 5056, 7460). [wyse ‡ *n.* (81 D).]

wydowe (A.S. wiodu (*old and rare*), widuwe, weoduwe, wuduwe, Ps. widwe, N. widua, Sievers, §§ 71 and n. 1, 156.4, L. widewe, O. widewe, widdwe), wydowe (*dissyl.*) was, 97 AD (wydew B, wedewe C).

Note.—For *loue*, see § 8; for *rynde, rysshe, slene*, § 9; for *bore, sherte*, § 15.

## § 4. III. Neuters of the *n*- declension (Child, § 2).

ere, eere (A.S. éare, O. ære), 106 f, 725 f, 767 f, 1280 f, 1536 f, 2722 f, 3301 f, 3408 f, 3596 f, 3951 f, 4725 f, 5306 f; ere, 5096.

Rhyme words.—fere *timor* (106, 725, 767, 1536, 3301, 3596), were *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* (725, 767, 3301, 3408, 3951), there (1280, 3596, 5306), bere *feretrum* (2722), euery where (4725).

eye, yë (A.S. éage, L.$^{b}$ eȝe, O. eȝhe), 272, 453 f, 1386 f, 1488 f, 1989 f, 4188 ‡ E, 4972 ‡ f C, 5060 f, 6318 f, 6811 f, 6917 f, 72[illegible], 6442 (eyȝyn C).

Note.—*Eye* is the prevailing spelling; *ye*, which is shown by the rhyme to be Chaucer's form, is found in 7264 (ABD), 6917 B, 6811 D, 4972 C. Other forms are: in B, *eyghe*, 272; *eighe*, 1386; *eigh*, 1488; *heye*, 1989; in C, *eyȝe*, 453, 1386; in D, *ey*, 1488, 5060; *yhe*, 6318, 6442; *yee*, 6917. *Heighe*, 1989 A, is an error. *Eyȝe* occurs in 272 D.

Rhyme words.—companye (453, 6811), folye (453), lye (1386, [illegible]060, 6318, 7264), heighe (*l.* hye) (1488), prye (1488), wrye *inf.* (1989), [illegible]wrye *p.p.* (6318), aspye *inf.* (6917), sl(e)ye *adj. pl.* (7264). [In 4972 C the rhyme is false,—twye : yë : aweye.]

§ 5. In *lady* (A.S. hlǽfdige, *f.*) and *pley* (A.S. plega, *m.*), the final vowel disappears, and in *pley* the *g* unites with the preceding vowel to form a diphthong (Child, § 5; ten Brink, § 211). In *fo, foo* (A.S. ge-fá, *m.*) an old (A.S.) contraction is preserved (ten Brink, § 211; Sievers, § 277, n. 2).

lady (A.S. hlǽfdige, L. læfdi, O. laffdiȝ), làdy (*before vowels and consonants*), 106, 166 ABC, 346, 434, 493, 524 (bodie † D), 1025, 1093, 1164 BD, 1510, 2150, 2177, 2501, 2718, 2799, 3797, 3910, 4131, 4327, 5265, 5863, 6112, 6507 (laydy B), 6525, 6581, 6592, 6815, 6820, 6939, 7032, 7235, 7678, 8029, etc.; ladỳ (*before vowels and consonants*), 166 ‡ D, 269, 7879; làdy vntò, 1164 A. [*ladi* is common in C.]

pley (A.S. plega, *m.*, L. plæȝe), 6291 f (pleyɔ B, play C) (: weye *acc.* (way BD, alway ‡ C) : away); pley and, 1790 (-*e* B, play C †); pleye the, 5528 (pley CD).

fo, foo (A.S. ge-fá, *sbst.* (fáh, fá, *adj.*), L$^a$. ifa, L$^b$. fȏ, ifó), 837 f (wo † B), 1573 f, 1769 f, 2567 f, 2701 (for † C), 4828 f, 5751 f, 6522 f, 6591 f (soo † D); *before vowels*, 485, 1990.

feldèfare, 3703 f BC (feld[e] fare BC, feldyfare D) (: fare 3 *pl.*) (cf. Parl. F., 364) is referred to *felofor, m.*, though Bosworth-Toller questioningly recognizes a weak feminine *felefare* on the strength of the eleventh-century gloss *clodhamer and feldeware*, Wright-Wülck., p. 287, 17. The M.-Eng. form has perhaps been influenced by popular etymology (quasi *feld-gefara*).

Note.—For *wyndowe*, see § 15.

§ 6. Anglo-Saxon masculine and neuter vowel-stems that have a final vowel (-e or -u) in the nominative singular, preserve this vowel as -e in the *Troilus*.

For convenience the following nouns are thrown together in a single alphabetical list: (i.) masculine jo- (ja-) stems with long stem-syllable,—*ende, leche;* (ii.) neuter jo- (ja-) stems with long stem-syllable,—*wede, wyte* (for *ernde*, see § 7); (iii.) neuter wo-stem,—*bale;* (iv.) masculine i-stems with short stem-syllable,—*ache, hate, hegge, lye, mete, pilwe;* (v.) neuter i-stem with short stem-syllable,—*spere;* (vi.) masculine u-stems with short stem-syllable,—*sunu, wudu.* Masculine nomina agentis in *-ere* (which properly belong under i.) and abstract nouns in *-scipe* (which

properly belong under iv.) seldom (nouns in *-scipe* perhaps never) retain -e : see § 7. For *wil, wille*, see § 2. For *awe*, see § 15.

ache (A.S. ece, *m.*), *-e*, 5390 (ach B, eche C).

bale (A.S. bealu, *n.*, L. balu, bale), 5401 f ( : fyngres . . . smale : pale *pred. adj. sg.*).

ende (A.S. ende, *m.*, L.O. ende), 966 f, 1303 f, 1876 f, 2320, 2333 f. 2580 f, 2960 f, 3047 f, 3234 f, 3304 f, 3457 f, 3544 f, 3611 f, 3773 f, 4601, 4655 f, 5777 f, 6062 f, 6242 f, 6838 f, 7257 f, 7421 f, 7636 f, 7917 f, 8032 f; ende, 1345, 5498, 7756; end[e], 6862 f AB (-e CD). [Cf. endeles, § 85.]

Rhyme words.—I. Infinitives: bende (2333), wende (2333, 2580, 3457, 3544, 3611, 4655, 5777, 6242, 6838, 6862, 7917), blende, blynde, *awarc* (2580, 3047, 6062), sende (3304, 5777, 8032), shende (6242, 7257, 7421); II. shende *ind.* 1 *sg.* (7636), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (966), wende *cam* (1303), *cas* (3234), *camus* (3047, 7257), *catis* (2960 ABC), to-rende *subj.* 3 *pl.* (1876), sende *mittas* (3544), *mittat* (3773, 6862).

-ere : see § 7.

ernde. The best MSS. have *erand*. See § 7.

hate (A.S. hete, *m.* (cf. hatian), L. hæte, hete, O. hete), 1798; *-e*, 3870; *-e* he, 477.

hegge (A.S. hege, *m.*, cf. hecg, *f.* (?), hecc), He loketh forth by *hegge* by tre by greue, 7507 (hegg B, hegis ‡ C, heggos ‡ D, hege G).

leche (A.S. lǽce, lécc, *m.*, L. leche, læche, O. læche), 857 f (: I beseche), 1656 f (: preche *inf.* : speche), 2151 f (lece A) (: seche *petunt* : speche), 2667 f (: teche *inf.*), 7900 f (: speche : seche *inf.*); *-e*, 2664. —lechëcraft, 5098.

lye (A.S. lyge, *m.*, N. lyg); And for a soth they telle that lyie is, 6069 C[c] (: amphibologyis), *but read* twenty lyes *with ABD*.

mete (A.S. mete, *m.*, N. met(t), L.O. metè), *-e*, 907 (mone † C, brede ‡ D), 5437 ABD[1] (-ę C); *-e* his, 485.

pilwe (A.S. pyle, pylwe, *m.*), Saue a pilwe (pilwo B, pillowe D, pilowe G) I (*om.* C) fynde nought (G *inserts* elles) tenbrace (tǫ embrase CG, to enbrace D), 6587.

-shipe (A.S. -scipe) : see § 7.

sone (A.S. sunu, *m.*, L. sune, sone, O. sune), 226, 1401 f (: wone *custom*), 7027 ABC; sone, 2, 261, 1187, 1793, 3012 (some † B, sonë ‡ thogh D), 4650 (son D †), 6375, 6451, 7953, 8109.—Tydeus sonę that doun descended is, 7877 ABDG. (sonę †, 7027 D.)

Note.—Verses 226, 7027 disprove ten Brink's remark (Chaucers Sprache und Verskunst, §§ 260, 261) that *sone* never occurs as a dissyllable in the interior of a verse in Chaucer. Further examples of dissyllabic *sone* will be given from the *Legend of Good Women* in an article by Professor J. M. Manly, which is soon to appear. (Cf. also Child, § 12.)

[1] Later in the line read *drynk*[*e*] ABC (drynke D).

spere (A.S. spere, *n.*, L. spere, sper, P. Pl. spere, sper), 3216 f (speere B) (: swere *juro*); spere, 2512 (spore A), 4702; sperę ‡ for, 1286 C.

wede (A.S. (ge)wǽde, *n.*, L.[a] iwede, [b] wede, O. wæde), 177 f, 4273 f (-ee- D, wode † B), 4561 f.

Rhyme words.—drede *n.* (*all*), brede *n.* (177), rede *ind.* 3 *pl.* (4273, 4561).

wil, wille : see § 2.

wode (A.S. wudu, *m.*, L. wude, wode, O. wude), haselwodë thoughte, 6868 (hastow † B); from haselwodę || therę, 7537; haselwodës shaken, 3732 AB (*-e* is CD); *-e*, 2417. [Var. B -woddo; D -woode.]

wyte (A.S. wíte, *n.*, L.O. wite), 2733 f (: lite *adj.*), 3581 f (: byte *inf.* : a lyte). [Var. C wite, wyȝte.]

## § 7. Exceptions to § 6.

A.S. *ǽrende* and *stéle*, neuter jo-stems, lose their -e in the *Troilus*. The final -e of the termination *-shipe* (A.S. -scipe, masc. i-stem) is not sounded and sometimes not written. The final -e of the termination *-ere* (A.S. -ere, jo-stem) is not sounded except in rhyme.

erndo. Instead of *erndo* (A.S. ǽrende, *n.*, jo-stem, L. ærndo, erndo, O. errndo), the best MSS. have *(h)erand* in the only place where this word occurs,—erand was, 1157 (herand B, erndë D).

stel (A.S. stéle, stýle, *n.*, L. stel, dat. stele) shows no -e,—of stel, 1678 f (-e BD) (: euęry del : wel(e) *adv.*), 4987 f (stiel B, stele D) (: vpon the whiel)[1]; of stel and, 3322 (stiel B, stele D); trewë as stel in, 7194 (steele B, stele D).

-ere (A.S. -ere, L.W.S. also -re, *m.*, forming nomina agentis):

èndere, 5163 (-er C, yendir D).

fỳndere, 1929 (-er BD, fingir † C). [-ère (?).]

hàrpour (A.S. hearpere), *before vowel*, 2115 (ha[r]ppour B).

hòldere, 1729 (-er D, -yn † C).

[illegible]ère (A.S. lédere ?), 6116 f (-dèr D) (: yfere : bere *ursus*).

lèuër[illegible], 510 (-er D), 512 (-er AB), 2431 (-er BD), 4634 (-er BD), 46[illegible]10 (-er BD), 5862 (-er BD); lèuëre, 20 (-er D †), 1115 (-er BD), 42[illegible]28 (-er E), 4570, 5233 (-er D, -ers B); -ëre hastow, 4301 (-er[illegible] B, oone † D); lèuęre I, 1097 (-ęr BD); -ęre he, 2130 (-ërę he C, -ęr he D).

seyere (A.S. séogere), 3151 (-er BD); lyerę, 3157 (accent uncertain A; -er BD, li[e]rę C).

màkere, 741 (-er BD; *in* A *read* [y]beten), 4279 (-er BD)[2]; -ere yel[illegible], 8150 (-er BD).

[1] O † om. *of*.

[2] Thow rakel nyght there God makere of kynde.

mòrter (A.S. mortere, *m.*, from Lat. mortarium, cf. Pogatscher, §§ 259, 287), m. that, 5907 (percher C).

rèdere (A.S. rédere), 6633 (-er D).

Note.—The following verses, though they prove little or nothing, are curiously illustrative of the ending *-ere* in the fourteenth century :—

Jak Chep, Tronche, Jon Wrau, Thom Myllere, Tyler, Jak Strawe,
Erle of the Plo, Rak to, Deer, et Hob Carter, Rakstrawe ;
Isti ductores in plebe fuere priores.—Versus de tempore Johannis Straw. Wright, *Political Poems*, I, 230.

-shipe, -ship (A.S. -scipè), termination forming abstract nouns :

felawship. And wher that (*om.* BCD) hym lyst (liste B, leste C) best felawship (felaweschipe B, felauschepe C) kan, 1291.—fèlawshipe, 3245 (*-shyp B, -ship D †, felauschepe C).*

frendship (A.S. fréondscipe, L. freonscipe), (i.) 2872 (-schipe B, -shipe D). (ii.) frenship, 1456 (-shippe B, -schepe C, frendship D) ; frendship, 6498 (frendeschipe B, frenschepe C, frensshipe D), 7985 (*-e* D, -schip B, frenschep C) ; frendship haue, 1325 (*-e* D, frenschepe C), 2047 (frenshíp B, frenschepe C, frendship to D) ; frendship here (*dat.*), 6548 (frenchep B, frenschepe C, frensshipë ‡ to D).

lordship (A.S. hláfordscipe), lordship yow, 2505 (-chip B, -schepe (I) ȝow C) ; -ship hym, 2921 (-schepe C, -shíp was ‡ D) ; -ship ouer, 4598 (lorchip B, lorschepe C, lord(e)schipe E).

worship (A.S. weorðscipe, L. wurðscipe, worðschepe, O. wurþshipe), w. and, 46 (-schip B, -shipp D), 82 (-schipp B, -schepe C).

## § 8. Anglo-Saxon feminine nouns that have -u in the nominative, end in the *Troilus* in -e throughout the singular (except in the genitive).

The following list includes (i.) -ā- (-ō-) stems with short stem-syllable : *an swere, care, fare, lawe, love, sawe, shame, tale, ȝyfte* (originally n-stem) ; (ii.) abstract nouns in *-u, -o*, corresponding to Gothic abstracts in *-ei* and usually indeclinable in the singular : *brede, elde, hele, hete ;* (iii.) feminine u-stem with short stem-syllable : *dore.* For *more, throte,* see § 3. [For *gere,* see § 43, n. 3.]

answere (A.S. andswaru, Durh. ondsuere *acc.*, L. ær(d)-swere, answare, O. anndsware, -swere) ; ànswere, 69 (-er B, aunswer D), 72 (-er B), 2245 (-er B), 7786 A (C (?) ; -er D)[1] ; ànswère yow, 2210 (answèrè † ȝow CD) ; ànswere hym, 5556 (answer to ? B, answère

[1] Of wich in effect hire answére was this C.

him C, answèr him D); answère, 2139 (ans(e)wère B, answèr(d) D), 5820 (-èr D).[1]

brede (A.S. brǽdu, L[a]. braede, L[b]. brede), 179 f (: wede *n.* : drede *n.*), 530 f (: lede *inf.* : drede *n.*), 8020 f (: Diomede : hede *n. heed*).

care (A.S. caru, L.O. care), 505 f, 550 f, 587 f, 612 f, 660 f, 1016 f, 1192 f, 2085 f, 4407 f, 4891 f, 5124 (?) f AB (*vb.* CD), 5194 ‡ f (fare AB), 5241 f, 6230 f, 6383 f, 6417 f, 6600 f, 6698 ‡ f B, 6699 f AC[c]D (fare B), 7112 f, 7321 f, 7511 f, 7731 f (car D); care, 1862 ‡ D; care hym, 3908.

Rhyme words.—in the snare (505, 7112), Pandare (550, 587, 612, 5124 (?) AB, 5241, 7511), fare *n.* (550, 1016, 2085, 4407, 6230, 6417, 6698 B, 6699 AC[c]D, 7731), wel-fare (4891), ye fare *ind.* 2 *pl.* (1192, 6600, 7321), *inf.* (4407, 5194 CD, 5241, 6383, 7321), bare *adj.* (660, 1192, 4891), spare *inf.* (6417).

dore (A.S. duru; cf. dor, *n.*; L.O. dore, dure), -*e*, 180 (-ë ‡ vndir C), 3540, 3590, 5014 (C †); -*e* he, 4894; -*e* hym, 2033.—dorę (*before a pause*), 3526, 3587 (dere † C)[2], 3601 (trap[pe] dore D).

elde (A.S. ieldu; also ield; L. ælde, æld, O. P. Pl. elde), 1478 (-[e], C), 1484 (-[e] D, olde C); -*e*, 6031 (age D).

fare (A.S. faru, L. fare, fære, uore, P. Pl. fare), 551 f, 1018 f, 2086 f, 2229 f, 3447 f, 3595 † f B, 3948 f, 4408 f, 5194 f AB, 6229 f, 6416 f, 6698 ACD, 6699 ‡ f B, 6870 f, 7729 f (far D); welfàre, 4890 f; a farë carte, 7525 f (a soory ‡ c. D); welfàre, 7722 AD (wèl-farë ‡ and C); fare he, 5582.

Rhyme words.—stare *inf.* (2229), Pandare (3447, 3948, 6870), fare *inf.* (5194 AB). For the other cases, see *care*, above.

hele (A.S. hǽlu; also hǽl, -e, *f.*; L. hele; O. hæle), 1792 f, 2835 f, 3163 f, 7959 f (*all four* : dele *inf.*); -*e*, 461, 2848, 7722 (esë ‡ C), 7766.—hele honour, 6104 ABD. [Cf. heleles, § 49, n. 5.]

With *helë* swych that but ye yeuen me
The samë *hele* I shal noon *helë* haue, 7778-9.

hete (A.S. hǽtu; also hǽte, -an, *f*; L. hate, O. hæte), 971 f, 2027 f (herte † C), 5173 (heete B, herte † C), 6245 f, 7470 f, 7602 f, 8124 f.—For hete (hote B) of cold for cold of hete I deye, 420 (ffor cold of hetę for hete, etc. C).

Rhyme words.—trete *inf.* (971), lete *inf.* (6245), bete *inf.* (8124), bygete *p.p.* (971), ybete *p.p.* (2027), swete *pres. ind.* 2 *pl.* (2027), wete *adj. pl.* (7470), grete *adj. pl.* (7602, 8124).

lawe (A.S. lagu; also lah, *n.* (?) and laga, -an; L[ab]. laȝe,[b] lawe, O. laȝhe), 223 f (: drawe *inf.*), 996 f (: drawe *inf.* : awe), 5280 f (: awe : [redacted] *inf.*); -*e*, 238, 4590 (law B; E †); -*e* han, 2878 (-*e* haue D).

[1] *Answęre and* is possible in AB, *answęr and* in D.
[2] In A read *lay[en]*.

loue (A.S. lufu; also lufe (nom. not W.S.), -an, *weak fem.*, see Sievers, § 278, n. 1, Cosijn, Altws. Gr., II, § 33, Platt, *Anglia*, VI, 176; L.[a] lufe,[b] loue, O. lufe), 231 f (: aboue), 925 f (: loue *amo*), 1933 f (alone † C) (: loue *amo*), 3718 f (: aboue), 3866 f (: shoue *p.p.* : aboue), 8191 f (: aboue), 8205 f (: aboue).

Of *loue* (dissyllabic) in the interior of the verse there are but four certain examples :

Han felt that *louë* dorst[e] yow displese, 27 (dorste B; D ?).

It semeth not that *louë* doth yow[1] longe, 1631 (semyth me not C).

*Lovë* that with an holsom alliaunce, 4588.

*Louë* that knetteth lawe of comparye, 4590 (D (?); loue that endytyth ‡ C).

To which is probably to be added

And to the God of *loue* thus seyde he, 421 (seyd he D).

In 8132 we have apparently a verse of nine syllables, though a very disagreeable one :

Of his *loue* I haue seyd (seyd(e) B) as (that D) I kan. (Of course it is possible to read 4588 and 4590 as 9-syl. lines; cf. 1585.)

In

*Loue* ayens the (*om.* C) which (-e C) who-so defendeth, 603, and

*Loue* hym made al prest to don hire byde, 4824,

we have to choose between nine syllables and hiatus.

Note.—The other cases of *loue* (dissyllabic) in the interior of the verse are without doubt scribal errors. Thus,—196 ‡ AD (-ë of), 200 ‡ D (-ë and), 234 C, 242 ‡ C (-ë hath), 249 (?) ‡ D (-ë have), 400 † AD (-ë is), 436 ‡ C, 500 † D, 663 ‡ D (-ë hym), 677 ‡ CD, 991 † D (-ë of), 1144 ‡ D, 1182 ‡ A, 1542 ‡ D (-ë in), 1588 ‡ C (-ë I), 1607 ‡ D (-ë he), 1976 ‡ CD, 2007 ‡ CD, 2182 ‡ C (D ?), 2593 † D (-ë is), 3014 ‡ D, 3359 ‡ D, 4170 ‡ E, 4604 † E (-ë oug(u)ht), 4987 ‡ C, 5147 ‡ CD, 6234 ‡ D, 6296 ‡ C, 6314 ‡ C, 6844 ‡ D, 7930 ‡ AD.

loue (before vowels), 196 BC, 200 ABC, 237, 400 BC, 401, 571, 584, 612, 698, 899 ABD, 902, 972, 991 ABC, 1005, 1020, 1104, 1111, 1112, 1124, 1182 BC, 1208, 1331, 1394, 1456, 1464, 1477, 1542 ABC, 1635, 1662, 1764, 1827, 2160, 3564, 4608 ABC, 4987, 5077, 5147, 5243 ‡ CD, 5340, 8232, etc.—loue he, 353 ‡ C, 388 (B †), 1607 AB; -*e* his, 484 ABC; -*e* hem, 31 B (him A = hem), 1875; -*e* hath, 879 AB, 960 ABC (D ?); -*e* hadde, 304, 663; -*e* how, 1752; -*e* halt, 4606; -*e* hire (?), 1986 A.

loue, 206, 255, 308, 353 ABD, 384, 402, 436 AB, 443 ‡ C, 518, 523 ABC, 622, 646[2], 711, 744, 810, 864, 1118, 1129, 1147, 1181, 1182 † D, 1477, 1588 AB, 1759, 1789 (-*e* ‡ D), 1823 [redacted]

[1] Cp. inserts *nat* here. 9-syl. verse in ABC(D)

1912, 1950, 2007 ABC, 2251 ABC, 2285, 2309, 3014 AB, 4103, 4433, 4586, 4587, 4590 ‡ C, 5243 AB, 6234 ABC, 6296 AB, 6314 ABD, 6844 ABC, 7418 AB, 8039, 8052. The old-face figures indicate lines in which *loue* may be read if one chooses to admit the extra syllable before a pause (usually the principal cæsura). Thus,—Blyssyd be *loue* / that kan thus folk conuerte, 308; In *loue* / for which in wo to bedde he wente, 1147.

*luf* occurs once;—Of vertu rote of *luf* fyndere and hed, 1929 A (lust BC, fynder of lyst D). [Cf. lufsom, 6828 AB (louę- D), 7274 (louę- CD).]

sawe (A.S. sagu, L. saȝe, sæȝe, P. Pl. sawe), 6401 f (: gnawe *inf.*). [sawe †, 3562 f D, *see* shawe.]

shame (A.S. scamu, sceomu, sceamu, O. shame), 252 f, 374 f, 868 f, 896 f, 1440, 1730 f, 1848 f, 2922, 2931, 3479 f, 3969 f, 5192 f, 5258 (-e B, iapë † in C), 6130 f, 6227 f; -e, 642 (-ë by † D), 2370, 2376 (speche CD), 2585, 2867, 3091, 3619, 4412 (schamë red D); -e his, 107 (-ë falsęnesse C).

Rhyme words.—name *n.* (252, 896, 1848, 3479, 6130, 6227), game (868, 1730, 3969, 5192 D, 6130, 6227), grame (374, 5192 ABC), blame *inf.* (5192).

tale (A.S. talu, L.O. tale), 263[1], 1393 ‡ C (*pl.* ABD), 2278 f (: smale *adj. pl.*), 2651 C, 2707 (*line om.*, C), 4036, 4077 f (: nyghtyngale), 4245 (take † C), 7395 CD (tales A; B †); -e, 14, 1303 (talk ‡ was C, talë ‡ was D), 1344 BCD (tales † is A), 1390 ABC, 2690, 3456 (-ęs ‡ A), 3611 A (-ë brought BC, -ë ‡ is D), 4507 (-ë was D), 4789, 5324 AB (-ë newe C, thes ‡ tidinges D), 5328. [talę ‡ to, 1390 D.]

wyke, wowke (A.S. nom. wicu, wucu, orig. a fem. *n*-stem; oblique cases in *-an* occur, see Siev., § 278, n. 1, Cosijn, *Altws. Gr.*, II, § 33; L. wike, O. wuke, P. Pl. woke, weke, wyke), wyke, 1515 f (: syke *inf.*), 2358 f (weke BD, weyke C) (: pyke *inf.*); wowke, 5940 (wouke C, wooke D), 6855 (wouke C, wooke D). [Cf. ten Brink, § 35. A.]

§ 9. Monosyllabic feminine nouns with long stem-syllable take in the *Troilus* a final *-e* (perhaps derived from the oblique cases) throughout the singular, except in the genitive (cf. Child, § 16; ten Brink, § 207).

The following list includes: (i.) pure ā- (ō-) stems,—(a) *bene, bere, bote, browe, chyste, gloue, halle, halue, helpe, leue, lode, mede*

[1] Supply [*for*] in C.

(A.S. *méd*), *myle*, *reste*, *rinde*, *rode*, *salue*, *scole*, *snare*, *sorwe*, *soule*, *steuene*, *stounde*, *strete*, *throwe*, *while*, *wounde*, *youthe* (originally i-stem); (b) *fílthe*, *highte*, *lengthe*, *murthe*, [*routhe*,] *sleyghte* (O.N. *slœgð*), *slouthe*, *strengthe*, *trouthe*, *wrathe*; (ii.) jā- (jō-) stems,—*blysse*, *egge*, *helle*, *hire*, *keye*, *lysse*, *-nesse*, *shethe*, *speche*,[1] *synne*, *wreche*,[1] *yerde*; (iii.) wā- (wō-) stems,—*mede* (A.S. *méd*), *rowe*, *trewe*; (iv.) i-stems,—*bone* (O.N. *bón*), [*byrthe*,] *dede*, *glede*, *hyne*, *mynde*, *nede*, *quene*, *sighte*, *tyde*, *wene*. *Sleue* (A.S. *slǽf*, *slýf*) belongs either to the jā- or to the i- declension; the history of *rysshe* (A.S. *risc*, etc.) is not satisfactorily determined.

Note.—For convenience *soule* and *steuene* are included in this list. Some of the nouns under i. *b* show in Anglo-Saxon a by-form in -u (cf. also *scole*). For *pryde*, see § 3. For *hegge*, see § 6.

bene (A.S. béan, P. Pl.$^{c}$ bene), 4009 f (: mene *ind.* 1 *sg.* : clene *adj.*), 6726 f (: mene 3 *pl.*). [Var. B beene.]

bere (A.S. bǽr, bér, L.O. bære), 2723 f (: ere), 5525, 5845 f (ber D) (: manere), 5870 f (C †, ber D †) (: yfere *adv.* : dere *adj.*). [Var. B beere.]

blysse, blisse (A.S. blíðs, bliss, L.O. blisse), 623 f, 3023 f, 3184 f, 3546 (-[se]? D),[2] 4063, 4114 (-[se] D), 4164 (-[se] C, blyssyd ‡ A), 4465 f, 4499 (-[se] D), 4870 (D †),[3] 5985 (ioye C), 6759, 6911 f (blys C), 6913 f (blys C, hisse † D), 7021; blysse, blisse, 1934 (blis C, blys[se] which? D), 1970 (D †), 1974, 1976, 2152 (blis C), 4026, 4248, 4558 (blis C), 5497 (ioye C), 5498 (blys C), 5912 (ioyis C †), 6969 (blys C). [Var. D *blis* or *blys* in the lines marked by old-style figures.]

Rhyme words.—wysse *inf.* (623), kysse *inf.* (3023, 6911, 6913), lysse *n.* (3184), mysse *inf.* (4465), blysse *n.* (6911, 6913).

bone (O.N. bón, bœn, *f.*, A.S. bén, O. bene, L. bone), 1020 f, 4730 f, 6957 f.

Rhyme words.—mone *moon* (1020), to done (1020, 4730), soone (4730, 6957). [Var. B boone.]

bote (A.S. bót, L.O. bote), 763, 1430 f (boot D), 2464 f (bete ‡ C, boot D), 7035 f, 7609 f, 7690 (but † C); *-e*, 832, 2903, 4050 (boot B), 5276, 5401 (-ë ‡ on C), 5921; *-e* hym, 352. [Cf. botele, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—vnderfote (1430), rote (1430, 2464, 7609), sootè *adj.* (7035). [Var. BD boote.]

browe (A.S. brú, gen. brúwe), 204 f (: to loken rowe).

byrthe, birthe, burthe (cf. A.S. ge-byrd, *f.*, *n.*, ge-byrdu, *f.*, Siev.,

[1] See Kluge, *Nominale Stammbildungslehre*, § 113.
[2] Supply [*For*] in A, [*in*] in D. [3] Supply [*in*] in D.

§ 267, n. 4, O. birde, P. Pl.$^{b}$ burth,$^{c}$ burthe), byrthe, 3559 f (-th B, burthe C, birthe D) (: murthe AC, myrthe B, mirthe D); birthe, 5501 A (birth D, [my] burthe B); burthe hym, 6572 (byrthe B, bur[t]h C, birthe D).

chyste (A.S. cest, W.S. ciest, cyst, P. Pl.$^{c}$ cheste), *-e*, 7731 (cheste CD).

dede (A.S. dǽd, déd, L. dede, O. dede, dæd-bote), 93 f, 1187 f, 1427 f, 3133 f, 4143 f, 5286 f (nede A), 5641 f, 5893 f (drede ‡ C), 6003 f, 6234 f, 6413 f, 6837 f; *-e*, 3271, 3895 (drede † C), 5643. [dede, 4615 f C, *is an error; read* dyȝt.]

Rhyme words.—rede *ind.* 1 *pl.* (1187), 3 *pl.* (3133, 5641), *inf.* (93, 1187, 6837), arede *inf.* (6234), nede *n.* (1427), dede *pred. adj. pl.* (3133, 5286, 5893), drede *n.* (93, 6003, 6234, 6413), lede 1 *sg.* (6003), womanhede (4143, 6837).

egge (A.S. ecg, L. mid egge), 5589 f (: abregge *inf.*).

filthe (A.S. fýlð), *-e*, 3223 (-ë ‡ and B, felthe C), 6240 (fòl*ye it* ‡ C, filth D).

gledе (A.S. gléd, P. Pl.$^{c}$ glede), 4999 f (: fede *inf.*), 6666 f ABC (: hede *n. heed* : stede *steed*).

gloue (A.S. glóf, but also foxes glófa, *weak*), *-e* he, 7376.

halle (A.S. heall, hall, L. halle), 2255 f (haH D) (: calle *inf.*), 3698 f haH D) (: alle *pl.* : falle *p.p.*), 5394 f (: alle *pl.* : falle *inf.*).

halue (A.S. healf), in *byhalue* and *on. . . halue*: (*a*) byhalue (A.S. be healfe), oñ myn (my BD) byhalue, 2543 (bi- B, be- C); on his byhalue which, 2819 (on his half † with C, on his halue that C, on his half which D).[1] (*b*) on . . . halue (A.S. on healfe, O. o . . . hallfe, cf. L. an his halue), on myn h., 5607 f (vn my behalue D) (: salue *n.*).

Note.—The adjective *half* may be seen in 3186, 3345, 3481, 4921, 5927, 5970 (hal† C, halfe D), in phrases with *a*, *the*, and *this*. The plural appears in *halue goddes* (= demigods), 6207 (half[e] C, halfe D).

helle (A.S. hell, L. (*obl.*) O. helle), 786 f, 872 f, 1190 f (heH D), 1981 f (-H D), 3434 f, 4300 f, 4442 f, 5374 f C (-H D), 6202 f, 6216 f, 6360 f, 6575 f (-H D), 7759 f, 7895 f; *-e*, 859 (-H D), 1521 (-H D), 2850 (-H D), 7739.

Rhyme words.—welle *n.* (872, 6216), *inf.* (5374, 6575), telle *inf.* (872, 1190, 1981, 3434, 4442, 6360), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (786, 7895), dwelle *inf.* (4300, 5374, 6202, 6360, 7759), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (3434), *subj.* 2 *sg.* (786), selle *inf.* (4300, 4442), vnswelle *inf.* (6575). [Var. holle, 786 B.]

helpe (A.S. help, L. help, dat. -e, O. hellpe), helpe to, 695 AC (help D, *-e*? B); -e the, 5954 (help B); help to, 2531 (-e C, he[l]pe B, help ‡ of D); help yet, 672 (-ë ‡ sumwhat C); help do, 795 (-[e] ‡

[1] Line 2819 is unmetrical in D and a poor 9-syl. verse in C. B is nonsense. G and Cp. read: On his half whiche (which Cp.) that soule vs alle sende.

D, helę C); helpe, 2709 A (-p B); help (*hef. vowels*), 18 (-e BD), 1003 (-e C), 4455 (-e CD), 4765 AD (-e B)[1], 6221 (-e CD), 7390 (-e CD). [helpë ‡ more, 2540 C (-es ABG, help to D).]

Note.—The interjectional *help!* (see 1047) was no doubt originally an imperative, though such passages as "*Gentleman.* Help, help, O, help! *Edgar.* What kind of help?" (*King Lear*, v. 3, 222) show that our modern feeling that this *help* is a substantive is of long standing.

highte (A.S. héahðu, héhðu, híehðu), 7190 f (heighte B, hyȝte C, hight D) (: myghte, myght, myȝt, might *pret.* 3 *sg.*).

hire (A.S. hýr, L. hure, P. Pl.[ab] huire,[c] hure, huyre), 4787 f (here C), 5168 f (here AC, hir D); -e, 334 (C †).

Rhyme words.—on fire, a fire (on fere C) (4787, 5168), desire *ind.* 1 *sg.* (5168).

hyue (A.S. hýf), 6018 f (heue C) (: dryue *inf* : blyue *adv.*).

keye (A.S. cǽg; also (rarely) cǽge, -an, Pet. Chron. keie, P. Pl.[b] keye), 6823 f (kay C, key D) (: aweye : pleye *inf.*).

kynde (A.S. cynd, *n.*, but usually ge-cynd, *f.* (later *n.*); late A.S. ge-cynde, *n.*, ge-cyndu, -o, *f.*, see Sievers, § 267. b and n. 4; L. icunde, dat. cunde, O. kinde), nom., 2459 (-[e] D), 4572 f; of, 238 f, 972 f, 1455 f, 1947 (-[e] D), 2528 f, 3150 (-[e] D, kyng † A), 4279 f, 4563 f, 4607 f, 5080 (be kyndë C), 7825 f; out of, 5798 f; in, 254 f (*adj.* ‡ C), 3176 f, 3745 f, 5527 f; by, 5113 f, 6739 f.—kynde, nom., 4468, 7192.—kyndę the, nom., 5758 AB (-ë ‡ wrouȝt C, nature † D).

Rhyme words.—bynde *inf.* (238, 254, 4279, 4607), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (5527), vnbynde *inf.* (4572), wynde *inf.* (254), *subj.* 2 *sg.* (4279), fynde *inf.* (972, 2528, 3176, 3745, 4563, 5113, 5527, 6739), *ind.* 1 *sg.* (5798), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (7825), mynde *n.* (1455 [mende C], 3176, 6739), rynde (5798). [Var. C kende, 1455; D kynd, *in the lines marked by old-style figures.*]

lengthe (A.S. on lengðe; also, lengu, -o, *f.*), 1347 f BD (lenghthe A, lenthe C), 7854 f (lenthe C, length D); -e, 4917 (lenghe B, lenthe C), 5807 (lenthe A, lenghthe B, leue ‡ C, length D), 6343 (lenght B, length D), 8020 (lenghte B, lenthe C, [of] the lengh D). (Rhymes only with *strengthe.*)

leue, leeue (A.S. léaf, L. leue, leaf, O. lefe), 1819 f AB, 2387 f, 2621 (-e BCD), 2743 f, 2806 f, 3067 (-e D), 3401 f, 3436 f, 3464 f, 6020 f, 6441, 6843 f, 6845, 6856 f, 6863, 6974 f, 7378 f, 7448 f; -e, 1294, 1681, 2545, 2719 (loue † B), 2774, 3051, 3458, 3525, 5392; leuë home, 126 A (-e and BCG Cp.). [leuę ‡ went, 126 D.]

Rhyme words.—byleue, bleue *manere* (1819 AB, 3464, 6020, 6843, 6856), reue *inf.* (2743), reue (by-reue) *subj.* 1 *pl.* (2806), to-cleue *inf.* (6974), leue *relinquo* (7448), eue, eeue (2387, 3401, 3436, 6843, 6974, 7378).

[1] Read *among*[*es*] AD, *amonge*[*s*] B.

lode (A.S. lád, L. lod-cniht, O. lade), lodë-sterre, 6595 f (lodis C), 7755 f (loode D).

lore (A.S. lár, L.[a] lære, lare, leore,[b] lore, O. lare) 645 f, 754 f, 1083 f, 1650 f, 2426 f, 3085 f, 6385 f, 6690 f, 7099 f; *-e*, 1482.

Rhyme words.—more *adv.* (1083), the more *advl.* (645), no more *adv.* (754), I kan nomore (6690), routhe more (1650), more *n. acc.* (2426), *pred. adj. sg.* (3085), euermore *adv.* (6385), sore *adv.* (754, 1083, 1650, 3085, 7099), sorwes sore (2426), yore *adv.* (6690). [Var. B loore.]

lysse (A.S. líðs, liss, L. (*obl.*) P. Pl.[ac] lisse), 3185 f (lesse B, lisse C) (: yn blysse).

mede (A.S. méd, L. O. P. Pl. mede), 3257 f (: nede *n.* : drede *n.*); *-e*, 1508.

mede (A.S. mǽd, méd, gen. mǽde, mǽdwe, L. (dat.) medewe), 156 f (: rede *adj. pl.* : rede *lego*), 1138 f (: rede *adj. pl.* : sprede *inf.*).

murthe (A.S. myrgð, myrð, L. murðe), 3557 f (: byrthe A, byrth B, burthe C, birthe D); myrthe ‡, 7740 C. [Var. B myrthe; D mirthe.]

myle (A.S. míl, L. O. mile), 6766 f (: while : bygile *inf.*).

mynde (A.S. ge-mynd, *f.*, *n.*, O. minde), of, 365 f; yn, 1456 f (-d D), 3173 f, 4348 f, 4385 f, 4680 f, 6736 f; to, 1606 f (-d D), 1687 f (-d D); out of, 5579 f, 5963 f, 6099 f, 7805 f, 8058 f; acc., 5335 f, 3772 ABC; *-e*, acc., 3963; yn mynde he, 733 (-d D), 3914 (-d D).

Rhyme words.—fynde *inf.* (365, 3173, 4348, 4680, 5963, 6099, 8058), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (5579), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (6736), wynde *inf.* (1687, 4385), vnbynde *inf.* (5335), kynde *n.* (1456, 3173, 6736), vnkynde (4680, 6099, 7805), by-hynde (1606). [Var. C mende.]

nede (A.S. néd, níed, nýd, néad, néod, L. ned, neode, O. ned, acc. dat. nede), 772 f, 863 f, 1428 f, 3259 f, 3296 f, 3308 f, 3331 f, 3388 f, 3548 f, 3570 f, 4067 f, 4736 f, 4808 f, 5286 f, 5768 f, 6194 f, 6220 f, 7389 f, 7403 f; nedë (*before consonants*), 128 AC (-ed ‡ B), 2617 (A † B †), 2638 (-ę C), 3266 ‡ C (-es AB, -is D), 3984; *-e*, 4480, 5696, 5697 (A †), 6699 ABD, 6949 ABD, 8221.—nedę to, 886, 4853 A (*-e* CD; B †); -ę‖ there, 1799 (-ę wher D); -ę‖ sestow, 2888; -ę was, 4630; -ę ful, 4797 ‡ C (*-e* he (?) D †); -ę were, 6170 ‡ A (?).—nedë were *it* (= wer't), *or* nedę were it, 4773 AB (cf. 6170 A). [2891 ?] [Cf. nedeles, § 85; nede, -es, § 91.]

Rhyme words.—spede *inf.* (772, 863, 4736), blede *inf.* (863), procede *inf.* (3296), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (*inf.* ‡ D) (4808), for-bede *inf.* (3308), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (3388, 6220), bede *inf.* (5768), brede *inf.* (7389), drede *n.* (772, 3259, 3331, 3548, 3570, 4736, 6194), dede *n.* (1428), dede *pred. adj. pl.* (5286), mede *meed* (3259), hede *n. he.d* (3308, 4067, 6220), Diomede (7389, 7403), stede *steed* (7403).

-nesse, termination (A.S. -nes, -nis, -nys, *late* -nisse, L. O. P.Pl. -nesse).

besynesse, bysynesse, 795 f[1], 1035 f, 2259 (-nes[se] D)[2], 2401 f, 3007 f, 3086 f, 3205 f, 4241 ‡ f E, 4255 f (besines C), 4452 f (besynes C,) 6150 f (buxsomnes ‡ C).

bitternèsse, 639 f (bet- B, bittyr- C), 3657 f, 5506 f; *-e*, 4062.

brotelnesse, 8195 f (briȝtilnes D).

corsednesse, 5656 B (cursed- D, wykkednesse A).

derknèsse, 18 f (derke- BD)[3], 3668 f (distresse † B), 4962 f (derkenesse B, derknes C).

drerynesse, 701 f, 964 f, 5563 ‡ C f.

dronkënesse, 1801 f (dronkenes C, drunkenesse D).

fàlsnesse, 107 (fàlsenesse BC).

fièblenesse, 1948 B (febilnisse C, fèblenès D, fèblesse A).

gentilnesse, 7980 f D (gentilesse ABC). (Cf. variants under *gentilesse*, § 25.)

gladnèsse, 19 f 22 f (gladdę- B), 615 f, 1790 f, 2848 f (gladdę- B), 2889 f, 3008 f (gladdę- B), 3022 f, 4038 f, 4057 f, 4086 f (-nes C), 4242 f (-nes C), 4289 f, 4357 f (-nes C), 4568 f, 7956 f; gladnesse, 640 C; -nèsse, 4155 (-ę ȝif C, -ę yif D).

goodnèsse, 991 f, 2849 f (goodę- B); -nèsse he, 116 (gòdę- B).

hardnèsse, 2330 f.

hardi-, hardynesse, 566 f, 1719 f; *-e*, 4618.

heuynesse, 24 f, 655 f, 963 f, 3849 f, 4039 f, 4241 f (-nes C, besinesse E), 4288 f, 4767 f (wrecchidnes ‡ D), 5025 f, 5464 f, 5563 f (drerynesse ‡ C), 5745 f, 5929 f, 6503 f, 6984 f, 7154 f (-nes C), 7577 f.

holynesse, 560 f.

hòlwghnesse, 8172 ([the] hòlugh- B).

kyndënesse, 5382 f.

lustynesse, 3019 f

rudënesse, 6151 f (reudënes C, rud[ë]nesse D); *-e*, 6339.

secrenesse, 1928 (sekyrnes C, sikernesse D, sekirnesse G).

selynesse, 3655 f, 3667 f, 3673 (-[se] D).

shrewëdnesse, 1943 f (sh(e)rewed- B, schrewed(e)nes C, shrewdënesse D).

sikę-, sykęnèsse, 2661 f (sik- CD), 5507 f (sekę- B, sek- C); sỳknessę lest, 489 (sikę- B, sek- C); syknèsse, 4055 f (sek- C, sijk- D).

siker-, sykernesse, 3824 f (sekir- C), 4085 f (sekirnes C), 4157 f,

[1] Old-style figures indicate that D has -nes.

[2] But of hirę bysynesse (-es Cp.) this was on.

[3] Scansion uncertain.

4355 f; -nesse, 1858 (sekirnes C), 6174 (sekirnes C). [Cf. *secrenesse.*]

sothfastnesse, 5742 f (soth(e)- D).

swetnèsse, 1036 f (swett(e)nesse B), 2886 f (swenienesse † B), 3021 f (swett(e)- B); -nessë, 4061 (*perh.* -nèsse *in* A); swètnesse haue, 638 (swèt(e)nesse han B, swètnesse a C).

vnliklynesse, 16 f.

wikked-, wykkednesse, 992 f (-yd- BD, weked- C), 5656 f A (corsed- B, cursed- D).

wildernesse, 6207 f.

wilfulnesse, 793 f.

witt(e)nesse, 6212 (witnesse BCD); wytnèsse, 3102 f (witt(e)- B).

wodnèsse, 3636 f (wod(e)- B); woòdnesse, 4224 (woo(n)d(e)nes B, wod(e)nesse ‡ E); -nèsse, 4900 (wod(e)- B, distreste † C, wood(e)- D).

worthi-, worthynesse, 567 f, 642 f, 961 f (-nes C),[1] 1246 f, 1263 (-[se] D), 1789 f, 1926 f (-nes C), 4158 f, 4451 f (-nes C), 4631 f (-nes C), 6148 f (-nes C), 6330 f, 7080 f, 7928 (-[se] D, -e the C), 8192 f; -nesse his, 4392; vnworthynesse he, 2166 (on- C).

wrecchednesse, 1371 f (-nes C), 4629 f (-nes C), 6402 f (wrecched(e)- B, wrecched(e)nes C); -nesse, 3223 (wrecched(e)- C); wrecchidnes ‡, 4767 f D (heuynesse AB).

But:—

buxsomnes ‡, 6150 f C; gladnès ‡ ho, 2891 D; goòdnes ‡ herye, 4514 D; noblënes ‡, 8194 f D (noblèsse AB); witnes of, 5403 A (-nesse BCD).[2]

See also the variants in the preceding list.

A.S. bīeternes, biternys; dréorinys; druncennes; glædnes; gódnes; hálignes; heardnes; hefignes; séocnes; swétnes; ge-witnes; wódnys [; búhsomnes Bosw.- T. *without authority*].

Rhyme words.—Nouns in -nesse rhyme principally with each other; but the following rhymes also occur,—distresse (615, 639, 641, 1801, 1943, 2330, 2886, 3086, 3102, 3205, 3824, 4055, 4057, 4288, 4289, 4629, 4631, 4767, 4962, 5025, 5382, 5464, 5506, 5563, 5742, 5745, 6330, 7080, 7956), accesse (2401, 2661), gentilesse (1246, 1789, 1790, 3007, 3008, 4255, 7956), largesse (4568), prowesse (1719), richesse (6330), noblesse (8192), goddesse (6207), hierdesse (655), presse *n.* (560), lesse, lasse *adj. sg.* (701, 793, 5464, 6984), *plu.* (6207), I gesse *ind.* (655, 991, 992, 1371, 1801, 1943, 4568, 5563), gesse, gysse *inf.* (3824, 4085, 4086, 5656, 6984), dresse *inf.* (1719, 6402), redresse *inf.* (3849, 5929, 6402, 6503), expresse *ind.* 3. *pl.* (7154), blesse *subj.* 3 *sg.* (7577).

queene, quene (A.S. cwén, cwǽn, L. quen, quene, O. cwen), 699 f,

[1] In C read *worth*[*y*]*nesse.*

[2] In A supply [*here*].

759, 817 f, 2772 f (the quene ‡ elyne C?), 2788 f, 5900 f, 6256 f, 6375 f, 7258 f; *-e*, 2641 (quen C), 2799, 6009 (quen C).

Rhyme words.—ỳ-seene *adj.* (699), sene *adj.* (7258), tene (817), grene (817, 2788, 6375), susteyne (-tene) *inf.* (2772), shene *adv.*? (5900), shene *adj. def.* (6256), wene *n.* (6256), ? clene[1] *adv.* (6375). [Var. D qwene.]

reste (A.S. ræst, rest, L. dat. reste, O. resste), 188 f,[2] *600 f, 1845 f, *1996 f, *2029 f, *3066 f, 3767 f, *3808 f, 3887 f, *3973 f, 4277 f, *4360 f, *4441 f, *4522 f, *5243 f (rest B); 5781 f (prest † C), *5949 f, 6107 (-[e] D), *6264 f, 6299 f, 6881 f, 7370 f, 7384 C (-[e] D, bedde AB), 7468 f, 8098 f ([vn]to r. A), 8112 f; *-e*, 4274 (-t B, nest † D); *-e* hym, 8036 (-t B). [rest ‡, 330 f C[c] (lyst AD, lest B).]—vnreste, 5541 f, *7930 f, *7967 f. [Cf. resteles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—the beste (3767, 3887, 5541, 5781, 5949, 6264, 7967, 8112), the alderbeste (4441), my beste (600), breste *subj.* 3 *sg.* (600), breste *inf.* (4277, 5243, 6299, 7370, 7930), moleste *inf.* (5541), keste (kyste) *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3973, 4360), leste (lyste) *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (188[3], 1996[3], 3066[3], 3973, 4522, 6881, 7468, 8098), lyste *prcs. subj.* 3 *sg.* (1845[4], 2029, 3808, 3887), the worthieste (1845). [best *adv.* (330 C[5]).]

rode (A.S. ród, L.O. rode), 8223 f (roode BD) (: Strode *nom. pr.*: good[e] *pl.*, garde † A).

rote, roote (A.S. rót, O. rote), 1433 f, 2463 f (a root? D), 7608 f; *-e*, 1929 (root(a) B, rote ‡ fynder D). [Cf. roteles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—bote *A.S. bót* (1433, 2463, 7608), vnderfote (1433).

routhe, ruthe (2441), reuthe (4924) (not in A.S.; formed from the vb. reouwen, rewen, A.S. hréowan, on the analogy of other abstract nouns in -th; cf. O.N. hrygð and hryggva; L. reouðe; P. Pl.[b] routhe, reuth,[c] reuthe), 582 f, 769 f, 1434 f, 1574 f, 1649[6], 1749 f (rowrhte † B), 2092 f, 2224 f, 2365 f. 2441 AB, 2587 f, 2964 f, 3737 f, 4353 f, 4924 (ruth † D), 6138 f,[7] 6152 f, 6271 f, 6335 f, 7363 f, 7462 f, 7748 f, 7950 f, 8050 f; *-e*, 1608 BD, 2355, 2460 (-th B), 6244, 6989. [-ë ‡ on, 1608 A, *l. -e* vpon (mercy ‡ C).] [Cf. routheles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—slouthe (2092, 2224, 2587, 3737, 7950), vntrouthe (7462), trouthe (*all the rest*). [Var. B rowthe; BC rewthe; C reuthe.]

rowe (A.S. ráw, ræw, P. Pl.[c] rewe, by rewe), by r., 2055 f (row D) (: lowe *adv.*: throwe *inf.*).

[1] clere ABG Cp. Durham MS., clene Phillipps MS. 8252, cleene John's MS., shene D Selden MS. B. 24. (C cut out.)
[2] The asterisk indicates that C has no -e; old-style figures indicate that D has none.
[3] Perh. subjunctive.
[4] lyst A (: the worthieste).
[5] "In rest," the reading of C, is clearly wrong.
[6] Supply [*w*] in D.
[7] Old-style figures indicate that D has *trouth*.

rynde (A.S. rind, but a pl. rindan occurs), 1727 f (rynd D) (: byhynde : fynde *inf.*), 5801 f (: kynde *n.* : fynde *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

rysshe (A.S. risc, *f.*, weak forms also occur; P. Pl. rusche, ruysshe), 4003 f (ryshe B, rische D, reche † C) (: fysshe *inf.*).

salue (A.S. sealf, O. sallfe), 5606 f (: on myn halue).

scole (A.S. scól, see Sievers, *Beitr.*, I, 488, but scólu, Chron. 816; L. in scole, P. Pl. scole), *-e* is, 634 (: tolys : folys).

shethe (A.S. scéð, L. dat. scæðe, scaðe, O. dat. shæþe), out of . . . . shethe he, 5847 (sheth D, schede anon C).

sighte, syght[e] (A.S. gesihð, L. siht, dat. sehte, i-sihðe, etc., O. sihhþe), nom., -[e] trewely, 1713 AD (-e BC); acc., -[e] fle, 1795 ACD (-e B); acc., sighte, 294 f (syȝth C, sight D) (: lyghte *inf.*); acc., -[e], 4974 f AD (-e B) (: eyen bryght[e] (-e D) : lyght[e] *inf.* (-e BD)); for, -[e] ye[1], 1754 ABC (D † ); from . . . sighte, 6998 f (-t CD) (: myghte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* : lyghte *inf.*); with sighte, 2380 f (-t CD) (: myghte *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.*).

sight, (i.) acc., 5375 f CD[2] (: knyȝt C, sighte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* D). (ii.) by, 1787 (*acc.* D, seyth C); vpon, 7735; in, 5603; nom., forsight, 5623. [of that sight † that, D 3338.] [Var. C syȝt, siȝt, syȝte; D siȝt.]

sleue (A.S. slíf, L.W.S. slýf, but slýfan *pl.* occurs as a variant in Benedict.-r., ed. Schröer, p. 89), 6065 f (: preue *inf.*), 7406 f (: releue *inf.*).

sleyghte, sleighte (O.N. slœgð, L[b]. slehþe, P. Pl.[b] sleighte,[c] sleithe), 2597 (-[e] BC, -[e for] D), 6158 (sleyt[e] C, sleyghtes D); *-e*, 6121 (-t D, flyȝt ‡ C), 6123 AB (sleyȝt C), 7136 (sleight D). [Var. B sleughte; C sleyȝte.]

slouthe (A.S. sléwð, L. slauðe), 2044 f, 2093 f, 2221 f, 2585 f, 3738 f, 7947 f (-th D); *-e*, 1371, 3777 ( th D).

Rhyme words.—routhe (2093, 2221, 2585, 3738, 7947), trouthe (2044, 2221, 2585, 7947).

snare (A.S. snearh, but also sneare, Sweet, 4), 507 f (sware † B) (: care *n.*), 663 f (: care *n.* : bare *pred. adj. sg.*), 7111 f (: care *n.*).

sonde (A.S. sand, sond, L. sonde), 7735 f (: in honde); *-e*, 3334 (-d BD, [or] soun C). [in goddes sonde, 4207 D, *is error for* hond.]

sorwe[3] (A.S. sorg, sorh, L. sorhȝe, scorwe, O. serrȝhe), 39c (C †),

[1] "Right for the firste syght[e] ye parde."

[2] This stanza is not in AB.

[3] Old-style figures indicate that D has *sorow* (before vowels, *sorow*); an asterisk indicates that B has *sorwe*.

485 f ABC, 527 (-ow B), 563 C, 665 (*pl.* BD), 706 (sorǫwe B), 860 f, 945 f, *1491 f, 1930[1], 1951, 2049 f, 2184 f, 2594, 2608 f (sorwyn C), 2694, 2955, 3147 (-es AB), 3189 † A, 3715 (-[e] B), 3730 f, 3900 f, 3928 (sorwȝ *dissyl.* D), 3935 (-[e] D), 4312 f, 4369 (-[e] B), 4760 f, 4816 C (*pl.* ABD), 5033 (-[e] B), 5091, 5094 (-[e] B), 5133 (-[e] B), 5199 C, 5422 (-[e] B), 5446 (-[e]' B, -yn C), 5465 (-ę ‡ to C), 5568 ABD,..5587 (-[e] B), 5590 BC (*pl.* AD), 6107 f, 6278 f, 6376 f, 6499 C (*pl.* ABD), 6567 D (*pl.* ABC), 6628 ‡ C, 6629 C (*pl.* ABD), 6652 (-[e] B), 6658 f, 6769 f, 6813, 6923 ACD (-es B), 7017 f, 7049 f, 7070, 7086 f (destresse † B), 7238 f, 7308 f, 7649 (C †), 7695, 7888 f, 8026 f.—sorwe, 1 (sorǫwe B), *108 AC, 530 (-ǫwe BD),[2] *579, 582 ‡ A, 641 (-ow ne D, -we ǫr ‡ in C), *712, 3640, 3742 (so[r]w B, sorw(is) C, sorow at D), *3810 (-e hirę C), 3932 (sorwȝ D), 4527, 4759, 5021 AB (-ǫwe D), *5171, 5436 (-ë ‡ of C), 5438 † C, *5458, 5482, *5498, 5503 (sorw D), *5541 (wo C), 5561, 5586 (-ę ‡ for D), 5743, 6226 (-ę ȝe B, -ë that C), 6380, 6480, (-ë pese? C, D *dub.*), 6540, 6561, 6712, 6821 (-yn ‡ C, -ë † vpon D), 6895 (-ë doun C), 6921, 6976, 7559 (-ęs ‡ and B), *7605[3], 7927 (-yn ‡ of C), 7930 A(?)BC (-ę ‡ for D), 8102, 8107, 8144; sorwe he, 7012 (-e ‡ on-to C), 8089; -e hym, *7405 AD (C?).—sorw[ë] doubleth, 5565 AB (-ë CD). [sorwę ‡ to, 5092 AC, 5465 C (-ë AB); sorwę gan, 546 C (-ǫwę D), *read* wo; sorow, 705 † D (*pl.* AC, -[es]? B), 3747 ‡ D (*pl.* ABC); sorwë † of, 5791 C; sorwyn † brynge, 3768 C.] [Cf. sorwful, -w[e]ful, § 49, n. 3.]

Rhymę words.—morwe (*everywhere*), to borwe *n.* (2049, 2608, 8026), borwe *inf.* (485, 7086).

soule, sowle (A.S. sáwol, gen. sáwle, sáule, L. saule, O. sawle), 47 (B †), 1853 (hert[e] ‡ D), 2944 (D †), 3768 AB (-[e] D), 4343 (D †), 4967, 4979[4], 5134, 5361, (-ę ful C, hertë A), 5836, 6026, 6061, 6155, 6216 (-ę synke CD), 6685, 6942 (-ę ‡ me? D), 7913.—So that his sowle herę sow[l]ë (soule BC, sowle D) folwen myghte, 5849.—soule, 2723 (soul D, -ë brouȝt C),[5] 3187 (soul D; C?), 3433 (soul D), 4161 (-ë brought E; C †), 4441 (-ę ‡ to D), 5438 (sorwe † C), 6058 (soul B, -ë ‡ schal CD),[6] 6362, 7035, 7386 (-ë ‡ vp C). [sowlę ‡ she, 7079 D.] [2819 (?), see p. 17, foot-note.]

speche (A.S. spræc, sprǽc, L.W.S. spǽc, L. spæche, speche, O. spæche), 702 f, 884 f, 1142 f, 1333 f, 1582 f, 1657 f, 2154 f, 2506 f, 3237 f,

[1] All four MSS. defective (sor C).
[2] AC corrupt.
[3] In B supply [*il*].
[4] AB too short; C †; D apparently right.
[5] soule I-brought AB, soul y-brȝght D (cf. 4161).
[6] sowle-is A, soul-is B.

3352 C, 3426 f, 3598 f, 4179 f, 4352 f, 4552 (D †), 4628 f, 5117 f, 5813 f, 6136 f, 6470 f, 6751 f, 7161 f, 7218 f (speeh D), 7494 f, 7898 f, 7973 f, 8079 f (speeh D), 8162 f, 8217 f; *-e*, 327, 1107, 1119, 2276, 2376 (shame AB), 2685, 3138, 3301 CD, 3304 (speeh C; D †), 4477, 4790 (D †), 7185, 7289 (-ë ‡ a? C); *-e* hym, 4911 (speeh B). [Cf. specheles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—seche *inf.* (702, 884, 7161, 7494, 7898, 8079), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (2154), *subj.* 2 *pl.* (8217), eche *inf.* (702, 884, 4352, 6470), preche *inf.* (1142, 1582, 1657, 6136), beseche *in l.* 1 *sg.* (1333, 2506, 3237, 3598, 4179, 4352, 5117, 5813, 6751, 7494, 7973), *inf.* (3426, 4628, 6470, 7218), *imv. sg.* (8162), teche *inf.* (6136), leche (1657, 2154, 7898). [Var. BC speeche.]

steuene (A.S. stefn, stemn, L. stef(e)ne, steuene, O. steffne), 4565 f (neuene B) ( : heuene).

stounde (A.S. stund, L. stunde, O. stunnd), 1060 f (-d D), 1079 f (-d D), 4537 f (-d D), 4738 f (-d D), 5287 f, 7818 f, 7865 f (7866 f C); stoundëmele (A.S. stundmælum), *adv.*, *-e*, 7037 ABD (stormyal † C). [stound, 5256 ‡ D.]

Rhyme words.—founde *inf.* (1060), found *p.p.* (5287), wounde *n.* (1079, 4537, [5256 D,] 5287, 7865), grounde (4738, 7865), expounde *inf.* (7818). [Var. A stonde (5287); B stownde.]

strengthe (A.S. strengðu, strengð, L. strengþe, strenðe, O. strennepe), 1345 f (streughte B, strenthe C); strenghthe, 7853 f (strenthe C, strength D). (Both rhyme with *lengthe*, *lenghthe*.)

strete (A.S. strǽt, strét, L.[a] stræte, stret,[b] stræt, O. stræte), 2271 f, 2312 f, 4723 f, 5591 f; *-e*, 5288; *-e* he, 1701 (*line om.* C).—strete se, 1697 (-e ‡ tho D); -e lokynge, 2100.

Rhyme words.—ete *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (*inf.* D) (2271), y-bete *p.p.* (2312), grete *def. adj.* (2312), grete *adj. pl.* (4723), trete *inf.* (4723), swete *voc.* (5591), bete *imv. pl.* (5591).

synne (A.S. synn, L. dat. acc. sunne, O. sinne), 824 f (-n D), 1937 f (-n C), 3755 f (-n CD), 5423 f, 6244 f (-n C); *-e*, 556.

Rhyme words.—inne *in* (824, 1937, 3755, 5423), wynne *inf.* (824, 6244), I gynne *ind.* (1937), twynne *subj.* 1 *sg.* (5423).

throwe (A.S. þrág, L. þrowe, O. þraȝhe), 1772 f (throw D), 2740 f, 5046 f, 7824 f (trowe B).

Rhyme words.—lowe *adv.* (1772), knowe *inf.* (2740, 7824), ouerthrowe *inf.* (5046), *p.p.* (7824).

trouthe, trowthe (A.S. tréowð, tréowðu, L. treouðe, O. trowwþe), 450 ‡ D, 584 f, 770 f, 1409 (-[e] B), 1435 f, 1575 f, 1750 f, 1927, 2043 f, 2223 f, 2366 f, 2588 f (-th B), 2962 f, 3624[1], 3805 (*-e* † y D), 4354 f, 6139 f, 6153 f, 6272 f, 6334 f, 7364 f, 7749 f, 7949 f, 8042 (-[e]? D), 8049 f; *-e*, 676, 691 (-e † wolde C), 899

[1] trouthe plyght A, *-e* I plighte (i. e. i-plight) B, *-e* y-plight D, treuthe plyȝt C.

(-th B),[1] 988, 1047, 1054 (D †), 1245,[2] 1364, 1591, 2168 (-th B), 2282, 2447, 2975 (-th B), 3005, 3478 (-th B), 3834, 3953, 4071, 4139, 4228, 6311 ABC,[2] 7418 ACD, 7521, 7777 (hertes † pete C), 7798, 7980, 8034 (-th B), 8070, 8141; *-e* here (*poss. sg.*), 2771 (-th B); *-e* here (*dat.*), 5107 ABD; *-e* he, 8039; trouth ‡ hold, 2168 D; trouthę the, 1255 (heed D); -ę but, 831 (-e C) (cf. 2771 † B, 6311 † D, 7418 † C).—vntrouthe, 7461 f (ontreuthe C, vntrought D); *-e*, 3826 (-th BD, ontreuthe C); -trothe, 7811 (-trouth BD, ontreuthe C). (Old-style figures indicate that D omits -e.)

Rhyme words.—routhe (*all but* 2043), slouthe (2043, 2223, 2588, 7949). [Var. BC treuthe; B trouhte, throuth; D trougth.]

truwe, trewe (A.S. tréow, cf. also trúwa), truwe, 5974 f (trewe CD) (: in muwe (mewe CD)); truwe, 5976 (trewe C, treus ‡ be D); trewe, 4621 ABC, 4720 (trew B, trews D).

tyde (A.S. tíd, L. dat. tide, O. tid), 947 f ( [t]yde C) (: abyde *inf.*: hide *imv. sg.*), 5739 f (: syde), 7063 f (: side).—meltid ‖ that, 2641 (meel(i)-ted B, melë ‡ that C, *om.* † D); tid but, 2824 AC (tyd B, -ë ‡ lost D); tyd that, 1228 C (tymę A, tymë BD).

wene (A.S. wén, *f.*;. also wéna, -an, *m.*, Gn.; L. wene, buten (wihuten) wene, O. wen, wiþuten wen), withouten ony wene, 6255 f (: shene *adj. def.* : queene).

while, whyle (A.S. hwíl, L. while, O. whil, while), 328 f, 718 f, 1353 f, 1592 f, 2768 f, 2892, 3618 f (wyse † C), [3919 † f CD,] 3920 f, 4663 f, 4922 f, 5366, 6764 f, 7245 f, 7638 f; *-e*, 2684, 2941 (whil(y) and A), 3292 (whiche † B), 3336 (wise ‡ D), 5781, 7291; *-e* he, 3380 (Ther while he AB, The while he CD) [ , 7289 D (*l.* wight) ]; whilę ‖ which(e), 3277 AB (-ë which C, - [ë] that D).

Rhyme words.—smyle *inf.* (328, 1592), bygyle *inf.* (718, 1353, 4663, 4922, 6764, 7245), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (7638), wyle (718, 1353, 3920), gyle (3618), affyle *inf.* (2768), myle (6764). [Var. B. qwhile, 5781, qwyle, 6764.]

Note.—As adverb,—*whil* (without sounded -e) (O. whil): cf. 468, 536, 3016, 5167, 5339, 5745, 5925, 6048, 6326; for *whilę*, cf. 315 AB (whilys ? C), 536 D, 5167 D, 5339 D, 6326 D; whilę he, 5745 BD.—536 C, 6048 D, 6326 A, should be emended so as to keep *whil*.

wounde (A.S. wund, L. O. (*obl.*) wunde), 858 f (-d D), 1081 f (-d BD), 1241 f (-d D), 4539 f (-d D), 5257 f, 5289 f, 7866 f (D †; 7865 † f C).

Rhyme words.—grounde *n.* (858, 7866), stounde (1081, 4539, 5257 † D, 5289, 7866), bounde *p.p.* (858), y-founde, founde *p.p.* (5257 ABC, 5289), the secunde (-ou-) (1241), abounde *inf.* (1241). [Var. C. wonde.]

wrathe, wratthe, wraththe (A.S. (N.) wræð(ð)o, L. wrąððe, wræððe, O. wraþþe), 6054 (wreth[e] B, wrethe C), 6510 (wreth[e] BD,

[1] In C insert [*by*].

[2] Read *al*[*le*] (*a*H[*e*]) in 1245 CD, 6311 ABC.

wrethe C)[1]; *-e*, 7323 (wrath B, wrethe C, wreth D), 7619 (wrethe C, wrath D), 8163 (wrath BD); *-e* hast, 933 (wrothe D, wrethë ‡ C). [wrethe, 2952 ‡ C.]

wrecche (A.S. wrǽc *ultio, miseria*, L. wreche, O. wræche), *-e*, 1869 (-ë ‡ is D), 7253 (wrech D; C †), 7259.

Note.—In 1869 *wrecche* = misery; in the other two cases it = vengeance.

yerde (A.S. gerd, W.S. gierd, gyrd, L. ȝerd, ȝeord, O. ȝerrde), 740 f (yerd D), 1239 f (-d D), 2512 f (ȝerd D), 3909 f (ȝerd D); *-e*, 257 (wand ‡ that D), 2979 (-ë † eke D).

Rhyme words.—answer(e)de *ind.* 3 *sg.* (740), ferde *subj.* 3 *sg.* (740, 1239), herde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (3909), *subj.* 3 *pl.* (2512). [Var. BCD ȝerde.]

youthe (A.S. geoguð, Ps. iuguð, L. ȝuȝeðe), 975 f (ȝouthe BCD) (: kouthe *subj.* 3 *sg.* : nowthe).

## § 10. Nouns in *-ynȝ, -ynge.*

I. The following list includes such nouns (including "gerunds") in *-ynge* as rhyme with an infinitive in the *Troilus*. All the rhyme-words are recorded in each case. D almost always lacks -e in this ending, but I have not taken the superfluous trouble to register this lack of -e. Minute varieties of spelling are also disregarded.

calkulynge (kalkelyng C, calkelyng D), 71 (: brynge).

compleynynge, 4903 (: sprynge).

comynge, 3801 (: brynge), 6866 (-g C) (: synge).

helpynge, 853 (he[l]pynge A) (: synge).

konnynge, 2943 (: brynge).

sobbynge, 5796 (wepynge C) (: brynge).

taryinge, 7137 (: brynge : arguynge *ptc.*).

tellyng (-e B), 743 (in his counseyl tellyng) (: sprynge).

tydynge, 2036 (: synge).

wytynge, 1321 (wet- C) (: rynge : lyuyng *ptc.*).

II. Here follow all the other cases of nouns in *-ynge* in rhyme. Where no note is added, the rhyme-words are other nouns in *-ynge*; an asterisk indicates that the rhyme-word is a present participle (or participial adjective) in *-ynge*; an asterisk and an old-style verse-number indicate that one rhyme-word is a noun in *-ynge*, the other a present participle.

byfallyng (-e B), 5680 f.

cherysshynge (cherisynge B, -isyng C, -isshing D), 6196 f.

chetorynge (chit- B), 1153 f.

compleynynge, *1645 f.

[1] That half so loth yowre wraththe (wreth BD, wrethe C) wolde (wold B) deserue.

comynge, 3038 f.
deyinge, 572 f (de[y]inge B).
doyng (-e B), 1119 f (: thyng D).
dwellynge, *304 f.
festenynge, *6818 f (feestynge B, festyng C, noon ‡ thing D).[1]
fors-ȳnge, 5651 f.
guerdonynge, 1477 f (-g CD).
gynnynge, *377 f ((by)gynnyng D).
langwysshynge, 569 f (-guyssinge B, -guissyng C).
louynge, 1476 f (-g CD).
lyuynge, 197 f.
meuynge, *285 f (-n- B, menyng C, mevyng D).
preyinge, 571 f (-g C).
purueyinge, *5648 f (-ueȳnge B, -uy[i]nge D), *5677 f.
semynge, *284 f.
shewynge, 5678 f (sh[e]w- B).
slomerynge, 1152 f (-berrynge B, slombryng ? D).
taryinge, *7938 f (-g CD).
warnynge, 3037 f.
weddynge, 6198 f (-g CD).
wenynge, 5654 f.
weymentynge, 1150 f.
witynge, 5653 f (wet- B, weting D).
wonderynge, 1120 f (-[e]rynge B, wondur ‡ thyng D).
wynnynge, 199 f.

goynge, 5596 f (: whan I hym brynge).
heriynge, 2890 f (-y[i]nge B) (: brynge *subj.* 3 *sg.*).
in-comynge, 2393 f (: brynge *ind.* 1 *sg.*).
rekenynge, 2725 f (-g CD) (: brynge *subj.* 2 *pl.*).
taryinge, 2727 f (-g CD) (: brynge *subj.* 2 *pl.*).

Note the exceptional rhyme in,—
byfallyng, 5738 f (-e B) (: thing : comynge *ptc.*).

III. Nouns in *-ynge*, *-yng*, before consonants. (D has almost always *-yng*)

[abettyng, 1442 D (*l.* abet).]
bygȳnnynge, 1876 (begìnnyng ‡ oftyn C).
comȳnge, 4803 (-e [the] C).
dȯrryng, 7200 (duryng B, dorynge (to) C, doyng † D).

[1] EC one syllable short: *l.* festenynge.

fàllyng, 5683 (-ę BD).
faỳlyng, 921 (-ę B, D †).
gòyngę, 5959; goingę, 6006 ‡ C (gòing ‡ D, wèndyng A, wèndyngę B).
haùkyngę, 4621.
kèpyng, 200 (-ę BC, D †).
kònnyngę, 662 (cùnnyng D, cùnnyng is ‡ C); connỳng, 1089 G (con(i)ỳngę B, C *cut out*, comỳngę † A, comỳng † D).[1]
làngurỳngę, 6405 ‡ C.
lèsyng, 3672 (-ę B, lesyng(is) C).
likingę, 4315 † C.
lòkyng, 173, 293 (-ę BC), 8183 (-ę B).
lòuyngę, 1144 B (A † *om.*, of louë so ‡ D).
màkyng, 8152 (-ę B).
mènyngę, 7510 (-g [now] C).
preỳsyng, 2674 (-ę B).
ràueshỳng, 62 (ràuysỳngę B, ràvysshỳng D).
sittyng, 5700 (-ę B), 5704 (-ę BD).
tùrnyng 856 (-ę C, tornyngę B).
wèndyng, 6006 (-ę B, goingę ‡ C, gòing ‡ D).
wèpyngę, 5199 (sòrwë ‡ C), 5548 (-ę B, *-e* hym ‡ C).
The cause of his comynge (-yng D) thus answerede, 2187 (causë?).

IV. Before vowels and -h (vowel, unless otherwise noted).

àkynge, 1081.
auỳsyng here, 2999 (*-e* B, avisid ‡ D, and send † C).
bùrynge (*dissyl.*), 7862 (brennynge C, burying (*dissyl.*) D).
callkulỳnge, 6060 (kakelyng ‡ C, calkelỳng D).
chaùngyng, 3391 (*-e* B, schaungyng C); *-e*, 4893 (eschaungë of? D); schaungyng, 5060 C ‡ (lòkyng AD, lòkynge B).
còmyng, 3763; *-e* is, 5169; -ỳng, 3754 (*-e* B); còmynge hom, 7743 (*-e* à-ʒen † C); còmyng into, 4294 (*-e* BC).
dàwyng, 4308 (dawnynge BD).
dissimulynge, 7976 (dishomblynge † C).
dòyng, 1125 (*-e* B, dèlyng D).
drècchyng, 3695 (*-e* B).
èsyng, 2372 (*-e* BC).
fàllynge, 5723.
fècchyng, 7253 (*-e* B, fechyng hom † C, fètting of D).
fèlyng, 3932 (*-e* BD, fỳllyng † C); fèlyng han, 4175 (*-e* B, -g haue E).

[1] connyng Digby Hl. 4912, konnyng E, commyng Cp. Durh., comyngę John's, comyng Phillipps MS.

flèmyng, 3775 (-*e* B).
gòynge how, 5764.
gỳdyng, 7006 (-*e* BC, guiding D).
gỳnnyng hath, 1756 (bygynnyng † D).
hàrmyng, 2225 (-*e* BC).
hèlpyng, 857 (hèlynge B, hèlyng D).
konnỳng, 2164 (-*e* B, cunnỳnge C, cunnỳng D); kònnynge, 3841 (knòwynge C, kùnnyng D); kònnyng hem, 83 (knòwynge him B, knòwynge hem C, kunnyng[ë] hem ‡ D); kònnynge hadde, 7229 (knòwynge C, konnỳng ‡ and ? D).
kỳssyng, 4245 (-*e* BC).
làngwysshỳng, 529 (-*e* B, -guissyng C, -guysshyng D).
lòkyng, 182 (-*e* B, -ỳng and ? D), 1619 (-*e* B), 5020 (-*e* B), 5060 (-*e* B, schaùngyng C); -*e*, 4790 (tèllynge † C, lòkyng † D).
lòuyng, 55 (-*e* B), 1003 (-*e* BC); -*e*, 8196; -*e* how, 3.
màkynge, 3131 (-g [of] avaunt[es] D).
mèd[e]lyng, 4829 ‡ A (mèdlynge B, mèdęlyng C, mèdlyng D).
mètyng, 4554.
pàrtyng here (*eam*), 4370 (-*e* BC).
poùring, 4302 (-*e* B, -*e* [in] D).
preỳsyng, 3057 (-*e* B, -g [of] D, [in] preisyng C).
pursùing, 2820 ‡ C.
ràuęsshynge, 7258 (to rauysshęn any B, to rauych ony C, to rauissh any D)[1]; ràuysshỳng, 5210 (rauaschyng C).
[rehètyng †, 3191 D.]
rèsonỳnge, 5708.
scòrnyng, 105 (-*e* C, scornë ‡ of D).
scỳnge, 5085.
shrỳkyng, 6745 (schrychynge B, strichinge C, shrikyng D).
sìkynge he, 724 (sighyng D).
slòmberỳng, 6609 ‡ C (pl. ABD).
slỳnging of ‡, 2026 C.
sỳttyng, 5696 (-*e* B).
tàryinge (*dissyl.*) of, 7800 AC (tàrrynge B, tàriyng (*dissyl.*) D).
tèllynge, 4790 † C.
titęrỳng, 2829 (-*e* B, tìtęryng C) [perh. tìtërỳng in AD, -ërỳnge in C].
tòkęnynge, 5532 (-g CD, tòknynge B); -*e* herte, 5441.
twỳnnynge, 5965 (-g CD).
vỳsitỳnge, 1126.

[1] Read *hen[ne]s forth* in AD.

wàggynge, 2830.
wàlyng, 408 (wailynge B, wele † and C, weylyng D).
wèndyng, 6098 (-e B, wẏndyng C), 6292 (-e B).
wèpyng, 701 (-e BC), 5603 (-e BCD); -e, 6439 (-ing? D), 7872 (C †).
whẏsprynge, 2838 (whisperyngis ‡ C, whistryng † D).
writynge, 7732 (at (the) wrìtyng C); wrẏtyng, 8157 (-e B).

Observe,—

comẏngë ànd, 4517 AB (-e & ek C, -g and eke D). And compare,—
comẏngë || thus, 2187 ABC (-[e] D); *or*, the cause of his còmynge (?).

§ 11. The following feminine nouns with long stem-syllables do not take -e in the *Troilus* (cf. Child, § 17):

(i.) ā- stem,—*forward;* (ii.) i- stems,—*bench, might, plit, sped, thrift, wight, won, world;* (iii.) consonant stems,—*bok, nyght, ok.* In the case of *bench*, the example is not decisive.

Note.—*Candele* (A.S. *candel, condel*, f.) is always dissyllabic,—candele to, 3983 (-del D, cardele † C); -dele in, 3701 (-dell D). For *sholder* (A.S. *sculdor*, f., m., *-ru*, n. pl., see R. von Fleischhacker, *Trans. Philol. Soc.* for 1888-90, p. 241), cf. 2756. For *cedre*, see § 29; for *hond*, see § 13; for *helpe*, see § 9. *Mylk*, 2011 f C, is an error for *bon*.

bench (A.S. benc), on bench hym, 1176.

bok, book (A.S. bóc), 4679 f (-e D) (: forsook *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*), 6654 f (-e BD) (: wook : took *both pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*). Before consonants,—1095, 1180, 1189 (*metre?*), 1196, 4660 (-e D), 4688, 6948 (boue † D); 8149 (-e D), 8152 (-e D); before vowels,—1171 (AB *too long*), 3345 (-e B, -e D †). O moral Gower this boke I directe, 8219 ABD.

forward (A.S. foreweard), 6860.

might, myght, (A.S. mi(e)ht, meht, L. mihte, O. mihht, acc. dat. mihhte), (i.) nom., 2058 [,4599 † C (pl. ACE)], 7782 AD, 7801 f, 8117 f (-e B); acc., 33 (-e D), 227 f, 1264 f, 1718 f, 2425 f (-e B), 3354 f, 3496 f, 4247, 5148 f (-e B), 5281 f, 5602, 6478 f, 7046 f, 7229 f, 7284 f, 7464 f; with, 1419 f, 1954 f, 2083 f, 2637 f, 2770 (-t alone † D), 3020 f, 3278 f (-e B), [3843 † f C,] 6149 f, 6438 f (-e B); by, 5210 f (nyght B)[1]; of, 4618 f, 6435, 7201 f; to, 6491 f (-e B); for, 7322; through, 6200 f (-e B), 7613 f (-e B); emforth, 3841 f (emfor[th] C, after ‡ D). (ii.) nom., 1260, 2849, 2851, 2870 (-t † hym D); acc., 8067 (-e B); with, 3085, 8084 (m. [y]serued B, herte D); by, 6708[2]; on, 5857 (mi3t(es) D); thorugh, 2402; acc., myght hire, 45 (m. their D).—thourgh myghte, 5778 f AB (-t CD) (: nyght *nom.*).

[1] In A read *by* for *my*. [2] Dele (&) in C; insert [*it*] in B.

Rhyme words.—knyght (227, 1264, 1419, 1718, 1954, 3020, 3278, 3841, 5281, 6149, 6200, 6478, 7201, 7229, 8117), nyght (2083, 2125, 2637, 3278, 3354, 5778, 6491, 7046, 7284, 7464, 7801, 8117), wyght *n.* (1264, 4618, 5210, 6200, 6438, 6491, 7201, 7229, 7613), dight *p.p.* (4618), vpright (1419), aryght (2083, 3496), a-noon right (2637), vnright *n.* (5210), right *pred. adj. sg.* (3841), right *adv.* (7613), lyght *pred. adj. sg.* (5148, 6438 7046), bryght *adj. post.-pos.* (7284), byhight *p.p.* (7464). [Var. B 33 mygth ; C myȝt, myth 1954 ; D miȝt.]

nyght (A.S. neht, Midl. also næht, E.W.S. nieht, L.W.S. niht, L. niht, dat. nihte, O. nihht), (i.) nom., 2075, 3640, 4253, 4508, 5776 f, 6907 f, 7044 f, 7282 f (C †); *time*, 1174 (D †), 2423 f (-e B), 3071 f, 3281 f, 3356 f (-e B), 3476, 3552, 3756 f (-e B), 4157, 4399, 5175 f (-e B), 5315, 6494 f, 7466 f, 7543,[1] 8118 f (-e B); acc., 7022 f (nygh(t) B); nyght by nyght, 7003 f (n. & n. D); next, 944; to, 2081 f (into, D), 3511, 7532,[2] 7799 f; on, 4021 (lyght † B; of, C); vpon, 7148 f; in, 6826 f (-e B); ouer, 2634 f; of, 2052 f (thour, C), 4488 f; after, 5083 f; a fourtë-nyght, 6697 f (-e B, fortenyȝt C); in fourtënyght, 5989 (in † fortune nyȝt C); syn mydnyght,[3] 3444 (tul, D).—(ii.) nom., 1983; acc., 3183; voc., 4271; *time*, 3379, 3392, 7156; at, 7559 (at n. with C); by, 452; ouer, 2598 (to ‡, D [2]); at n. he, 2625; at n. homward, 4711 (at n. ‡ thei D).—by nyghte, 7065 (-t BCD), 7517 (-t BCD).

Rhyme words.—myght, myghte *n.* (2081, 2423, 2634, 3281, 3356, 5776, 6494, 7044, 7282, 7466, 7799, 8118), wyght (3071, 3756, 5083, 5175, 6494, 6697, 7148), knyght (3281, 3756, 4488, 6697, 8118), light *n.* (6907, 7003), *pred. adj. sg.* (7044), bryght *adj. post.-pos.* (2052, 6826, 7282), right *acc.* (5175), aryght (2081), anoon right (2634), as lyne right (3071), vnright *adv.* (7022) yhight *p.p.* (6907), byhight *p.p.* (7466). [Var. C nyȝt (nyȝ, 4167) ; D night, niȝt.]

ok (A.S. ác), 2465 f (ooke B, okes † D) (: strok *n.*); 2420 (okę D), 2474 (okę D). [Var. B ook].

plit, plyt (A.S. pliht, *m. f.*, L. pliht, plihte, O. plihht; influenced by O. Fr. plite), (i.) 1159 (-ę BD), 1797 f (-e BD), 3881 f, (-e BCD), 3981 (-ę B), 4219 f (-e BE), 4396. (ii.) 2816 (-*e* D), 3088, 4322 (place ‡ D); plyt he, 2823 (-*e* he D).

Rhyme words.—delit (delite) *n.* (1797, 4219), despit (despite) (1797, 3881, 4219). [Var. BCDE plit(e); BD plyt(e); C plyȝt, pliȝt; D pliȝt.]

sped, speed (A.S. spéd spéd, L.[a] ispede, [b] spede, O. sped), s. be, 1036 (speedę B, spedę D); s. fro, 1094 (-ę B, -*e* herafter D); s. al, 17 (spedë ‡ though D).

thryft (O.N. þrift), (i.) 3713 (-ę B), 4091 (-ę BD, thrif C), 6292 (-ę BD). (ii.) 1667, 3789 ([good] th. A); th. haue, 1932 (C †)[4], 2772

[1] C, metre ?
[2] D, metre ?
[3] Supply [*in*] in A.
[4] In A supply [*so*].

(C †); th. he, 2568.—vnthrift that he, 5093 BC (vnthryf [that] he A). [Var. BCD thrift, BD thrifte.]

wight, wyght (A.S. wiht, wuht, wyht, *f.*, *n.* (Sievers § 267, n. 3), L. wi*k*t, whit, O. wihht, P. Pl.[b] wyght,[c] wight, wiht, wi*g*t), 101 f, 163 f, 1072 f, 1265 f ABC, 1535 f, 3068 f, 3621 f (-e B), 3754 f, 4126 f, 4617 f, 4635 f, 5070 f, 5085 f, 5108 f, 5178 f, 5213 f, 5406 f, 6197 f, 6287 f, 6435 f, 6493 f, 6527 f, 6694 f, 6718 f, 7150 f, 7198 f, 7226 f (-e B), 7478 f, 7611 f (-e B), 7710 f, 7918 f. *Before consonants:* 13 (-*e* a ‡ D), 534 (-ę D), 685 (wygh A, thinge B), 692, 1031 (nonwyt ‡ C), 1058, 1121 AB (D †), 1273, 1432, 1613, 1655, 1881, 1916, ABC (D †), 2079, 2120, 2663, 2945, 3074 (man D[1]), 3213, 3300, 3338 (wit † C, sight † D), 3445, 3517 (-ę B), 3534 (man CD), 3598 (hem not ‡ C), 3602, 3631 (whit C[2]), 4633, 4947 (-ę D, which † C), 5027, 5053 (wit † C), 5914, 6825, 6923, 6988, 7242 (-ę B), 7730, 7798, 8208.—*Before vowels:* 268, 382,[3] 690,[4] 1372,[5] 1481, 2033, 2739,[6] 2869, 3275 (iche in ‡ CD), 3586, 5917 (wy*g*t his? C, wight his D), 6851, 7290 (w. his BD, with ‡ C.—*Before* h: w. hadde, 500 (D †); w. hath, 2669 (men have ‡ D), 6736; w. he, 7289 (C om. ‡ (*hiatus*), while † he D).

Rhyme words.—knyght (163, 1072, 1265, 1535, 3621, 3754, 5406, 6197, 6694, 7198, 7226, 7918), nyght (3068, 3754, 5085, 5178, 6493, 7150), fourtenyght (6694), myght (1265, 4617, 5213, 6197, 6435, 6493, 7198, 7226, 7611), ryght *n.* (4126, 4635, 5108, 5178, 7710), *adv.* (101, 7611), as lyne right (3068), aright (5070, 7478), vnright *n.* (1535, 5213), light *n.* (5406), *pred. adj. sg.* (5070, 6435, 6718, 7478), bright *adj. indef.* (163, 6527), plyght *p.p.* (3621), hight *p.p.* (5108, 6287), dight *p.p.* (4617), byhyght *p.p.* (6718). [Var. B wy*g*t, witht, wygth, wyth; C wy*g*t, wi*g*t; C[c] whi*g*t; D whi*g*t.]

won (O.N. ván), ther was non other won, 5843 f (-e BD) (: noon *pron.*: agon *p. p.*).

world (A.S. woruld, W.S. weorold, L. weorld, weorlde, O. weorelld), (i.) nom., 3264 (w. hit D), 3302 (wor[l]d C), 3318, 3481, 5052 (-ę D), 5985 (-ę BD, w. [ne] C), 7014 (-ę D), 7196 (-ę D),[7] 8111 (-ę D), 8204 (-ę B); voc., 4868 AB (-ę D); acc., 504 (-ę D), 3215, 4272, 4593 (ę? E), 5177 (C †, -ę D), 5860 (-ę D †)[8]; in, 1262, 1320, 2855 (wor[l]d A, wirk † D), 3132 (-ę B)[9], 5048 (-ę BD), 5802 (-ę D), 6308 (-ę BD), 6805 (-ę D), 7085 (-ę D); out of, 41 (-ę D), 5613 (-ę BD); of, 1495; for, 1214 (-ę B, wor[l]d C), 6099 (-ę D), 8060 (-ę D); thorugh-out, 7425 (-ę D, wo[r]ld B). (ii). nom., 1573, 3370,

[1] Read in C, *wy*g*t was woyd*[*cd*].
[2] = person.
[3] Supply [*y*] in D (*y-born*).
[4] Supply [*for*] in AD.
[5] Supply [*a*] in A, [*for*] in D.
[6] D unmetrical.
[7] Supply [*that*] in D.
[8] CD read *in* †.
[9] AC defective.

3392; voc., 211; acc., 1505, 4563, 5284 (*-e* D), 8180; in, 1378, 1383, 3167 (w. ‡ now D); out of, 5442 (-ë gon D)[1]; fro, 5831 (*-e* BD, wor[l]d was C); for, 4086 (wor[l]d A), 5961 (*-e* D), 5998 (*-e* D); in . . . w. here, 3678.—on of this world [the] beste y-preysed, 7836 A (worldę the best [i-]preysed B, world (-ę DG) the (*om.* D) beste (best D) i-preysed(e) C).— world(ę) (*acc.*) may, 4446 A (world BCD).

§ 12. Apocope of A.S. -n in nouns is found in the *Troilus* in the following words (cf. Child, § 15; ten Brink, §§ 203, 207):

*morwe* (A.S. morgen, *m.*, o-stem), *eue* (A.S. ǽfen, *n.*, *m.*, jo-stem), *game* (A.S. gamen, *n.*, o-stem), *mayde* (A.S. mægden, *n.*, o-stem), *kynrede* (A.S. cyn(n) + rǽden, *f.*, jā-stem). Compare also *melle* (*mylle*) (A.S. mylen, myln, *m.*) and *fast* (A.S. fæsten, *n.*, jo-stem).

eue, eeve (A.S. ǽfen, é́fen, *n.*, *m.*, L.[a] æuen,[b] heue, O. efenn), 2386 f (euen : leue B), 3437 f, 6977 f, 7377 f, 7505 f (euene C : grene (*l.* -ue)); at, 3402 f, 6844 f; it wol neygh euën be, 7500 (euyn CD); *time*, eue, 7088; euęn and, 487 (eue BD, euyn (?) C).

Rhyme words.—leue *noun* (2386, 3402, 3437, 6844, 6977, 7377), bleue *inf.* (6844), to-cleue *inf.* (6977), by greue (7505).

game (A.S. gamen, gomen, *n.*, L. gomen, gome, game), nom., [372 † f D,[2]] 868 f, 1123 (-ën B, *-e* D),[3] 1732 f, 3968 f, 6225 f; acc., 5224 f; for, 3478 f (a-game BD, on g. C), 6127 f; of, 3926 f, 6783 f (fame † C); lettë-game, from, 3369 f (of, BC, of . . . let[të]-game D).—gamę, acc., g. bygonne ‡, 3092 A (gamën pleye B, -ë pleye C, gamę ‡ to D).—game, nom., 4336 (gam B); acc., 2195 (gamyn in C); bytwene, 3096 (gam B); a game, 3490 (on g. C, a-gamę ‡ that D), 3492 (on g. C)[4] (cf. 3478 f).

Rhyme words.—shame *n.* ([372 D], 868, 1732, 3478, 3968, 5224, 6127, 6225), name *n.* (6127, 6225), tame *adj.* (3369), frame *inf.* (3369), to blame (3926, 6783), defame *inf.* (5224).

kynrede (A.S. cyn(n), *n.*, + rǽden, *f.*, cf. hús-rǽden, mǽg-rǽden, etc., P. Pl.[c] of kynredene, [b] kynrede), 7342 f (ken- C, kynred D) (: out of drede).

mayde (A.S. mægden, L.W.S. mǽden, *n.*, L. maiden, maide, O. maȝȝdenn, P.Pl. mayden, mayde), nom., 1965 f (: Criseyde : seyde

[1] world a-gon A; worlde gon B (*defective*); world i-gone C; worldë gon D.
[2] L. *grame* (AB; C gaine †).
[3] gamë shent A, -ën shente B, *-e* y-shent D.
[4] In the last two examples the MSS. have no hyphens; 3490 ABD may then (possibly) be acc., 3492 ABD may (not improbably) be nom.

*inf.* 3 *s.f.*); acc., maydë fre, 7838 (-en B); *-e*, nom., 7836 A(?) BCD; *-e* of, 8232.—cf. mayden bright, nom., 166; mayden, acc., 1168.[1] [Var. BD maide; BCD maydyn.]

morwe, morwen (A.S. morgen, *m.*, tó morgen, dat. morne, L. morȝen, morȝe, morwe, P.Pl. morwe, morwen), I. morwe, (i.) nom., 944 f[2] 1150, 4311 f (-owe D *late hand*), 7393 (-ën B); *time indicated*, 487 f (on, C), 2183 f, 4405, 7048 f, 7088 f, 8024 f; to, 861 f, 2518, 3227, 3731 f, 4759[3] f, 6660 f, 7307 f, 7889 f; vnto, 6768 f; til, 6279 f (to = til C, til (to) m. D); on, o-, a-, 1490 f, 2573, 2606 f, 3265 (-ën B)[4], 4397 (-[e] B), 6105 f, 6377 f, 7467; on half a m., 5970 f (morǫwe D); by, 2046 f, 7015 f (-ǫwe D), 7237 f; of, 3903 f. [to morwę ‡ wele, 7358 C (*-e* ABD).] (ii.) morwe, to, 2583, 3651 (to more A), 3690, 3692 (-(yn) C), 7114 (D †), 7358 ABD; on, a-, o-, 2179, 3394, 6882, 7555 (-(yn) C); on the *-e* he, 6649.—II. morwën,—the m. com, 2640 (-yn C), in a m. sterue, 3231 (on a m B, on a morwyn C).

Rhyme words.—borwe *inf.* (487, 7088), to borwe *dat.* (2046, 2606, 8024), sorwe (*everywhere*). [Var. morw, B 1490, 3651, 3690, 4311, 6768, 6882, 7015, 7114, C 2583, 4311.]

mylle? (A.S. mylen, myln, *m.*), myl[lë]-stones, 2469 AD (mylnë stones B, mellë stonys C[c], melnë stones G, milnë stones Cp.). [melle, C.T. 3921 f, 4240 f; mylle, 4019; millen, 4039: *Child*, § 16. So melle *nom.* (: the coldë welle, *The Former Age*, 6, Skeat, *Minor Poems*, p. 186. A.S. mylen-stán, P. Pl.[c] mulle-stones.]

fast (A.S. fæsten, *n.*, O. fasste), of, (*bef. vowel*) fast, 6733 (*-e* D).

Note.—With these may be compared *a-swowne*, 3934 f (on s. C, in a swoun D) (: out of towne) (L. iswowen, iswoȝen, AS. geswógen *p.p.*).

§ 13. *Hond* (A.S. hond, *fem.* u-*stem*) takes -e in the dative phrases *on honde, yn honde.*

Note.—"Dativ auf *-e* bei consonantisch auslautendem Nom. liegt vor in *honde*, woneben *hond* gilt (A.E. *honda hond*):" ten Brink, § 209. It will be observed, however, that the dative in -e is used only in certain idiomatic phrases which had an existence independent in some measure of that of the noun (cf. infra. § 14).

honde (A.S. hand, hond, *f.*, L. hand, hond, dat. -e, O. hand, wiþþ hannd, wiþþe hande), on h., 3779 f (in hond D), 3996 f, 6066 f; yn h., 1288 f (hond D), 1302 f (on hende C, on hond D), 1562 f (-d D), 2307 f (holde † C), 3615 f (hand D), 7734 f, 7978 f, 8043 f. [acc., hondë ‡ vp, 2287 A (*pl.* BCD); -ë † wrong, 5833 A (*pl.* BCD.]

[1] A remarkable succession of *-en*'s: "herden a mayden reden."
[2] Old-style figures indicate that D has *morow* (before vowels, *-ǫw*).
[3] to = till.
[4] morǫw whan D.

hond, (i.) acc., 1378 (-ę D); by the h., [2266 f † C (hood AD, hoode B),] 4579 (-ę D); of othęres h., 8127 (-ę B), cf. 2090; with rakel h., 1060; withouten h., 3030 (-ę B).—(ii.) [voc., 4103 † B (bond AC, god † D);] acc., 6515 (-*e* BC), 7236 (-*e* B, haue † D); into hire h., 433; of here h., 2140 (-*e* B)[1]; yn thyn h., 1046 (-*e* B); in goddes h., 4027 (-*e* B, sonde ‡ D); on h., 4702 ‡ A (in honde B, in hond D), 6428 AB (-*e* D); by the h., 1173, 6444 (-*e* B, -ë ‡ sobirly D); by the h. here, 2689 (-*e* B).

Rhyme words.—stonde *inf.* (1302, 8043), vnderstonde *inf.* (2307, 3615), *p.p.* (6066, 7978), withstonde *inf.* (1288, 3780), ystonde *p.p.* (7978), fonde *inf.* (1562, 3996, 6066), bonde *p.p.* (2307), sonde *n.* (7734). [Var. D hand.]

§ 14. The following masculine and neuter nouns which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant in the nominative sometimes or always take an -e in one or more cases in the *Troilus:*

(i.) masculine o- stems,—*borh, botm, clúd, déaþ, fár* (*fér*), *græf* (*graf*), *grund, -hád, héap, heofon, pín* (m. ?), *prím* (m. ?), *scrín, síþ, stéger, steal*(*l*), *téar, tún, -twist, weg, wer;* (ii.) neuter o-stems,—*cræt, fýr, gæt* (*geat*), *géar* (*gér*), *gód, hors, líf, los, síþ, tempel, -wíl, wolcen;* (iii.) neuter jo-stems,—*bed*(*d*), *hiew;* (iv.) neuter wo-stem,—*cnéow;* (v.) masculine i-stem,—*flyht;* (vi.) neuter i-stems,—*ge-fér, (ge)wiht;* (vii.) masculine consonant-stem,—*fót.* For *stere* gubernaculum, see § 2.

(*a*)[2] In some of these words the Chaucerian -e is clearly the Anglo-Saxon dative singular ending. So in *bedde, borwe, dethe, fere* (in *yfere*, see § 88), *fyre, hepe, horse, knowe, lyue, towne, yere.* For most of these a nominative or accusative in a consonant is found in the *Troilus* (thus, *bed, borw, bourgh, deth*, etc.), and in all of them the -e is confined to dative phrases with a preposition. Some of the words, to be sure, exhibit also forms without -e after prepositions that in Anglo-Saxon require the dative; but it will usually be found that such phrases as preserve -e are idioms in which the preposition has come to be very closely associated with the noun, whereas in the (presumably dative) phrases that show no -e the collocation of noun and preposition may be regarded as accidental or occasional. The distinction may be seen by comparing such

[1] Metre in AB ? In D supply [*that*].

[2] The following paragraph was in type before Kluge's note in Paul's *Grundriss*, I, 900, met my eye.

idioms as *to bedde, abedde, to towne, on horse*, on the one hand, with *in his bed, on the bed, on here hors*, on the other. In the first class of examples there is no article or other word between the preposition and the noun : the phrases are units, and as such have an existence more or less independent of the individual history of their component parts (in *abedde, afyre, alyue, yfere*, we have actual compound words). It is easy to see how the Anglo-Saxon dative -e might be lost elsewhere but preserved in these petrifactions. In the second class, on the contrary, we have no such unified phrase, and consequently no -e. The difference is well illustrated by *to dethe* (A.S. tó déaðe) and *to the deth*. In other words, *bed, deth*, etc., were not inflected in the dative by Chaucer. When he appears thus to inflect one of them, he is merely using an inherited petrifaction containing a dative (compare our use of *alive, whilom*). In a few cases, however, an article or pronoun is inserted between the preposition and the noun in these phrases, and the -e still preserved,—by analogy, no doubt. The following list of the phrases included under this present sub-head *a* will make this clear : *abedde, to (unto) bedde, vnto here bedde, to borwe, to dethe, afyre, on fyre, in the fyre, to the fyre, to hepe, on hors*[*e*], *on knowe, on (vpon) lyue, alyue, yn al his lyue*,[1] *in towne, to towne, out of towne, in the towne*[2], *to yere, of fern*[*e*]*yere*. *On grounde* seems to be a similar survival, and stands over against *on a ground* (i.e. on a foundation) : cf. *on the grounde, to grounde, to the grounde, through the grounde* (but *through the ground, vnder the ground*). *Gode* in *to gode* (A.S. tó góde) and the analogous phrases *sownen ynto gode, for gode, for the townes gode*, probably belongs here. (Cf. *on, yn honde*, § 13.)

(*b*) One is tempted to refer to *a* the following phrases : *yn stalle* (but cf. *into a litel oxes stalle*, C. T., E 207, *in an oxe stalle*, id., 398, and see Child § 14, ten Brink § 199 Anm.), *put to flyght*[*e*] (but cf. *to the flyghte*), *to were* (but cf. *to the sorwful were*, Parl. F. 138). In *on the stayre, adoun the stayre, downward a stayre*, we probably have to do with an inorganic -e, not with a dative-ending (cf. *He passeth but oo stayre in dayes two*, Compl. Mars, 129), and so perhaps in *with many a twyste* and *of wighte*. For *vpon a rore*, see § 15.

(*c*) The Chaucerian -e represents an Anglo-Saxon dative plural ending (-um, later -an, L. -en) in *sithe* (as, *an hundred sithe*, cf. *tyme*

[1] *Lyue* is also used in the adverbial phrases *my* (*his, al my*) *lyue* = during my (etc.) life (but see 1140). Cf. also the adverb *blyue*. [2] But,—*in to town*, 4621 f.

and *tymes* in similar phrases, § 2, p. 3, above). So perhaps in *vnder fote* (see Zupitza, Guy, note on v. 598).

(*d*) Unmistakable inorganic -e's appear in the following words, in which -e appears in nominative, accusative, or vocative,—*clowde*, *feere*, *graue*, *heiue*, *pryme* (French influence), *pyne*, *tere* (but also *teer*),[1] *weye* (but also *wey*), *wyle*, *yate*. So also in the suffix *-hede* (but also *-hod*). Cf. also *carte*, *shryne*. In *botme*, *-me* represents Anglo-Saxon syllabic *m* (A.S. botm) (cf. ten Brink, § 199 Anm.). *Temple* represents A.S. *tempel*. In *heuene* (dissyllabic in all cases; before vowels, *heuene*) the MSS. vary between *-ne* and *-en* (*-yn*); for *walkene* (A) there are the variants *walken* (B) and *walkyn* (CD): ten Brink decides for *heven* and *welkne*, but admits *hevne* (§§ 199. 1, 203. 5, 219); but it cannot be regarded as settled whether Chaucer in such cases *said -në*, *-ën*, or *-ę*, whatever he may have *written*.

(*e*) The -e in *the sothe* seems the result of an adjective analogy. But we find also *forsothe* (A.S. *forsóð*,—but *tó sóðe*, *tó sóðon*, *-um*); cf. *for a soth*.

Note 1.—Ten Brink's dictum that the nominative and accusative of neuter vowel stems have "tonloses e durch Analogiewirkung in der Mehrzahl der kurzsilbigen und einigen mehrsilbigen o- Stämmen" (§ 203. 5) gets slight support from the *Troilus*. See the evidence under *bak*, *col*, *god*, *gres*, *los*, *mot*, *path*, *ship* (§ 18, below). *Holë of*, 3443 C (holë D) is an error, and *losse*, *losse* are hardly significant. As to *col* (*cole*), *cole* is the only form recognized by ten Brink, except in composition, but *col* occurs.

Note 2.—For instances of an erroneous -e written, but not pronounced, see especially § 18 under *bor*, *brest*, *cold(e)*, *dom*, *fend(e)*, *flood*, *foul(e)*, *frend*, *gold*, *harm*, *hed*, *hom*, *knyght*, *kyng*, *lord*, *noon*, *reed*, *ryng*, *thing*, *werk*, *wynd*. The following apparently sounded -e's are due to copyists' errors, and are easily corrected by a comparison of MSS.,—*lede* (A.S. léad), 1624 f D (: rede *adj. pl.*); *rymë holde*, acc., 2932 C (rimes ABD); *with the stremë of*, 2971 D; *lossë me*, 4751 D. For *geste* (?) see § 18.

Note 3.—For *thondre* see *thonder* (§ 18). For *angre* see § 19; for *shyure*, *slyure*, see § 15, n. 1. On the confusion between *-er* and *-re* cf. Child § 84 and infra §§ 15, note 1, 29. For *feuere*, *feuer*, see § 18.

bedde (A.S bed(d), *n.*, L. bed, dat. bedde, O. bedd, i min bedd, o bedde), to bedde, 3497 (-[de] D), 3533 (-[de] D), 5905; vnto bedde, 2032 f (& ‡ to bedde C, to her bed D) (: speddo *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*); vnto here bedde wente, 7384 (reste C, rest[e] D); a-bedde, 2390 f (in b. C, a bed D) (: speddo *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*), 3531 (-[de] D), 3535 (-[de] D), 4426 (in b. D), 4521 (-[de] D?).—to bedde he, 1147 (bed D), 6574; a bedde, 908 B (in b. C, in bed D, a bedde and [make] A); a bedde half, 1152.[2]

bed: (i.) vpon his b., 1642 (beddę B); in his, thi, the b., 2395

[1] "Wie es scheint gilt *tere* statt *teer*:" ten Brink, § 199 Anm. But *teer* occurs.

[2] Pandare a-bedde (*so in* ABCp.; a bed DG) ‖ half yn a (*om.* DG) slomerynge (slomberrynge B, slombryng DGCp.). Leaf cut out in C.

(-dę C), 2602 (-dę B), 3897 BCD (*line too long in A*), 6772 (-dę D); into his b., 4377 (-dę A); on herę, the b., 5395 (-dę D), 6657 (-dę D); toward the b., 5017 (-dę? B, D).—(ii.) from his b., 7899 (-de D); in herę b., 5909 (-de BCD), 6709 (-de D, in . . . bed ben ‡ C); in . . . bed he, 4457 (on his bedde he D); vpon . . . bed he, 4918 (-de BD); into bed hym, 3939[1] B (-de C, D ?); vpon . . . bed hym, 4886 (-de D); in . . . bed hym, 7802 (-de D).

Note.—vpon his beddë side, 4896 D, is merely haplography for *beddës sides* (AB, beddys s. C).

borwe (A.S. borh, *m.*, L borh), to, 2048 f (: morwe : sorwe), 2609 f (: morwe : sorwe), 8027 f (: morwe : sorwe).—And I thi borw (borugh B, borow D) fy (*om.* C) no wyght doth but so, 1031.—And I youre bourgh ne neuerę shal for me, 1219 (borugh B, borw C, borow D. [borow 2048 f D, 2609 f D.]

botme (A.S botm, *m.*), in . . . b., 297 (botęme C, botme ‡ hit D); to . . . -e, 1620 (botëme ‡ C, botmë ‡ it D). [Cf. botmeles, § 48, n. 5.]

carte (A.S. cræt, *n.*, L. carte, O. karrte, P. Pl. cart-whel), with, 6641 ABC; nom., farë carte, 7525 f (soory ‡ carte D) (: arte = *art thou*); cart a-mys, acc., 7028 (-e BCD); carte, acc., 4597 ‡ B.

clowde (A.S. clúd, *m.*, *rock*, L. clude, *rock*), nom., 3275 f (cloude BCD) (: kowde *potuit*).—cloud, (ii.) nom., 1851 (-e BC, c. that † D), 1866 (-e BC, cloudis ‡ in D), 4862 (-e BC, D †).—vnder cloud[ë] blak, 175 (-ë BC, vndur blak cloud so D †).

dethe (A.S. déaþ, *m.*, L. dæþ, deþ, etc., dat. deaþe, deþe, O. dæþ, dat. dæþ, dæþe). A dative in -e is preserved only in the phrase *to dethe* (A.S. tó déaþe),—do to dethe, 5439 f ABG (to the dethe D, don to deye C) (: til I vnshethe (conueye C †)); to dethë mote I smetë be, 2230 CD (-[e] BG, to deth[ë] mot I be smet[ë] A). But in *to the deth* no -e is preserved,—to the deth myn herte (= until death, etc.), 6937; vnto the deth myn, 606; vnto my deth to, 7348. [to deth ‡ or, 2840 C (-e D), *and* into myn deth ‡ in, 4934 C, of course prove nothing].—A doubtful line (in which however, we should no doubt read *deth*) is: That of his deth (-ę D) ye be nought (not C, no thing D) to (for to CGCp.) wyte, 1470. In 4082 C, read *deth* (acc.) [*y-*]*schape* (deth is shapen A, deth y-shapen BD).

deth, everywhere else, whether before vowels or consonants (though D often adds -e, which, however, is never sounded, for

[1] A reads "he hym (i. e. he'm) into beddë caste."

3185 D should be corrected). Thus,—nom., 1286 (-*e* D), 2905 (-ę D), 3913 ‡ C, 5132, 5165, 5444 (-ę D, they † C),[1] 5518 (day † C), 5571, 5859, 6257,[2] 7756; acc., 1046, 2980 (D †), 3185 (-ë ‡ sone D), 4419, 7750, 7776, 7920 (day ‡ C), 8081; voc. and exclam., 4912, 5163 (-ę D), 6568 (loude ‡ he C); of (NOT = ex), 527,[3] 799 f (-e D) (: breth *acc.*), 825 (-*e* his D), 1423 (-ę D), 1518 (-*e* D), 2364 (-ę D), 3913 (*nom.* ‡ C), 4903 (C †), 5481 (-ę D), 6109; from the, his d., 469 (D †; dethës = deth his C), 536,[4] 1651 (-*e* hym D), 4085; with my, his, the d., 2952 (-*e* D), 3747 (-*e* he D), 5401[5]; neigh the d., 3204 (-ę D); after the, youre, my d., 5415, 5900, 7054 (day ‡ C), 8035 (day † C); toward my d., 7004 (C ‡); thorugh my d., 7636; for his d., 8185 AB. [Var. BD deeth.]

fere, in *yfere* (var. *in fere*), see § 88.

fere, feere (A.S. fér, fér, *m.*), nom., 3425 f, 3986 f, 4183 f, 4527 f; acc., 3414 f, 3470 f, 3595 f, 4240 f; voc., 4163 f; for fere, 108 f, 768 f, 1388 (-[e] B), 1534 f (fer C), 5334 f, 5863 (B † *om.*, fer[e] D), 5887 (fer ‡ to D), 6025 f, 7272 f, 7966 f; in f., 726 f; yn this f., 1399 (-[e] B); in swych f., 3299 f; of (= gen.), 3932 f.—for fere, 801, 1855 (fer C), 6744 (fer D); for fere he, 875 (fer C); of the feer his, 6619 (fere BD, fer ‡ the C).

Rhyme words.—were *cras* (4163) *erant* (3425, 3470, 3932, 4240), *esset* 726, 768, 3299, 3414, 3986, 4183, 6025, 7966), *essent* (4527, 5334), nere 3 *sing.* (4183), enquere *inf.* (4527), ere, eere (108, 726, 768, 1534, 3299, 3595), tere *n.* (3932), there (3414, 3425, 3470, 3595, 4163, 6025, 7272), where (4240).

flyghte (A.S. flyht, *m.*, L.[a] fluht, dat. -e [b] fliht, dat. -e, O. flihht), to the flyghte, 2324 f (flyȝt C, flight D) (: lyghte *adj. pl.*); is put . . . to flyght[e], 1851 f (: the sonne shyneth bright (-e B)); put to flyght the, 1698 (fleyht C). [in flyȝt as, 6121 † C.]

fote (A.S. fót, L. fot, dat. -e, O. fot, o fot, with fote), vnderfote, 1432 f (foot D) (: bote : rote); in his fot(e), 4034 f (foot B) (: sot : I mot); nom., fot is, 2049 (-*e* C).

fyre, fire (A.S. fȳr, *n.*, L. fur, dat. -e, O. fir), in the fyre, 3553 f (fyr C); to the f., 3820 f (fere BCD); afyre, on fire, 2866 f, 4788 f (fere C), 4846 f (in f. A, on fere C), 5171 f (fere C), 7083 f, 7829 f; a fere, 229 f (a feere B, al fere C, ful † fere D).[6] fyr, fir, (i.) nom., 4475 f (-e BCD), 5080 (-ę BCD); acc., 445 (-ę C, fere D), 2417 f (-e B, fere CD), 3326 f (-e BCD); the ner the fyr the, 449 (fere D).

[1] In 5444 D dele (*the*).
[2] but [if] deth me D.
[3] In C read *to* for *the*.
[4] In C supply [*that*].
[5] In C supply [*to*].
[6] In B insert [*herte*].

(ii.) nom., 436 (fere D †), 490 (-*e* B), 4780 (fer C, fere D); a-fyr, 3698 (-*e* BD, à ‡ fere C); of, 6665 (-*e* D); nom., fyr he, 3267 (-*e* BD, fyr [he] C).

Rhyme words.—ire (2866, 7829), hire, here *n.* (4788, 5171), desire *inf.* (3553, 4846, 7083), *ind.* 1 *sg.* (5171), enspire *inf.* (4846), *imv.* 2 *sg.* (3553); desir *n.* (2417, 3326, 4475), spir (-e BCD) *A.S. spír* (2417), wir (-e BD) *A.S. wír* (4475).

☞ fyre (fere BCD) : dere *adj.* : here *inf.* (3820); a fere : were *essɛ́t:* dere *inf.* (229). [Var. C 490 fuyr; C 449 fyer.]

gode, goode (A.S. gód, *n.*, O. god, inn gode, forr gode), sownen yn-to g., 1029 f (good D) (: vnderstode *subj.* 3 *sg.*); for g., 3766 f (good D) (: stode *ind.* 3 *pl.*); for the townes g., 5215 f (: withstode *subj.* 1 *sg.*); to good[ë] mot it turne, 1175 (-ë BC).

good, (i.) nom., 3950; acc., 1182 A (?) D (-ę B; of, CG, *a dòubtful line*)[1], 2263 f (-e B) (: stood *ind.* 3 *sg.*), 3480 f (-e B) (: on a flode, flood D), 3724 ‡ D, 6469 f (-e B) (: stood *ind.* 3 *sg.*), 7512 f (: hood, -e BD); for al the good, 3220 (-ę B), 5583, 7249 ‡ C.—(ii.) nom., 7739; acc., 4749 (-*e* B), 5073 AD (-*e* B); ayen som g., 7529 (-*e* C).

grave (A.S. græf, graf, *m.*, *n.*, O.N. grǫf, *f.*), nom., 7781 f (: haue *inf.* : saue *inf.*); vnto, 7105 (B † C †).

grounde (A.S. grund, *m.*, L.[a] grund,[b] -e,[ab] dat. -e, O. grund, to grund, to grunde), to the g., 856 f (-d CD), 4906 f; to g., 4707 f (-d D), 4739 f (-d D); on g., 4966; on the g., 7650 f; through the g., 7863 f.

ground, (i.) nom., 939 (-ę B), 1927; through the g., 1190 (-ę B, -d † of D); vnder the g., 4282 (-ę BD). (ii.) voc., 4146 (-*e* BE); on a g., 3824 (-*e* B); to the ground his, 5184 (-*e* B, -ë doune D).

Rhyme words.—wounde *n.* (856, 7863), stounde (4739, 7863), bounde *p.p.* (856), y-grounde (4707), expounde *inf.* (7650), confounde *inf.* (4906). [Var. BD grownde; C. gronde.]

-hede (suffix, A.S. -hád, *m.*; wreccehed *Pet. Chron.*; L.[b] child-hode, man-ede; O. maȝȝdenn-had, maȝȝþ-had; P.Pl. maiden-hod, man-hede, man-hod, knyght-hod).

goodlihede (-hed D), of, 7953 f (: in drede); -hed, of, 1927 f (-hede BD), (: hed *caput* : ded *adj. sing.*); nom., -hede, 4572 (-hed, -hid, -heed).

knyghthod (A.S. cnihthád), of, 7954 (knythod C); nom., -hod and, 8117 (-*e*[2] D).

manhod, (i.) nom., 6336 (-ę B); with, 3270 (-ę B), 5191. (ii.) nom., 1761; with, 7839 (-*e* B); acc. vnmanhod, 824 (-*e* BD[3], ðn-manhòd ‡ C).

[1] Cp. has the right reading: Is it of loue o som good ȝe me lere. B and the John's MS. also insert *o*.

[2] Supply [*grete*].

[3] D is hopeless as to metre; in A supply [*a*].

womanhede, to (vnto BCD), 4144 f; of, 4582 f; for, 6124 f (-hed CD); acc., 6836 f; to womanhodę that, 283.

Rhyme words.—dede *n.* (4144, 6836), drede *n.* (4582, 6124), lede *inf.* (4582), rede *inf.* (6836).

hepe (A.S. héap, *m.*, L. hæp, hep, dat. -e), to hepe, 4606 f ABC (: lepe *inf.*).—acc., hep of, 5943 (-*e* D, heepe B).

heuene (A.S. heofon, *m.*: also, L.W.S. heofone, *f.*, cf. eorðe, *f*; L. heovene, heofne, O. heoffne, heffne), in, 878 f; to, 4046 f (in ‡ h. B), 5285 f (heuen D), of, 4567 f.—heuene, *before consonants*, always dissyllabic,—nom., 1911 (-yn D †)[1]; acc., 2844 (-yn D); in, 31 (-yn C), 1980 (-en B, -yn C), 3432 (-yn D), 4441 ‡ CD; of, 1766 (-en C, -yn D); to, 3026 (-yn D); from, 3468 (heue † C, -yn avale D), 5508 AC (en D; B †); on, 6637, 8188.—heuęne, nom., 1722 (-ęn B, -yn ‡ on D); in, 2850 (-yn D), 4441 AB, 8182, 8207 (-ęn BD); from, 5374 (-ęn D); in . . . h. he, 4093 B (-yn ‡ he D)[2]; in h. his, 6058 (-ęn D); nom., h. his, 4584 (-yn D); in heuęne hye, 4587. [heuene † egle, 4338 D.]

Rhyme words.—neuene *inf.* (878), neuene ‡ *n.* (4567 B), steuene (4567 ACD), seuene (4046, 5285).

hewe (A.S. héow, *n.*, W.S. híew, híw, N. híu, see Sięv. § 247, n. 3, Sweet, 1789; L. heowe, O. hew, inn hewe), nom., 461 f, 4540 f (hew B), 5402 (-[e] BCD); acc., 441 f, 1388 f, 2555 f, 7766 f; of, 3145 f, 5041 f (-w C), 5398 f (-w D), 7936 f, 8135 f; with, 5325 f, 6922 f.—hewe, nom., 2936 ‡ D; acc., 1145 (D †).—in his hewę bothe, 487 (-*e* C ‡).

Rhyme words.—newe *adv.* (441, 4540), *adj.* (1388, 2555, 5325 [of newe A], 7936 [anewe C]), newe *inf.* (3145), trewe *adj.* (5041, 5325), vntrewe 3145, 7936, 8135), rewe *inf.* (461 [rew A, rewe *pres. subj.* 2 *pl.* † CD], 5398, 6922), knewe *ind.* 3 *pl.* (4540).

horse (A.S. hors, *n.*, L. hors, an horse, to horse, O. horrs), on hors[ę] gan, 6400 AB (-ę CD).—hors, (i.) on here h., 6545 (of = down from, BCD); from hire h., 6552 (-ę D, C †). (ii.) nom., 223, 1711; acc., 4707, 7381 (-*e* D); on his h., 2346, 6398 (h. he D); of (= from) hors, 6876 B (of here h. AC (*plu.*), of horsę light D); from his h. he, 6563 (-*e* D; C †).

knowe (A.S. cnéo(w), *n.*, N. cnéw, cnéo, Merc. cnéu, L.[a] on cncowe, L.[b] a cnowe, O. o cnewwe), sat (fel C) on knowe, 2287 f (know D) (: I trowe *ind.* : sowe *inf.*).

losse, see § 18.

lyue (A.S. líf. *n.*, L. lif, on liue, bi life, bi liue, O. lif, dat. lif, -e), acc

[1] it an heuene (it) was C. [2] *heuene* om. in A.

of time (my lyue, his l., al my l.), 594 f (lyf C), 1290 f (in ‡ my l. D), 2141 f, 4929 f (liff D), 6528 f (in ‡ his l. C); euere his l. and, 6799 (lyf C, liff D); on lyue, 1223 f, 1973 f, 5156 f (lyf C), 5425 f (onlef C), 6632 f (a lyue D), 7027 f, 7251 f, 7732 f, 8226 f; alyuë maken, 3734; on lyuë come, 7248; on lyue, 4958 ABD; on lyue han (haue), 5899 (o l. B, a-lyue a be C); vpon lyue, 2115 f; yn al his lyue, 2623 f ([in] C); yn lyue, 899 † C; of ( = out of) lyue, 2693 f (on † l. C), 7924 f. [Cf. blyue *adv.*, § 88.]

Rhyme words.—blyue *adv.* (594, 1223, 1290, 2623, 2693, 5153, 6528), fyue (2115, 7251), Argyue *nom. pr.* (5425), thryue *inf.* (1223, 1290, 2141, 2693), dryue *inf.* (2623, 5156, 7732), dryue *subj.* 3 *sg.* (7027), depryue *inf.* (4929), dyscriue *inf.* (1973, 6632, 7732), ryue *inf.* (7924), stryue *inf.* (6528), circumscryue *inf.* (8226).

lyf, lif, nom. (i.) 1863 f, 536 (-[e] ‡ C), 772 (-ę B), 1041, 1199, 1286 B (of lyf D), 1447 (lyuę B), 1551 ‡ A (lyf is B, l. in C, -ë ‡ in D), 1826 CD, 1936, 4952, [5273 † f C,] 5339 (C †), 6516, 7741 ‡ D, 7581, 7986[1]; voc., 4264; nom. (ii.) 462 ABC, 1286 A, 1826 AB, 3217 (-*e* B), 4319 (acc. ‡ D, nom. -*e* B), 4936 (-*e* B); acc. (i.) 1046, 1557, 1915 ‡ D, 1917, 1920 f, 3257, 4447, 4559, 5229, 6703 f (-e B), 6720, 6992 (-[e] ‡ C), 7077, 7532 (-ę B, lyf ‡ I C, lif[e] ‡ D); acc. (ii.) 469, 1554, 1660, 4318 BD (lyf saue? AC)[2], 4444, 4963 (lyf ‡ wele C), 6004, 7741 AC, 7747 (-*e* D), 7770 AD, 7776; acc., lyf his, 2151; of (not = ex) (i.) 4323, 5610 (-[e] ‡ C, D?), 5826, (ii.) 4639, 4775 ABD; with (i.), 7637, 7682; by lyf be, 2103.—wreke vpon myn ownë lyf, 2950 f.—In 4140 f, *al my lyfe* (lyue BC, life? D), acc. of time, rhymes with *wyf*, voc.

Rhyme words.—stryf *n.* (1863, 1920, 6703), wyf (2950, 4140, 6703), ententyf *adj.* (1920).

pryme (A.S. prím, *m.*?) seems to owe -e to the influence of Fr. *prime*.—pryme, nom., 2180 f; at, 2077 f, 6378; after, 2642 f; atwixen, 6835 f. (Cf., of lusty ver the pryme, 157 f.)

Rhyme words.—tyme (*everywhere*), by me (2077). [Var. BCD prime.]

pyne (A.S. pín, *m.* (?), L.O. pine), nom., 1761 f; acc., 2250 f, 6631 f (peyne † A), 6653 f (peyne † A), 7490 f; in, 4685 f, 5136 f (peyne † C), 6369 f (peyne † B); of, 7255 f † B (*l.* peyne *with* ACD); -*e*, nom., 4300 (-ęs ‡ D).

Rhyme words.—enclyne *inf.* (1761), myne *inf.* (1761), 5136), dyne *inf.* (2250, 7490), fyne *inf.* (4685), deuyne *inf.* (6631, 6653), defyne *inf.* (6631), twyne *subj.* 3 *sg.* (6369), Quyryne (4685), Proserpyne (5136). [Var. D pine.]

shryne (A.S. scrín, *n.*, see Pogatscher, p. 161), voc., -*e*, 6916.

sithe (A.S. síð, *m.*, L. sið, dat. -e, O. ann siþe, oþerr siþe, offte siþe,

[1] Supply [*that*] in A.

[2] Read *my lyf an houre saue* (so Cp.).

sipess), a hondred sithe, 4437 (-e he B, tyme and C, tymęs D); a thousand sithe, 5415 f (: swythe : lythe *inf.*); an hundred sithe, 6835 (-ę C, -ęs D); a thousand sithe, 7744 f (sith D) (: blythe : swythe). [Dat. pl. in A. S. : as, seofon siðum.]

sothe (A.S. sóð, *n.*, L. soð, soðe, O. soþ, to soþe). In the Middle English uses of this word there seems to be some confusion between *sóð sbst.* and *sóð adj.* The substantive phrase *the sothe* is perhaps due to the influence of the definite adjective form. *Forsothe* instead of A.S. *forsóð* (cf. *tó sóðon*) is noteworthy. See also *in soth.* In the examples that follow *soth (sothe)* seems to have been felt as a substantive. In *ye sey right soth ywys*, 1275 AB, perhaps *soth*[e] is an adverb.

the sothe, acc., 12, 1605, 4440 (-[e] B), 5615, 6983 (-[e] B), 7375, (-[e] BD), 7391 (-[e] B, [the] soth[e] C), 7398, 8003 (-[e] B, the soth † D); forsothe, 5697 f (for soth BD) (: in yow bothe); forsothë so it semeth by hirę song, 1968 ABCD (-[e] G), but cf. for a soth, 6069.—the sothe is, 5965 (B † D †; the s. (this) is C).

soth, sooth, (i.) nom., that is s., 1268 f (-(e) D) (: doth 3 *sg.*); acc. (in *soth to seyn, soth for to telle*, and similar phrases,—no def. or indef. article), 343, 591 (*om.* D), 712 (the sothę D), 822 A, 1706 (-(e) B; D †), 1769, 2071 (the sothę D), 2367 f (ful sothe, *as if adv.*, D, *but the rhyme* doth 3 *sg.* (doth(e) D) *condemns the form*), 2441 (the sothe [for] D; C †), 2601 (the sothę D), 3197 (-(e) D), 3272, 3492 (the sothę D), 3835, 4372, 4635 (-(e) D), 4709 (the sothę D), 5165 (soft † B), 7531 C (-(e) D), 7712, 7883; seye a soth, 1316 (-(e) D), 2222 (-(e) BD); homly s. to seyne, 2644 BC ( (the) soth(e) D); in soth, 6506 (-ę D), 6734; for a s., 6069 (cf. *forsothe*). (ii.) nom. (in the phrase *soth is*), 3461, 4166 AC (-(*e*) B), 5930 (so[th] C, -(*e*) D), 6392 (-(*e*) D); acc., seyde . . . soth, 3420 (-(*e*) D); soth hym seyde, 822 C (-*e* BD); a soth, acc., 7821 (-(*e*) CD), 7902, 8087; a soth(*e*), acc., 7672 ABD (asay ‡ C); lyk a soth, 3761; cause of soth, 5703.

staire, steyre (A.S. stǽger, *m.*), on the s., 215 f (starre † B) (: contraire : debonaire); adoun the steyre, 1898 (steyȝęre C, stairë anon D †); downward a steyre, 2790 (steięre B, stair D).

stalle (A.S. steall, stall, *m.*, O. stall), oxe yn stalle, 7832 f (staH D) (: vynes alle).

temple (A.S. tempel, *n.*), 323 CD (*disordered*), 1458, 6728 (tempęle C), 6929; temple, 162 (AB *too long*, tomple B), 185 (D ?), 317, 363,

3382 (tempęle C); temple .he, 267 (-ë went D); templë he, 5609.[1]

tere (A.S. téar, tér, tæher, *m.*), nom., 3929 f; acc., 6585 f, 7409 f, 7945 f; of, 7243 f; with, 7544 f (ter D); for . . . teer which, 3912 (terę BD, ter C).

Rhyme words.—were *crant* (3929, 6585, 7544), *esset* (7243, 7945), of his fere (3929), where (6585), ellys where (7409), there (7243, 7544). [Var. BD teere.]

towne (A.S. tún, *m.*, L. tun, dat. -e, O. tun, to tune, i, off tune, P. Pl.[ab] to toune), in the t., 3030 f[2]; in t., 5250 f, 6890 (-[e] D, in(to) tounë for C); to t., 4871 f; out of t., 3412 f (-n B), 3933 f, 5193 (-[e] B, of (=ex) the toun[e] C).—towne, of t., 270 (-[ë] ‡ or D, in tounë † or C); into t., 2196; in t., 4724 (-n B), 5342 (-n B, tounnys ‡ C). —nom., townë start, 6048 D (*but supply* [thus]).

Rhyme words.—sowne *inf.* (3030), rowne *inf.* (3412, 5250), a-swowne (3933), howne *n.* (4871).

town, toun, (i.) nom., 141, 1463, 5247 (-ę D), 6048 ABC, 7131 f, 7873 (-ę D); voc., 7369 f; acc., 558 f, 1464 f, 4741 (t. [to] B, *nom.* t. is ‡ D); in the t., in this t., in al this t., 64, 2501 f, 6002 AB (C(?), -e ‡ (?) D), 6042 f (-e CD), 6792 f, 7353 f; of (*not* = ex but equivalent to a genitive[3]), 186 f, 478 f, 1822, 3225 f, 4783 f, 4854 f ((s)town A), 6926 f (-e D), 7040, 7219 f, 7388 f (-e D), 7475 (-ę D); out of the t., 75, 6368 f (-e BD); out of a t., 6384 (-ę D, [a] town A); into t., 4624 f (to, D); into this t., 7486 (-ę D); into the t., 7517; aboute Troyë t., 4692 f; on al the t., 4780; traytor to the t., 4866 f; withinne Troyë t., 7332 f (-e D); thorughout Troyë t., 8012 f (-e C).—(ii.) nom., 804, 6763 (-*e* D); yn al the t., 1224, 1833 (thour, C), 1966; yn the t., 3716; out of t., 3419; nom., t. hath, 5209 (-*e* D); in t. his, 1069.

Rhyme words.—For *town*,—doun, down *adv.* (186, 4624, 6792, 6926, 7219, 7369, 7388, 8012); Sarpedoun (6792), attricioun (558), baroun (4692, 4854), conclusioun, -ion (478, 7131, 7369), condicion (7332), confusioun (4783), deuocioun (186, 558), dyscression (4866), disposicioun (6368), entencion (7131), execucion (6368), Lameadoun (4783), lyoun (4624, 4692), opynyoun (7219), oppressioun (2501), possessioun (2501), renoun (478), saluacioun, sauacion (1464, 6042), suspecion (8012), tribulacion (7353).

twyste (A.S. mæst-twist, *m.*?), with many a t., 4072 f (-t C) (: tryste *inf.* : wyste *ind.* 3 *sg*).

walkene (A.S. wolcen, wolen, *n.*, pl. wolcnu, *Pet. Chron.* se wolcne; L. weolcne, wolcne, *pl.* (?); P. Pl.[b] walkene, welkne,[c] wolkene),

[1] A disagreeable line, but identical in ABCDG: "Til in a temple he fond hym allone." Cp. reads: "Til in a temple he fonde hym al allone."

[2] Old-style figures denote that D has no -e.

[3] Always with some word or words (as, *the, this, al this*) between *of* and *town*.

the walkenę shop hym, 3393 A (walken B, walkyn CG, welkyn D, wolken Cp.).

were (A.S. wer, *m.*), to were, 2877 f (to the ‡ w. D) (: here *eam*). [Cf. This streme you ledeth to the sorwful were, *Parl. F.*, 138 (: spere : bere *inf.*).]

weye (A.S. weg, *m.*, L. weie, wai; dat. wei, weie, etc., O. we33e), acc., 5954 f[1] (wey C), 6288 f (way B, alway † C), 6459 f, 6719 f (way C); by, 495 f, 6988 f (woy C); vpon, 2576 f (forth his w. C); in, 3089 f; adverbial, what w., 4821 f.—weyę, acc., -ę to, 1862 A (way B, why C); -ę for, 6131 A (wey BD, *om.* C)[2]; which weyę be, 3599 (way BC).—weye, acc., 4610 (wey B, wey ‡ no E); nom., weye is, 1702 (-*e* is C, way is B, wey is D); on . . . weye he, 1532 (way B). (Cf. aweye, awey, *adv.*, § 89.)

way, wey, (i.) nom., 2336, 7432 f; acc., 1160 BD (-e † A), 4851 (-ę C); 5964 (-ę C), 6180 AB, 6877 (woye (?) ‡ haue C, wey ‡ haue D ?), 7380; out of, 219 (-ę C); on, 2388, 6864 (-ę BC); by, 7025 (-*e* BC); went his wey, 1055; do wey, do wey, 1978 (D †). (ii.) vpon . . . wey he, 2034 (-*e* him C, wey hym D); on . . . w. hym, 4365 (-*e* CD); a forlong wey on, 5899 (woy C).

Rhyme words.—seye *inf.* (495, 3089, 4821, 5954, 6459), obeye *inf.* (2576), pleye *inf.* (3089), deye *inf.* (6988), leye = wager *inf.* (6719), preye *ind.* 1 *sg.* (5954), tweye (495, 4821, 6988), aweye (6288, 6459), awey (7432), pley *n.* (6288), weylawey (7432). [Var. BCD way; C waye, woye; D weie.]

wighte (A.S. ge-wiht, *n.*, also -e, L.[a] wiht,[b] weht, O. wiþþ fife wehhte off sillferr), of w., 2470 f (wyghte B, weight D, on † weyghte C) (: thynges lyghte).

wyle (A.S. wíl *or* wíle, *n.* (*Chron.* 1128), flygewílum *instr. pl.* (Mód. 27)), nom., 1356 f, 3919 f (w(h)ile CD); for, 719 f (gyle C).

Rhyme words.—while *n.* (719, 1356, 3919), bygyle *inf.* (719, 1356). [Var. BC wile.]

yate (A.S. gæt, W.S. geat, Ps. get, *n.*, *Pet. Chron.* iate-ward, L. ȝæt, dat. -e, O. gate *way*, P. Pl. gateward), acc., 3311 f (: late *adv.*), 7503 f (: late *adv.*); to the y., 1702 AB; vnto, 7501. But,—At the yate there she sholde oute ryde, 6395.—into the yate, 4567 (vnto BD, to C); vnto the yate he, 7555 (-is ‡ C); on to the gate he, 6966 C (*pl.* ABDG).

A and D write always *yate*; B and C, always *ȝate* (except in 6966 C).

yere (A.S. géar, gær, gér, *n.*, L. ȝer, dat. -e, O. ȝer) to yere, 3083 f (yeer D) (: dere); of fern[ë] yere, 7539 f (fernë[ye]re C, fòuerèr ‡

[1] Old-style figures indicate that D has no -e.
[2] Obj. of *trusten to* (*on* BD); or, perhaps, nominative.

D) (: here *adv.*).—yer, (i.) of time, 1178 (ȝereꝫ B), 4037 (ȝeareꝫ D), 5755 AD (-ę B); of the yer (=gen.), 6739 (-ę B)[1]. (ii.) of time, yer or, 7982 (-*e* B). [Var. BC ȝere; C ȝer, ȝyr, ȝir; D yeer, ȝeer, ȝeere.]

§ 15. The following Germanic nouns, for which no corresponding Anglo-Saxon etymons can be cited, sometimes or always end in the *Troilus* in -e:

(A.) Suspicious or uncertified Anglo-Saxon words,—*crampe* (cf. A.S. *crompeht* adj.), *mone* (A.S. * *mán*, inferred from *ménan*), *werre* (see the word), *whippe* (A.S. *hweop* Somner). (B.) Words from the Old Norse: (i.) masculine n-stems, *awe*, *bole* (-ę, -*e*, never -ë) (but cf. A.S. *bulluc*), *felawe* (but cf. A.S. *féolaga*, itself from O.N.); (ii.) feminine n-stems,—*bore*, *sherte*; (iii.) neuter n-stem,—*wyndowe*; (iv.) neuter o-stems,—*on lofte*, *o lofte*, *a-lofte* (O. Norw. *á loft*, *á lofti*, originally u-stem), *at thy tryste* (but also *tryst*, *trust*). (C.) Probable Middle English formations from Anglo-Saxon words: (i) nouns from verbs,—*drede*, *hede*, *hye*, *lette*, and perhaps *ferde*, *mase*, *slynge*; (ii.) diminutive,—*stalke* (A.S. *stæl*); (iii.) *heste* (-*t*-formation from A.S. *hés*, f.), *beheste*, *wente* (cf. A.S. *wenel*, f.). (D.) Borrowed from Middle Low German,—*grote*, *rore*. (E.) Miscellaneous words of more or less doubtful etymology,—*greue*, *haste*, *labbe* (var. *blabbe*), *were* (?).

For *hosbonde*, *skathe*, see § 2; for *arwe*, *wodebynde*, see § 3; for *feldefare*, see § 5; for *bone*, *byrthe*, *routhe*, *sleyghte*, see § 9.

awe (O.N. agi, *m.*, n-stem; cf. A.S. ege, *m.*, L. eiȝe, æie, O. eȝȝe, aȝhe), 999 f (: lawe : drawe *inf.*), 5282 f (: lawe : gnawe *inf.*).

blabbe, see *labbe*.

bole (O.N. boli, *m.*, n-stem; but cf. A.S. bulluc; L.O. bule), -ę, nom., 4901 (lole † C, bulle D); -ę, yn, 1140 (bulle D$^{e}$, bool it B); -*e*, of, 3565 (bool B, bok † C).

bore (O.N. bora *foramen*, f., n-stem, cf. Mätzner), nom., -*e* hath, 4295 (hourre † C).

crampe (cf. O.S. cramp, *f.*, O.H.G. krampf, *m.*, M.L.G., M.Du. krampe; Sweet, 269, assumes A.S. cramp from the adj. crompeht; P. Pl. crampe), -*e*, acc., 3913 (nom. ‡ C, craumpe, acc., B).

drede[2] (L. dred, dredo, P. Pl. dre(e)de, cf. A.S. drædan, *vb.*), 95 f, 180 f, 499 f, 529 f, 575 f, 775 f, 1757 f, 1831 f, 1918 f, 2260 f, 2408 f,

[1] Supply [*the*] in C.

[2] A.S. dræd *sbst.*, given in Bosworth, is rejected by Bosworth-Toller, the only evidence for its existence being Matth. xxv. 25 misunderstood (see Mätzner).

2589 f, 2934 f, 3260 f, 3332 f, 3549 f, 3569 f,[1] 4080 (-[e] C), 4223 f, 4562 f, 4583 f, 4734 f, 4817 f, 5269 ‡ D, 5340 f, 5507 (-[e] C), 5753 f, 5775 f, 6001 f, 6070 (-[e] C), 6117 f, 6125 f (dred C), 6179 f, 6195 f, 6235 f, 6307 f (dred D), 6415 f, 6566 f, 6627,[2] 6993 f, 7122 f, 7343 f, 7453 f, 7643 f (dred D), 7955 f, 8144 f; drede, 2585 (-d C), 3672 (-d C), 4676, 6197 (-d C); *-e* his, 7570 (-d C); dred awaketh, 1895 (*-e* BD).—drede is = dred's, 4400 ‡ A (dred is C, *-e* is BD).—dredë ‡ out, 6073 D. [Cf. dredful, § 49, n. 3.]

Rhyme words.—dede *n.* (95, 6001, 6235, 6415), dede *pred. adj. pl.* (5753, 6179), wede *A.S. wǽd* (180, 4562), brede *A.S. brǽdu* (180, 529), hede *heed n.* (499, 575, 1831, 6566, 7122, 7453), nede *n.* (775, 1757, 3260, 3332, 3549, 3569, 4734, 6195), mede (3260), the rede *red* (4223), rede *adj. pl.* (2934), rede *inf.* (95, 2260, 2408, 2589 CD, 4223, 5340, 7643), arede *inf.* (2589 AB, 5775, 6235), atrede *inf.* (6117), rede *ind.* 3 *pl.* (6307, 8114), kynrede (7343), womanhede (4583, 6125), goodlihede (7955), Diomede (7453), blede *inf.* (499), lede *inf.* (529, 1918, 4562, 4583, 6179, 6993), I lede 1 *sg.* (6001), spede *inf.* (775, 4734), spede *subj.* 3 *sg.* (1831), forbede *subj.* 3 *sg.* (4817).

felawe (O.N. félagi, *m.*, but A.S. féolaga, from the Norse, occurs in *Chron.* D, 1016, see Kluge in Paul's *Grundriss*, I, 786), for his felàwë daun, 7851 (fa- C, felowe D); nom., fèlawe resteth, 4990 (-owe B, -ow D); nom., fèlawe deye, 5186 (fellawe D); fèlawe, acc., 709 (-aw BD).

ferde (A.S. vb. fǽran; cf. M.H.G. ge-vârde, *f.*, *n.*, 'betrug'), for ferd[e] caught, 557 (-ë BD); of ferȩd thyn, 5269 (ferd C, ferdȩ G, drede ‡ D); for ferȩd out, 6073 (-ë out BG, *l.* ferde out of [his][3]; fer C †, dredë ‡ out D). [For ferdë, and myn hewe al pale, *B. Duch.* 1214; And he for ferdë lost his wit, *Hous F.* ii, 442 (950).]

greue (cf. A.S. grǽfe, grǽfa, 'pit,' and the confused glosses in Wright-Wülcker, 225, 23-24), by, 7507 f (grene † C) (: eeue).

grote (O. Dutch groote, cf. L.G. (Bremen) grote; P. Pl.[c] grote), 5248 f (: hote *adv.* : note).

haste (cf. Dutch haast, O. Fris. hast, Dan. Sw. hast. A.S. *hǽst* and O. Fr. *haste* have also been compared), with hastë goodly, 2031 (-[e] D, laste † C); nom., ouer-haste, 965 (-t D, for euere † hast *vb.* C); nom., haste, 7968 (hast D); for . . . hast and, 4280 (*-e* BC); in al the haste he, 4428 (-t BD).

hede (cf. O. Fris. hûde, hôde, O.H.G. huota, *f.*; P. Pl. [b]hede), 501 f, 577 f, 820 AB? (-[e] CD), 1832 f, 3306 f, 4066 f, 4389 f, 4671 f, 5514 AB (-ȩ ‡ therto C), 6221 f, 6451 f, 6565 f, 6668 f (hed D), 7120 f (hed C), 7234 f, 7411 f, 7452 f, 8019 f, 8069 f; hedȩ ther-

[1] Written *for-drede.* [2] Supply [*to*] in D.

[3] A also has *his.* Perhaps, however, *ferde out* is right (hiatus in cæsura). Cp. has no *his.*

of, 1666; heed for, 7266 (hedę BD, hed C); hede, 3481 (hed C), 5095 (hed AC), 5769 (hed D, -[e] ‡ what C).

Rhyme words.—drede *n.* (501, 577, 1832, 6565, 7120, 7452), nede *n.* (3306, 4066, 6221), Diomede (4671, 6451, 7234, 7411, 7452, 8019, 8069), the crede (6451), glede (6668), stede *steed* (6668), brede *A.S. brǽdu* (8019), blede *inf.* (501, 4671, 7411, 8069), forbede *inf.* (3306), *prcs. subj.* 3 *sg.* (6221), brede *inf.* (4389), spede *subj.* 3 *sg.* (1832). [Var C$^{c}$ heede; D heed.]

heste, byheste (A.S. hés, *f.*, behésa *gen. pl.*, L. heste, bihæste, O. hæse), (*a*) heste, 3999 f (liste † B, heest D), 6718 (-es ‡ A, hest[e] B, hèheste ‡ D); hestę he, 6101 (-t C); hestë hath, 4587 (*pl.* BCE). (*b*) byheste, 3157 BC (heste ‡ A, hest ‡ D), 3188 f (-t CD), 7554 f (-t D, heste C), 8038 f (-t D); behest, byhest, 1444 f (-e BCD), 1508 f (-e BC), 2414 f (-e B). [biheste, 7794 B, *should be plural.*]

Rhyme words.—feste *n.* (1444, 1508, 3999, 8038), at the leste (1444, 2414, 3157, 3999, 8038), by este (7554). [Var. BCD beheste, B bi-.]

hye (A.S. higian, *to hasten*), in hye, 1173 f (hy D) (: companye : thrie *adv.*), 2797 f (hy C) (: prye *inf.* : companye), 6047 f (heye B, hie D) (: iupartie). [5861 f ‡ C (: deye *inf.* : cumpanye).]

labbe (*Prompt. Parv.* blabbe, or labbe, wreyare of cownselle, *futilis, anubicus*), nom., 3142 f (blabbe D) (: gabbe *ind.* 3 *pl.*, *inf.* ‡ D).

lette (A.S. vb. lettan, O.L.G. *sbst.* lette, M.H.G. letze, *f.*, L.$^{b}$ lette), withouten, 361 f (let D), 3077 f, 3541 f (let D), 3590 f, 4703 f (let D), 7214 f (lett D).—lettëgamę, 3369 f (let[te]-game D).

Rhyme words.—sette *prct. ind.* 3 *sg.* (361, 3077, 3541, 7214), mette *somniavit* (361), mette *congressi sunt* (4703), dores were y-shette (3077), shette *prct. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3590), fette *prct. ind.* 3 *pl.* (7214).

lofte (O. Norw. O. Icel. loft, *n.*, á loft, á lofti, later Icel. lopt, etc., A.S. on loft *from the Scand.*, see Napier, *Mod. Lang. Notes*, 1889, col. 278, Kluge in Paul's *Grundriss*, I, 786; O. o lofft, P. Pl.$^{a}$ on lofte, $^{b}$bi loft, $^{c}$on loft), on lofte, alofte, o lofte, 138 f (-t BD, onloste † C), 915 f (-t D), 943 f (-t D), 3512 f, 5883 f (-t C), 6371 f, 6711 f (-t B); a-lofte, 6622 (of ‡ loft B, on loft C).

Rhyme words.—ofte (138, 915, 943, 3512, 5883, 6371, 6711), softe *adj. and adv.* (138, 915, 943, 3512, 6711).

maze (cf. A.S. amasod, *p. p.*), 6831 f (masę CD) (: glaze *inf.*).

mone, moone (quasi A.S. * mán, cf. mǽnan *vb.*; P. Pl.$^{c}$ mone), nom., 1643 f; acc., 98 ‡ f A (*l.* mone *inf.*, *with* BCD), 696 f, 5612 f, 6613 f; -*e* †, acc., 907 C.

Rhyme words.—allone (696, 1643, 5612, 6613), euerychone (5612), grone *inf.* (1643, 6613).

rore (cf. O.L.G. hrôra, O.H.G. ruora, *f.*, Ger. aufruhr 'uproar'; see, however, Murray s.v. *arour*, where perhaps the quotation from the

*Paston Letters* is not in place. Confusion with *roar*, A.S. ge-rár (ἄπαξ), is prob. for Chaucer's time), sette al Troye vpon a rore, 6408 f ([a] roore D) (: pore *adj. pl.*).

sherte (O.N. skyrta, *f.*, n-stem, L. scurte, P. Pl.$^{c}$ sherte), abouc (vpon BC, [vp]on D), 3580 f (-t D); to, 3941 f; on, 4214 f; in, 4758 f (-t D), 6184 f (schert C).

Rhyme words.—herte (3580, 3941, 4214, 4758), pouerte (-t C) (6184), sterte *effugi* (4758). [Var. C scherte; D schirte, shirte.]

slynge (O. Du. slinge, O.H.G. slinga, P. Pl.$^{bc}$ slinge), with slyng[e] stones, 2026 f (sleynge s. B, slynging ‡ of [*slurred*] stonys C).

stalke (dimin. of A.S. stæl, stel; P. Pl.$^{c}$ stalke), on stalk[e] lowe, 2053 AB (stalke C; -ys D, *supply* [on]).

tryste (O.N. traust, *n.*), Lo holde the at thi tryste clos and I, 2619 (-[e] C, tristre † D).

tryst, trist, (i.) nom., 3783 f (-e B) (: lyst *lubet*), 4147 f (-e B, trust C, truste D) (: lyst *voc.*); acc., 3245 f (truste B) (: lyst *lubet*: wyst *p.p.*). (ii.) nom., 154 (trost C, trust D); voc., 4264 (-*e* B, trust CE) (cf. 7622); for, 6044 (-*e* B).—trust, (i.) in t., 83 AC (-ę B); for wàntrust, 794 (-ę B, -trost C, wantrowist † D). (ii.) nom., mystrùst, 1865 (-*e* B; C †); for m., 3165 (-*e* B, -trost C).

wente (cf. A.S. wend, *f.*?), acc., 1148 f (-t AD), 1900 f (-t C$^{e}$ D), 6968 f (-t ACD), 7557 f (-t CD); by, 3629 f (-t CD).

Rhyme words.—wente *pret. ind.* 1, 3 *sg.* (1148, 1900, 3629, 6968, 7557), blente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (7557).

were (= doubt, perplexity, Scotch weir, cf. Skeat, *Minor Poems, Glossary*), ffrom day to day til they be *in* were of ioye, 7910 C, but read *ben bare of ioye* (with ABD).

werre (cf. A.S. war-scot; wyrre, uuerre, in the *Chron.* 1119, 1140, are doubtless from French (see Behrens, p. 55); cf. O.H.G. werra, *f.*; L.$^{a}$ weorra, $^{b}$ werre), 134 f, 1953 f, 4614 f, 5209 f (werr D), 6597 f, 7756 f (werr D); -*e*, 6331 (guerre D), 7218 (werr D).

Rhyme words.—derre *adv. compar.* (134), verre (1953), erre *pres.* 3 *pl.* (4614), *inf.* (5209), sterre (6597, 7756).

whippe (A.S. hweop, still given by Bosworth-Toller on the authority of Somner, but not yet found; cf. M. Du. wippe), of, 220 f (wyppe C, whip D) (: skyppe *inf.*).

wyndowe (O.N. vindauga, *n.*, P. Pl. windowe), to the wỳndowę nexst, 2271 (-ow BCD); yn the wỳndowę bothe, 2277 (-ow D); from hirę wỳndow down, 4625 (-ę C).—Before vowels, wỳndowe,—nom., 6897 (-ow B); acc., 4895 (-ow BD, wỳndowe [ek] C); thurgh out, 3443 AB; at. . . wyndòwe, 2100 (-òw BD, in. . . wyndòwe C).

Note 1.—For *angre*, see *anger* (§ 19). *-re* is also found in *slyuere* (cf. A.S. *slífan*, 'to split'), 3855 f ABC (shyvre ‡ D) (: wyuere (O. Fr. vivre, guivre, wivre) : delyuere *inf.*).

Note 2.—*a-wep* (for *a-wepe?*) occurs once,—*and she bygan to brest a wep a-noon*, 1493 (a wepe B, to breste and † wepe C, to wepe ‡ right D). The substantive *wep* seems to be formed from the verb *wepen* (cf. A.S. wóp, *m.*).

Note 3.—*Hére* and *howne* in *thus seyden here and howne*), 4872 (*h. and houne* C, *her and hown* D, *heer and houn* G, *here howne* Cp.) (: *hom to toune; in to toune* C, *hom(e) to toun* D, [*hom*] *to toun* G), are unsolved riddles. The usual interpretation *hare and hound*, i. e. *everybody, of whatever estate*, is not satisfactory.

§ 16. Four monosyllables in -e may be here put together: *gle* (neut. jo-stem), *se* (i-stem *m.*, *f.*) *stre* (masc. wo-stem), *tre* (neut. wo-stem).

gle (A.S. (poet.) gléo, W.S. *glieg, glíg, Ep. glíu, see Sievers, § 247, n. 3; L. gleo), gle and, 2121 (glee B).

se, see (A.S. sǽ, inflected partly as *m.*, partly as *f.*, Siev. § 266, n. 3; L. sæ, se, O. sæ), 417, 1088, 1090, 1528 f (: se *inf.* : he), 2850 f (: tre), 4600, 5685 f (: be *sit*), 6211 f (: be *sim* : free), 7249 f (: see *ind.* 2 *pl.* : me), 8178 f (: vanite : felicite); se hath, 4586.

stre, straw (A.S. stréaw, stráw-berie, stréa(w)berie, North. stró, Rush. stréu, Sievers, §§ 112. n. 1 and 3, 250. n. 1; P. Pl.$^{bc}$ strawe), stre, 2830 f (: she : he); straw is, 3701 (strow B, straw yfaH D); straw yset, 4846 (*-e* C); a straw for, 6725 (*-e* D).

tre, tree (A.S. tréo(w), *n.*, North. tré, tréo, tréu(o), Siev., § 250. 2; L. treo, dat. treowe, O. treo, tre), 2852 f (: se *n.*), 3385 f (: be *inf.* : fle *inf.*).—*Bef. csts.*, tre, 4072, 4888, 7507 (treis ‡ C); *bef. vowels*, 957.

Note 1. For *snow* (A.S. snáw, *m.*, wo-stem), cf. 525 (*-e* B), 5029, 7539 (snowgh B).

Note 2.—For *wo, woo*, sbst., from A.S. *wá*, interj., cf. 4, 34, 248 f, 322, 378, 503, 546 AB, 582 f BCD, 1004, 1147, 1468 f, 2445 f, 3084, 4249, 4921, etc.; cf. also *wher me be wo*, 2908; *wo is me*, 3113; *me is wo*, 4265 f; *wo hym*, 694 (*wo is hym* CD); *me is for hym wo*, 3768 f; *vs is wo*, 1868; *wo was hym*, 356, 6432; *hym was wo*, 5824, 6356 AD (*he was wo* B); *so wo was hem*, 4540. In "But lord this sely *Troylus was wo*," 6892, the construction is ambiguous. Cf. *ful wo to bed he went*, 1147 D (*yn wo* AB).—The interjection *ho* is also used substantively in the phrase *withouten ho*, 2168 f AG (hoo BCp., for ay and o C John's MS., for Ay and oo D *added in later hand*); cf. "But *ho* no more now of this matere," 3032; "But *ho* (*hoo* BD) for we han right ynow of this," 5904.

§ 17. In the following nouns final *-y* comes from the vocalization of an Anglo-Saxon *-g*. Cf. also *wey* (§ 14), *lady, pley* (§ 5).

bodig (A.S. bodig, *n.*), cf. 122, 1718, 4906, 4920, 4966, 4984, 5425 C, 5505, 6216 (*slur*), 6616, 6666, 7682, 7923, etc., etc.

day (A.S. dæg, *m.*), cf. 442, 456, 482, 1068 f (: bay *adj.* : ay *adv.*), 1145, 1146, 1271, 1287, etc., etc. (Cf. ten Brink, § 199.2.)

iuy (A.S. ífig, *n.*), pype yn an iuy lef, 7796 (yuy C) (A.S. ífigléaf).

wery (A.S. wérig, *adj.*), for wo and wery of that companye, 5369.

Note.—*May* 'maiden' is perhaps from O.N. *mǽr* (stem *mǿyjō-*), late *mey* : see 7775 f (: may *possum* : day), 8083 f (*same rhymes*).

§ 18. The following masculine and neuter nouns, which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant in the nominative take no -e in the *Troilus*, even in the dative.

(i) Pure masculine o-stems,[1]—(*a*) monosyllabic, *arm*, *bark* (gender?), *berd*, *blast*, *bor*, *bot*, *breth*, *chep*, *cherl*, *clerk*, *cloth*, *crop*, *dom* (and compounds), *drem*, *em*, *fissh*, *flod* (m., n.), *foul*, *fox*, *frost*, *gnat*, *gŏd*, *gost*, *harm*, *hat*, *hauk*, *helm*, *hod*, *hom*, *hook*, *horn*, *hound*, *knyf*, *knyght*, *kok*, *kyng*, *lord*, *lust*, *mouth*, *non*, *oth*, *path*, *port*, *post*, *pyk* (gender?), *qualm*, *rēd*, *rēs*, *reyn*, *ryng*, *sheld*, *shour*, *slep*, *song*, *spir* (gender?), *ston* (*wheston*), *swarm*, *thank* (m., n.), *thef*, *thorn*, *thought*, *thral*, *thred*, *top*, *wal*, *wir*, *wynd*, *yerd*; (*b*) dissyllabic, *bisshop*, *bosom*, *bridel*, *crepul*, *epistol*, *ernest* (also *f.*), *feuer* (*-ere*), *laughter*, *martir*, *thonder*, *wimpil*; (ii.) pure neuter o-stems,—(*a*) monosyllabic, *bak*, *blood*, *bon*, *bond*, *brayn*, *brest*, *col*, *cold*, *corn*, *der*, *fel*, *folk*, *gold*, *gres*, *hed*, *heer*, *hous*, *lef*, *light*, *lond*, *loss*(*e*), *mel*, *mot*, *right*, *seed*, *shap*, *ship*, *sor*, *swerd*, *thing*, *vers*, *werk*, *wex*, *whiel*, *word*, *wrong*, *wyf*, *wyn*; (*b*) dissyllabic, *deuel* (m., n.), *forlong*, *gospel*, *iren*, *ordel* (q. v.), *timber*, *water*, *weder*, *wonder*, *yuel*. (iii.) masculine jo-stem,—*bryd*; (iv.) neuter jo-stems,—*kyn*, *net*, *wit*; (v.) masculine i-stems,—*craft*, *del*, *dynt*, *gest*, *gylt*, *hil*, *streng*, cf. *Grek*; (vi.) masculine u-stems,—*feld*, *wynter*; (vii.) masculine consonant stems,—*fend*, *frend*, *man*; (viii.) neuter consonant stems,—*bred*, *child*. For *fader*, etc., see end of list; for *cros*, see § 19.

In the following list MS. D has usually been disregarded, and insignificant variations in spelling have not been registered. For erroneous final -e's, not sounded, and due simply to the whim of the scribe, see especially *bor*, *brest*, *cold*(*e*), *dom*, *fend*(*e*), *flood*, *foul*(*e*), *frend*, *gold*, *harm*, *heel*, *hom*, *knyght*, *kyng*, *lord*, *noon*, *reed*, *ryng*, *thing*, *werk*, *wynd* (cf. § 14, note 2).

arm (A.S. earm, *m.*), (i.) acc., 2756; for, 2735 f. (ii.) acc., 3970, 4416

[1] U-stems that have in A.S. identified themselves with the o-declension are not distinguished.

(armes ‡ B); yn his a. he, 1241 (-*e* B).—arm yn arm, (i.) 1908; (ii.) 2201, 2810.

bak (A.S. bæc, *n.*), (i.) his b. byhynde, 1724; at here b. byhynde, 7174 AB; (ii.) acc., 4089; by, 7174 ‡ C.

bark (A.S. bark, Leechd., I, 378, O.N. borkr, *m.*), (ii.) vnder, 3569; ther nys but b., 4889; thorwgh the b., 5801 (-*e* B, *om.* ‡ C).

berd (A.S. beard, *m.*), in the b., 4703 (-e B).

bisshop (A.S. biscop, *m.*), (ii.) nom., 1189 (9-syl. verse).

blast (A.S. blást, blést, *m.*), for, 2472 f (-e B).

blood, blod (A.S. blód, *n.*), (i.) voc., 1679; acc., 435, 1530; of (*source*), 4642; vnto, 6964. (ii.) ther nas but Grekes b., 1283; vnto, 6963. [Var. B -e, -*e*; C blud.]

bon (A.S. bán, *n.*), nom., 2011 f (-e B, mylk † C).

bond (A.S. band, *n.* (bande, *pl.*, *Pet. Chron.*), Sweet, 254; but the regular A.S. form is bend, *m.*, *f.*, see Sievers, § 266, n. 2), (i.) acc., 4596 (in ‡ a boundę C); withouten, 4200 (-e B); with, 4608 (boundę C); from, 4610 (-e B, hond ‡ C). (ii.) voc., 4103 (hond † B).

bor, boor (A.S. bár, *m.*); borę, boorę, nom. 7812 D, acc., 4622 AB (-ë ‡ D), 7601 D, 7834 D; with, 3563 BD; of, 7645 D (: hoore *adj. sg.*, *A.S. hár*; bor: hor AC; boor: hoor B).—boore he, acc., 7840 D. Everywhere else written *bor*, *boor*; cf., besides the places just cited, 7603, 7817, 7825, 7832, 7835, 7876, 7878.

bosom (A.S. bósm, *m.*), And yn herę bosom the lettre doun he thraste, 2240 ABC (bosom doun D).

bot (A.S. bát, *m.*), (ii.) withinne, 416; nom., the b. hath, 1088. [Var. B boot.]

brayn (A.S. brægen, *n.*), yn 4346 (breynę B).

bred (A.S. bréad, *n.*), acc., 1529 f (: ded *adj. sg. pred.*). (Cf. 907 ‡ D.)

brest (A.S. bréost, *n.*), (i.) nom., 6582 (-e B); acc., 5414, 5834 (bryst C); in, 4898 (-e B); on, 4258 (-e B); vpon, 5813 (-e B); out of, 5132; into, 2014 (-e B). (ii.) acc., 4905; vpon, 4694 (-*e* B); out of, 5000 (-*e* B, bryst C); fro, 6155 (-*e* B); nom., b. here, 5477 (-*e* B); vnder hire b. his, 2012 (-*e* B). [Var. B -ee-.] out of my breste, 5438 AB (brest ‡ conueye C).

breth (A.S. bréð, *m.*), nom., 801 f (-e B), 4935; acc., 3961, 5840.

bryd (A.S. brid, *m.*), nom., 2852.

brydel, bridel (A.S. brídel, *m.*), nom., 946 f (: on ydel); acc., 4604; by, 6455 f (: on ydel); on, 7236. [Var. C -il.]

chep (A.S. céap, *m.*), as good chep, 3483 (schep C).

cherl (A.S. ceorl, *m.*), nom., 1017.

child (A.S. cild, *n.*), nom., 4770 D (-ę B, chy[l]d A).

clerk (A.S. cleric, clerc, *m.*, coincident with O.F. clerc), (ii.) nom., 2883 (clerc B).

cloth (A.S. cláð, *m.*), nom., 3575 f.

col (A.S. col, *n*), thorugh, 2417 (-ę C, -ę [the] morë B).

cold(e) (A.S. ceald, cald, *n.*), for, 911 f (-d CD) (: told(e) (told CD) *p.p.*); through, *-e*, 2052 (-d B, D (?); the coldë nyȝt C). For hete of cold for cold of hete I deye, 420 (ffor cold of hetę for hete of cold, etc. C).

corn (A.S. corn, *n.*), nom., 219 f (-e B) (: by-forn *adv.* : shorn *p.p.*).

craft (A.S. cræft, *m.*), (i.) nom., 665, 747; acc., 379; on (acc. BC), 6120 f. (ii.) nom., 4476; in, 6453; nom., lechëcraft, 5098.

crepul (A.S. crypel, *m.*), by-fore, 6120 (-il C).

crop (A.S. crop(p), *m.*), nom., crop and rote, 1433, 7608 f (*-e* B); crop and more, 6388.

del (A.S. dǽl, *m.*), ye shenden euęry del, 1675 f (-e BD); ony del, 2299 f (-e BD); eche a del, 3536 f (-e BD); neuęre a del, 3550 f (-e BD); no del, 1082 A (-(ę) D); euęry del, 5721 f (-e B, -deH D); acc., haluendel the drede, 3549 (*nom.*, ‡ C). Cf. somdel, *adv.*, (i.) 290 (-(ę) B); (ii.) 1081 AD (somę deel B), 1688 (*-e* BD).

Rhyme words.—wel *adv.* (*everywhere but* 5721); temporel, eternel (5721), stel *n.* (1675). [Var. B deele, deel.]

der (A.S. déor, *n.*), (ii.) acc., 2620 (deere B).

deuel (A.S. déofol, *m.*, *n.*), (i.) nom., 5292 (-yl haue ‡ C); voc., 2822 (-il C). (ii.) nom., the d. haue, 805 (-yl C). *As expletive*,—How deuel maystow bryngen me to blysse, 623 (de[ue]l C).

dom (A.S. dóm, *m.*), (i.) to my d., 5049 (-ę B), 5064; in myn d.‡, 5258 C (*supply* [no]). (ii.) nom., 5850 ([the] dome B; dom C †). [Var. B doom.]—to my dome, 100 (doom B, dom C).

Compounds.—frèdom, (ii.) acc., 235 (-dam C).—kỳngdom, (ii.) acc., 7850 (kyndom C, kingdham D).—thrǎldom, nom., 1941.—wỳsdom, wisdom, (i.) with, 5590 (wisdhum D). (ii.) of, 1299; for, 452 (be wisdem C †).[1]

drem (A.S. dréam, *m*), (i.) acc., 6741 ((-en) B); for 7643 (-ę B); in, 7615. (ii.) nom., 7806 (*-e* B); acc., 7651 (*-e* B, -ys C), 7819 (*-e* B; C †); in, 7614 (drem [y]schewid C); by, 8078 (*-e* B?); acc., d. he, 7815 (*-e* B).

dynt (A.S. dynt, *m.*), with, 7868 (-ę D, dent C).

[1] In B 452 dele the second (*for*).

em (A.S. ċam, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1440, etc.; voc., 1394, etc.; of (=from), 1015. (ii.) nom., 3115, etc.; voc., 2244.

epistol (A.S. epistol, pistol, *m.*), e. hem, 3343 ([e]pistil C, lettre ‡ D).

ernest (A.S. eornest, -ost, *m.*, *f.*), (i.) in, 2614, 2788; bytwene, 3096. (ii.) acc., 1537 (hernest B). [Cf. ernestful, § 49, n. 3.]

fel (A.S. fell, *n.*), (ii.) nom., 91.

feld, field (A.S. feld, *m.*), (ii.) in, 4704 (-*e* B), 5451 (-*e* D); through, 1280 (-*e* B)[1]; yn the feld he, 1067 (feelde B). (Cf. *feldefare*, § 5.)

fend(e) (A.S. fēond, *m.*), 5099 f AD (fend B, frend † C) ( : frend *voc.*).

fēuer, -ere (A.S. fefor, fēfer, *m.*, Pogatscher, p. 164), feuere, 909 f (: keuere *inf.*); feuęr and, 491 (-yr B, -ęre CD)[2]; -ęr is, 2605 (-ęre B, -ëre D, [thi] feuęre C); -ęre or, 4055 (fyuęr D).

fissh, fyssh (A.S. fisc, *m.*), (i.) nom., 5427. (ii.) nom., 2877; nom., f. herbe, 2852.

flood (A.S. flōd, *m.*, *n.*), on a flod(e), 3482 f (flood D) (: as muchë good); fro . . . flood of, 4442 (floode B, flod C, feende † D).

folk, see § 43.

forlong (A.S. furlong, -lang, *n.*), a f. wey, 5899 (forlongę B, furlong CD).

foul(e) (A.S. fugol, *m.*), nom., foulę, 6788 A (fowl B, foul C[e]).

fox (A.S. fox, *m.*), fox that ye ben, 4407 (ffor that ‡ C).

frend (A.S. frēond, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1348 (-ę B), 2488, etc.; voc., 584 (-ę B), 610, etc.; acc., 627 (-ę B), 1052, etc.; of (=gen.), 98. (ii.) nom., 548 (-*e* B); voc., 2444 (-*e* B), etc.; acc., 550 (freende B); for, 1497 (-ee- B); of (=by), 3638 (-*e* B).—voc., frendę, 602 AB (-d C), 5294 AB (-d C).

frost (A.S. forst, *m.*), (ii.) nom., 524 (froost B), f. hym, 6898.

gest (A.S. gest, giest, gyst, *m.*), nom., 2196 f BCDG (geste A) (: it thought here herte brest AC, breste BG, as thogh her hert to-brest D: yf yow lest CG, leste AB, list D). The collation of Cp. and John's records no variations from A in these three lines.

gilt, gylt (A.S. gylt, *m.*), (i.) withouten, 2365 (-ę B); in, 4483; of, 4019 (-ę B); for, 8138. (ii.) nom., 7620 (-*e* B); yn, 1329; for, 7459 (-*e* B); nom., g. hath, 7750. [Cf. giltles, giltēles, §§ 49, n. 5, and 85.]

gnat (A.S. gnæt, *m.*), nom., 5257 (gnattę C).

god (A.S. god, *m.*, *n.*), (i.) nom., 195, 4607, etc.; voc., 400, etc.; acc., 40; to, 32; by, 1200 (be ‡ iouys C), 1222 (by g. he C); of (=*gen.*),

[1] A happens to read *fleld*.

[2] In C dele (*al*).

69, 612, 1310, etc.; dat., I thankë god, 1240. (ii.) nom., 206, etc.; voc., 2145 (B †), etc.; to, 421, 925; by, 2043, 2322, 2962, 3214; of (=gen.), 571, 2402; to g. haue, 1667; to g. hope, 2357; I thanke it g., 1836.

gold (A.S. gold, *n.*), (i.) of, 6061, 7175; with, 6039; for, 7249 A. (ii.) of, 6675; for, 3242, 7249 B; vpon a quysshon gold y-bete, 2314.—goldę, nom., 6185 ABD (gold. *acc.* ‡ C).

gospel (A.S. godspell, *n.*), nom., 7628.

gost (A.S. gást, *m.*), (i.) nom., 2462 (C †), 3306 (C †), 4849, 5572, 5883 (-ę B), 8171; voc., 4964; acc., 1616, 5447, 7733. (ii.) with, 7884. [Var. B goost.]

Grek (A.S. Créc, Créc), 1068.

gres (A.S. græs, W.S. gærs, *n.*), (ii.), on, 1600 (gras D).

harm (A.S. hearm *m.*), (i.) nom., 75 (-ę B), 3755, 4006, 5505, 7588 (-ę B); acc., 839 (-ę B)[1], 2734 f, 3647 (-ę B); for, 1539 (-ę B), 3167 (-ę B), 4717 (-ę B); with, 1925 (-ę B, C †); by, 3171 BC (*om.* † A). (ii.) nom., 1874, etc.; acc., 347 (*-e* B, h.‡ by C), etc.; to, 1661 (*-e* B),[2] 2233; for . . . h. he, 4000.—harmę, nom., 333 (harm C); voc., 411 (harm C); acc., 3560 (harm C); yn, 7739 (in(to) harm C); harme, nom., 409 (harm C).

hat (A.S. hæt(t), *m.*), nom., 3162 f (hattę B) (: what : that).

hauk (A.S. hafoc, *m.*), (i.) nom., 671. (ii.) with h., 6428 (*-e* B).—goshauk, (i.) nom., 5075 C[c].—sparhauk hath, nom., 4034 (sperę-hauk C).

hed (A.S. héafod, *n.*), (i.) nom., 1929 f (-e D); acc., 1492 f (hede D), 1742 (-ë ‡ D), 1774, 2923 f (-e D), 3799 f AB, 3897 (A †), 3921 f (-e D), 4906 (-ę D), 7290 f (with . . . ‡ hed C); at, 2781 f (-e D); to, 5821 f (-e D); by, 530 A † C †, 1255 ‡ D, 5255 (hod C); in, 5754; of, 5390; saue, 1710. (ii.) nom., 6357; acc., 1625, 1952 (*-e* D); out of, 3736 (heuid C, hedę ‡ gone D); on, 6646 (in his hed he ‡ D); acc., hed he, 7840. hede, acc., 4415 f (hed BCD); by herę beddes hede, 3796 f (hed B).

Rhyme words.—ded *adj. sg.* (1492, 1929, 2781, 2923, [3796 D (dede),] 3921, 4415, 5821), goodlyhed (1929), hed, hede *head* (3796, 3799), red *n.* (2781, 5821), red *adj.* (2923, 3796, 3799, 4415, 7290). [Var. heuęd, heuyd, heuid C 1710, 1952, 3736, 5821 f, 5390, 5754, 6646; heed, heede D.]

heer (A.S. hér, hér, *n.*), (i.) acc., 5398 (herę B, her CD). [*here* in 5478 f B, 7173 C, 7362 D, is an error for *heres*, pl.]

helm (A.S. helm, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1723 (-ę B); vpon, 8125 (*in B supply* [to]). (ii.) acc., 6670 (*-e* B).

[1] In C supply [*cruel*].

[2] In C supply [*am*].

hil, hill (A.S. hyll, *m.*), (i.) to, 6973 (C?); i[n] hil Parnaso, 4652. (ii.) nom., 943 (hille B).

hod, hood (A.S. hód, *m.*), by, 2266 f (-e B, hond † C) (: good *n.* : stood *ind. 3. sg*), 5255 ‡ C, 7514 f (-e BD), (: good *n.*); acc., 2039 (-ę B); in, 2195.

hom (A.S. hám, *m.*), (i.) as limit of motion, as in A.S. (= domum), 1995 ‡ C, 3068, 3486, 4423 (-ę D), 4871 AB, 5392, etc.; at hom, 4755 (-ę B); homward, 3463 (hom C). (ii.) = domum, 6848, etc.; home, 126 A (hoom B, hom C), home he, 1681 AB (hom C).

hook (A.S. hóc, *m.*), (ii.) acc., 7140.

horn (A.S. horn, *m.*), (ii.) acc., 1727 (hed ‡ C).

hound (A.S. hund, *m.*), (i.) acc., 3606 (-ę B). (ii.) with, 6428 ‡ C. (Cf. § 15, n. 3, p. 51.)

hous, hows (A.S. hús, *n.*), (i.) nom., 3477; acc., 1058 (-ę B), etc.; in, 3042, 6938 f (place † B) (: melodious); out of, 1522 (-ę B); at, 3037; to, 3356, 6891 (C †). (ii.) voc., 6904; acc., 2871; in, 1766, 3506; to, 2546 (-e B; C †), 2625; vnto, 2599 (-e B); in the h. he, 5485.

iren (A.S. íren, *n.*), acc., felt iren hot, 2361 (the thorn † C).

knyf (A.S. cníf, *m.*), with this k., 1410.

knyght (A.S. cniht, *m.*), (i.) nom., 165 f, 1074 f, 1262 f, 1416 f, 3280 f (-e B), 3757 f, 4329 f, 4490 f, 5013, 5231 f, 5279 f (kynght A), etc.; voc., 3018 f (-e B), 3838 f, 4151 (-ę B, *om.* ‡ C), 6199 f; acc., 979, 1956 f, 2679 (A †), 5376 f C (: syȝt *n.*), 6147 f; by, 225 f; vpon, 1846; lyk, 1716 f, 2348 f (-e B); to, 3623 f (-e B), 7200 f (-e B), 6696 f. (ii.) nom., 191; of (= gen.), 1537 f, 7228 f (-e B), 8115 f (-e B); fro, 5408 f, 6696 f; knyghte, nom., 3825 f AB (-t C).

kok (A.S. coc(c), *m.*), nom., 4257 (C †); pekok, acc., 210 (pakoc B).

kyn (A.S. cyn(n), *n.*), (ii.) nom., 5287, 5993; acc., 6183.

kyng (A.S. cyning, cyng, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1186 (-ę B), 5539 (-ę B), 7297; voc., 4856 (-ę B); acc., 4800 (-ę B), etc.; to, 5308 (-ę B); with, 6647 (-ę B), 6794 (-ę B); of, 4786 (-ę B). (ii.) acc., 4938; to, 3224 (-e B); with, 3434 (-e B). of the kynge, 664 AB (of [the] kyng C).

laughter (A.S. hleahtor, *m.*), for l. wende, 2254 (-terę BC, -tir D); nom., laughtre men, 5528 (-ter CD).

lef (A.S. léaf, *n.*), (i.) nom., 4042 (leef B). (ii.) yn, 7796 (leefe B).

light, lyght (A.S. leoht, *n.*), (i.) nom., 3978 (C?), 6906 f; acc., 4298, 4543, 7001 f (-e B); wo worth . . . l., 5109 f (nyȝt ‡ C). (ii.) nom., 3979; voc., 2843; acc., 2405 (lettere ‡ C), 3821, cf. 4962 ‡

C; of, 1994; acc., l. here (*hic*), 4303 (lyth C). [Cf. lyghtles, § 49, n. 5.]

lond (A.S. land, lond, *n.*), yn somę l., 1123 (-ę B).

lord (A.S. hláford, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1415, 1524; voc. and excl., 330 (-ę B), 350 (now ‡ C), 422, 528, 2924, 6945 (-ę C), etc.; with, 1791; by, 2138 BC. (ii.) nom., 65, 2488; voc. and excl., 2406 ‡ C, 2444 (-*e* B), 6952 (*om.* † B); acc., 903 (-*e* B; C †). lordę, voc., 6962 ABD (lord C).

loss(e) (A.S. los, *n.*, L. to lose, P. Pl.$^{c}$ los, loos), nom., -*e*, 4689 (los B, loos D); -ę ne, 4751 (los B, lossë ‡ me D).

lust (A.S. lust, *m.*), (i.) nom., 4388 (lest D †), 6235, 7618 (C †; -ę B, listę D), 8194 (-ę B, list D); acc., 1915 (lyf D), 4741 (-ę B, *nom.* lust D), 5751 (-ę B, wil C), 8187 A (-ę B); ayens, 1561 (listę B, lyst D), 2142 (list D); for, 443 (louę C, list D); of (=gen.), 1929 (luf A, lyst and D); with, 7682; yn, 326; to, 2219. (ii.) acc., 2083 (-*e* B, list D), 3118 (-*e* B, lyst D), 4532 (-*e* B); of, 6389; at, 407; yn, 4661 (-*e* B, lyst D), 5155 (-*e* B, loue C); acc., l. his, 2151 (list D), 4392 (list D).

lest, lyst (cf. A.S. lystan),—lest, nom., 1872 f (-e B) (: prest *prad. adj. pl.*). lyst, voc., 4145 f (liste B, lust C, truste ‡ D) (: trist *n.*); yn, 330 f (leste B, rest C$^{c}$, lyst D) (: best *adv.*).

man (A.S. man, *m.*) 232 f, 1633 f, 3805 f, etc., etc.

martir (A.S. martyr, *m.*; also, martyre), nom., 5285 (-tyr BC).

mel (A.S. mǽl, *n.*), see *tyde*, p. 26.

mot (A.S. mot, *n.*), (ii.) acc., 4445 (moote B, mote C, mytę D).

mouth (A.S. múð, *m.*), (ii.) acc., m. he, 812 BC (m. yet ‡ A), 5823 (-*e* B, mout C).

net (A.S. net(t), *n.*), of, 4575 f (nette C); withoute, 1668 f, 6033 (C †); into, 7138. (Rhyme-words all *p.p.*,—set, yset, yknet, imet.)

noon, non(e), noon(e) (A.S. nón, *m.*), (i.) nom., noonę, 7477 (non C); after noonę, 2270 (-n BC); after noon, 7493 (and at ‡ after nonę D); byfor noon, 7485 (-ę D). (ii.) a-twixen noon, 6835 (-*e* BCD).

ordal (A.S. ordál, ordél, *n.*), (ii.) by, 3888 (ordel C, ordinal † D).

oth (A.S. áð, *m.*), acc., 3953 f (ath B); by, 3888 f (ooth B).

path (A.S. pæð, *m.*), (ii.) acc., 1122; gon som by-path, 4547.

port (A.S. port, *m.*, cf. O. Fr. port), to good port hastow rowed, 962[1].

post (A.S. post, *m.*), (ii.) nom., 993.

pyk (A.S. pic, *m.* (?), cf. Fr. pique), acc., 2126 f (pik C).

[1] In ABD read *fastë* for *fast*.

qualm (A.S. cwealm, cwalm, *m.*), (ii.) nom., 6745 (-*e* C).

red, reed (A.S. réd, réd, *m.*), (i.) nom., 5160 f (-e BD), 6791 (counsellł ‡ D); acc. 661 (-ę BD), 2783 f (-e D), 5822 f (-e BD), 6075 (-ę BD), 6690 C (redę ABD); to, 2624 (-ę BD); by, 2780 (-ę BD). (ii.) nom., 1474[1] (-*e* BD), 1507 AC (-*e* B), 7655 (-*e* B,[2] counseiłł ‡ is D); of, 2439 (-*e* BD); withouten, 6385 (-*e* D). [*redę* once in A, 6690.]

Rhyme words.—ded *mortuus* (2783, 5160), she lay as for ded (5822), at his beddes hed (2783), to herę hed (5822).

res (A.S. rés, *m.*), yn a r., 5012 (rees B).

reyn, rayn (A.S. regn, rén, *m.*), (i.) nom., 3468 (-ę B), 3498 f (-e B) (: agayn : fayn), 4402 (*in B supply* [me]); in, 3630 f (: to seyn : certeyn). (ii.) of, 3470.

right, ryght (A.S. riht, *n.*), (i.) nom., 591, 3840 f (perh. adj.); acc., 4124 f, 5177 f; by r., 3758, 5105 f (thour r. C); of r., 3826, 4637 f, 5233 f (-e B, on ryȝt C), 7708 f. (ii.) by r., 1848, 5058.—vnright, acc., 1538 f, 5212 f.

ryng (A.S. hring, *m.*), (i.) nom., 3732 (-ę B), 5531 f (-e B, ryngis † C); voc., 6912 (-ę B, r. of C); acc., 3735 C (-ę B, ryng I A); yn, 1670 (-ę B).—ryng(e), acc., 3727 f AB (ryng C) (: thing *acc.*).

seed (A.S. séd, *n.*), nom., 385 C (sedę BD, *om.* † A).

shap (A.S. ge-sceap, *n.*), (ii.) acc., 1747 (shappe B, *in A supply* [his]), 6836 (shap hire BC)

sheld (A.S. scield, scyld, sceld, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1286 (sheeld and B, schild & C), 1617 (-ę B, schild C), 1725 (-ę B, scheld C), 3322 (shield B, schild C); acc., 6671 (-ę B, child C); vnder sheld, 2412 f (-e B, schild C) (: byheld *pret. ind.* 3. *sg.* : held *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*)

ship (A.S. scip, *n.*), (ii.) acc., 7007 (-*e* D).

shour (A.S. scúr, *m.*), (i.) in, 4709 (-ę B). (ii.) Doun fille as shour in aperił (aperil B) swythe, 5413 (Out ran as schour of aprille ful swythe C).

slep, sleep (A.S. slæp, *m.*), (i.) nom., 4380 (-ę C); acc., 484 f (: keep *n.*), 7810 (-ę B, C †); of (=concerning), 4250 f (shop † A, on slepe C) (: kepe *n.*); of (=out of), 6883 (-ę B). (ii.) in, 6724 (-*e* B), 8078 (-*e* B); yn his s. hym, 7597 (-*e* B); out of his s. he, 7606 (-*e* B); nom., s. hire, 2009 (-*e* B).

song (A.S. sang, song, *m.*), (i.) nom., 5828 (-ę B, song is C); acc., 7008 (-ę B); of, 393 (-ę B), 1961 (-ę B); in, 397 (-ę B), 4656 f

[1] *red*[*ë*] *I shal* A (emend to, *red I sholde*).
[2] Supply [*this*] in C.

(e B); on, 1910 (-ę B, lay C); by, 1968 f (-e BC). (ii.) nom., 7738; acc., 4666, 6996; on, 389 (*-e* B); in, 6095 (*-e* B).

sor (A.S. sár, *n.*, *f.*), (i.) to his s., 5606 (soor B).

spir (A.S. spír, *inc. gen.*), an ok cometh of a litel spir, 2420 f (-ę BCD) (: fyr : desir *n.*).

ston (A.S. stán, *m.*), (i.) 1685 f (-e B), 2579 f (stoone B), 3541 (-ę B), 5016 f (-e B); acc., 3733 f (stoone B); on, 2313 f (-e B); of, 2956 (-ę B); in (= into), 5129 f (stoon B, into a ston C). (ii.) nom., 1928 (A †), 8092 (*-e* B).

streng (A.S. streng, *m.*), (ii.) acc., 2118 (*-e* B).

swarm (A.S. swearm, *m.*), (ii.) nom., 1278.

sweord (A.S. sweord, *n.*), (i.) acc., 5433 (-ę B), 5877 (-ę B), 6670; with this . . . s., 5902 (-ę B). (ii.) acc., 4415, 5886 (*-e* B; C †); with s., 5873.

thank (A.S. þanc, þonc, *m.*), (i.) acc., 803, 1008 (-ę B), 1100 (-ę B). (ii.) acc., 3485, etc.; t. him, 1461 (*-e* B).—vnthànk, (ii.) acc., 7062 (-thonke B).

thef (A.S. þéof, *m.*), (i.) voc., 870 (theef B, if † C). (ii.) voc., 3940.

thing, thyng (A.S. þing, *n.*), (i.) nom., 174, 217 (-ę B, thyngys C), 254 (-ę B), 5533 f (-e B), 5735 f (-e B), etc.; acc., 1229 (-ę B), 3725 f (-e B), etc.; on, 5247 (-ę B); in, 5070 (-ę B); to, 5684 (-ę B); fro, 748 (-ę B, for ‡ th. C); ayeyns, 2499 (-ę B); of, 511, 673 (thy(i)ngę B), etc.; any thyng, any thing, *adv'l.*, 848 (-ę B), 3474 (-ę B).—(ii.) nom., 401 (*-e* B), 5358 f (-ęs B), etc.; acc., 1719 (*-e* B); in, 1800 (*-e* B); on, 2860 (*-e* B); of, 2960; lyk, 103 (*-e* B); for that thyng lỹm, 1805.—no thing, no thyng, (i.) nom., 2135; acc., 1460 (-ę B), etc.; for, 7057 (-ę B); with, 2380 (-ę B); of, 797 (-ę B), etc.; adv'l., 137 (-ę B), etc. (ii.) nom., 339 (*-e* B), etc.; acc., 1558 (*-e* B), etc.; in, 5827 (*-e* B); no manerę thyng, adv'l., 5939 (*-e* B). thingę, acc., 2791 A (thyngę B, thyng C).

thonder, thondre (A.S. þunor, *m.*, L. þunre), of thondre, 3504 f (thonder B, thundyr C, thundre D) (: a-sonder: yonder); with thonder dynt, 7868 (-dir C, thunder D); with thonder, 2230 f (-ir C, -re D) (: wonder : yonder); acc., the thonder rynge, 1318 (thundir D, thondyr (to) rynge C).

thorn (A.S. þorn, *m.*), acc., 2357 f (-e BC), 3946 f (-e B).

thought (A.S. ge-þóht, *m.*), (i.) nom., 442 f, 1853, 5643 (-ę B) (cf. 1856, 1891); acc., 3981 f, 4951 f, 5727 f, 7529 f, 7644; for . . . th., 579 f; yn th., 1779 (in hirę th. argue BC); yn herę th., 1688 f, 6465 f (-ę B); in his th., 4383; out of my th., 4342 f; of herę . . .

th., 1737 ; of this th., 1830 f (-e B) ; with that th., 1741. (ii.) nom., 6316 ‡ C ; acc., 5641 ; with, 7682 ; in his th. he, 3285 ; withinne hire th. his, 1745 ; with that th. he, 827 ; with . . . th. hire, 1894.

thral (A.S. þrǽl, *m.*), acc., 439 (thralle B).

thred, threed (A.S. þrǽd, þréd, *m.*), (ii.) acc., 6208, 6370 ; with, 7175 (-*e* B).

top (A.S. top(p), *m.*), acc., 5658.

tymber (A.S. timber, *n.*), (ii.) nom., 3372 (-yr B, -ir C, -re D).

vers (A.S., fers, *n.*, cf. O.F. vers), nexst this vers he, 399.

wal (A.S. weal(l), wal(l), *m.*), (i.) nom., 3321 f (: in al) ; in, 1132 f (walle B) (: yn al : shal 3 *sg. ind.*). (ii.) nom., 1239 ; to . . . w. his, 4906 (walle B) ; ouer . . . w. he, 7508 (walle B, waH ‡ his C). [Var. C waH.]

water, watre (A.S. wæter, *n.*), (i.) to watre, 2957 (-er B, -yr C) ; withoute water, 5427 (-yr C).

weder (A.S. weder, *n.*), (i.) nom., 1087, 3499 (-ir C). (ii.) nom., 3512 (-ir C).

werk (A.S. weorc, *n.*), (i.) acc., 1059, 8186 ; for, 2078, 4828 (-e B) ; of, 1101, 8021 (-e B) ; on (vpon BC), 3539 ; to, 3577. (ii.) acc., 265, 3313, 5514 (wek † A) ; of . . . w. he, 3544.—worke, acc., 2045 AB (werke C).

wex (A.S. wæx, weahs, *n.*), vpon, 2173.

wheston (A.S. hwetstán, *m.*), (ii.) nom., 631 (weston C). (Cf. *ston.*)

whiel (A.S. hwéol, *n.*). (i.) nom., 848 (whelys ‡ C) ; on, 4673 ; vpon the w., 4985 f (: of stel) ; of (=gen.), 839. (ii.) from, 4668. [Var. C whel.]

wimpil (A.S. wimpel, *inc. gen.*), acc. wimpil and, 1195 C (*read* barbe).

wir (A.S. wír, *m.*), by, 4478 f (wyr B) (: fir *ignis* : desir *n.*).

wit, wyt (A.S. gewit(t), *n.*), (i.) nom., 5553 (C ?), 5599, 6273 f, etc. ; acc., 241 f (witte B), 1358 (witte B), 3839 f (witte B, wite C), 5766 f, etc. ; out of, 108, 4892, 5010 ; emforth, 1328 f, 2082 f (euene with my w. C) ; with, 2757 ; to, 4153 (*om.* † C) ; by, 7121 f (: yit : it). (ii.) nom., 1217 (B †), etc. ; acc., 7706 ; yn, 989 ; of, 1928 (A †, wight C), 3058 ; out of, 7625 ; with, 2977 (B †), 3007, 3085 C, 6149, 8145 ; thurgh, 2926 ($C^c$ †).

wonder (A.S. wundor, *n.*), (i.) nom., 403 (-yr C), 2228 f (-ir C) (: with thonder : yonder), 5250 (-yr C), 5762 (-ir C) ; acc., 7344 f (-ir C, wonnder B) (: asonder). (ii.) nom., 955 (-yr C), 959 (-yr C), 1105, 1828 (-ir C), 1834 (-ir C) (cf. 4920, 6425, 6484). (Cf. the adverbial and adjectival uses of *wonder*, § 85, note 2.)

word (A.S. word, *n.*), (i.) nom., 1102 (-ę B), etc.; acc, 397, etc.; of, 820 (-ę B); with, 875 (-ę B), 1176 (-ę B), 1293 (-ę B), 1961 (-ę B), 2777 (-ę B), 3000, 3752 (-ę B); withouten w., 3308[1]; at, 4150 (-ę B). (ii.) nom., 2896 (-*e* B); acc., 737, 2113 (-*e* B), etc.; word by word, 2262 (C †); by, 3273 (by w. ne ‡ C); withouten w., 5362 (-*e* B; C †); with that w. he, 204 (-*e* B), 869 (-*e* B), 1349, 3583, 3806 (-*e* B), 3820; with that w. here (*poss. sg.*), 1335; withouten w. he, 6900; word and ende, 2580, 3544 (-*e* B).—acc., by-word here (*hic*), 5431 (-*e* B).

wrong (A.S. wrang, see Kluge in Paul's *Grundriss*, I, 787), (i.) acc., 2557 (-ę B), 3850 (-ę B). (ii.) nom., 4017 (-*e* B); acc., 2764; in w., 594 (-*e* B); acc., wrongë ‡ to D (-ës AB).

wyf (A.S. wíf, *n.*), (i.) voc., 2948 f (: lyf), 4138 f (: al my lyfe A, lyue BC); from 6701 f (: lif : stryf). (ii.) nom., 678, 6134 (-*e* B).

wyn (A.S. wín, *n.*), acc., (i.) 7215, (ii.) 3513.

wynd (A.S. wind, *m.*), (i.) 3585 (-ę B), 7036 (-ę B); acc., 7041 (-ę B); with w., 1851 (-ę B); in the w., 3368 f (-e BC) (: blynd *pred. adj. sg.*); o wynd o wynd, 1087 (-*e* . . . -ę B). (ii.) thorugh, 6806 (-*e* B); with w., 7004 (-*e* B); wynde, nom., 2473 AB (wynd C).

wynter (A.S. winter, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1137; in, 3194 (-ir C), 4887 (-yr C); after, 3904 (-yr C); yn wynter mone, 524 (-yr C).

yerd (A.S. geard, *m.*), nom., ȝerd, 1905 D (yerdę B, gardeyn (*slurred*) ‡ A, ȝerd [was] C).

yuël (A.S. yfel, *n.*), (i.) acc., 1666 (euel B, euyl C, evil D), 4006 (euelę B, euyl C); for, 5268 (euel B, grif † C); an yuyl that ye no take, 7988 (an euyl ȝe B, on euyl ȝe C, on yuęH that D).[2] (ii.) nom., 782 (euyl C); acc., iuyl and, 6780 C (harm AB, harme D).

The five Anglo-Saxon kinship nouns *fæder*, *módor*, *bróðor*, *sweostor*, *dohtor* (r-stems):—

fader, (i.) 5994 (fadidyr † C, fadir D †), 6043 (-ir D, -ir I C), 7499 (-yr C); cf. 121, 4756, 4938, 5329. (ii.) cf. 4687, 5217, 5220.

moder, (i.) 5424 AB (-ir D), 7589 (-ir C), 8232; cf. 5869. (ii.) cf. 1135, 4097.

brother, (i.) 653 (-er(e) D), 3094 f (-ir D), 6670, 6884; cf. 51, 1242, 2131, 2444, 2481, 2483, 2496, 2535 f, 2705 f (-er(e) D), 2711, 5067 f, 5120 f, 5203, 5270 f, 6497, 7869 f. (ii.) brother‖ I, 8094 A (-er deere BD); brother holdere, 1729.

[1] In B insert [*it*].

[2] In B read *nc* for *it*.

suster, (i.) 6253 (systyr C), 7813 (systyr he ‡ C); cf. 1154, 2778, 5510. (ii.) cf. 860, 2309, 2644.

doughter, douhter, (i.) 6200 (douȝtyr C), 7473 (douȝtyr C); cf. 94, 2845, 4649, 4754, 5325. (ii.) cf. 664.

§ 19. The following nouns of Germanic origin, which have no substantives to represent them in Anglo-Saxon, end in the *Troilus* in a consonant.

For erroneous -e (not sounded), see *fold(e) lok, skil.*

abod (cf. A.S. ábídan), nom., 7670 (abood B; C †).

anger, angre (O.N. angr, *m.*), with an angre dǫn, 563 (-yr C, -re to D)[1]; after anger game, 6225 (-ir C); ffor angrë of, 7898 (-ir CD).

bark, see § 18.

bost (etym. dub.), for b., 3090 f (-e B) (: wost *scis*); thorugh, 3140 f (: almost : wost).

cast (cf. O.N. kasta *vb.*, kǫstr, *m.*), (ii.) fro, 1953 (-*e* B).

cros (O.N. kross, *m.*; A.S. Normannes cros, Birch, *Cart. Sax.*, III, 367, see Skeat, *Trans. Philol. Soc.* for 1888-90, p. 286) is of Romance origin, but its precise history is doubtful, see p. 92.

flat (cf. O.N. flatr, *adj.*), of, 5589 B (A † C †).

fold(e) (cf. O.N. faldr, *m.*, O.H.G. falt, *m.*), in many fold(e), 1782 f (-d CD) (: told *p.p.* : cold).

Note.—For *-fold* (A.S. -feald) in the adverbial phrase *a thousand fold*, see (i.) 2088, 2671, 3094, 3416 (-ë ‡ dye B), 4382, 4526 (-ǫ B); (ii.) 1227 (-*e* B); a th. f. his, 546 (-*e* B); a thowsand foldę more, 819 (-d C).

hap (O.N. happ, *n.*), nom., 2781; acc., 2539; with, 4088 (B †).—vnhap, acc., 552.

keep (cf. A.S. cēpan), acc., 486 f (-e B) (: sleep); kep(e), acc., 4252 f (kep BC) (: of slep).

lak (O.N. lakr, *adj.*), (i.) nom., 2263 (lakkę B). (ii.) nom., 2044 CD (lat † A, lokke † B)[2], 7177 (lakke BD); for, 1994 (lakke B), 2365 CD.

lasch (cf. Dutch lasch), acc., l. haue, 220 (lasche C$^c$).[3]

lok, look (cf. A.S. lócian), (i.) nom., 2352, etc.; acc., 2344, 7292 f (-(e) B), etc.; with, 307 (-(ę) B), 325 (-(ę) B), 538 (-(ę) B), etc. (ii.) acc., 291 (-(*e*) B), etc.; of, 295 (-(*e*) B); with al his l., 229.—of hirę lok(*e*), 364 AB (lok C).

skil (O.N. skil, *n.*), nom., it skil(*e*) is, 3488 (skyl BC, skil hit D), skyl ywys, 1450 (-(*e*) D).

[1] In A supply [*to*]. [2] Verse too long in C. [3] In C supply [*he*].

smert (cf. A.S. smeortan; Dutch smart, O.H.G. smerzo, *m.*, smerza, *f.*), (i.) nom., 5507 (-ę D); for s., 5035 (-ę BD). (ii.) on s., 5128 (*e* B, smerthe D).—smert (*-e* D), 6780, is perhaps a verb (= smerteth). [On the supposed sbst. *smerte*, see § 67, s. v. smerte, *adj. pl.*]

stert (cf. Dutch storten; cf. A.S. steort *tail*), (ii.) with, 6617 (-(*e*) B).

strok (cf. A.S. strícan), acc., 2467 f (-(ę) B) (: ok); with s., 5173 (strook(ę) B).

sweigh (= impetus; cf. O.N. sveigr, *m.*), nom., 2468 (swough B, swey C, sweyf D).

swough (= swoon; cf. A.S. swógan), of (= out of), 3962 (swouȝ C, swoun D), 5874 (swow C, swogh D).

syk (cf. A.S. sícan), with, 1230 (-(ę) D), 1548 (sikë † seide B, syk(ę) she D), 3643 (-(ę) D), 3965 (-ë ‡ whan B), 4335, 6189. [Var. B syhg; BC sik; D sike, siȝ, sigh.]

walk (cf. A.S. wealcan), in his w., 190 (C?).

Note 1.—For *thryft* (O.N. *þrift*, f.) and *won* (O.N. *ván*, f.), see § 11; for *shyvre*, *slyvre*, see § 19, n.

Note 2.—For *kankedort*, of very doubtful etymology, see 2837, *f* (*cankedort C*, *kankerdorte* D).

§ 20. In Romance nouns final -e (-e mute) is usually retained, both in writing and in sound, except for the regular elision. But there are a good many exceptions, in some of which the -e is preserved in writing but loses its value as a syllable, in others of which the -e is neither written nor pronounced. (Cf. Child, § 19; ten Brink, §§ 222, 223.)

For details see the following sections (§§ 21—31). — § 21. Miscellaneous Romance nouns in -e which sometimes or always retain -e in the *Troilus*. § 22. Exceptions to § 21. § 23. *-aunce*. § 24. *-ence*. § 25 *-esse*. § 26. *-ice*. § 27. *-ure*. § 28. *-ère*. § 29. *disclaundre*, *lettre*, etc. § 30. *-ye*, *-ie*. § 31. *comèdye*, *augùrye*, *fùrye*, *stòrie*, etc.

§ 21. Miscellaneous Romance nouns in -e (-e mute) which sometimes or always retain -e in the *Troilus*.

This list contains the following words: *age*, *Arìète*, *assège*, *batayle* (*bàtayle*), *baude*, *bawme*, *bille*, *blame*, *calle*, *cause*, *caue*, *charge*, *charme*, *chaunge*, *cheyne*, *clause*, *compleynte* (*còmpleynt*[e]), *constreynte* (*cònstreynt*[e]), *cope*, *coràge* (*còrage*), *corde*, *demaunde*, *descènte*, *disese*, *doute*, *egle*, *ensàmple*, *entènte*, *eschaunge*, *ese*, *executrice*, *face*, *faile*,

*fame, fate, fayre, feste, flaumbe, force* (*fors*), *fortùne* (-e ; *fòrtunę*, -e), *frape, garde, gaude, gemme, geste* (*gest*[*e*]), *grace* (*gracę*), *gyle, gyse, herbe, houre, ìnfortùne, ìnpossìble, inke, ire, iape, ioye* (*ioyę* ‡), *lesse, ligne, ma dàme, martire, mayle, mèdecyne, meruayle, messàge, mewe* (*muwe*), *moble, mowe, muse, mysèricòrde, nece* (*necę*), *note, noyse, orisonte, penne, peple, persòne* (*pèrsone his*), *peyne, place, planète, pleynte, pompe, potènte, pouèrte, preue, prològe, prouèrbe, pùrsuyte* (*-ę*), *quìète* (*quìete*), *rage, rascaÿlle, regne, rente, reprèue, requèste* (*-t ?*), *reyne, roche, route, ruÿne, sauegarde, sege, signe, sire, space, stewe* (*stuwe*), *table, tente, terme, title, trone, vncle, vniuerse, vrne, vsàge, vermìne, verre, veyne, viàge* (*vìage*), *visàge, ymàge.*

Note 1. The Romance words in this list are all French except *Ariete* (Ital. *ariete*)[1] and *orisonte* (Ital. *orizzonte*). *Poverte* (O. Fr. *poverté*), and *stuwe* (O. Fr. *estuve*) exhibit peculiarities of formation. *Potente* has no direct French etymon (cf. O. Fr. *potence*), and may be imitated from Latin. The four words *fate* (Lat. *fatum*), *medecyne* (Lat. *medecina*, cf. Fr. *médecine*), *quiete* (Lat. *quietem*, or, perhaps, Ital. *quiete*)[1], *vniuerse* (Lat. *universum* ; cf. Fr. *univers*), *vrne* (Lat. *urna*, see p. 74, footnote 1), are included in this section for convenience. For *chimenay*[*e*], see § 33, note.

Note 2. Ten Brink's rule, "Nach tonloser Silbe verliert -e regelmässig seinen Silbenwerth" (§ 223), is illustrated by *fòrtunę, pùrsuytę*. In all other cases in point the word that follows begins with a vowel or a weak *h*, except those in § 22.

Note 3. Other instances of apocope may be seen in *gracę, ioyę* ‡, *necę, sirę*. For irresponsibly omitted -e's (scribes' errors), see especially *entente, geste, requeste.*

Note 4. *Egle, ensample, inpossible, moble, peple, table, title, vncle* illustrate the treatment of consonant + *le*. But cf. *marbel* (O. Fr. *marble, marbre*), 700 (infra), *werbal* (infra).

Note 5. *Werre* bellum, might fairly have been included in § 21 ; but it seemed better, on the whole, to give it a place in § 15.

age, 1480[2], 7189 f (: corage), 8199 f (: visage : ymage).

Ariëte (Ital. ariete), 6254 f (aryëte C) (: herte swete), 7553 f (aryëte C) (: swete).

assege ; thassege, 6142 (thassage B, the sege CD). [Cf. *sege.*]

batàyle, 1715 f (: withouten faìle) ; bàtayle, 8114 (-H D)

baude, 1438 f (: gaude).

bawme, *-e* is, 1138.

bille (Anglo-Norm. bille, L. Lat. billa), 2215 f ABC (: stonde stille).

blame, 1100 f (: lame *pred. adj.*), 3107 f (: name) ; *-e*, 5213, 5256, 7431 ; *-e* haue, 1295 (-ë ‡ haue BD[3]).

calle, 3617 f (caH D) (: alle *pl.* : calle *inf.*).

cause, 854, 1812 f (: clause), 2492, 2524, 2718, 2771 (D †), 3607,

[1] Cf. ten Brink, § 222 Anm., who is inclined to regard *Ariete* and *quiete* as "romanisirende Abklatsche lateinischer Wörter." He says nothing about *orisonte.*

[2] A D defective. Supply [*that*].

[3] Read in BD, blame haue I [myn] vncle.

3637, 3993, 4004, 4421, 4681, 5379,[1] 5491, 5677, 5889 (*-e* hire BD), 5932, 6313, 6443 (-es † D), 7239, 7391 (-is wich † C), 7593, 7665 f (: clause), 7668, 7757 C (*-e* AD); cause, 20 (D †), 579, 670[2], 1568, 1580, 1917, 2187[3], 2848, 2872, 3206, 3378, 3462 CD, 3828,[4] 3833, 3874, 3987, 4761, 4803, 5350, 5589 (A †; -ę to C), 5672, 5674 (*-e* of [the] D), 5703, 5724, 6003, 6316 (thouȝt ‡ C), 6335, 6490 ([the] cause D; B †), 6769, 6783, 7017 (-ë is ‡ D), 7592 (C †; -ë ‡ of D), 7705[5] (D †), 7757 (-e doth C), 8055.— *-e* (before h), (he) 4787, 4885, 6890, 7578 (*-e* of C, *-e* he? D); (haue) 7619; (hadde) 4069.—O cause of wo that cause hast (hath † C) ben of blysse, 6913. [Cf. causeles, § 85.]

caue, 1202 f (: saue *subj.* 3 *sg.* : raue 2 *pl.*).

charge, 2079, 4096 † f B, 4842[6]; *-e*, 651 (charg C); *-e* he, 444.

charme, 2399 (-[e] C); *-e*, 2665 (charm C).

chaunge, 1107 f (: straunge), 7997 f (: straunge) (chung C : strong); *-e*, 5327 (-g ‡ for C). [Cf. eschaunge.]

cheyne (O. Fr. chaaine), 509 f (cheyn D) (: pleyne *inf.* : peyne *n.*), 1703 f (: tweyne : to seyne).

clause, 1813 f (: cause), 7664 f (: cause).

compleỳnte (O. Fr. complainte, -nt), 541 f (-t D) (: dreynte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* : pleynte), 5404 f (: constreynte); *-e*, 5446 (-t CD), 5467 (pleynt C, compleinte † D); compleỳnt hym, 2668 (-e B); còmpleynt of, 655. [Cf. pleynte.]

constreỳnte, 5403 f (: compleynte); cònstreynt and, 1861 (D †; *-e* B, constaunt ‡ C).

cope, 3566 f (: Eurȍpe).

coràge, 3739 f (: rage *n.*), 7188 f (: age); còrage, 564 (courȁgë ‡ wake D), 5281 (cùrage B).

corde, 6806 f (: recorde *inf.* : accorde *inf.*).

demaunde, 5957 f (: comaunde *pres. pl.*), 6356 f (: recomȁunde *inf.*); *-e* he 7222 (-ë ‡ he D).

descente, 319 f (dissent D) (: wente *iit* : mente *pret.* 3 *sg.*).

disese, dishese, 1232 f, 2445,[7] 3726 f, 4118 f, 4751 f, 5759 f; *-e*, 2072, 3885, 4658, 6472 (desese A, de-sese C, di[s]ease D), 7783 (*pl.* ‡ C).

Rhyme words.—displese *inf.* (1232), plese *inf.* (3726, 4118, 4751, 5759), apese *inf.* (3726), ese *n.* (4118, 4751, 5759). [Var. D dissese, disease.]

[1] AB defective.
[2] Supply [*for*] in D.
[3] "The cause of his comynge (-yng DG) thus answer(e)de." The choice lies between *causë* and *comyngë*. The collection of Cp. and John's MS. notes no variants.
[4] Supply [*in*] in C.
[5] Supply [*my*] in A.
[6] Supply [*that*] in AD.
[7] Supply [*that*] in D.

doute, 152 f (-t D), 1820 f ‡ C (-t ‡ D), 2477 f (-t D), 5066 f, 5939 f, 6233 f (dought D), 6431 f, 7658 f, 7816 f, 7881 f, 8007 f; *-e*, 1451 (-t D), 3360. [Cf. doutelès, § 85.]

Rhyme words.—aboute (152, 1820 CD, 2477, 5066, 5939, 6233, 7658, 7816, 8007), oute (7881), withoute (6431), route (5066, 6431), deuoute (152), tuskes stoute (7816).

egle, 2011 (egęle C), 4338 (egęle C, egle ? D).

ensàmple, *trisyll. bef. csts.*, 232 (-saumple BCD), 995 (-saumple B, on-saumpęle C).—ensàmple, 3714 (-sampęlę by C),[1] 4863 (-saumpęle C), 7953 (-saumpęle C). [Var. B ensaumple.]

entènte (O. Fr. entente), 61 f, 738 f, 928 f, 1448 f, 1609 f, 1913 f, 1963 f, 2008 f, 2145 f, 2304 f (-t B), 2531 f, 2645 f (-t B), 2808 f, 2967 f, 3395 f, 4030 f, 4081 f, 4424 f, 4835 f, 5297 f, 5515[2] f, 5882 f, 6187 f, 6513 f, 7230 f, 7473 f, 7668 f, 8057 f. [In the above list D has *entent* throughout (*intent*, 61), and C has *entent* except in 61 (where a part of the MS. is cut out) and in 1448, 1963, 3395, 4081, 4835, 5297 (in which lines it has *entente.*)]—entèntë (*bef. cst.*), 4008 (-[ę] C, -t ‡ is D)[3]; entènt[ë] (*bef. cst.*), 4071 AC (-e B, èntent ‡ clene D).—entènte, 5319 (-t BCD)[4]; entènt (*bef. vowels*), 2378 (*-e* B), 7993 (*-e* B, cèntence is ‡ C)[5]; entènt he, 7139 (*-e* B).—entènt, 2750 f ACD (-e B) (: went *ierunt*), 6078 f ABCD (: mente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* : wente *iit*).

Rhyme words.—wente *iit* (2808, 3395, 4424, 5882, 6078, 7473, 7668), wente, went *ierunt* (61, 2750), wente *pret. subj.* 3 *sg* (4835), stente, stynte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (738, 1963, 4081), stente *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (61), repente *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* (928, 1609), consente *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* (928), *inf.* (2531), mente *pret. ind.* 1, 3 *sg.* (1448, 2304, 2645, 2967, 4030, 6078, 7230), 2 *pl.* (8057), 3 *pl.* (4835), rente *n.* (1913), sente *misit* (1913, 5515, 7473), *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* (2531), hente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2008, 4030), assente *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* (2145, 5297), *inf.* (6187), tormente *inf.* (5297), glente *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (5882), tente *n.* (6513).

Note.—A consideration of the above data shows that the only form that Chaucer uses in the *Troilus* is *entente*, never *entent* except when a final -e would disappear by the regular operation of the rules for elision. The scribes sometimes omit -e where we must supply it, not only in *entente*, but in the rhyme words; but Chaucer in the *Troilus* never rhymes *entente* with a word that has no right to a final -e and never apocopates the -e in the middle of a verse.

eschaunge (cf. chaunge); *-e* 4808 (chaunge CD), 5221 ([es]chaunge C), 5540 (chaunge D, eschaung ‡ for C).—eschaungë ‡ of, 4893 D (chaùngynge ABC).

ese, 28 f, 43 f, 1835 f, 2310 f, 2951 f, 3475 f, 4121 f (ateste † B), 4248 f, 4570 f, 4748 f, 5365 f, 5756 f, 6479 f.—Before consonants,

[1] In 3714 C read, *ensampęle of* for *e. by.*
[2] In CD the rhyme word is spelled *sent*; but this is not *sent* = *mittit.*
[3] In BD read *a*[*l*]*le*. [4] In C supply [ę]. [5] In B supply [*the*].

2746, 3453, 5388, 6474.—ese, 2861, 4146, 5142 (-*e* and [in] D), 7742 (B †; crese † D), etc.; ese hym, 2744. [7722 ‡ C (?).] (Cf. disese.) [Var. D ease.]

Rhyme words.—displese *inf.* (28), *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (2951), plese *inf.* (13, 2310, 3475, 4121, 4570, 4748, 5365, 5756, 6479), apese *inf.* (2951, 6479), countrepeyse (-pese BCD) *inf.* (4248), dishese *n.* (4121, 4748, 5756), lese, *O. Fr. lesse* (1835). [Var. D eese, ease.]

exècutrìce, 3459.

face, 1071 f, 1195, 1350 f, 1850 f, 4188 f, 4411 (D †), 4670 f, 4812 f, 5526 (C †), 5812 f, 5999 f, 6449 (C †), 6562 (*om.* A), 6607 f, 6899 f, 7037 f, 7071 f, 7277 f; -*e*, 1490, 5477, 5483, 6918, 7170[1]; -*e* he, 5023 (fate ‡ D); -*e* hem, 4730 (-*e* he D).—at prymë face, 3761 f (: place : grace).

Rhyme words.—grace *n.* (1071, 1350, 3761, 4188, 4670), space (1850, 5999, 7037 CD), pace *inf.* (1850, 5812, 6899, 7277), place (4188, 4812, 5812, 6607, 6899, 7037 AB, 7071), deface *ind.* 2 *pl.* (7277). [Var. C fase.]

faile, fayle, 1714 f (: batayle), 6258 f (: assayle *subj.* 3 *sg.*).

fame, 5321 (fane † C), 6783 f C †.

fate (Lat. fatum), 7913 (face † C); -ë helpeth, 7915 (-*e* hym BD, face † C); -*e*, 6572 (stat ‡ C); -*e* he, 5023 D †.

fayre (O. Fr. feire), 8203 f (faire B, feir D) (: floures fayre (faire B, fair D)); To morwe? allas! that were a fayre! quod he, 3692 (fair B, fayr C, [a] fair D).

feste, 161 (-[e] C, -t ‡ D), 168 f (feest D), 1446 f (festis † C), 1506 f (fest D), 2992 f (-t CD), 3186 f (-t BD), 4001 f (-t D), 4154 f, 6440 f, 6804 f, 6819, 6887 f, 8040 f; -*e*, 3495 (-t BD), 4070 (-ë ioye? D), 4581 (-t D),[2] 6667, 6809 (ferste † C).

Rhyme words.—leste *adj. pl.* (168), behest, -e (1446, 1506, 3186), heste (4001), the leste (1446, 4001, 4154, 6440, 6804 *pl.*, 6887, 8040), request (-e B) (2992). [Var. B feest, feeste; D feest.]

flaumbë funeral, 6665 (flambe C, flawme D); -*e*, 4780 (flaumme C, flaume D).

force, 6137 (fors C), 6784.—fors, (i.) what fors, 1463. (ii.) In *no fors*, 2562, 4984 (-ce D, fors whan C), 7118, 7979 (-ce D); no fors hardyly, 2802.

fortùne, 841 f (: commune *pred. adj.*), 4664 f (: entune *inf.*; comune *adj.*), 5053 f (: comune *pred. adj. pl.*), 7904.—fortùne, 138, 849 AB (-tùnę ‡ to C, -e † for D), 3459, 4509, 4556 (D †), 4922 (fòrtune allas ‡ D), 4936 (-ę yif C, -ę yif D), 5047, 5262, 5854, 8108 (-ë ‡ ay D), 8126 (-ë ‡ it D); -*e* his, 6832; -*e* hem, 7497.—fòrtune, 837,

[1] Supply [*of*] in B.

[2] B, apparently, "swich a feste and swichë proces," where *swiche* seems to be written, by error of ear, for *swich a*.

843, 4986, 5851, 6250, 7283; *-e* hym, 1370.—Ne remuable fòrtunë deface, 6344[1]. fòrtunę wole, 1420 AD (-tùne B; D †). [Cf. *infortune.*]

frape, 3252 f (: iape : i-shape *p.p.*).

garde,—sauë-gard[e], 4801 (-ë B, saf cundwyt hem C, safę conduyt hem D ‡).

gaude, 1436 f (: baude).

gemme, 1429 (comme † B, gom[me] ‡ C).

geste, 3292 f (geest D) (: leste *pret. sg.* : the beste).—gest[e], 1168 f (geeste B, geest D) (: leste *pret. ind. 3 sg.*).

grace, 42 f, 370 f, 713 f, 900 f, 926, 955 f, 1056 f, 1070 f, 1117 f, 1351 f, 1799 f, 1916 (D †), 2155 f, 2207 f, 2450 f, 2611, 3303 (spase CD), 3314 f, 3547, 3764 f, 4018 f, 4109, 4111 f, 4191 f, 4298 f, 4646 f, 4672 f, 5217 f, 5614 f, 5895, 6055 f, 6346 f, 6534 f, 6535 (-ę ‡ befalle D), 6865, 6944 f, 6955 (-ę ‡ C), 7057 f, 7303 f, 7320 f, 7686 f, 7994 f, 8065 f, 8231 (mercy BD); grace, 973, 998, 1328 (D †), 2058, 4925, 4955.—gracę for, 3770 (-ë had B, -ë to D, *om.* † C). [Cf. graceles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—pace, passe *inf.* (42, 370, 3314, 4111, 5614, 6055), passe *subj.* 1 *sg.* (7057), trespace *inf.* (4018), purchace *inf.* (900, 1117, 1799, 5217), *imv. pl.* (2207), chase *inf.* (4646), face (1070, 1351, 4191), at prymë face (3764), space (713, 2155, 2207, 7303, 7994, 8065), place (900, 955, 1056, 1117, 2450, 3764, 4111, 4191, 4298, 4646, 5217, 6346, 6534, 6944, 7303, 7320, 7686), deface *inf.* (6346), arace *inf.* (7320). [Var. C grase; C 4018 gras; D 42 gras.]

gyle, 719 f C (wyle AD, wile B) (: begile *inf.* : while); 3619 f (gile C) (: while).

gyse, see § 26.

herbe, *-e*, 957 (erb B), 1430 (herb B, erbe † C), 2852. [Var. C erbe.]

houre, oure, owre, 456 f (hour D), 1478 f, 1673 f (-is † D), 2792 f (hour D), 2982 f (our C), 4318[2], 5200 f (hour D), 7006 f; *-e*, 2642 (hoür ‡ aftir D), 3374 (-r CD)[3], 6826 (-r D)[4], 7696 (-r CD). [hourre † hath, 4295 C.]

Rhyme words.—laboure *labore* (456), denoure *inf.* (7006), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (1478), powre *inf.* (2792), honoure *inf.* (2982), he is youre (ȝoures ‡ D) (1673), oure *ours* (5200).

Infortùnë wolde, 4847 (*-e* it AB); *-e*, 4468, 4959. [Cf. *fortune.*]

inke, 4535 f (ynke C, ynk D) (: bythenke (bithynke) *inf.*).

[1] So in ABECp. John's Phillipps 8252 (with *remeuable*) G (with *remeueable*) Harl. 2392 (with *nor* for *ne*) Selden B 24 (with *It* after *fortune*). Cut out in C. Ne resonable † fortune to deface D; No remuable fortune for to deface Durham II 13.

[2] For how sholde (shold[e] B) I my lyf an hourë (ourë B, our[e] D) saue, 4318 Cp., is apparently the correct reading. A, hour[e] my lyf (?); C. our[e] myn lyf (?).

[3] Supply [*she*] in C. [4] Supply [*nas*] in D.

inpossible, an inpossible were, 3367 (im- B, & † inpossibele C; D ?).

ire, iire, yre, 2864 f, 6952 f, 7827 f, 8118; ire, 793; ire he, 6399, 7586.

Rhyme words.—a-fyre (2864, 7827), I desire *ind.* (6952).

iape, 2128 f (: ape); 3250 f (: frape : i-shape *p.p.*); *-e*, 1215. [-ë ‡ in, 5258 C.]

ioye, 4 f, 118 f[1], 608 f, 1225 f, 1728 f, 1834 f, 1902 (-[e] D), 1967 f, 3059 (C † D †), 3190 (ioy ‡ to D ?), 3198 f, 3632 f, 3717 f, 4070 (*-e* ‡ D), 4162, 4221, 4249, 4284 f, 4292 f, 4513 (ioy ‡ his D), 4556 f, 4718 f, 4752 f, 4931 (-[e] D), 4936 f (foye † C), 4997 f, 5004 (-[e] D ?, -ë ‡ or B), 5047 (-[e] D), 5968 f, 5985 ‡ C (blysse ABD), 6093[2], 6104 f, 6293 f, 6390 f, 6481 f, 6790 f, 6971 f, 6978 f, 7094 f, 7144 f, 7293 f, 7745 f, 7910 f; ioye, 1918, 3662, 4520, 8077, etc.; *-e* he, 2389; *-e* hastow, 6951; *-e* hadde 3311; *-e* here *poss. pl.*, 1861[3]; *-e* halt, 4478 (-e haldyth † C).—ioyë have (*inf.*), 2329 (-[e] D).—ioyë and (*l.* ioye and [al]), 3495 C (*-e* AB).—ioye ‡ may, 4535 A (-ë BC, -[e] D).

Rhyme words.—fro ye (4), anoye *inf.* (5968), acoye *inf.* (7144), Troye (*all the passages cited*). [Var. BD ioie; C 1728, 1918 Ioyȝe.]

lesse (O. Fr. lesse), 1837 f (leese B) (: ese *n.*).

ligne, see *lyne*, § 3, p. 6.

ma dàmë, 1170 (-[e] B); *-e*, 1965 (madàm B).

martire, see 5480 f (under *matere*, § 28).

mayle, 7922 f (: by-waylle *inf.* : auentaylle).

medecyne, 659 f (-[e]cine B, medicynys † C, medicine D) (: fyne).

meruaỳle, merueỳle, 476 f (: trauayl, -e BCD); *-e*, 3031 (meràkęle C, miràcle D).—mèrueyle, 6484 ‡ D (wonder AB, wondyr C).

messàge, 3243, 5474 f (: rage *n.*), 5552 f (: rage *n.*). [massàgë ‡, 2021 C.] [5516 B, *extra metrum.*]

mewe, muwe (O. Fr. mue), 381 f, 3444 f, 4626 f, 5158 f (mew D), 5972 f.

Rhyme words.—suwe *inf.* (381), saluwe *inf.* (4626), arguwe *inf.* (5158), stuwe *n.* (3444), truwe *truce* (5972).

miracle, see *meruayle*.

moble, moeble (*dissyl.*), 6042 (mobęlë C), 6663; moeble is, 6122 (mooble B, mebil C, mobles ‡ ben(e) D).

mowe (Fr. moue), 4669 f (mow D) (: y-throwe *p.p.*).

muse, 1094 f (: vse *inf.* : excuse *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

[1] Old-style figures indicate that D has no -e.

[2] Bygan for Ioyë the amorousë (thamorousë Cp. John's, thamarousë B, the amerous[e] CD) daunce.

[3] Supply a third [*her*] in D.

mysèricòrde, 4019 f (-d B) (: recorde *imv. pl.*).

nece, 968 (-ę to D), 1177, 1334, 1559, 2288, 2550 (-e [myn] A, C *defect.*), 3051, 3594 (-ë ‡ he C, -ę quod D), 3788 (nece(ce) C, -ę dere ‡ ? D), 3817, 8075 (nees[e] D), etc., etc.—nece, 1409 (trowth[e] nece B), 1491 AB, 2338 (-ë lo ‡ C), 2502, 3117 (-ë put C, -ę ‡ put D), etc.; *-e* haue, 1373; *-e* hath, 8090 (nees D); *-e* how, 4405. [Var. C 2042 nese; D 4398 nice.]—necę who, 2272; necę se, 3804 (*-e* how CD)[1]; necę lo, 1340 (*-e* BC, -ë ‡ alwey D).

note, 5247 f (: hote *adv.* : grote).

noyse, 3586, 6620 ABD; *-e* 85 AB (C †), 1155, 3504 (D †), 4732, 4845 (voys ‡ D), 5248; *-e* he, 5036. [Var. BD noise.]

òrisònte (Ital. orizzonte), 6639 (-soùnë B, oryȝonte C, orisent[e] D).

penne, *-e*, 4675.

peple, (i.) *dissyl. bef. csts.*, 73, 1728, 1743 (-il C), 3426 (-ës B, puples C †), 7515 (puple C, people D). (ii.) *elided before vowels*, 1731 (peplë on CD), 3110 (pepl‖ as C), 4845 (peplë stert ‡ D), 6231 A (peplë al(le) B, pepęle ek C; D †). [Var. C. pepęlë.]

persòne, 1786 f, 2572 f, 4745 f (all rhyme with *to done*); *-e*, 1253.—pèrsone his, 2352 (person C, *-e* [his] D).

peyne, 9 f, 63 f[2], 508 f, 589 f, 674 f, 709 f, 1560 f, 1608 f, 1861 f ABC (peyn D1862), 2072 f, 2212 f, 2316 f, 2440 f, 2586 f, 2615 f, 2821 f, 2947 f, 3836 f, 3848 f, 3960 f, 4333 f, 4373 f, 4958 f, 4980 f, 5140 (pleyne † C, peyne † D), 5166 f (peyn C), 5296,[3] 5372 f CD, 5411 f (-n C), 5414 f C, 5451 f, 5509 f, 5532 f, 5565 f, 5604 f, 5803 ‡ (-es AB, -ys C), 5806 f, 5919 f, 5967 f, 6398 f (pyne B), 6653 † f A (pyne BCD), 6778 f (pyne † BD), 7041 f, 7090 f, 7255 f, (pyne † B), 7399 f (-n C), 7592 f (payn C), 7599 (-es AB), 7632 f, 7763 f.—peyne, 34, 497, 3634 (wo ‡ B), 4058 (-ęs ‡ B), 4060 (*-e* hath BCD), 4344 (pleyne † C), 5799, 6861; *-e* hym, 7563; *-e* hire (*pl.*), 5791 BD (-ęs † A, sorwe † of C).—peyn ‡ ther yn, 1960 D.

Rhyme words.—pleyne *inf.* (9, 508, 1608, 1861, 2440, 2615, 2947, 6398, 7592, 7763), pleyne *ind.* 1 *pl.* (709), compleyne *inf.* (4958, 5451, 5565, 7090, 7632), *imv.* (2586), *querar* (3848, 6778), *queratur* (5919), to seyne (to seyn 3848) (9, 589, 709, 1608, 2072, 2212, 2440, 3836, 3960, 4373, 5166, 7399), restreyne *inf.* (674, 5372 CD, 5532, 5604), constreyne *inf.* (1560), *cogitis* (2316), destreyne *inf.* (4373), feyne *simulem* (2615), reyne *pluere* (4958, 5532), reyne *ind.* 3 *pl.* (5509), freyne *inf. A.S. frignan* (7592), tweyne, tweyn (2821, 3960, 4333, 5411, 5414 C, 5451, 5806, 5919, 5967, 7041, 7632), Eleyne (63, 674, 7255), cheyne *n.* (508), soureyne *adj.* (4980), veyne *n.* (5604, 6778). [Var. CD peine; D payne.]

place, 898 f, 953 f, 961,[4] 1057 f (space D), 1115 f, 1128, 1163 f,

[1] Supply [*can*] in B.
[2] Old-style figures indicate that D has no -e.
[3] Supply [*nc*] in D.
[4] AB slightly defective.

2449 f, 2652 f, 3060 f, 3763 f, 3856 f, 4113 f, 4190 f, 4297 f, 4339, 4645 f, 4810 f, 5220 f, 5814 f, 6347 f, 6532 f, 6586 f, 6608 f, 6897 f, 6943 f, 7039 f (space CD), 7040 f (space AB), 7073 f, 7306 f, 7319 f, 7685 f, 7992 (spacë C).—place, 429, 2098, 3518 (-ę † gan D), 4322 ‡ D, 4435 (-ë rise ‡ D), 4970 (-ë ‡ is C[c]); *-e* his, 2455 (-ë ‡ his C; D †); place horrible, 6613 (plase oribęle C).

Rhyme words.—face *and* grace (q.v.), *and the following*:—purchace *inf.* (1115, 5220), pace, passe *inf.* (1163, 2652, 3060, 4113, 5814, 6897), chase, chace *inf.* (898, 4645), space (7039 AB, 7040 CD, 7306), enbrace *inf.* (6586), race (a-race C) *radat* (3856), arace *inf.* (7319), deface *inf.* (6347). [Var. C plase.]

planète, 4099 f (: the swete : the grete).

pleynte, 408 f[1] (: I feynte *ind.* : queynte), 544 f (compleynt D) (: compleynte : dreynte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*), 5001 ‡ D (*pl.* ABC), 5462 (-[e] C, còmpleintę that ‡ D), 5489 B (-[e] A, còmpleint ‡ thus D), 5593 f (-t C) (: dreynte *pret. subj.* 2 *pl.*)[2].—pleynte, 5522 (-t C), 5807 (-t C), 7738 (-t C); *-e* his, 6631 (-t BC). [5504 ?] [Var. D pleint, pleinte.]—pleynt of, 8107 (*-e* B).

pompe, 6332 (pomp B).

potènte (cf. O. Fr. potence), 7585 f (-t CD) (: wente : shente, *both pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

pouèrte (irregular formation, see ten Brink, § 221; O. Fr. povorté), 6182 f (-t C) (: sherte).

preue, 690 f, 3149 f, 3844 f, 6321 f. (*preue*, 470 f, is perhaps an adjective: "The shoures sharpe fille of armes preue.")

Rhyme words.—leue *credere* (690, 3149, 6321), remeue *inf.* (690), greue *subj.* 2 *pl.* (3844).

prològe, 5555 (prolong † CD).[3]

prouèrbe, 1482 (prouèrb B).

pùrsuyte, 2829 (pursute D, pursùing C); pùrsuytę[4] make, 2044 (purseùt (?) C, pùrsutę D).

quiète, quyète (Lat. quietem), 3348 f, 4661 f, 5152 f, 5167 f (qui[e]te B), 5443 f.—quiète, quyète, 4522 (quyètë and[5] A), 7370.

Rhyme words.—swete *adj. indef.* (*all*), mete *meet inf.* (3348), *prcs. subj.* 3 *sg.* (5443).

rage, 3741 f, 4915 f, 5473 f, 5554 f.

Rhyme words.—corage, asswage *inf.*, message (5473, 5554).

rascaỳlle, 8216 f (: auaylle *inf.* : trauayle *n.*).

regnë shal, 7907 ‡ B (-ës AC, -is D); regne and, 2871.

[1] Old-style figures indicate that D has no -e.
[2] A has *drenche* (C *drenk*) for *dreynte*.
[3] Dele the first *as* in A.
[4] Supply [*thi*] in A.
[5] But supply [*thus*] and read *quyète*.

rente, 1915 f (-t CD) (: entente *n.* : sente *misit*), 4747 f (-t D) (: wente *ivi*).

reprèue, 1504 f (reprefe D) (: leue *credere*), 2225 f (-oue † B, -efe D) (: leue *creditis*).

requèste, 4719 f (: leste *minimos*), 5176 (-[e] CD), 7312 f (-t D) (: at the meste : at the leste).—requèst, 2990 f (-e B) (: feste *n.*); requèst‖is, 1450 (-*e* B).

reyne (Cotgr. reine), -*e* here, 6453 (-*e* he C, rene D).

roche (O. Fr. roche, roke), -*e*, 4339 (rok C, rock D).

route, rowte, 271 f (-t D), 1698 f (-t D), 1903 f, 5065 f, 5344 f, 5379 f, 6428 f, 6450 f (-t C), 6765 f, 6915 f, 7858 f.

Rhyme words.—aboute (all but 1698, 6428, 6915), withoute (271, 1698, 6428), oute (6915), shoute *inf.* (1698), doute *n.* (5065, 6428), knyghtes stoute (7858).

ruÿne, 5049 f (: deuyne *inf.* : defyne *pres.* 1 *sg.*).

saue-garde (O. Fr. sauvegarde), 4801 B (saue-gard[e] A, saf cundwÿt hem C, safe conduÿt hem D).

sege (cf. assege), 6142 CD (thassègë A, thassàgë B); -*e*, 1169 (sege(e) B).

signe, 3994; -*e* of, 5826, 8015 (-*e* of [his] D).

sire, 2042 (-[e] BD)[1]; -*e*, 2501 (sere C, here ‡ D), 2544 (sir BD), 6117 (syre C, sir D); -*e* his, 2925 (sir D).—sire come, 2917 (syr B, for † D).

space, 505, 714 f, 1852 f, 2156 f, 2209 f (sp[a]ce B), 3303 (gracë AB), 5998 f, 7039 f CD, 7040 f AB, 7305 f, 7992 C, 7993 f, 8067 f.

Rhyme words.—*face*, *grace*, and *place* (q.v.); also, chace *inv. pl.* (2209), pace *inf.* (1852).

stuwe, stewe (cf. O. Fr. estuve), 3443 f (: mewe); the stewë dore, 3540.

table, 6800 f (tabele C) (: honourable, honurabele C).

tente, 6511 f (-t C) (: entente), 7208 (-e ther B), 7385 f (-t CD) (: wente *iit*).

terme, 7059, 7453; -ë holde, 7572 (-[ë] D, hestis ‡ C).

title he, 488 (tytele C, *stanza not in* D).

trone, 5741 f (: sone *adv.*), 5748 f (: to done), 5837 f (: sone *adv*).

vncle (*dissyl.*), 1172, 1183, 1207 (C †), 1221 (D †), 1231, 1324,[2] 1579, 1739, 2188, 2217, 2561, 2809, 3487, 3684 (vncle [myn] D), 4420,[3] 5601; vncle (*dissyl.*) herde, 2185; vncle, 1335 (-*e* hir D[4]). (C always spells the word with an interior e, vnkele, but never makes it a trisyllable.)[5]

[1] "Sire my nece wole do wel by the." (Hardly to be regarded as a 9-syl. verse.)
[2] Supply [*myn*] in AB.
[3] Dele (*for*) in A.
[4] In a rather later hand.
[5] In 2188 supply [*myn*] in C.

vniuerse (Lat. universum, cf. Fr. univers), 2878 f (vniuers(it)e A) (: the worse).

vrne[1] (Lat. urna, rather than Fr. urne), 6674 f (: torne (turne) *inf.*).

vsàge, 150.

vermìne, 3223 f (: determyne *inf.*).

verre, 1952 f (: werre).

veyne, 5605 f (: restreyne *inf.* : peyne), 6780 f (: peyne : pleyne *plorem*); *-e*, 866 (vayne D).

viàge, 3574[2]; *-e*, 1160 (A *too short*); vìage, 2146.

visàge, 5524 f (vesage C) (: ymage); 8201 f (: age : ymage).

ymàge, 4897, 5526 f (: visage), 8202 f (: age : visage).

## § 22. Exceptions to § 21 (cf. § 21, note 2).

acòrd (O. Fr. acorde, acord), 4592 (-ę B, *l. om.* † E).

àngwyssh (O. Fr. anguisse, angoisse), (i.) 5506 (-guys C). (ii.) 4817 (-guys C, -gwisshe D).

aungel (O. Fr. angelc, angle), 5306 ‡ C (Ioue AB; Ioue D (?))[3]. (Cf. ten Brink, § 221.)

bestę (O. Fr. beste), 2852 (best BD).

brochę, broch (O. Fr. broche), (i.) broch, 4212 (-ę BC, -e (of) gold (?) C), 8024 (-ę BD; C †); -ę ‖ yow, 8051 (broch B, -ę (?) D); -ę ‖ that, 8053 (broch B). (ii.) *-e*, 7403 (broch B, *-e* [and] that C); *-e* he, 8032.

còncord (O. Fr. concorde), còncord and, 3348.

cùrtyn (O. Fr. curtine, cortine), cùrtyn pyke, 2902 (-teyn C).[4]

marbel (O. Fr. marble, marbre), 700 (-il C, -le D) (cf. § 21, n. 4).

phisỳk (O. Fr. phisike), 2123 f (fisyk B, fysik C, physik D) (: lyk *pred. adj. sg.* : pyk *fish*).

pres, prees (O. Fr. presse), (i.) cf. 173 f, 2734, 2803, 4765 f. (ii.) pres he, 2728. [Var. D presę.] In all the above cases *pres* = throng; in the phrase *leye on presse*, *presse* occurs, 559 f (: holynesse).

ràket (O. Fr. rachete), ràket to, 5122 (rakett D).

rebel (O. Fr. rebelle, *noun* and *adj.*), Al haue I ben rebel yn myn entente, 1609.

rèfuyt (O. Fr. refuite, refuit), (ii.) 3856 (-fut BC, -fute D).

rèlyk (O. Fr. relique), rèlyk ‖ hight, 153 (-ike C, -ique D).

[1] Apparently then a new word: "a vessel that men clepeth an vrne."
[2] Supply [*to*] in C.
[3] Cp. has *Ioue*; E. Harl. 4912 John's have *But any aungel*.
[4] Supply [*in*] in A.

rescoùs (O. Fr. rescous, rescousse), (i.) 4084 (rescoussę D). rèscous, (ii.) 478.

skàrmyssh (O. Fr. escarmouche), s. al, 1696 (scarmich B, scharmus C, skarmisshe D †); s. of, 2019 (scarmich B, charmys B, scarmysshe D).[1]

sours (O. Fr. sourse), (ii.) 7954 (sors D, ground ‡ C).

text (O. Fr. texte), text || ful, 4199 (tex B, tixite † E, tixt is C); text || to (so C), 6072 (-ę D).

tràuers (O. Fr. traverse), 3516 (-erȩs B, curtyns ‡ D). [Plural?]

ỳssuę (O. Fr. issue), 6568 (is- BD, isseu C).

*Nobley* (O. Fr. *noblèie, noblée*) occurs once (before a vowel), see 6332. Cf. *chimenaye* (O. Fr. *cheminée*) and *valey* (O. Fr. *valée*) (§ 33, n. 2).

## § 23. Nouns in *-aunce.*

That -e counts as a syllable is clear not only from rhyme, but from the cases in which *mischaunce* occurs in the interior of the verse before a consonant (5332, 6024; cf. also 3132). For convenience, *balaunce, daunce, romaunce,* and *traunce* are included in this list. Interesting words are *asèüraùnce, desèsperaùnce, obèỳsaùnce, signifiaunce, suffisaunse* (var. *sufficiaunce*), *vengeaunce.*

In the following list all rhyme-words are given, except nouns in *-aunce*:—

àbundaùnce, 3884 (hab- A, ab- D †).

àlliaùnce, 4588 f.

aqueyntaunce, 6485[2]; acqueỳntaunce, 6492 (-ns CD).

asèüraùnce, 7622 f (esèür- B, ass[è]ür- C, ass[è]üraùns D).[3]

balaùnce, 1551 f, 6222 f (-auns D).

chaunce, 1549 f, 2432, ‡ f B (*pl.* ACD), 8031 f (chauns D).

còntenaùnce, 1637 f (: daunce *n.*), 2102 f, 3821 f, 4384 f. [Var. C cuntenaunce; D countyn-.] còntenaùnce, 6902 (cuntenauns C, countenauns D).

contìnuaùnce, 2919.

daunce, 517 f (: auaunce *inf.*), 1638 f (: contenaunce), 2191 f (: penaunce), 3375 ‡ f C$^{e}$ (: ordenaunce), 6093 f (dauns D) (: penaunce).—daunce, 3537 (C †), 6811 (dauns D).

delỳueraùnce, 4864 f (dèlib- C).

desèsperaùnce, 1615 f (des[es]p- CD), 2392 f (dis- C, des[es]p- D) (: daunce *inf.*: traunce *n.*).

[1] 9-syl. line in A.

[2] Thaqueyntaunce (The aqueyntau[n]se C, The acqueintauns D) of these (this BC, thes D) Troians (-yans B, -iaunes D, Troylus C) to (for to C) chaunge.

[3] If we read *d'pë* before this word we can shun the -èü-.

dessèueraùnce, 4266 f (dis- BD).
disauenaunce, 1596 f C (*l.* disauaùnce *inf.*).
dìsplesaùnce, dysplesaunce, 3322 f, 4137 f.
doutaùnce, 5625 f (doughtauns D), 5706 f; cf. 200 f C.
gòuernaùnce, 1304 f (: daunce *inf.* : myschaunce *n.*), 1552 f, 2105 f, 2527 f (generaunce † B, sustenaunce ‡ D), 3269 f, 3323 f, 3787 f (gouerȩnaunce B), 4586 f.—gòuernaùnce hire (*poss. sg.*), 3058.
ìgnoraùnce, 4136 f, 5646 f, 5663 f, 5733 f; *-e*, 3668, cf. 2133 ‡ C.
instaùnce, 2526 f.
mischaùnce, myschaùnce, meschaùnce, 92 f, 1307 f (: gouernaunce : daunce *inf.*), 2104 f, 3533 f (: ordenaunce : traunce *inf.*), 4227 f (mysschance D) (: auaunce *subj.* 3 *sg.*), 4865 f, 5153 f (-ns D), 6223 f (-ns D), 6722 f (-ns D), 7797 f (myschauns D, mys-schaunce C) (: auaunce *inf.*). myschaùncë (*bef. csts.*), 5332 (mes- B, mis-chauns[e] D), 6024 (mes- B, myschaunse C, mischauns[e] D).—myschauncë ‖ in, 3132 (meschaunce B, myschauns[ë] C, mischèf ‡ yet D).—mischaùnce, 118 AB (-ë ‖ and B).[1]
moùntaunce, 2792 (mountȩnau[n]s C); moùntance, 4574 (moùntȩnans C).
obèÿsaùnce, 3320 f (obseruaunce † D).
òbseruaùnce, 1197 f (: daunce *inf.*), 3812 f; cf. 198 ‡ f D, 2430 ‡ f B, 3320 † f D.—òbseruaùnce, 5445 (-ns D).[2]
òrdenaùnce, 1595 f (: disauaunce *inf.*), 3377 f (puruyaunce ‡ C), 3530 f (: myschaunce *n.* : traunce *inf.*), 5626 f (ordinauns D), 7968 f (ordinauns D). [Var. BD ordinaunce; B ordy-.]
penaùnce, pennaùnce, 94 f, 1614 f (pen[a]unce C), 2190 f (: daunce *n.*), 5004 f (: traunce *n.*), 6091 f (-ns D) (: daunce *n.*), 6724 f (-ns D), 8034 f (-ns D); cf. 201 f CD (-ës AB).
persèueraùnce, 44 f (: plesaunce : auaunce *inf.*).
plesaùnce, 46 f (: perseueraunce : auaunce *inf.*), 3268 f, 3786 f, 3813 f (displesaunce † C), 4264 f, 4374 f, 4386 f, 5069 f (-ns D) (: daunce *inf.*), 5081 f (-ns D), 5155 f (-ns D), 6177 f (-ns D), 6304 f (-ns D), 6677 f (-ns D), 6927 f (-ns D) (: remembraunce : daunce *inf.*), 7623 f (-ns D), 7971 f (-ns D); cf. 5761 f CD.—plèsaunce, 6324 (-ns D), 7094 (-ns D); plèsaunce *or* plesaùnce, 2846 (-ns D).
pùrueyaùnce, pùruyaùnce, poùrueyaùnce, 1612 f, 3375 f (daunce ‡ C$^{c}$, pùrvëaùnce D), 5623 f (-ns D), 5644 f, 5662 f, 5708 f, 5732 f, 7809 f (-ns D).—pùrueyaùnce hath, 5639 (-ns D).

[1] But 118 B supply [*ye*] and read *mischaunce in.*
[2] In 5445 C dele (*I*).

rèmembraùnce, 3810 f (-ance C), 4375 f, 4387 f, 5082 f (-ance C, -auns D), 6305 f (-ns D), 6678 f (-ns D), 6925 f (-ns D) (: plesaunce : daunce *inf.*), 7807 f, 7970 f (-br[a]unce C, -brauns D).—rèmembraùnce, 7084 (-ns D), 8026 (-ns D), 8054 (-ns D).[1]

rèpentaùnce, 4150 f.

romaùnce, 3822 f (-ance C).—ròmaunce, 1185 (-ns CD).

sìgnifiaùnce, 6725 f (sìgnef*yaunce* C, significauns ‡ ? D); sìgnyf*yaùnce*, 7810 f (-nifiaunce B, -nyfiaunce C, -nifiauns D). (Synæresis of the italicized vowels.)

substaùnce, 6175 f (-ns D).—sùbstaunce, 4879, 6167 (-ns D).

sùffisaùnce, 4151 f (sufficyaùnce C, soùfficiaùnce E), 6302 f (sùfficiaùnce C, -ficiauns D), 7126 f (sùfficiaùnce C, -ficiaùns D).—sùffisaùnce, 4558 (-ns C). (Synæresis of the italicized vowels.)

sùstenaùnce, 2527 ‡ f D.

traunce, 2391 f (: daunce *inf.*: desesperaunce), 5005 f (trau[n]ce C) (: penaunce).

vàriaùnce, 5647 f, 7125 f (-ns C), 8033 f (-ns D).

vèngeaunce, 8071 AB (-geauns D).

## § 24. Nouns in *-ence.*

This ending always rhymes with itself. In the few cases in which it occurs before a consonant in the middle of a verse, the -e does not count as a syllable (see under *prescience* (5683) and *science* (67)) (cf. ten Brink, § 223). For convenience, *defence* and *offence* are included in this list.

absènce, 513 f, 3056 f (-ns B), 4142 f, 5445 f (-ns BD), 6599 f (-se C, -ns BD); *-e*, 5089 (-ns BD)[2].—àbsence, 7759 (-ns D, -nce be C).

àbstinènce, 5446 f (-ns D).

àduertènce, 7621 f (-ns D); *-e*, 5360 (-ns BCD).

àudiènce, audyence, 4732 f, 5207 f (-ns D), 6598 f (-ns BD).

cònsciènce, 554 f (concience C).

defènce, 2980 f (A †), 4141 f (diff- B, defense D), 4949 f (diff- D).

dìfferènce, 395 f (-ns CD, deference A).

dìligènce, deligence, 2977 f, 4139 f.

èxcellènce, 3057 f, 3830 f, 4116 f, 4167 f.

expèriènce, 7620 f (-ns D); *-e*, 4125.

ìnnocènce, 2133 (-ns D, ygnoraunce ‡ C).

offènce, 556 f, 2979 f (-nse C), 4861 f.

pàciènce, 7760 (-ns D).

[1] Supply [*a*] in D.

[2] Or, *àbsence* (first word in the verse).

prèsciènce, 5726 f (-nt † D); *-e*, 5649 (prescient D); *-e* hath, 5660 (-nt D); -ę put, 5683 (-nt D).—prèscience, 5673 (prèscient D), 5724 (prèscient D). (Synæresis in 5673, 5724.)

presènce, 6596 f (-se C); *-e*, 1545 (presaunce B).

prudènce, 7107 (-ns BD).

rèsistènce, 3832 f.

rèuerènce, 516 f, 3054 f, 4115 f, 4170 f, 4731 f BD (reuęrence A); *-e*, 2882.

sàpiènce, 515 f.

sciènce, 7618 f (sience C, sciens D). —sciènçę so, 67.[1]

sentènce, 393 f, 4169 f, 4859 f, 5208 f (-ns D), 5725 f.

vìolènce, 4948 f; *-e*, 5224 (-ns D).

## § 25. (I.) Abstract nouns in *-esse*. (II.) Feminine nomina agentis in *-esse*.

(I.) For convenience *distresse*, *oppresse*, *presse*, and *redresse* are included in this list. Rhyme words are commonly nouns in *-esse* or in *-nesse*. All other rhyme-words are indicated. For *-essë* before a consonant, see *gentilesse* (3100). For *accèsse*, *èxcessę*, see § 32. (II.) All the examples of this ending occur in rhyme or before a vowel.

I. distrèsse, dystrèsse, destrèsse, 439 f (-es D) (: blysse *subj.* 3 *sg.*: prowesse), 616 f (-es D), 641 f (-es D), 1011 f (: lesse *pred. adj.*), 1748 f, 1804 f (: dronkenesse: gesse *ind.* 1 *sg.*), 1941 f (-es C) (: shrewednesse: gesse *ind.* 1 *sg.*), 2331 f (distrès D), 2355 f, 2457 f (: impresse *inf.*), 2888 f (-es D), 3087 f (disdresse † B), 3104 f, 3206 f (-es D), 3634 f, 3723 f, 3827 f (sykernesse: gesse *inf.*), 3877 f, 4058 f, 4286 f, 4438 f ABC (: blysse *inf.*), 4632 f (-es CD), 4766 f, 4963 f, 5026 f, 5188 f (-es D), 5383 f (-es D), 5462 f (-es D) (: heuynesse: lesse *pred. adj.*), 5504 f, 5560 f (: heuynesse: gesse *ind.* 1 *sg.*); 5744 f (detresse D), 6333 f, 7078 f, 7957 f.—distrèsse, 550 (-es D)[2].

durèsse, 6762 f.

èxcessę, see p. 87.

fèblesse, 1948 (fièblęnesse B, fèblilnesse C, fèblënès D)[3].

gèntilèsse, gèntillèsse, 881 f (-nesse D) (: gesse *ind.* 1 *sg.*), 1245 f (ientilnesse D), 1747 f (gentilnesse BD), 1787 f (-nesse B, -nes D), 2353 f (-nesse CD), 3005 f (-nesse B, -nes D), 3244 f (-nesse BC,

[1] In D supply [*that*].
[2] Supply [*swich*] in C.
[3] Supply [*that*] in C.

iontilnesse D), 3724 f (-nesse BCD), 3878 f (-nesse C, -nes D), 3990 f (-nesse BCD) (: gesse *ind.* 1 *sg.*), 4256 f (-nesse B, -nes C), 7954 f (-les C, -lnes D), 7980 f (-nesse D) (: gesse *inf.*).—gèntilèssë triste, 3100 (gentileste † B, -nessë C, -nes to D).—gèntilèsse, 4393 (-nesse CD).

largèsse, 4566 f (: gladnesse : gesse *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

noblèsse, 287 f (: gesse *inf.*), 6802 f (nobęlesse C[1]), 8194 f (noblenes ‡ D).

opprèsse, 6761 f.

presse, 559 f (: holynesse). Cf. *pres, prees*, § 22.

prowèsse, 438 f (: blysse *subj.* 3 *sg.* : distresse *n.*), 1717 f (: hardynesse : dresse *inf.*), 1745 f (pruesse C), 6799 f (largesse CD).

redrèsse, 5190 f (retresse B).

richèsse, 3242 f, 6332 f (rich[e]sse B), 6801 f.—rìchesse, 3191 (rechesse B, rchetyng † D).[2]

tendresse. For tendresse how shal she this sustene, 6605 A (tèndrenèsse B, tendirnesse CD).[3]

II. deùynerèsse, 7885 f (deuineresshe C) (: sorceresse).

goddèsse, 6204 f (goddès D) (: lesse *adj. pl.* : wildernesse); For nece by the goddesse Mynerue, 1317 (-des[se] C); gòddesse, 8.

hierdèsse, 653 f (hye[r]desse D) (: heuynesse : gesse *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

maỳstresse, 1183.

sòrcerèsse, 7883 f (sercheresse C) (: deuyneresse).

§ 26. Nouns in *-yce, -yse.* For apocope, see *seruisę* (315). For *-ë* before a consonant, see *coueytise* (3103).

àuarỳce, 4647 f (aueryce C) (: vice).

còueytìse, coueitise, 4231 f (: dispise *ind.* 3 *pl.*), 6031 f (: suffice *inf.* : gyse *n.*), 6040 f (: deuyse *inf.*). [Var. C couetyse; D couetise.]—còueytìsë wroughte, 3103 (-ë (I)wroughte B, còuetisę ‡ this D).

còwardìse, -yse, 5264 f (: emprise), 6775 f (: ryse *inf.*).

emprìse, 1158 f (: ryse *inf.*), 2476 f (empresse † C) (: aryse *inf.* : forbyse *inf.*), 3258 f (: seruyce), 5263 f (: cowardise).

gyse, 2001 f C (wyse ABD) (: ȝe ben wise), 6032 f (: suffice *inf.* : coueytise); *-e*, 7224, 8013 (-ę ‡ C, guise D †); guise, 6427 D (wyse AB, wise C).

malìce, 3168 f (maleys C) (: nice *adj. pl.* : vice).—malìs if, 3722 (-ice B, -icë ȝif (?) C, -icë ‡ if D)[4].—màlys hir, 3997 (malice BD, -eys C).

[1] Dele (*a*) in B.
[2] Supply [*his*] in B.
[3] Dele (*the*) in D. Cp. has *tenderuesse*; John's has *tendreuesse*.
[4] In B read *if* for *of*.

office, 4278 f (-yse C$^{c}$) (: vice).

sàcrifice, 3381 f (: seruyse), 4550 f (: ryse *inf.*), 7828 f (: dispise *inf.* : wyse *n.*). [Var. BCD -ise.]

seruỳce, -ỳse, -ice, -ise, 82 f, 164 f, 335 f (servys D), 951 f, 956 f, 982 f, 1763 f, 2884 f, 2975 f, 3003 f, 3256 f, 3279 f, 3317 f, 3380 f, 4130 f, 4444 f, 4636 f, 4657 f, 5059 f, 5176 f, 5471 f, 5494 f, 7681 f. [Var. B ceruyse; C serwyse.]—seruìse, seruỳse, 430,[1] 3250, 4230[2].—sèruyse, 3834.—sèruise, 315.

Rhyme words.—wyse *n.* (82, 164, 335, 951, 956, 982, 1763, 2975, 4130, 4636, 4657, 5059, 5176, 5471, 5494, 7681), wyse *adj. sg. and pl.* (82, 956, 982), deuyse *inf.* (2884, 3003, 3317, 4636, 4657, 5471, 7681), deuyse *ind.* 1 *sg.* (3279), emprise (3256), sacrifice *n.* (3380), suffise *inf.* (4444, 5059).

vice, 980 f, 1810 f (nyse ‡ A), 1940 f, 3169 f, 4234 f, 4280 f, 4648 f, 5258 f, 8071 f. [Var. CD vise.]—vicë ‖ for, 3142 (vis[e] C; D †). —vice is, 689 (C † D †) (: vices *pl.*); vice, 252 (vys D), 1937[3], 2974.

Rhyme words.—cherice *inf.* (980, 1810), nyse, nyce *adj. sg. and pl.* (1810, 1940, 3169, 4234, 5258), malice (3169), office (4280), auaryce (4648), punyce *inf.* (8071).

## § 27. Nouns in *-ure*. Except as indicated, nouns in the following list rhyme only with each other.

armure, cote arm[ùr]*e*, 8014 (c. armùr B, cote armùre CD).

asùre (O. Fr. azur, asur), see § 32.

àuentùre, 35 f (: endure *inf.*), 368 f, 568 f (mys- ‡ C), 784 f, 1085 f, 1309 f (: disfigure *inf.*), 1366 f, 1827 f, 2604 f (: endure *inf.*), 4059 f, 4209 f, 4986 f (: endure *inf.* : sepulture), 5050 f, 5991 f (: endure *inf.*), 6661 f (-tur D) (: endure *inf.* : sepulture), 7903 f.—disàuentùre, 1500 f, 4959 f (mys- C, disauentur D) (: dure *inf.*), 5417 f, 7811 f; mysàuentùre, 706 f.—àuentùre, 1373 (-ë ‡ bele CD). —mysaùnter[4] ayleth, 766 (mỳsauèntur*e* D ‡, mysaù(e)ntur(*e*) B, auèntur*e* mys-aylyth † C).—For *paraùnter* (var. C parauenture, perauenture, etc.; D perauntre, perauenture, etc.), cf. 619, 668, 854, 1796, 2006, 2458, 3333, 5260, 7354 (perh. trisyl.), 7645, 7889.

crèatùre, 104 f, 115 f, 283 f, 570 f (cry- C), 1502 f, 1802 f, 2855 f (: endure *inf.*), 4914 f (crya- C), 5048 f (crya- C), 5418 f (-tur D), 5429 f (: dure *inf.* : noriture), 6341 f (: dure *inf.*), 6517 f (cria- C) (: dure *inf.*), 6573 f, 6604 f (crya- C, creatur D) (: endure *inf.*), 6747 f (-tur D), 7077 f (*l. om.* † C), 7171 f, 7195 f (cria- C, creatur D),

[1] In D supply [*my*].

[2] In 4230 the word stands first in the verse. Either accentuation is permissible. In 4230 C read *a*[*l*]*s*[*o*], and so too in Harl. 2392.

[3] In C read *fle*[*me*]*n* and in D *al*[*le*].

[4] Cf. paraunter. See ten Brink, § 263.

8064 f (-tur D) (: endure *inf.*).—crèatùrë (*bef. csts.*), 5110 (crya- C); -tùre, 1383 (crìatoùr C), 5113 (criateure C), 5156 (cryatour C).

cure, 369 f, 469 f (: dure *inf.*), 707 f, 783 f, 1084 f, 1368 f, 1826 f, 3884 f (: endure *inf.*), 4060 f, 6412 f (: endure *inf.*), 7076 f, 7902 f (cur D); *-e*, 5593 (care D, curę than C).

figùre, 366 f, 7812 f.

iniùre, 3860 f (D †).

mesùre, 1503 f, 1800 f.

natùre, 105 f, 113 f, 3858 f, 4913 f, 5430 f C †, 6572 f.—nàture, 6015.[1]

nòritùre, 5430 f (nòretùr D, natùre ‡ C) (: dure *inf.* : creature).

ordùre, 6748 f (-ur D).

scriptùre, 4211 f.

sèpultùre, 4989 f (: endure *inf.* : auenture), 6662 f (*same rhymes*).

statùre, 281 f, 7169 f (stàteùre ‡ C).

## § 28. Nouns in *-ère.*

In the following list are put together, for convenience, *chere, manere, matere, preyere, ryuere, spere* (= *sphere*). Observe *mànerę, mànęr.* The spelling *èmyspèry* for *hemispere* (see *spere*) is interesting.

chere, cheere (14 A, and sometimes in B), 14 f, 124 f, 181 f, 280 f, 289 f, 433 f, 879 f (shere B), 1125 f, 1234 f, 1417 f, 1445 f, 1556 f, 2214 f, 2352 f, 2446 f, 2597 f, 2626 f, 2811 f, 2896 f, 2938 f, 3072 f, 3174 f, 3271 f, 3334 f, 3484 f, 3589 f (cher C), 4198 f, 4396 f, 4506 f (clere † A), 4552 f (D †), 5317 f (cher D), 6097 f ‡ B, 6298 f, 6394 f (cher D), 6547 f, 6779 f (cher D), 7170 f, 7276 f (shere B, cher D), 7591 f (cher D).—chere (*bef. csts.*), 2660 (-[e] C; D †), 2592 D (-es AB, -is C).—chere, 1006, 1734 (cher C), 2343 (C ? ‡), 5020, 5060 (cher CD); chere hym, 1663 (cher C); cher (*bef. vowel*), 327 A (-e B, chyr C, cherë he D †).—He neither chere (schyr C) ne (*om.* BCD) made ne word (worde B, woord D) toldo, 312 (Shall we read: He neither cherë made ne word [ne] tolde? The Cp. collation makes no note.).

Rhyme words.—fere *comes* (14), manere (181, 289, 879, 1125, 2597, 2626, 2811, 2896, 2938, 3271, 4552, 5317, 6394, 6547, 7170), dere *adj.* (433, 879, 1417, 1556, 2214, 2446, 2811, 2896, 2938, 3174, 3334, 4198, 4396, 4506, 6547, 6779, 7276, 7591), here *hic* (124, 289, 1125, 3484, 6298), here *inf.* (124, 280, 3334, 3589, 5317), matere (1234, 2214, 3271, 4506), requere *ind.* 1 *sg.* (1445), 2 *pl.* (1556), yfere *adv.* (1234, 2352, 3072, 3589, 4552, 6097 B), preyere (3484, 6298), clere *adj. pl.* (4198, 7170).

manere: (1) manère, 33 f, 182 f, 291 f, 880 f, 1014 f, 1052 f, 1122 f,

[1] Supply [*the*] in C; [*pes*] in D.

2596 f (matere D), 2628 f, 2664 f, 2812 f, 2893 f, 2935 f, 3058 f, 3273 f, 3676 f (matere BD), 4254 f, 4291 f, 4555 f, 4585 f, 4946 f, 5315 f (-er D), 5580 f (-er D), 5844 f (-er D), 6392 f (-er D), 6549 f (-er D), 7172 f, 8170 f; manère, 1077 AB (-èr D).

(2) mànërę, mànęr, *bef. csts.*, (*a*) mànęrę, 1333 (-er B)[1], 1542 (-er CD),[2] 1937 (-er C)[3], 2460 (-er BC), 2560 (-er D, *om.* † C), 3631 (-er D, -ęr of C), 4577 (-er C), 4740, 5664 (-er D), 5939 (-er BCD), 6415 (-er C, -ęr of D), 7115 (-er CD), 7124 (-er BD, -yr C), 7748 (-er CD), 7918 (-er CD), 8014 (C †; -er D).[4] (*b*) mànër, 313 (-ę BD),[5] 321 (-ę CD), 495 (-ę D), 844 (-ę D), 1944 (-ę D, -ęr of C), 2189 (-ę CD),[6] 3159 (-ę BD), 3469 (-ę BD), 5822 CD (other AB), 7478 (-ę B), 7582,[7] 7640 (*om.* † C).—mànërę, *bef. vowels*, 742 B (-er CD, -ęres A), 2001 (-er C), 2353 (-er C). (3) mànęre ‡ vpon, 7751 A (more CD).

Rhyme words.—here *inf.* (33, 1014, 1052, 2664, 3058, 4585, 5315), dere *adj.* (33, 880, 2812, 2893, 2935, 4254, 4291, 4946, 6549), chere *n.* (182, 291, 880, 1122, 2596, 2628, 2812, 2893, 2935, 3273, 4555, 5315, 6392, 6549, 7172), here *hic* (291, 1122, 3676, 5580), matere (1052, 3273, 4254), lere *inf.* (2664), yfere *adv.* (4555), stere *inf.* (4946), bere *bier* (5844), clere *adj. pl.* (7172), spere *sphere* (8170).

Note.—In most of the cases under 2*a.* and 2*b.* above, *manęr* is used in such phrases as *no manere routhe*, *som manere syde*, *swych manęr folk*, *any manere syde*, *euery manere wyght*, *youre frendly* (l. *fremde*) *manere speche*, etc. 313 is an exception, however.

matere : (1) matèrę, 53 f, 265 f, 1055 f, 1090 f, 1236 f, 1580 f, 2124 f, 2216 f (mat[e]re B), 2332 f, 2514 f, 2596 ‡ f D (manere ABC), 2711 f, 2779 f, 3032 f, 3128 f, 3212 f, 3274 f, 3358 f, 3676 f BD (manere AC), 3751 f, 4148 f, 4251 f, 4503 f, 5313 f (matier D), 5480 f AB (martìr D),[8] 5746 f (-er D), 7106 f (-er D), 7314 f (matier D), 7359 f (matier D), 7951 f (matier D).—matèrë (*bef. csts.*), 968 (-[e] B, matyr[e] C), 3371. (2) matère, 144 (matyèr (*dissyl.*) and C), 1346 (-yr C, -er D), 1780 (-er C). (3) màtërę, 4485 AB (thyng C, thing to D), 7685 (-er C, -er D ‡), 7735 (-er C, màtier *dissyl.* D).

Rhyme words.—dere, deere *adj.* (53, 1580, 2216, 2514, 2779, 4148, 4251, 4503, 5313), here *inf.* (53, 1055, 2711, 3212, 5746, 7314, 7951), *audio* 3032), refere *inf.* (265), manere (1055, 3274, 4251), clere *inf.* (1090), clere *adj. pl.* (7359), stere *guberno* (1090), *gubernare* (3751), chere *n.* (1236, 2216, 2596, 3274, 4503 (clere † A)), yfere *adv.* (1236, 2124, 2332, 3358), here *hic* (1580, 2711, 3358, 3676, 4148, 7106, 7359), preyere (3128), desire *inf.* (5480).

[1] Supply [*to me*] in A. In all read *fremde* for *frendly* (etc.).
[2] Supply [*and*] in D. [3] In C read *fle*[*me*]*n*; in D, *al*[*le*].
[4] In A read *arm*[*ur*]*e* (with Furnivall). [5] In D read [*a*]*far* for *ferre*.
[6] In C supply [*now*]. [7] In C read *defet* for *disfigured*.
[8] The correct reading seems to be *martire*. C omits the stanza. G has *matere*. No note in the Cp. collation.

preyere, (1) preyère, 2296 f (C?), 3129 f, 3481 f, 6295 f (prayèr D). [Var. C preière; D prayère.] (2) preỳërę, 4773 AB (prayer D †); preỳërę, 1538 (preỳers B, preïęris C, prayër D). (3) preyere A (preyer BC, prayer D), 2575 (*bef. vowel*), to be pronounced *preyère* or *prey'r* (monosyl.), according as we read *goodly* (DGCp. John's) or *goodëly* BC (A has *good* †).

Rhyme words —dere *adj.* (2296), matere (3129), here *hic* (3481, 6295), chere *s.* (3481, 6295).

ryuère, 5075 f (reuere C, ryuer D) (: dere *adj.*).

spere, *sphaera*, 4337 f (: dere *adj.* : fere *comes*), 7019 f (: dere *adj.* : clere *adj. def.*), 8172 f (: manère).—hèmy-spère, 4281 (-sper(i)e B, èmëspèr(i)e C, èmyspèry D).

Note.—O. Fr. *gutiere* becomes *gòter* before a consonant in 3629 (gotur D); *pere* (*mare.*), shows an irrational -e : *As he that was with-outen ony pere*, 8166 (: boughten dere : here *inf.*), cf. ten Brink, § 222.

## § 29. Nouns in consonant + *re* (variants in *-er* and *-ere*).

cedre (O. Fr. cedre, cf. A.S. cẽder), 2003 (sidere C).

chaumbre, chambre, chaumber, (i.) dissyllabic before consonants, 2004 (-ir C), 2020 (-yr C), 2202 (-ere C, -ir D); cf. 358, 547, 2258, 3508, 3518, 3630, 4882, 4904, 5014, 5016 CD, 5394 CD, 6655. (ii.) Slurred before vowels, chaumbre ‖ and, 1641 (-ęr B, -ir C, -rë ‡ and D); chaumbęr afyr, 3698 (-ęre a B, -re a D; C (?)); cf. 2797, 5016 AB, 5394 AB; chambre he, 6565 (-ęre he C) (cf. 6363, 6877). But,—But wel ye wot the chaumbrë is but lite, 2731 (-er B, -ir C). [358 B, 547 D, 1641 D, are to be corrected.]

disclaùndre, 5226 (disclandre B, disclaundyr C, disclaunder D).[1]

iaspre : iaspre ‖ vpon, 2314 (-ër on C, -ar on D, iapery † vpon B).

lettre, 2298 f (lettere C) (: bettre *adv.* : vnfettre *inf.*), 2782 f (lettere C) (: bettre *adv.*). Before consonants (all forms dissyllabic): lettre, 656,[2] 1188 ‡ C, 2148, 2170 AB, 2175, 2205, 2240, 2246, 2261, 2281, 2286, 2303, 2403, 2421, 2787, 3034, 3062 (D †), 5222 (honour ‡ C), 7656,[3] 7704, 7758, 7785,[4] 7792, 7965.[5] [In 7995 B alone seems to have the correct reading.[6]] Before vowels the last syllable of *lettre* is slurred. Thus,—lettre I, 171 (-ęr C);[7] so in 2091, 2146, 2176 ABD, 2178 AB, 2232 (-ër to C, -rë to D), 7732,

[1] In C read *mostë* for *mot*.

[2] Old-style figures indicate that C has *lettere* (dissyllable). B has often *letre*, which also occurs in A 2421.

[3] A needs transposition of *thow* and *a lettre*.

[4] In D read [*vn*]*to*.

[5] Supply [*that*] in AC and [*why*] in D.

[6] For *This lettre this Troylus*, Cp. and John's have *Troilus this lettre*. G agrees with B, reading *This troilus this lettir thoukt al strange*.

[7] Metre defective in D.

7761, 7963, cf. 2405 ‡ C. (In this last list old-style figures indicate that C has *lettęre*. As before, B sometimes omits one *t*,—*letre*.) lettrë here (*hic*), 2208 (lettere *dissyl.* C)[1].—Towchyng thi lettrę that thow art wys ynowh, 2108 A (*but omit* that, *with* BC; D *is hopeless*).[2]

ordre, ordre is, 336 (ordęre C); ordre of, 5679; ordrë ay, 5444 (ordre ay D, ordërę til C).

poudre, poudre in, 6672 (-ęr D, -ir ‡ which C).

sucre, 4036 BGCp. (seukerę C, sugre D, soür A).

wỳuere (O. Fr. guivre, wyvre), 3852 f (wiuere C, wythir † D) (: delyuere *inf.* : slyuere *n.*).

Note.—*Feuere* (A.S. *fęfer, fefer*) appears to have been influenced by the French. There are four examples of the word in the *Troilus* (see § 18).

## § 30. Nouns in -ỳe, -ìe.

When the ending rhymes with itself, the rhyme-words are left unregistered. A remarkable verse is 4647, where we appear to have *enuỳë* ‖ *ire* (see under *enuye*). *Remedye* has the by-form *remède*.

armonye, 8175 f.

astronomye, 4777 f (: lye *inf.*).

baùdërỳ, 3239 f (-ye BC, bawdery D) (: folye : companye).

companie, companye, compaynye, 191 f (-y CD), 450 f, 1171 f (-y D), 2573 f (-y CD), 2798 f (-y C), 3238 f (-y D), 4590 f, 5369 f, 5864 f, 6429 f, 6810 f. [Var. B compaignie, -ye; CD cumpanye, cumpany.]

compaignye he, 7580 (-paynyė B, -panye C, -panie D).

Rhyme words.—aspie *inf.* (191), eye *n.* (450, 6810), hye *n.* (1171, 2798), thrie *adv.* (1171), denye *inf.* (2573), prye *inf.* (2798), hye *adj.* (4590), hye *adv.* (5864), gye *inf.* (4590), deye, dye *inf.* (5369, 5864).

còpye, 2782 (-ie BD, còpi C).

curtasie, -ye, 2571 f (-eysi C, -esy D) (: companye : denye *inf.*), 6427 f (-eysie B, -eysye C, -esie D).

enuye, 4937 f (: deye *inf.* : crye *ind.* 1 *sg.*), 7119 f, 7842 f (: lye *mentiuntur* : dye *inf.*).—That pride enuỳë ‖ ire and auaryce, 4647 ACD (That pride and ire enùye and auarice B).[3]

espie (cf. *spie*), espìe, 2197 (aspie B, a spie C, a spye D).

[1] ABC we have *sent*, which the metre requires us to emend to *sent*[*e*] or *sendeth*. D reads *sent to*; Cp. *sente*.

[2] Cf. also 7702 C, where, however, we might read *lokyn* (which would still leave a hard line). 7702 is wrongly filled up by the corrector of C.

[3] Cp. = B; E Phillipps 8252 Harl. 2392 = ACD; G Selden B 24 John's read *That pride enuye and ire and auarice*; Durham II 13 reads *That ire enuy and auerice*.

fantasye, 1567 f (-y D), 3117 f, 3874 f (-y D), 4346 f, 6132 f (C †), 6624 f, 6692 f (-y C), 6721 f, 6824 f (-y C), 6986 f (-y C), 7886 f. [Var. BCD fantasie; CD fantesie; D fantesy.]

Rhyme words.—crye *inf.* (3117), dye *inf.* (4346), espye *inf.* (6132), drye *pati* (6624), lye *mentiri* (7886).

folȳe, 194 f (-y C), 452 f, 545 f (-y D), 1024 f (-y D), 1859 f (-y D), 2158 f (-y D), 2253 f (-y D), 2371 f (-y D), 2595 f (-y D), 3236 f (-y D), 3680 f, 3709 f (-y D), 3721 f (-y D), 3828 f (-y D), 4224 f (-y C), 6132 f CD †, 6173 f (-y C), 6626 f (-y D). [Var. BCD folie.] folȳę men, 532 (-ȳ C; D ?).—fòlyę for, 6688 (fòlię B, -y C). fòlye, 5919 (-y C, fooly D); fòlye he, 821 (-y CD); fòly ofte, 3168 (-ye BCD). fòly wroughte, 3604 (fòlyę BC). The only case of elision with slur is *folye it*, 6240 C, where, however, the right reading is *filthe*.

Rhyme words.—aspye *inf.* (194, 1859, 2595, 3680), eye *n.* (452), multeplie *inf.* (545), dye *inf.* (1024, 2158, 2253, 2595), crye *inf.* (2158), lye *mentior* (2371), *mentiri* (3721), *mentiuntur* (4224), thrye *adv.* (2371), drye *pati* (6626).

frenësye, 727 f (-ie D) (: dye *inf.*).

glotonye, 6733 f (-enye CD) (: signifie *ind.* 3 *pl.*).

ialousye, -ie, iclousye, 1840 f, 3679 f (B †) (: espie *inf.* : folye), 3829 f (iclosy D), 3863 f (: crye *inf.*), 3872 f, 7576 f (: dye *inf.* : malencolye).—iàlousȳe, 1838 (iclosy D), 1922 (iclousy D), 3852 (iclosȳę ‡ the D), 3866 (cf. 3867 ‡ D). [*iàlọusyę* (*dissyl.*), 4010 A (ielọusyę D), should be *ialous* (as in B; ielous C).] [Var. C ielusie; CD iclousie, ielosye.]

ianglerye, 7118 f (iangęlerye C, iangęllarie D).

iupartie, 1550 f (: thrie *adv.*), 1857 f (-dy D) (: folye : aspie *inf.*), 3710 f (-dy D), 3719 f (-dy D ‡) (: folye : lye *inf.*), 6048 f (: in hye), 6174 f (-dy C), 7064 f (: spie *n.*), 7279 f (iupardi C), 7893 f (: lye *mentiuntur* : dye *inf.*). [Var. B iupartye; C iupardie, -dye; D iupardye, icopardie. The divided form *iu-partye*, 6174 B, is interesting.]

lytargie, 730 f (litargye B, lytargye C, litargie D) (: plye *ind.* 3 *pl.* : melodye).

maladye, maledye, 419 f (: deye *morior*), 1568 f (-dy D), 6679 f (-dy CD) (: dye *inf.*), 7594 f (maledy C, malady D) (: dye *inf.*).—maladye awey, 2600 (-dy BCD).

malèncolȳe, 6723 f (-ly C, -lie D malycolye B), 6985 f (-ly C, -lie D), 7579 f (-ly C, -lie D, melencolye B) (: ialousye : dye *inf.*), 8009 f (-ly C, -lie D) (: dye *inf.*).

melodie, -ye, 733 f (-dy D) (: lytargie : plye *ind.* 3 *pl.*), 3029 f (: hye *adv.* : glorifie *inf.*), 6825 f, 8176 f.

nòuellęrỳe, 1841 f (nouelrye BC, nouelry D).

pàrtie, 1479 (-tye B, -ti C).

poësye, 8153 f (-ie B, -y D) (: dye *moriatur* : enuye *imv. sg.*).

poetrie, 8218.[1]

prophesie, 7884 f (-cie BD, professye C) (: fantasye : lye *inf.*); -cỳ be, 7857 C (-cięs B -sięs AD).

pye, 3369 (pie B).

rèmedỳe, -ie, 6285 f (: dye *inf.*), 6691 f (-y C), 7280 f (-y C), 7573 f (-y C) (: dye *inf.*).

Remède and red by erbess she (*l.* he *as in* CD) knew fyne,[2] 661 (remèd*ye* and C, remèd*y* and D).

Remède in this yf ther were any wyse, 5551 (remèd*i* in C, remèd*ye* in D)[3].

But what is thanne[4] a rèmede vnto this, 5934 (rèmade, remèdie vnto C, rèmędye vnto D).

Ther nys non other rèmędye yn this cas, 6424 (C *has a spurious line*).

Syn that ther is no rèmędye in this cas, 7633.

spie (= speculator), a spie, 7066 f (a spye BC, espie D) (: iupartie).[5] (Cf. *espie.*)

surquidrye, 213 (sur(i)quidrie A, sùrquidè and C, sùrquydè and D).

trecherye, 3120 f (-ię CD) (: crye *inf.* : fantasye).

vilonye, vilenye, vylonye, 1026 f (vilany D) (: folye : dye *inf.*), 1523 f (welany C, vilany D) (: crye *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* : dye *inf.*)[6], 4683 f (: lye *mentiantur*), 6853 f (: hye *ind.* 3 *pl.*). [Var. BD vilanye; B vylenye, vilenye; C velenye.]

## § 31. Nouns in *-ye* unaccented.

This list includes (i.) *comèdye, tregèdie, paròdye*, and (ii.) nine nouns in *-rye* (following an accented vowel).

augùrye,—By sort and by (*om.* D) augurye (augury D) ek (eko D) trewely (trewly B, truly D), 4778. And treweliche (truely D) ek (eko D, *om.* C) augurye (augery C, augurrye D) of this (thise B, thes D, these olde C) foweles (-is B, foulis C, foules D), 6743.

comèdye, 8151 f (: tregedie).

consistòrie, consistòrie among, 4727.

contràrye, in his contràrye, 7742 f (D †) (: wàrye *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

[1] In A supply [*ye*].
[2] In C read *he knew* for *he knyt.*
[3] In B supply [*were*]. In D omit the second (*in*).
[4] C *om.* thanne.
[5] In A supply [*l*].
[6] In AB dele *ony* (*any*) or *that* (?).

fùrye, fùrie,—fùr*ye is*, 3879; fùr*ye of*, 6091 (-ȳe ‡ of D); fùr*ye as*, 6575 (-*y as* D; C †); fùrye and, 4915 AD (fùr*ie* and BC); fùrie (*dissyl.*) || sorwyng, 9 (wight ‡ that D).—Anoy smert dredë (-[e] C) fùr*y* and ek sikęnesse, 5507 (-*ye* and BD, -*ie* and C).

lètuàrye, 7104 f (lat- B, letewarye C) (: carye *ferunt*).

memòrie, 3671 f (-y D) (: transitorie), 6946 f (: storie : victorie).

mysèrie, mysèr*ie in*, 4934 (myn ‡ deth in C).

paròdye, 7911 f (paradie D) (: vnbodye *inf.*).

stòrie, stòrye, 6948 f (-y BD) (: memorie : victorie), 8014 f (: victorye); stòry, 3905 ‡ f D (storyes AB, storijs C).—stòrye (*dissyl.*), 3341 (-y CD; B †)[1].—stòry (*before consonants*), 1116, 7400 (-yę B)[2], 7414 (-yę B), 7457 (-ię B).—stòr*ye it*, 7197 (-*y it* B, -*i as* C, -*y as* D).

tregèdie, 8149 f (tregeedie D) (: comedye).

victòrie, -ye, 6949 f (-y C) (: memorie: storie), 8015 f (: storye); victòry, 3906 ‡ f D (: story) (victories AB, -ijs C).

Note.—Compare the proper name *Mercurye,—Mercurye for the loue of Hierse ek*, 3571 (Mercure B, -rie C, -ry D); *Ther as Mercurye sorted hym to dwelle*, 8190 A (-ie B). *Study*, 2265 (-ye B, -ie C, *dissyl.*), is perhaps rather from *studium* than from *estudie*.

## § 32. A few Romance words that end in a consonant in French take an *-e* in the *Troilus*.

accèsse (O. Fr. aces), 2400 f (: besynesse), 2663 f (axsesse C) (: sykenesse); *-e*, 2628 (acces C, actis † D).

asùre (O. Fr. asur, azur), 4212 f (: auenture *n.* : scripture).

auentaylle (cf. O. Fr. esventail), 7921 f (: by-waylle *inf.* : mayle).

darte (O. Fr. dart), 5433 f (: departe *pres.* 1 *sg.*); cf. 5134 f (§ 36, n. 2).

disioynte (cf. O. Fr. disjoint *p.p.*), 3338 f (-t D) (: poynte *inf*); disioynt[e], 7981 f (-e B) (: apoynte *inf.*).

excesse (rather from Lat. excessus than from Fr. excès), èxcessę doth, 626 (-ces C).

mene, meene (O. Fr. meien), 3096 f, 6467 f (meane D); *-e*, 689 (C † D †), 7914 (-ë † out D).

Rhyme words.—I mene (3096, 6467), clene *adj.* (3096).

pere (O. Fr. per), see note at end of § 28.

trauaỳle, trauaỳlle (O. Fr. travail), 21 f, 475 f, 1088 f, 2522 f, 3364 f, 8215 f. tràuayle, 6547.—trauaylle, 372 (-H D †)[3]; cf. tràuayl, 6457 ‡ C (*l.* labour).

[1] In C insert [*none*].

[2] In B read *telle*[*th*].

[3] A doubtful line. "Ymagynynge (-ing D) that (C *inserts* neyther) trauaylle (-uaille B, -uayle C, -uaile G, -vaiH D) nor (and D, ne G) grame (gaine C, game D)." Mr. Austin's collation gives *grace* for *grame* as the reading of Cp.E, but registers no other variants.

Rhyme words.—auayle *inf.* (21, 2522, 3364, 8215), sayle *inf.* (1088), fayle *inf.* (2522, 3364), rascaylle (8215), meruayle *n.* (475). [Var. B trauaille, trauelle (2522); BD trauaile.]

Note 1.—In 2817 Professor Child has suggested to me that we should read *by gynne* (dat. of *gyn* 'contrivance,' etc.) instead of *bygynne* (ABD) or *be-gyn* (C) (: with-inne). I find that G actually reads.—*And inwardly thus ful softely by gynne.* The Cp. collation shows no variants.

Note 2.—For *fèuere, feuer*, see § 18.

Note 3.—April, etc. Of Aperil (Aperille C, apparaille D, Aprill G, April E) whan clothed is the mede, 156 (no variants in Cp. collation); And seyde (seid D) frend yn April (Aperil B, Aprille C) the laste, 3202 (not in G, no variants in Cp. collation); Doun fille (Out ran C, Out ronne John's) as shour (schoure G) in (of C) Aperill (Aprille C, Aprill DG) swythe (ful swythe C), 5413. *Aperil* seems to be certain for 156, 3202, and for 5413 C. In 5413 the other MSS. require *Aperillë*. On the forms of *April* in Chaucer, see Varnhagen's "Ueber die verschiedenen Formen des Namens des vierten Monats bei Chaucer," appendix to Freudenberger, Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts, pp. 85 ff. (Erlanger Beiträge zur engl. Philol., IV). Varnhagen is inclined to believe that *Avril, April, Aperil* (*Averil*), *Aprillë* are all known to Chaucer. See also *Murray's Dictionary*, s.v. *March* (L. Martius) occurs in 1850 as *Marchę* AD (*March* BC).

## § 33. Words ending in Old French in *-é* and *-ée* end indiscriminately in -e in Chaucer. (See ten Brink, § 223 V.)

In the following list no variants are registered. Old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows without elision.

aduersité, 25 f, 404 f, 2861 f, 4467 f, 7446 f, 7738 f.

auctorité, 65 f.

beauté, 102 f, 1479 f.—beaùtë, 975, 1421, 1426, 1431, 1433, 1483, 4572, 4583, 7181, 7277, 7618, 7770.

benygnité, 40 f, 1617 f, 2881 f, 4127 f.

bestialité, 735 f.

bounté, 4771 f.—boùntë, 2529, 3724, 4116, 4505; b. hem, 4106.

charité, 49 f, 4096 f.

cité, cyté, 100 f, 129 f, 149, 5867.—cìtë, 59, 2231, 5347, 6141, 7206, 7269, 7849, 7850, 7859.

contré, 7837 f.—còntrë, 7834; c. hath; 1127.

cruelté, 586 f, 1076 f, 5434 f.

degré, degree, 244 f, 437, 844 f, 6324 f, 7199, 7723 f.

dèité, 3859 f.—dèite *infernal*, 6205.

destené, destyné, 520 f, 2176 f, 3576, 5621 f, 5631, 6364 f.

deynté, 1249 f.—deỳntë, 3451, 6801 (adj. ?).

duëté, 3812.

dyuersité, 3247, 8156 f.

èntrë, 1162 (-ee B).

felicité, 3656 f, 4533, 5142 f, 7126, 8181 f.
honesté, 1791, 6238 f.
iolyté, 559.
liberté, 1858 f, 2377 f, 6019, 6648 f, 7663 f.
meyné, 127 f.—meỳnë, 1699, 6889.
mutabilité, 851 f.
natiuyté, 1770 f.
necessité, 1708 f, 5676, 5686, 5695, 5719 f, etc.
niceté, nyceté, 906, 2371 ‡ D, 2373.
pité, pyté, 522 f, 892 f, 1740 f, 3875 (pïëté B),[1] 5030 f, 5393 f, 7187 f, 7961 f.—pìte, pỳte, 23, 2662 (pète *it* C), 4908 (pi(e)ty D), 5451, 5509; pìte *on*, 5486 A (-ë hadde B, -ë felte D); -*e and*, 7462 ‡ D. [7777 † C.] [Var. C pete; D pitee.]
possibilité, 1692 f, 3290 f.
predestiné, 5628 f.
preuyté, preueté, 2482 f, 3125, 5773 f.
prolixité, 2649 (D †).
propreté hire, 5054 (properte B, propęrete C, prosperite † D).[2]
prosperité, 3659 f, 4469 f.
qualité, 2873 f, 4496 f.
quantité, 412 f, 6049 f.
soueraynté, 3013 f.
subtilté, -tée, 7617 f, 8145 f.
sùrętë, 1918 (seùrtë BCD); seùrtë, 4520 (seurętę C).
vnité, 2871 f, 8229 D.
vanité, -yté, 5198 f, 5365, 5391 f, 8180 f, 8200 f.

Note 1.—For *pardé*, cf. 717 f, 845 f, 1754 f, 1817 f, etc., etc. (pàrdë, cf. 2404, 5186, 5203, 5752, pàrdë harm, 3755) (see also § 31, VI.). For *benedicite* (*trisyllable*) see 780 f (bendistee B, ben(e)diste C), 3599 f, 3702.

Note 2.—For *chimeney*[*e*] (O. Fr. cheminée), see 3983 f (chymeneye B, chemeneye C, chymeny D) (: tweye). For *valey* (O. Fr. valée), see (i.) 6430 (-ę B), (ii.) 943 (valy C). For *nobley* (O Fr. nobleie, noblée) before a vowel, see 6332.

## § 34. Romance nouns which have no final -e in French show none in the *Troilus*. (A few Latin words are included in this section.)

In the following list of examples, variants are not regarded except as they concern -*e* (which some MSS. add sporadically, but which is never sounded). MS. D is usually disregarded altogether. The accent is recessive unless otherwise marked. For convenience the

[1] B alone of the four is metrical. Cp. also has *pïëté*.

[2] A has *his* †.

examples are classed as,—(I.) words in *-er;* (II.) words in *-our;* (III.) words in *-ent, -ment;* (IV.) words in *-aunt;* (V.) words in *-s;* (VI.) words in a vowel; (VII.) miscellaneous words. For nouns in *-ion, -ioun,* see the chapter on metre.

## I. Words in *-er:*

astrologer, 4257 f (see note below).
auter (O. Fr. alter, autier), 7829.
auaùnter, cf. *auauntour.*
coler (O. Fr. colier), (i.) 8023. (ii.) 7174 (colèr ‡ be-hynde C).
corner (O. Fr. cornier, -e) (ii.) 6938.
courser (O. Fr. corsier), 6448 (curser B, coursir C).
daunger (O. Fr. dangier), (i.) 1469 (-(e) C †), 2328, 2461, (ii.) 1484, 4163 (daunder † A).
dyner (O. Fr. disner), (i.) 2574, 2682. (ii.) 2645.
herber (O. Fr. herbier), 2790 (erber BC).
heroner (O. Fr. haironnier), (ii.) 5075 (goshauk ‡ C$^{c}$).
laurer (O. Fr. laurier), 3384, 3569; cf. 7470.
leyser, layser (O. Fr. leisir), (i). 1312,[1] 2454, 3042, 7308. (ii.) 3358; l. haue, 3352; l. had, 4401.
messager (O. Fr. messagier), 4259 f (massangere C, messanger D).
papir (O. Fr. papier), (ii.) 7960 (-er ‡ ful C).
percher (quasi O. Fr. *perchier), 5907 C (*l.* morter).
power (O. Fr. poeir), (i.) 5120, 6529. (ii.) -èr, 1252.
presoner (O. Fr. prisonier), (ii.) p. he, 4841 (pris- BD).
quarter (O. Fr. quartier), (ii.) 7243, 8061.
soper, souper (O. Fr. soper), (i.) 3437 (A †), 3452. (ii.) 2032, 3449,[2] 6881.
squyer (O. Fr. escuyer), (ii.) 191 (swyer B).

Note.—In some of the words in this list the ending is doubtless the native -er (A.S. -ere). So also in *ùpere,* 1425.

## II. Words in *-our:*

accùsour, (ii.) 4292 (C †; -er D).
auctor, (i.) 394 (autour BCD), 1103 (auter D), 1134 (-our B, autour D); cf. 3344, 3417, 4038, 7451. (ii.) cf. 3858, 4607.
auaùntour, (i.) 1809 (-er A). (ii.) 3150 (A †), 3151 (-*e* A), 3156.
conquerour, 7157 f (-e B).
errour, (ii.) 1001 (-(*e*) B), 5655 (-(*e*) B).
fauour, 1748, 2221.

[1] Insert [*this*] in A.
[2] Insert [*the*] in C.

flour, 7155 f (-e C).

hònour, (i.) 888, 1442, 1557, 1565, 1823, 2654, 3001, 3859, 4933, 5229, 5232, 6237, 7723, 8098. (ii.) 1382, 1847, 1989, 2912, 4566, 4821, 6177, 6771 (-ur B).—honoùr, (i.) 120, 1246, 1790 (C?), 2517, 2538, 3007, 3786, 6104, 6223, 6328. (ii.) 287, 1967, 2995 (-(*e*) B), 3005, 5991[1].—dìshonoùr, 1816; dishònour, 7429 (-(ę) B, -our & (*slur*) C).

làbour, 965 (-(ę) AB), 4276, 6457 (-(ę) B, trauayl C). (ii.) 948, 1035, 2289; làbour he, 3917 (l. (that) he C).—laboùr, (ii.) 5084, cf. 199.

langour, (i.) 5506 (-ur C, -or D), 6405 A (-(ę) B, -or D). (ii.) 6608 (longyng CD), 6631 (-(*e*) B, -ur(*e*) C), 6760 (-ur C).

licour, 5182 (-quore D).[2]

myrrour, mirour, (i.) 1351 (-(ę) B); (ii.) 365. myroùr of, 1927.

parlour, (ii.) 1167.

peyntour, 2126.

rumour, (ii.) 6416.

sauour, (ii.) s. han, 1354 (-aur A).

socour, (ii.) s. hem, 4793 (-(*e*) B, mercy CD).

traytour, -or, (i.) 87, 4866. (ii.) 3115 (tractor B), 4542 (-ous A); traytoùr comune, 4667.

tremour, 6618 (-or A).

tresour, (i.) 4747, 6176 (-or(ę) C). (ii.) 3716 (-or C).

vapoùr eterne, 2853.

vigoùr, (ii.) 3930.

Note.—*Harpour* for *harper* (A.S. héarpere) occurs, see 2115.

## III. Words in *-ent, -ment:*

accident, (i.) 3760. (ii.) a. [h]is, 6167.

accusëment, 5218 f (-e B, acusament C).

argument, (i.) 5139, 5841 f. (ii.) 5618.

assènt, 5008 f (-e B), 5197 f (-e B, assen C), 5216 f (-e B), 5595 f.

auisëment, auysëment, (i.) 5598 f (-e B), 5962 f, 8174 f (-e B) (: went *p.p.*). (ii.) 1428 (-(*e*) B).

clement, 8173 f (-e B) (: went *p.p.*).

entendëment, 6358 (B †).

hardiment, 5195 f (-e B, hardy ‡ men C).

instrument, 10 f, 631 f (: myswent *p.p.*), 6805 f (-e B) (: ywent *p.p.*).

iuggëment, 5961 f.

pacient, 1083.

[1] Insert [*an*] in AC. B(p. John's have *an*.

[2] Insert [*out*] in A.

parlëment, (i.) 4805, 4873 f (-e B), 5006 f, 5326, 5959 f. (ii.) 4880 (-men C); p. he, 5039, cf. 5221.
precident, 4875 f (president BCD).
sentement, 2885 f (-e B) (: present *adj.*), 5839 f (-e B). (ii.) 1098.
serpent, (i.) 3679. (ii.) 7860.
talènt, 2987 f.
tòrment, (i.) 6360, 7003 (-(ę) B, tur(ne)ment C). (ii.) 6790 (-(e) B, turnent † C); cf. 404, 5473, 5554, 7017, 7955. tormènt, 8 f.

## IV. Words in *-aunt:*

auaùnt, (i.) 1043 (-(ę) B), 1812 (-(ę) B).
geaùnt, 7201.
graunt, (ii.) 5214 (-(e) B).
remęnaunt, 6038 (-(ę) B).
seruaunt, (i.) 15 ‡ B, 6536, 7708. (ii.) 3825, 4329.
tyraunt, 2325.

## V. Words in *-s:*

auỳs, (i.) 5078 f (-e C) (: wys *adj. sg.*). (ii.) 620, 3295.
burges, 5007 (borwis C, burgeys and A).
cas, (i.) 29 f, 271, 568, 836 f, 1370, 1507 f, 1510, 1542 f, 1689, 1814, 2153 A †, 2431 f, 2560 f, 2696, 2765 (B †), 3121, 3125 f, 3683 f, 4461, 4952 f, 5078, 5082, 5456 f, 5542, 6171, 6424 f, 7427, 7633 f, 8001. (ii.) 1843, 2741 (cause C), 3014, 5050, 5233, 5290; cas he, 5311.
choys, (ii.) 5633 (cloys † B), 5642, 5721.
conuers, 8173.
cors, (ii.) 7105 (C †).
cours (O. Fr. cours, course), (i.) 2055, 2470 (courȩs B), 8108. (ii.) 1992.
crois, (ii.) 8206 B (cros A, crosse D), cf. p. 63.
encrès, (ii.) 2418 (-ces B, encreseth ‡ hope C), 4618 (-ce D), 5919 (-cresse B).
paas, pas, 1705 (-cę B), 1712 (-ę B), 2434 f, 3123 f, 6423 f, 6967 f (pace B).
pàlais, pàlays, -eys, payỳlays, (i.) 324, 1161, 1593, 1701 (*l. om.* † C), 2018, 2179, 2337 (to p. ward) (payleysseward B), 2622, 4371, 4376, 6564, 6875, 6903, 6907, 6910. (ii.) 6886, 6888, 6905.
paradys, 7180; cf. 5526.
pes, pees, (i.) 352, 3899, 4151, 4762 f, 5117, 5266 AC, 6014, 6021,

6052 (C †), 6126. (ii.) 3937, 5354, 6008, 6127; p. herafter, 5266 B, 6224.

pows, (ii.) 3956 (pous B, pous(*e*) C).

prèces, (i.) 1509, 2700 (-cesse D),[1] 3176 (-cessę BD), 3312 (cessę D), 4581 (-cessę D), 5080 (-cessę BD). (ii.) 1353 (-cesse BD), 1377 (-cesse B, -cessę D), 1570 (-cesse B, mater C), 1763, 7854; cf. 6946 (before *haue*).

prys, (ii.) 1266; p. hym, 2670; p. hath, 273.

purpos, (i.) 142, 379, 1062, 1130, 1982, 3172 (therto ‡ C), 3291, 3973, 5396, 5782, 6539, 6858, 7117, 7133, 7392, 7939. (ii.) 5, 4209, 4699, 6082, 8162; p. how, 7823.

remòrs, (ii.) 554.

recoùrs, 2437 f.

socoùrs, 2439 f.

solàs, 31 f, 1545 f, 6970 f.

surplus, 4722.

trays (Fr. traits, *pl.*), 222 (-(ę) B).

tretis, -ys, 4726, 4798, 5332.

voys, (i.) 1911, 2887, 2934, 6940, cf. 4565. (ii.) 111, 422 (-ce C), 2935, 4079, 4857 (acord C), 5809, 7164; v. he, 725 (-ce B), 6999.

Note.—For *ruby* (O. Fr. *rubi, rubis*), see VI., note.

## VI. Words ending in a vowel (not -e):

anoỳ, 5507.

araỳ, 2349 f, 3378 f, 4640, 6332; a. his, 2352.

assaỳ, 6170 f; cf. 7672 ‡ C.

ascrỳ aros, 1696 (thę acry C, in the skyę † D).

cry, 1281.

delaỳ, 3721.

dieu; a dieù, 5292 (adew C, and dey ‡ D); cf. 2170 CD. (Cf. pardieùx, 197; pàrdieux, 1844; depàrdieux, 2143, 2297; pardę, § 33, n. 1.)

lay, 1149 f, 2006 f.

May, 1135, 1197, 3904 f, 6788 f, 7207 f.

mèrcy, (i.) (ii.) 535, 1503, 1676, 2161, 2940, 5811, etc., etc.; graunt mèrcy, (i.) (ii.) 3491, 4147, 5294, 6322; grant mercỳ, 1324 f.

prow (O. Fr. prou), 333 f (-e B), 2749 f, 7152 f.

tissew (O. Fr. tissu), t. heng, 1724 (-ewe D, C †).

tòrney, 6331.

[1] In AC supply [*out*]; in D supply [*hem*]. BECp. have *oute*; John's has *out*.

vèrtu, (i.) 429, 1078, 4591, etc. (ii.) 438 (-ue B), 4130, 4977, etc.—vertuę, 896 AB (-u CD). [Cf. vertulès, § 49, n. 5.]

Note.—For *ruby* (O. Fr. *rubi, rubis*), see 1670 (rebe C), 2172 (-ye C), 4213 (-ię C), 6912.

## VII. Miscellaneous.

Note.—Variants are usually not registered. In none of the following words is there a sounded -e, though -e is occasionally written, even in A. D very frequently adds such irrational -e's (-*e*, -ę), B not seldom (as *agreſe, appetite, arte, chare, conforte, conceyte, conseylle, cowarde, delite, dispaire, desire, deuoure* (*for deuoir*), *estate, fole, meschefe, ost, porte, poynte, refreyne, reporte, resorte, rewarde, scorne*, though in the case of most of these words the form without -e also occurs), and in C -*e* or -ę is sometimes found (e. g., *conseyle*, 985 ; *desire*, 4324 ; *abite*, 109 ; *parte*, 5087 ; *effecte*, 212, etc.).

abèt, 1442 (abek C).

agrief (a = on, O. Fr. gref, grief), 3704 f ([a]gref A), 4463 f, cf. 5275 f.

appetit (O. Fr. appetit, -te), 6339 f (-e BD).

art (O. Fr. art), (i.) (ii.) 659, 920 f, 1096, 4175 f, 5928 ; a. hire, 1342.

atỳr (ii.) 181.

awaỳt, (ii.) 3299 (*om.* † A).—awaỳtę, 3421 (-t BC).

baroùn, 4695 f, 4852 f.

bayard, 218.

busshel, 3867 (beschop † C, busshęll ‡ of D).

caytyf, (ii.) 4766.

char (O. Fr. char, cf. charre), 4546 f (-e BD) ; charhors, 7381 (-*e* h. D).

closet, 1684, 2300, 3505, 3529.

còmfort 845, 4736 (confert B), 4980 ; cònfort, 7531.—comfòrt, 528 f, 590 f, 2840 f, 2978 f. (Cf. discomfort.)

comparyson, 5112 f.

conceỳt, (ii.) 989.

cònseyl, coùnseyl (O. Fr. conseil), (i.) 985, 2129, 5101 (A ?), 5547. (ii.) 5776, 6793 (-*e* B).—counseỳl, (i.) 743.

contek (etym. dub.), (ii.) 7842.

cost, 3364.

coward, *as adj.*, c. drede, 6235 (-ę B) ; coward(*e*) herte, 6071 (-d BD ; C †).

daun, (i.) (ii.) 70, 4851, 7851, 7852.

debàt, 1838 f (-e CD).

delìt, delỳt, (i.) 1794 f, 4218 f, 6330, 6340 f, 6501 f (-yȝt C). (ii.) 762, 4152, 6198 (-yȝt C).

desdaỳn, 5853 f.

dèsespèir, (i.) 605 (dis[es]pair D).—despeỳr, 813 f (dispaỳr B; D †); despeỳr that, 5616 ( -(e) D, dispair(e) B). (Cf. also 779 A, 1091, 1615 f.)

desìr, (i.) 311, 374, 465, 607, 2419 f, 3328 f, 4105, 4324, 4373, 4477 f 4493, 5235. (ii.) 296, 381, 2422, 3268, 4388, 5057, 5234, 6061; d. hym, 4381.

despeyr, *see* desespeir.

des-, displt, (i.) 1796 f, 2134, 3879 f, 4216 f, 6337 f, 6498 f. (ii.) 207, 4547, 4786, 7606, 8056; d. hym, 902; d. hadde, 4629.

desport, 592 f, 4971 f.

deuoir, (ii.) 3887.

deuỳn (O. Fr. devin), 66.

dìscomfòrt, 4973 f, 5510 f. (Cf. comfort.)

effèct (Lat. effectus, cf. O. Fr. effect), (i.) (ii.) 212, 2305, 2464, 2651, 3188 D (-*e* B), 3347, 4422, 4657, 5552, 5956, 6541, 6740, 7372, 7786, 7984, 7992, 8147.

engỳn, 1650, 3116 f.

estat, (i.) (ii.) 130, 287, 432 (estal † A), 884, 1290, 1304, 1550, 1746, 1792, 1836 f, 1966, 2223, 5246, 6198, 7388, 8112, etc.

eyr (O. Fr. air), 7034.

faucon, fawkon, (i.) 4626. (ii.) 5075.

feith, feyth (O. Fr. feid, feit, foi, apparently with Eng. abstract *-th*), (i.) 89 (feyt C), 336 (-(e) B, fay C), 1254, 2048, 2188 (fey B, fay † vnkele C), 4593, 8027. (ii.) 1247, 1495, 2588 (-(*e*) B), 7622 (feight D), etc.

fol, fool, (i.) (ii.) 532, 618, 630, 1455 (fel A), 1485, 2930, 3741, 4307, 6461, 7149, 7886.

fòrest, 7598, 7600.

fruyt, 385.

fyn, (i.) (ii.) 1510, 1612, 1842, 1879, 2681, 2967, 3355, 3395, 5139 f, 5584, 8191, 8192, 8193, 8194, 8195, 8215.

gardeyn, -yn, (i.) 1899, 2202, 4580. (ii.) 1904, 2199. [With slur, 1905 A.]

greyn (ii.) 3868.

grief, (ii.) 2717. (Cf. agrief.)

growel, (ii.) 3553 (gruwel B).

groyn, (ii.) 349.

guerdon, -oun, 6957, 7752, 8215 AB; g. hire (*eam*), 818.

habit, 109.

hdỳòt, 903.

lambỳc (O. Fr. alambic), As licour (-quore D) out (*om.* A) of a (*om.* D) lambyc (-bic B, -bik C, -bykę D) ful faste, 5182.
lessòn, (ii.) 2893.
mantel, (ii.) 1465.
mỳschef, (i.) 755.—chèf, 5276 f; -chièf, 4464 f.
nerf, (ii.) 1727.
nỳgard (O. N. hnogg-r + Romance -and), n. haue, 4221.
ost, (i.) (ii.) cf. 80, 4691, 5261 f, 6284 f, 6379, 6435, 7115, 7713 (hest(ę) C). [Var. B oost, ostę, oste.]
pailet, (ii.) 3071.
part, (i.) (ii.) cf. 918 f, 3148, 3281, 4173 f, 4718, 4843, 5087 (-(ę) C), 5665, 5690, 7681; p. he, 2413.
pencel (O. Fr. penoncel), (ii.) 7406 (-sel BC).
peril, (i.) (ii.) 84, 475, 1691, 1960, 3209, 3695, 4775, 7388; p. he, 3753.
port (O. Fr. port 'bearing'), (ii.) 1077 (-*e* B).
poynt, (i.) 7648 (-(e) B). (ii.) 5320 (-(*e*) B).
preson, prison, 2302, 7247. presòn, -oùn, 3222 f, 4768 f.
pylgrym, 7940.
quysshon, 2314 (-en B, -yn C), 3806 (-en B, qwischin C).
refreỳn, 2656 f (-e B).
refuyt (O. Fr. refuit, refuite), (ii.) 3856 (-fut BC).
renoùn, 481 f, 1382 f, 1746 f.
repòrt, 593 f, 5512 f (resport A).
reson, -oun, (i.) 796, 1451, 3693, 4250, 4826, 5234, 5236, 5710, 6340. (ii.) 764, 6245.
resòrt, 2976 f.
rèspect, (ii.) 8181, cf. 4748.
respìt, 6500 f.
rewàrd, (ii.) 2218, 8099.
saf cundwỳt hem, 4801 C (safę conduỳt D, saue-gard[e] sente A, saue garde sente B).
scorn, skorn, (i.) 318, 335. (ii.) 514, 902.
scryt, 2215.
sermon, (ii.) 2050. sermòn, -oùn, 2200 f, 2384 f, 5499 f.
seson, (ii.) 168 (-ọn A).
seynt, (ii.) 6916.
signal, (ii.) 5480.
signet (O. Fr. signet, sinet). (ii.) 2172 (synet C).
sort (O. Fr. sort), (i.) 76 (soȝt † B, byfor ‡ D), 2839 f (: kankedort :

comfort *n.*). (ii.) 3889 ABC (D †), 4778 (D?), 6063 (-*e* B, -ę ‡ to D), 6066 (-*e* D?).

soun, sown, (i.) (ii.) 732, 1890, 2203 f, 6943.

spirit, (i.) (ii.) 362, 423, 3650, 4193, 4620, 4982, 5373, 5448, 5814, 5861, 5872, 6282, 7575.

Note. The metre requires that *sprit* (7575 C), *spryt* (5448 C), and *sprȳt* (C in vv. 307, 4193, 5814, 5872) be expanded to *spirit*, and 423 C also needs correction; cf. 4620 C.

stomak, 787.

stryf, 1865 f (-ft A, -fe B), 1922 f, 6704 f.

subgit, 1913 (subiect C, suget D).

treson, 1878, 8101. tresoun, 107 f.

venym, (ii.) 3867.

ver (Latin), 157 (veer B).

vessèl, 6674.

wardeyn, (ii.) 3507, 7540.

werbul (from the verb, cf. O. Fr. werbler), w. harpe, 2118.

§ 35. The genitive singular of nouns, both Anglo-Saxon and Romance, ends in the *Troilus* for the most past in *-es*, irrespective of original gender and declension.

Note.—CD usually have *-is* or *-ys*; B has *-is* in 453 (*brestis*), but regularly *-es*. In the following list trivial varieties in spelling are not registered.

Examples are,—

I. aspes, an a. lef, 4042 (-is C, auspen D).

asses, 2127.

beddęs, 359, 3524.

brestes, 453.

bryddes, 2006.

dayes, 1989, 1992 (daijs C), 4543.

dethes wounde, 4539.

dowues, 4338.

emes, 1551, 1557.

horses, 223.

kynges, 226, 889, etc.

loues, 15, 34, 905, 2191, etc.

lyues creature, 4914 (C †), 5429 (other ‡ c. C); lyues ende, 7917 (last[e] ‡ D).

maydes, 3147 (maydęnys C, -dęnes D).

mouses, 3578.

nyghtes, 1990, 4684.

shames, 180.

somęres, 3903 (-ęris C, somers D).

sonnes, 4546 (sunnys C, suunis D), 7602 (sunnys C).

sorwes, 2151 (-ęwis D).

tales, 1345.

widęwes, 109 (wedęwys C, wydęwys D), 170 (wedęwys C); wydęwes, 1199 (-ęwes B,

-ǫwis D, wedǫwis C); wydwes, 1307 (-ǫwes B, -ǫwis D, wedǫwis C).

wightes, wyghtes, 660, 1280, 7121.

wykes, 6862 (wekes B, woukis C, wookes D).

wittes, 3773.

worldes, 6242, 7257, 7421 (wor[l]des B), 8195, 8214.

Note.—In the phrase *lyues creature* (see 4914, 5429), as well as in *that lyues body* (*Hous F.* 1063), Professor Skeat regards *lyues* as an adverb (A.S. *lifes*) : see his notes, *Minor Poems*, p. 347, *Prioresses Tale*, etc., *Glossary*, s.v. *lyues*. The Anglo-Saxon adverbial *lifes* is, however, never used attributively, and one can hardly believe that *lyues* in *a lyues creature* was felt by Chaucer as very different in construction from *shames* in *shames deth* (*Leg. Good W.* 2064, 2072), or *dethes* in *dethes wounde* (*Troil.* 4539) or *dethes wo* (*Arthour and Merl.*, 2108), or *lyues* (undoubtedly a genitive pure and simple) in *lyues day* (*Leg. Good W.* 1624), or, especially, *mannes* in the line, *Ector or ony mannes creature* (*Troil.* 1502). For a rather late example of the construction, cf. "Whereby my hart may thinke, although I see not thee, That thou wilt come, thy word so sware, if thou *a liues man* be" : *Tottel's Miscellany*, Arber, p. 154. Professor Bright (*Modern Lang. Notes*, 1889, col. 363) explains *lyues* (gen.) *body* as "a living person's body," "a living man," taking *lyf* in the familiar Middle English sense of "a living person;" but this does not explain *lyues creature* or *lyues man* (unless we regard these phrases as due to analogy) and seems less likely than the interpretation of *lyues* in the sense of "of life"; cf. Byron's *a thing of life* (=a living thing = a lyues creature). On *Lyues* and *dethes* cf. Mätzner, *s. vv.*

II. disdayn[e]s prison, 2302(-ys C, disdeynous ‡ D).

fortunes, 4467.

Mayes day the thridde, 1141; a Mayes morwe, 2183.

neces, 1161, 1163, 2179, 2546, 2696.

spouses, 6709.

[doutës † wenynge, 5654 B (doutous AD).]

[fùries (*dissyl.*) 1521 ‡ C.]

Note 1. In one case the scribe of C has formed a genitive (to the destruction of the metre) by adding to a proper name *is* as if a separate word : *Nisus is douzlyr*, 7473 (*nisus* ABD). Compare with this the form *herteis* (*gen. sg.*), which occurs at least three times in C (viz., 1620, 2482, 3887).

Note 2.—*The goddesse wrethe*, 933 C, error for *goddes*, may serve as one more argument, in addition to those mentioned by ten Brink, § 109 *a*, that *s* in the genitive was unvoiced in Chaucer's pronunciation. Cf. also *heuynesse* for *heuenes*, 6256 B. It is a little odd that ten Brink should cite Mod. Eng. *else* as having a voiced *s* ("dagegen freilich *else* mit tönendem *s* = ME. *elles*").

## § 36. A few words make a genitive without change of form. Thus,—

his lady grace, 1117, 3314 (ladi C), 4672, 4619 ‡ D (ladyes thank AB, ladyis thank C).

this lady name, 99 ABD (ladyis C).

his lady mouth, 812 (ladyis C).

his lady heste, 3999 (his l. liste † B, his ladijs heste C, his ladies heest D).

his lady honour, 7440 (his [lady] h. B?, C; ladies D).

But,—

my ladyes depe sikes, 7038 (ladys B, ladijs C, lady D).

any herdë tale, 4076 ACG (hard † B, heerdis D).

ourę tongë deference, 395 A (tonges difference B, tungis differens C, spechis ‡ differens D).

hertë blod, 1530 (hertys B *later*, -[ë] D).

myn hertë lust, 1915 (-es B, -is C, -is ‡ lyf D).

his hertë reste, 3973 B (-es A, -is CD).

hertë . . . suffisaunce, 6302 BC (-es AD).

hire hertë variaunce, 8033 (-es AD, -is C).

his hertë botęme, 297 C (-es AB, -is D). [Cf. 6816 C (?).]

But,—

for *hertes* cf. 1620 (-is BD, -eis C), 2482, 3887, 3973, 8103, 8112.

thi brother wyf, 678 B (brotheres A, brotheris CD).

his fader carte, 7028 B (fadres AD, fadiris C).

ȝour fadir tresoun, 117 D (fadres B, fadęris C).

But,—

hirę fadres shame, 107 (fadęres B, fadęrys C, fadris D).

my fadres graunt, 5214 (fadęris C).

youre fadęres sleyghte, 6158 (fadęrys sleyt[e] C, fadres sleyghtes D).

herę fadres . . . tente, 7385 (fadęris C).

Note 1.—The following cases seem to be instances of *heuene* in composition, not genitives (cf. A.S. heofon-cyning, -dréam, -rice, etc.):—*heuene blysse*, 3546 (hevyn blis[se] D),[1] 4164 BE (blyssyd ‡ A, blis[se] C, heven blisse D), 4499 (heuenes B, hevyn blis[se] D); *heuen quene*, 6256 CD (heuenes A, heu(y)nes(se) † B); *heuene ‡ egle*, 4338 D; cf. *the heuenes heighe*,[2] 1989 (the h. (h)eye B, [the] heuenis eye C, the hevenis eye D); *heuenys † lyȝt*, 4962 C. (*Heuene,-es*, etc., dissyllabic throughout.)

Note 2.—Compare also *peple̓ specche*, 3426 AD (peples B, puple? C[3]); *Criseyde darte*, 5134 A (-es BD -[e] C)[4]; *Criseydë hous*, 6891 A (-es BD, -is C). But,—*Criseydes net*, 4575 (-is D); *Criseydes eyen*, 4972 (-is D); *Criseydes herte*, 7138 (-is C).

## § 37. Many proper names in *-s* have the genitive identical in form with the nominative. Thus,—

the kyng Priàmus sone, 2 (Pryamys D).

Tròylùs vnsely auenture, 35.

Pandàrus voys, 725 (-ys C, -is D).

[1] Supply [*For*] in A; [*in*] in D. [2] Read *ye* (: wrye *inf.*). [3] C defective.
[4] In this verse perhaps the scribes of AC took *Criseyde* for a nom. and *darte* for an *inf.*, and this may be right. The Cp. collation has no note.

Tròylùs persone, 1786.
Pàndarùs byhest, 2414, 3188.
Pandàrus lore, 2426.
Deiphèbus hous, 2599 (dèïphèbus (?) D), 2625.
Pandàrus reed, 2624 (-is C).
Pàndarùs entente, 2808.
Venus heriynge, 2890.
Tròylùs seruyce, 4657 (cf. 7369 ‡ B).
Hèrculès lyoùn, 4694 (-is B).
Calkas ere, 4725.
Calkas doughter, 5325.
Saturnus doughter, 6200 (Saturnes BD, -ys C).
Phebus suster, 6253.
A broche . . . That Troỳlus (*dissyl.*) wàs, 7404 ABC (D defect.).
Nisus doughter, 7473 (nysus (is) douȝtyr C).
Àrchymòris buryngę, 7862 (archimoris B, arichmoure † C, Archemories D). [*Archimori bustum sexto ludique leguntur.*]
Tydeus (Tideus BD, Thedeus C) sone that doun descended is, 7877.

Some other genitives of proper names—
Ioues name, 878 (Iouues B, iouys C, Iovis D).
Ioues doughter, 2845 (Iovis D).
natal Ioues feste, 2992 (-is C, D †).
Ioues face, 5999 (iouys C; Ioue in his ‡ face D, = in 's ?).
Martes highę seruyse, 3279 (-is CD).
Cupìdes sone, 7953 (-is C, Cu(s)pìdes D).
Argỳues wepynge, 7872 (arthmes † C).
Penèlopèës trouthe, 8141 (-è[ë]s B, Penàlopèës D).
Pallàdiòn[e]s feste, (161 Palladyon[e]s B, Palas † dionis C, Pallàdiòns ? D, Pallàdiònës G).
Troyes town, 7131 B (-ë AC); Troyës cyte, 100 (-yis C).

Note.—The Latin genitive *aloes* may here be added—

> Tho woful teris that they leten falle
> As bittre weren out of teris kynde
> For peyne, as is *ligne aloës* or galle, 5797-9
> (lignum aloes C *one syl. over measure*).

§ 38. The plural of nouns (A.S. and Romance) ends regularly in *-ës* (*-is*, *-ys*) or (if the nominative ends in a weak *-e*) in *-s* (Child, § 22; ten Brink, § 202, 206, 210, 213, 225). Examples are :—

I. belles, 1890 (-ę[s] C, -is D).
foughles, 787 (fowles B, foulys C, foulis D); fowęles, 6743 f (-is B, foulis C, foules D) (: owlys : foul(e) is).
soules, 5866 (-is C), 8206.
tales, 2017 (-is C), etc., etc.
walles, 7029 (waH = wallis C).
bemes, 7006 (-ys C, -ęs (?) D).
stremes, 305 (-ys CD).
lymes, 282 (lemys C, lymys D), 5844 (lemys C, lymmes D), cf. 7164.
pawmes, 3956 (paumys C).
sones, 1255 (-ys C, -is D).
stones, 1953 (-ys CD, stonnes B).
sires, 4841 (serys C, sir[e]s D).
shoures, 470 (-is C, -ys D).
speres, 4705 (-is D), 8123.
sterres, 1994 (-ys C, -is D), 6637 (-is C), 8175.
auentures, 3 (-is D); cf. creatures, 7891.
apes, 906 f (-is C, -ys D).
iapes (-is CD), 904, 930, 2252 (D †).
shippes, 58 (-is D).
sobbes (-is CD), 4910, 5037.
loues, 4887 (-ys C, -is D), 6095 (-ys C).
loues, 6707 (-ys C), 8211.
wyues, 6742 f (-ys C, vyues B, wiffes D) (: lyues *pl.*, -ys C, liffes D); cf. 1204 f.
bokes, 788 (-ys C, -is D), etc., etc.
sykes, 4999 (-ys C, -is D), etc.
Grekes, 533 (-ys C, -is D), etc, etc.
rokkes, 2469[1] (rochis C[c]).
wrecches, 3775 f (wriches B, wrechis C, wrecchis D).
tacches, 3777 f (tecches BD, techis C).
facches, 3778 f (fecches BD, fecchis C).
speches, 3352 (-ë ‡ C).
ages, 1112 f (: vsages *pl.*).
dogges, 5288 (-is C).
ymàges, 1458 (emagis C, ymagis D).
yates, 7540 (-is C).
nettes, 4197 (-is C).
nyghtes, 4598 f (nyty3s C, *om.* † D) (: myghtes *pl.*).
routes, 1705 (-ys C).
rites, 8212 f (vyces † A, ri3tes † D) (: appetites *pl.*).
shotes, 1143 (shottis D).
festes, 7792 f (-is C) (: byhestes *pl.*, -e[s] B, -is C).
abodes, 3696 (abedes, abydis, abodis).
dedes, 4392 (-is CD), 7166 (-is C), 8133.
flodes, 4602 (-is C).[2]
gledes, 1623 (-en C, -is D).
goddes, 3226 (-ys C, -is D), 6068 (-is C), 8213, etc.
nedes, 355 (-is CD), etc.
hondes, 3956 f (-is C) (: bondes *pl.*).
clothes (-is C), 2629, 5440.
monęthes, 1135 (monthes B, D ?); monthes, 7129 (monythis C, monęthes D), etc.
othes, 7626 (-is CD), etc.

[1] Read *myl[nc]-stones* at the end of the line in AD. [2] Supply [*so*] in A.

II. dayes, 2831 f (daijs C) (: delayes, -is C); cf. notes 1, 2, below.
weyes, 1907 f (: aleyes *pl.*, aley[e]s C).

III. bowes (=boughs), 1906 (-is CD).
bowes (=bows *arcus*), 4702 (-ys D).
browes, 7176 (-is C).
clawes, 2012 (-is CD, clewes B).
hawes, 6060 f (-is C) (cf. *lawes*).
hewes, 2343 (-is D, -is C (?)), 2936 (-is C, -*e* is D), 5816 (-ys C, hewez D); hewys, 1106 f A (-is BD) (: newe is).
lawes, 1127 f (-is D) (: sawes *pl.*), 6059 f (-ys C) (: sawes *pl.* : hawes *pl*).
sawes, 1126 f (-is D) (: lawes *pl.*), 6057 f (-is C) (cf. *lawes*).
thewes, 1808 (-is C, -ys D).[1]
throwes, 6569 (-ys C), 7564 (-is C).
trewes lasten, 6764 (treus[2] lestith C).
wawes, 1086 (-is D), 7472 (waH ‡ C).

IV. arwes, 4706.
pylwes, 3286 (pilous B, pilwis CD).
sorwes, 54 (sorọwë D), 705 (-[es] B, -ys C, sorow † D), 847 (-ys C, sorọwes D), 2427 (-is C, -ọwis D (?)), 3147 (-ë C, -ow D), 3747 (-is C, sorow D), 3924 (dayës C, daiës D), 3976 (-is C), 4014 (-ys C), 4794 (-ys C, sorọwis D, sorwues *dissyl.* B), 4816 (-ë C, -ọwis D), 4910 (-is C, -ọwis D), 5003 ‡ (peynes AB, teeris ‡ D), 5163 (-is C, -ọwes D), 5590 (-ë BC, -is D), 6499 (-ë C), 6561 (-is C), 6567 (-is C, -ë D), 6628 (-ë C, peynes D), 6629 (-ë C), 7718 (-is C †).

V. fetheres, 353 (-ris D, fedẹris C), 7909 (fedres D, fedẹris C).
fyngres, 2117 (-gẹres B, -gerys C, -gris D), 5399 (-gẹres B, -gẹris C, -gers D).
chartres, 3182 (-tẹris C, -tris D, charres † B).
lettres, 1188 (-tẹres B, *sg.* ‡ C), 3330 (-tẹris C), 6833 (letterys ‡ C), 7960 (letres B, letteris ‡ C), 7990 (letres B, lettẹris C; D †).
candẹles, 7383 (-dels B, -dẹlis C, -deH D).
couples, 4591 (coupẹlys C).
ensaumples, 760 (examplys C, ensaumplis D).
mobles, 6122 ‡ D.
peples, 4589 (pepẹlys C).
temples, 3225 (tempẹlis C, templis D), *so* 3957.
heuẹnes, 3460 (-ys C, -is (?) D).
sweuẹnes, 6721 (*supply* [al] *in* A; C †).

VI. aduòcacïës, 2554 AB (-catis ‡ C, -caries ‡ D).
àmphibòloglës, 6068 f (-gyis C) (: lyes *pl.*).
fàntasỳës, 4855 (-sijs C, -sies D); cf. 6277.

[1] Supply [*goode*] in D.
[2] Dissyllable needed.

VII. Plurals with synizesis :—

àduersàrïes (-ïe ‡ C), 2520.

contràrïes, 645 (-trarijs C).

ènemyïs, 6615 C (ènemỳs AB, ènnemyẽs D).

fùryes, 1521 (-ïes B, furïes ‡ *gen. pl.* C, furïous † D), 7861 (-ïes B, -ïes ‡ C, -ïës ‡ D).

làdyes (*dissyl.*), 186, 1166, 2698, 5063, 6810, 6819 (laydyes AB, ladyis C, ladies D), 7887. [Var. B ladys, ladis; C ladijs, ladiis, ladyis; D ladies].

pròphesïès, 7857 (-cïes B, pròfecỳ ‡ C).

stòryes (*dissyl.*), 3139 (-ies BD, -ijs C), 7407 (storyies C, -ies BD).[1] 3905 f (-ijs C, -y D) *rhyming with*

victòrïes, 3906 f (-ijs C, -y ‡ D), 7822 (-ies BD, -yis C).[2]

Note 1.—The usual ending of the plural in A is *-es*; but *-ys* (*-is*) occurs. Thus,—affectis, 4233 ACD (-os B); eris, 5479 f (eeres B, eres D); frendys, 2560 (-es B, -is CD); herys, 5478 f (-es D, here[s] B); heerys, 7173 (heres BD, here[s] C); hewys, 1106 (-is BD) (: newe(is); lordys, 2698 (-es B, -is CD); owlys, 6745 f (-is B, oules CD) (: foweles : foul(e) is); selys, 4304 (-es B, -is CD); tolys, 632 f (-is B, -es D) (: scole is: folys *pl.*); and in the plural of *tere*, *-ys* (*-is*) is the usual ending in A (cf. 700, 2112, 3893, 4287, 4791, 4919, 5002, 5172, 5412, 5746 f, 5508, 6578, 7089 (?), 7278, 7699, 7962, 8053; and for *teres* cf. 543, 1411, 2171, 7737). The indifference of some scribes to varieties of ending is shown by D in 4706,—*armes dartis swerdis macys*. Instead of *-es*, *-ȝ* is written in *armeȝ*, 5881 D, 5909 D; *besteȝ*, 3462 A. *Affectos*, 4233 B is doubtless a mere error for *-es*. Observe *vulturus*, 788 D (*volturis* AB, *wulturnus* C); *daijs* (*dissyl.*), 2831 f C (*dayes* ABD) (: *delayis* C, *-ës* ABD); *dais* (dissyl.), 2436 C, 6760 C; *dayis*, 2447 C, 6602 C, 7569 C (cf. also the forms in 3924, 7022, 7713).

Note 2.—The following plurals are perhaps worth mentioning for their rhymes (cf. other rhymes of the same kind in the lists above, I. ff.):—

tolys, 632 f (-is B, -es D): folys *pl.* (-is BD): scole is.
hewys, 1106 f (-is BD): newe is.
hayes, 3193 f (-is B, halis † C): may is.
owlys, 6745 f (-is B, oules CD): foweles *pl.*: foul(e) is.
halles, 7093 f (-is B, -es D, wall ‡ C): wallys *pl.* (-is BC, -es D): galle ys (galles D).
wellys, 7737 f (-is D, well C): helle ys: ellys.
stones, 2026 f (-ys CD): at ones.
bones, 91 f (-ys CD): onys (cf. 805 f, 2469 f).
desertes, 4109 f (-is CD): certes.
pleyes, 7862 f: lord of Argeys (Argeyes B, Argeis D).

Note 3.—In some cases *s* only is written where *-es* (*-is*) should be pronounced. Thus—

answèr[i]s, 2435 D (-es A, -e[s] B, -is C).
bok[e]s, 7423 B (-es AD, [thes] bokys C). (Cf. 2933, 4041, 4271, 4616, 6382, 6738, 7153, 7162, 7452, 7826, 7841, 7844, 7896, 7925, 8218.)
dor[e]s, 6915 B (-es AD, -is C). (Cf. 3075, 6894.)
flour[e]s, 8204 B (-es AD). (Cf. 158, 1136, 2052.)

Note 4.—That the *s* in the plural ending *-es* was unvoiced is indicated by the formes *erbess* (661 A) and *knesse*(e) (3922 B); cf. also *goddesse* for *goddes* (6067 C), and *dyce* for *des* (5760 D). Rhymes like *wellys* : *ellys*, *bones* : *onys*, are also significant (see note 2, above).

[1] Hiatus in ACD.

[2] Supply [*most*] in C.

§ 39. Exceptions to § 38. The following words ending in a consonant or an accented *-e* sometimes or always make their plural in *-s* (*-ȝ*, *-z*) or *-ęs* (cf. Child, § 22; ten Brink, § 226):

I. Words in *-aunt*, *-ent*:

argumentȝ, 466 (-tęs B, -tịs CD), 4009 B (-tz A, -tis CD), 5189 B (-t[e]ȝ ‡ A, -t C, -tęs D)[1]. But,—argument[e]ȝ, 5631 AB (-tës DGCp.); argumentus,[2] 2110 AB (-tis CD).

elementȝ, 4595 B (-tęs A, -tịs C, -tus[2] ‡ E).

instrumentȝ, 6822 (-t CD).[3]

accidentęs, 6167 ‡ D (*sg.* ABC).

sèruauntȝ, 15 (-t[ȝ] B, -tịs D), 48 (-tęs B, -tịs C); sèruantȝ, 328 (-tęs B, -tys C, -tịs D); sèruantz, 905 (-uauntȝ B, -uantịs C, -uauntịs D). But all these become *seruaùntës* if we read *louęs* instead of *louës*. Seruauntȝ, 371 (-tes B, -tis CD), may be read *sèruauntȝ* or *seruaùntës*, according as we read *èlles fòr* or *èllęs for*.

But,—auaùntes, 3131 (-is C; D †).

II. Words in *-ioun*, *-ion*:

affecions, 5086 (effèciounys *or* effèciȯunỳs C).

auysions, 6737 f (auisiounys C).

complexions, 6732 f (-iounnys C).

condicions, 1251 (condìscioùnys *or* condìscioun̊ỳs (?) C).[4]

illusions, 6731 f (-ys C).

impressions, 6735 f (enpressiounnys C).

reuelacions, 6729 f (-iouns CD).

But,—imprèssiòn[ę]s, 2323 (-yon[e]s B, -iou[ne]s C).

pàssiòn[e]s, 5130 (-ioun[e]s B, pàsciȯùnỳs C).

III. Dissyllables in *-en*, *-on*, *-an*, with the accent on the penult:

maydens, 1204 (-ys C, màydënìs ‡ D).

resonęs, 2932 (resons B, werkis ‡ C, wordis D †).

Trȯ̀ians, 2062 (Troyës CD), 6152 (Troilus † C, Troian D), 6504 troỳanys C, Troiauns D). Troiàns, 4769 (*or* Trȯ̀ians). [6485 ?]

IV. Words in *-r*:—

lȯ̀uers, 11, 198 (AB *are defect.*), 376, 1971, 2836, 5233 ‡ B (*sg.* ACD); lȯ̀ueręs, 45 B (louës AD), 331, 344, 516, 919, 2153, 2391, 2879, 4235, 4299, 4310, 7935; louèręs, 22, 4985. In all the above-

[1] Doubtless we should read *argumentȝ* in A, supplying [*to*] before *blame*.
[2] MS. *t* with sign of contraction for *us*. [3] In A read *on(y)*.
[4] Dele (*to*) in D.

cited passages B reads *louers* (except 45, 344, 2879, loueręs), C *louerịs* (*or* -ys), D *louers* or *lovers* (except *louës*, 45), *lovyers* (dissyl.), 331, *faytours* 919, *louerịs* 4310).

mànerẹs, 742 A (manere B, maner CD).

messàgers, 2021 ‡ D (messàgës AB, massagë C).

pòrterys, 7502 AC (portours B, porters D).

prèyers, 1538 B (preieris C, *sg. in* AD).

ambàssiatoùrs, 4802 (embàssadoùrs B, embàssatoùrys C); embàssadoùrs, 4807 (-tours B, -doùrys C, ambàssiatoùrs D).

prìsonèrẹs, 4721 (-èrs BD); prìsonèrs, 4808 (presoneris C).

Note.—In 1321 *paramours* (-ịs C[1], -our† D) may be the plural of *paramour* = lover; but perhaps the phrase (*withouten paramours*) means "not taking the kind of loving that we call 'to love par amours' into account." In "I louede neuer womman here byforn *As paramours*," 6520-1 (-ẹs B, paramour C), and in "Hath loved *paramours* as wel as thow," 6695 (paramour CD), we have this adverbial phrase *par amours*.

V. Monosyllables in *-e*:

des, dees, 2432 (deịs C), 5760 (deth† C, dycẹ riȝt as [therẹ], D).

knes, knees (*monosyl.*), 110 (kneịs C), 1037, 3025, (kneịs C), 3795 (knowẹs B, kneïs C, kneës D), 3922 (knes(*se*) B, kneịs C).[2] But,—kneës, 4434 (knowës B, kneïs C, kneës D *defective*).

treịs 7507 C (*sg.* ABD).

VI. benygnitees (*not* -teës), 8222 (-tes B).[3]

Note 1.—Many apparent cases of *-ẹs* (with syncope of *-e-*) disappear on comparison of MSS. Such are: foleṣ, 217 A (cf. 3171 D) (for *folës, folys foolës* cf. 635 f, 705, 762, 903, 3166, 4666, 5377); taleṣ, 1344 A, 3456 A[4] (for *talës* cf. 1234, 1342, 1393, 1583, etc.); whelys, 848 C; armẹs, 4416 B, 6553 B (for *armës* cf. 1038, 3024, 3443, 4029, 4043, etc.); dremys, 7651 C (cf. 6741 D) (for *dremës* cf. 4184, 6680, 6727, 6729, 7640, etc.); amendẹs (?), 1427 A; effectis, 2305 C, 3188 C (cf. 2857, 7992 C); ȝatịs, 7555 C (cf. 1700, 1702 CD, 6966, 7541); hertẹs, 4955 D, 6711 D (cf. 235, 2865, 2959, 3039, 3453, 3808, 3982); londẹs, 5901 A (cf. 1113); miȝtẹs, 5857 D (cf. 4599); sykẹs, 7397 A, sikịs, 7717 C (cf. 3191, 4203, 5037, etc.); tungịs, 1870 C (cf. 39, 565); wordẹs, 5293 A (cf. 540, 561, 736, 754, 1108, etc., etc.); othẹs, 1384 A (cf. 3985, 3988, 7626); hestẹs, 6718 A (cf. 3261, 4587, 7571 f, 7572 C); dayịs, 6716 (?) C; aleys, 1905 f C; songịs, 6994 C; tidingẹs, 5324 D; whisperyngịs, 2838 C; lesyngịs, 3672 C (cf. syngyngës, etc., 2198 f, 2653, 4558 f, 4560 f, 6609 f); peynẹs, 4058 B, 4300 D, 5791 A (cf. 303, 2984, 4046, 5003, etc.); Grekịs, 1209 C, 1596 C, 3386 D (cf. 802, 1039, 4696, etc.); fendịs, 1981 (?) CD; kalendẹs, 7997 D (-ës A, -as B, -is C), used as a singular (*a kalendes*) (cf. 1092); workịs, -ys, 265 D, 5857 C; desèsịs, 7783 C. In 2820 B we may read *corònës* or *còronẹs*, but it is better to omit *the* (with ACD) and *coroùnës*. Forms like *hęgis* (7507 ‡ C, cf. D) and *sorięs* (7559 B) are of course out of the question. In 4439 we should read *frendës the alderbeste*,

[1] In C dele (*as*). [2] In D supply [*he*]. [3] In A read *goode* for *garde*.
[4] This is the famous line about the "tale of Wade"—*he told*[*e*] *talęs of wade* A, *he told talęs of wade* Cp. (no other variants in Mr. Austin's collation), *he told*[*e*] *tale of wade* B, *hę toldë tale of wade* C, *he tolde the tale of wade* D, *he toldë tale of wade* G.

not *frendes the alderbeste* (cf. 1237, 1464, 1888, 5343, 6218, 6706, 7217). *Influens* (3460 D), *chauns* (5760 f D, *chaunce* C), and *plesauns* (5761 f, *-aunce* C), seem meant for plurals, but need correction.

But there is good MS. authority for syncope in 264 (*ioyes* AC) (cf., however, 846, 2870, 3660, 4351, etc.), 1725 (*swerdes* AB) (cf., however, 2026, 4706), 2847 (*hertes* AB). For *sithes, tymes*, see §§ 2, 14 (but *tymës*, 2853, 4273, 6739). For *thynges*, see *thyng*, pl., below (§ 43). *Pens*, 4217 (pans BC, peynes † E), and *vers*, 7 (wordes ‡ D), deserve notice.

Note 2.—A few Latin plurals occur. These are *satyri* and *fauni* in

> On *satiry* and *fawny* more and (*om.* A) lesse
> That halue goddes ben of wildernesse, 6206-7

(satury B, satary(e) & fany C, statery † & ferry † D, satiri and fawny G); and *manes*, 7255 (mannes C). But instead of *Parcae* we have *Parcas* (6366). *Kalendas*, 7797 B, perhaps preserves a bit of the copyist's learning. See also *vulturus* (etc.) for *vultures*, § 38, note 1.

## § 40. Plurals of the n-declension which preserve the Anglo-Saxon ending (*-an*) in the form *-en*, are the following:—

asshen (A.S. pl. ascan, L. on axen, O. asskess, P.Pl.[c] askes), 4781 asschyn C, asshyn D); asshen pale, 1624 B (asschin C, asshyn D, asshë A).

ben (A.S. pl. béon, Ps. bían), 1278 f (: ben *p.p.*; flen *fugere*), 6018 (ben [flen] C). [Var. B been; D bene.]

eyen, eien (192), eyghen (2056, 5754), eighen (3929, 4194, 5412) (A.S. pl. éagan, L. æȝen, eȝen, P. Pl.[a] eȝen, eiȝen, [b]eyghen, eyghes, [c]eyen), 191,[1] 305 f, 428, 726, 1227, 1338,[2] 1411 f, 1619 f, 1733 f, 1948 f, 2056[3], 2971, 2997, 3025 f, 3894, 3929, 3979 f, 4194, 4195, 4295 f, 4908 (ey[e]n(e) two D), 4971 (eyen ‡ C corrector, ey[e]n D), 4972 (ey[e]n D), 4976 (seyn † C, ey[e]n D), 5184,[4] 5410, 5412, 5531, 5535, 5754 (thy nenë semen B), 5821, 5885 (eyë B, ey[en] (?) D), 6583, 6929, 7107 (ey[e]n B), 7178,[5] 7180 f, 7362 C (eyyn ‡), 7368 (-[en] A (?)), 7522, 7699, 7701, 7736. [eyen (?), 3200 ‡ D; eyȝyn, 6442 ‡ C.] [eyen †, 3116 f B *is error for* engyn.]

> Rhyme words.—dryen *patiuntur* (305), dryen *pati* (1948), dyen *mori* (*also spelled* deyen) (305, 1411, 1619, 3025), spyen, aspien, espyen *inf.* (1733, 3979, 4295, 7180), lyen (lye) *mentiri* (1411), by-wryen *inf.* (1619), eryen *inf.* (1733), *pres. subj.* 3 *pl.* (1948), ywryen *p. p.* (4295), syen *viderunt* (7180). [Var. B eyen, yën, eyghen, eighen; C eyen, eyȝen, eyȝyn, eyȝin, eyȝeyn, eynyn (2971); D eyen, yën, yhen, iȝen.]

foon (A.S. ge-fán), 8229 f (foone D) (: oon : eurychon). But,—foos, 994 (foȩs B, foȩs (to) C, foos [to] D), 2513 (foȩs C).

[1] In the following list all forms are dissyllabic unless the contrary is noted. No distinction of *eyen* before consonants from *eyen* before vowels has been made.

[2] Supply [*to*] in D.

[3] eyen † D

[4] Transpose in D.

[5] Supply [*her*] in D.

Note.—*Ere* forms its plural in *-s*. Thus,—eres, 2107 (eris BCD); eerys, 4230 (erys B, eris C ‡),[1] 6084 (eres BD, eris C); eris, 5479 f (eeres B, eres D) (: terys : herys). For *apes, belles, bowes, ladyes, sterres, wreeches*, see § 37.

## § 41. Plurals in *-en* by imitation (Child, § 24; ten Brink, §§ 215, 217).

brethęren (A.S. pl. bróðor, bróðru, Pet. Chron. bréðre, L. broþere, breþren, broþeres, O. breðre), 471 (brethyryn D †), 2523 brethern B, brethęryn C, brethęrin D), 4939 (brethęryn C, brethern(e) D), 5868 (brethern D). (Cf. *sustren.*)

doughtren (A.S. pl. dohtor, dohtru, dohtra, L. dohtere, dohtren, dohtres, P. Pl.[b] douȝtres, [c] douhtres), 4684 (doghtryn D).

sustren (A.S. pl. sweoster, L. sustren, sostres, P. Pl.[c] sustres, susteres, sustren), 3575 (-tęrin C, -trin D), 4651 (-tryn D), 6366. his brethęren and his sustren, 7590 (his(e) brètherèn ‡ his sistęren C, his brethęryn & his sisters D).

children (A.S. pl. cild, cildru, L. childere, children, childres, O. chilldre), 132 (schildęryn C, childryn D †).

housen (A.S. pl. hús), 6910 ‡ D (-es AB, -is C).

Note.—*Gamen* (1123 B), *gleden* (1623 C), *bonden* (2061 f A), *sorwyn* (3768 C), *dremen* (6741 B), *tenten* (7033 A), are merely errors of the scribe.

## § 42. Plurals with umlaut (Child, § 26; ten Brink, § 214).[2]

feet (A.S. fét), 359, 1488 (-(e)B), 2127. [Var. C fet.]

men (A.S. menn), 241, 279, 3438 f (: ten), 7105, etc., etc.; fomen, 4704.

wommen, women (2257) (A.S. wífmenn, Pet. Chron. wimmen), 1297 (wemen C, womman A, woman D), 1819 (womon C, wymmen D, woman ‡ A), 1867 (wemen C, wymmen D), 1878 (womon C, wymmen D, womman A), 2257 (women AC, wymmen D), 3097 (women C, wymmen D), 3164 (women C, women D, womman ‡ A), 3614 (wemen C, wymmen D), 4844 (wymmen D, woman C), 5210 (wemen C, women D), 5347 (wemen C, women D), 7051 (wemen C, women D). [Sing. (A.S. wífman, late winman, see the forms cited by Sweet, *Hist. Eng. Sounds*, no—1879), womman, woman, 798, 807, 1486, etc.]

[1] In C read *also* for *as*.

[2] No distinction as to the word that follows the plurals cited in this section is attempted.

§ 43. In the following words plurals occur identical in form with the singular.

wynter (A.S. *n.* pl. wintru, winter), twenty wynter, 811 (-yr † C, -ir D).

yer (A.S. *n.* sg. pl. gér, gér, W.S. géar), 60, 1108 (ȝere B, ȝeer D).[1] yerës two, 2383; lengthe of yeres, 6343. [Var. B ȝeres, CD ȝeris.]

nyght (A.S. *f.* sg. pl. neaht, niht), a (ek B) wonder last but ix. nyght neuere in towne, 5250 AB (dayis ‡ C, nyghtęs ‡ D). But,—ouęr the nyghtes, 4598 f (: myghtes)[2]; lyk the nyghtes, 5910; er nyghtes ten, 6347; allę this nyghtes two, 6683. [Var. C nyȝtys, nyȝtis, nytyȝs, 4598; D nightes, niȝtes.]

folk often has a plural verb. Cf., e. g., 34, 199, 241, 243, 1888, 1973, 2592, 2669, 2815, 2874, 3860, 3865, 4204, 4271, 4680, 4710, 4864, 6707 (How don this (thesę C, thes D) folk (folkęs D) that seen herę loues wedded), 6778, 7124, 7541, 7641 (men A), 7942.

Cf. also: Whi allę thes(e) folk assembledin in this place, 2652 C (al this folk assembled AD, al this f. assemlede B).

If that I may and allë folk be trewe, 2695 (al[lë] f. BD, allë f. ben C).

(Pandarus) Seyde alle folk for goddes loue I preye
Stynteth right here and softëly yow pleye, 2813-14 (D †).

Swowneth not now lest more folk aryse, 4032 (cf. 6050).

As (For BC) wys[e] (wyse B, wise C, thes D) folk (folke D) in bokes it expresse (expres C), 7153 (cf. 3169).

The (ffor C) folk (folke D) of Troye as who seyth (wis sithe † C) alle and some In preson ben, 7246-7.

If that I may and alle (al[le] BD) folk be (ben C) trewe, 2695.

Note.—In general *folk* is apt, as a noun of multitude, to take plural constructions, and, of course, in many cases it is impossible to determine whether a singular or a plural is meant. A good case of a certain singular is: Whil (wilk † C) folk is blent lo al the tyme is wonne, 2828.

For other examples of *folk* in various constructions cf. 26, 138, 160, 169, 176, 179, 251, 308, 319, 354, 357, 560, 1164, 1704, 1860, 1995, 2242, 2279, 2732, 4275, 4637, 6486, 6951, 6965, 7219, 7332, 8144. The word is regularly spelled *folk*, though *folkę* or *folke* is occasionally found (as 160 B, 169 B, 179 C, 319 B, 1704 B, 2242 B, and often in D), but not in A; *fok* is found in 26 A and 176 C.

A plural in *-es* is also found,—folkes, 6002 (folk[es] C, folkë[s] D), 8198; folkïs, 4275 D; folkęs, 6707 D. *Folkes* is genitive in *good for sykë folkes eyen*, 3979 (-[es] B, -is D, follys ‡ C).

thing. Chaucer sometimes uses *thing* as a plural; but it is not always easy or even perhaps possible to distinguish this use from

[1] Both cases before a vowel.
[2] Word omitted in D.

idioms in which the singular may be employed (note, e. g., variants in 3605, 5358).

Cf., however;—And letten other thing collateral, 262 (thing(e) B, thyngis C, thinges D).

And more thyng than thow deuysest (demys C †, demist D †) here, 5205 (thyng(e) B, thyng C, thing D).

Nece al[le] thing hath tyme I dar avowe, 3697 (alle thyng(e) BC).

But the ordinary plural is *thynges* (cf. 134, 1993, 2197 f,[1] 2260, 2276, 2350, 2471, 2858, 2874,[2] 3427, 3765, 4103 f,[3] 4208 f,[4] 4820, 5322, 5356 f,[5] 5667, 5669, 5681, 5995, 6499, 7905, 7975, 8086).

*thynges* seems to be right in 2453 A (-es B, -is D; C †) (cf. 2001 ‡ D, 2319 ‡ C, 3248 ‡ C, 3605 ‡ C).

The phrase *all[e] thing* seems to deserve some special attention. Ouer al[le] thyng he stood [for] to byholde, 310 AD (alle thing(e) . . . for to BC[6])[7].

Considered all[e] thyng it may not be, 2375 (al[le] thyng(e) B, alle thyng(e) C, al thing wel(e) D ‡).

Considered alle thinges as they stode, 3765 (alle thyngis C, al[le] thing[es] D).

That wost of alle thing(e) the sothfastnesse, 5742 AD (al this thyng(e) B, al this thyng C).

In alle thynge is myn entente clene, 4008 (al[le] thynge B, alle thyng . . . entent[e] C, al[le] thing al myn entent D).

Whan that he sey that al[le] thyng was wel, 3538 (alle thyng(e) B, woste alle thyng(e) was C, wist that al[le] thing (?) D).

The last cited example is particularly surprising. May we not, however, suppose that *alle thing*, originally plural, became a stock phrase, of which the syntax was forgotten or obscured, so that even when a singular was used the plural form *alle* might be retained?

Note 2.—*God* is used with a plural verb in 1919 ABC John's, *The blisful god han me so wel beset* (god have D, god hath G); but Cp. has *ȝe blisful god han*, which is no doubt right, *god* being vocative (cf. *lord* in the same stanza, 1922). For the regular plural *goddes* cf. 151, 3432, 4045, 4101, 4514, etc.

Note 3.—*Gere* is the A.S. fem. pl. *gearwe:* see 2097 f (: there : were *subj.* 3 *sg.*), 6185 f (ger D) (: elles where : there); gere him, 1720 (ger C). (Cf. ten Brink, § 210 Anm.)

## § 44. The genitive plural does not differ in form from the genitive singular.

seyntes lyues, 1203 (-is CD).
nayles poyntes, 2119 ‡ B.
foles bost, 3140 (-is CD).
foles harm, 3171 B (-ys C, A defect.).
the goddes wyl, 3465 (-is CD); the goddes ordenaunce, 7968 (-is C).
tonges ianglerye, 7118 (-is C).
crowes feet, 1488.

[1] *rh.* tidynges. [2] A thing[es]. [3] *rh.* wynges.
[4] *rh.* rynges. [5] *rh.* thing is. [6] But C by accident omits [*he*].
[7] In 2001 the proper reading is certainly *al this thyng* (sing.) *thou*. D has *all the thinges*.

frendes gouernaunce (-is C, frendes generaunce † B, -is sustenaunce D), 2527; frendes myght, 6708 (fryndis C); frendes help (-is C), 7390.[1]

teris[2] kynde, 5798 (-es BD).

clerkes[2] lawes, 6059 (-is C, clerkysshę); clerkes speche, 8217.

the lettres space, 7993 ([the] B, letterys C).

Grekes ost, 80 ABD, 5261, 6284, 6379, 6435, 7030 AB; Grekes yerde, 1239; Grekes route, 1698; on the Grekes syde, 6128; Grekes gyse, 7224. [C usually -ys or -is; D -is, -ys, -es.] But, —at Grekęs requeste, 4719 A (-ys D, a grek † requeste B).

payens corsed oldë rites,[3] 8212 (paynymęs D).

rauęnes qualm, 6745 (-ys C).

sweuęnes signifiaunce, 6725 (sweuęnys C, sweuęnys significauns D).

## § 45. Dative plural (Anglo-Saxon *-um*):

whilom (A.S. hwílum), 508 (whilhom C, somtymę D); cf. 5402, 5731, 5817, 6904, 6907, 6910, 6927.

sithe (A.S. síðum), see § 14.

fote (A.S. fótum), see § 14.

### ADJECTIVES.

## § 46. Anglo-Saxon adjectives that end in *-e* or *-a* in the indefinite use preserve a vowel in Chaucer. (Child, § 29; ten Brink, § 230).

In the *Troylus* such are (i.) of the jo- declension, *blithe, breme, clene, dere, ethe, grene, kynde, lene, mylde, newe, shene, sterne, stille, swete, thikke, trewe.* To these may be added (ii.) *lame* (A.S. *lama*, regularly used in the weak form) and *allone* (A.S. *eall ána*), for which see § 47. (iii.) *smothe*, and *softe* (A.S. smóðe, sófte, adverbs, but also used as adjectives instead of *sméðe* and *séfte*, see Sweet, 2051, 2081, Sievers, § 299 Anm. 1), and *swote, soote* (A.S. swót *adv.*, swóte, *adj.* in comp.). For *merye, mery*, see the end of the list.

blithe, blythe (A.S. blíðe, L. O. bliðe), 7746 f (: a thousand sithe : swithe *adv.*); *-e*, 4160.[4]

breme (A.S. bréme, O. breme), *-e*, 4846.

clene (A.S. cléne, L. clæne), 1665 f, 3099 f, 4008 f. [4071 ‡ ? D.]

Rhyme words.—I mene *ind.* (1665, 3099, 4008), mene *n.* (3099), bene *A.S. béan* (4008).

[1] Perhaps singular, cf. *frendes loue*, 7443.
[2] Possibly singular.
[3] vyces † A (: appetites).
[4] Supply [*two*] in A.

dere, deere (A.S. déore, W.S. díere, dýre, L. deore, dure, O. deore, dere), 32 f, 51 f, 434 f; 877 f, 1336 f, 1415 f, 1559 f, 1579 f, 1679 f, 1893 f, 2057 f, 2188 f, 2217 f, 2295 f, 2444 f, 2516 f, 2561 f, 2778 f, 2809 f, 2845 f, 2895 f, 2937 f, 2969 f, 3081 f, 3114 f, 3172 f, 3336 f, 3487 f (drede † A), 3762 f, 3788 f, 3817 f, 4052 f, 4131 f, 4146 f, 4197 f, 4253 f, 4290 f, 4335 f, 4395 f, 4505 f, 4947 f, 4969 f, 5074 f, 5203 f, 5312 f, 5557 f, 5871 f, 5973 f, 6014 f,[1] 6112 f, 6236 f, 6507 † D, 6523 f, 6550 f, 6581 f, 6670 f, 6705 f, 6777 f (C †, D †), 6830 f, 6884 f, 6930 f, 6939 f, 6999 f, 7016 f, 7274 f, 7589 f, 7678 f, 7703 f, 7820 f.—Now uncle derë quod she tel it us, 1207 (C †).—al dere ynow a rysshe (C †), 4003 (cf. 5346).— *-e*, 8094 BD.

Of these the following are in formulæ of address (as, for example, *frend so dere, gode nece dere, myn hertë dere*),—877, 1207, 1336, 1559, 1579, 1679, 2057, 2188, 2217, 2295, 2444, 2516, 2561, 2778, 2809, 2845, 2969, 3081, 3172, 3487, 3788, 3817, 4052, 4131, 4146, 4335, 5203, 5312, 5557, 5871, 5973, 6014, 6112, 6236, 6523, 6581, 6670, 6705, 6777, 6830, 7274, 7703, 7820.

Rhyme words.—here *inf.* (32, 51, 2188, 3336, 3762, 3817, 5203, 6830, 6999, 7678, 7820), y-here *inf.* (5973), *ind.* 1 *sg.* (6939), here *adv.* (1336, 1579, 1679, 2057, 2188, 3487, 3788, 4052, 4146, 4969, 5203, 5557, 5973, 6830 BCD), there *adv.* (6830 A, here BCD), clere *inf.* (1893, 6884), clere *adj. sg. def.* (7016), *adj. pl.* (2845, 2969, 4197, 6581, 6930, 7703), *adv.* (6236, 6670, 6939), lere *inf.* (6523), requere *pl.* (1559), manere (32, 877, 2809, 2895, 2937, 4253, 4290, 4947, 6550), matere (51, 1579, 2217, 2516, 2778, 4146, 4253, 4505, 5312), ryuere (5074), preyere (2295), chere *n.* (434, 877, 1415, 1559, 2217, 2444, 2809, 2895, 2937, 3172, 3336, 4197, 4395, 4505 (4506 A has *clere* for *chere*), 6550, 6777, 7274, 7589), spere *sphere* (4335, 7016), fere *comes* (4335), y-fere *adv.* (2561, 3114, 5871, 6014, 6112, 6705), to yere (3081), to the fyre (fere BCD) (3817), stere *n.* (4131), *inf.* (4947), bere *feretrum* (5871).

ethe (A.S. éaðe, éðe, L. æðe, O. æþ), he was ethe ynowh to maken dwelle, 7213 (C.†).

grene (A.S. gréne, gréene, L. grene), 816 f, 1145 f, 2003 f, 2790 f, 2852, 3904, 6606 f.

Rhyme words.—tene (816, 1145, 6606), queene (816, 2790), shotes kene (1145), the mone shene (2003), by-twone (2790), sustene *inf.* (6606).

grene *as sbst.*,—with newë grene, 157; in grenë when, 3195; roteles mot grenë sonë deye, 5432 (ertheles grenë ‡ mot C).

kynde (A.S. cynde, but usually ge-cynde), 6079 f, 6489 f, 7283 f; *-e*, 8006 BC (trewe ‡ A, kynde as [that] D).—vnkynde, 4678 f, 4928 f, 7804 f. (Cf. if ye be vnkynde, 6102 f; beth me not vnkynde, 6314 f).

Rhyme words.—I fynde *ind.* (6079), fynde *inf.* (4678, 4928, 6489, 7283), mynde *n.* (4678, 7804). [Var. C on-kynde.]

[1] Old-style figures indicate that D has *der*.

lenc (A.S. hlǽne, L. P.Pl. lene), 1217 f (leene B, C † D †) (: mene *pl.*); *-e*, 7584 (leen B).

mylde (A.S. milde, L.O. milde), And stod forth mewët (meuyth † D) myldë (-[ë] D) and mansuete, 6557 (*line om.* C, And stode forthe full mylde and manswete G).

newe (A.S. nċowe, níowe, W.S. níewe, níwe, L. neowe, niwe, O. neowe, newe, P. Pl. newe, nywe), 157 (-[e] B), 1390 f, 1873 f (new D), 4246 (-[e] B, E †), 4496, 5084 (-[e] BD), 6484 f (new D), 7511 (-[e] D, -[e] † is B, now † al C), 7618 (-[e] B, *om.* † C), 7632 (-[e] BD); span newe, 4507; And vpon newë (newę BC, new D) cas (causę ‡ D) lyth (lyëth D) newe (new D, a newe BC) auys, 5078.—newe is (new is BD)[1] (: hewys).—made this tale of newe, 5324 f (al newe B, this talë newe C, thes tidinges new D).

Rhyme words.—hewe *n.* (1390, 5324), trewe *indef. adj. sg.* (1390, 6484), vntrewe *pred. adj. pl.* (1873), trewe *adj. pl.* (5324), rewe *subj.* 3 *sg.* (1873), knewe *ind.* 2 *pl.* (6484).

shene (A.S. scéne, scýne, scéone, L. sceone, scone, L.[b] scene, O. shene, scone), 6094 f (she[ne] A) (: bi-twene : leues grene), 6639 f (: sterres werë sene); ayen the monë shene, 2005 f (: grene *indef. adj. sg.*). [Var. B sheene, C schene.]

smothe (A.S. smóðe, *adv.*, but also used as *adj.* instead of sméðe, smœ́ðe (cf. Sweet, 2051), O. smeþe), *-e*, 942 ABD.

softe (A.S. sófte, *adv.*, but also used as *adj.* instead of séfte, sœ́fte (cf. Sweet, 2081), L. softe, O. soffte), 137 f (*perh. pl.* ?) (vnsoft ‡ D), 942 f (-t D); he[r] streyght[e] bak and softe, 4089 f; with soft[ë] voys, 6999 (-e C, lofte † D).

Rhyme words.—ofte (137, 942, 4089), on lofte, a-lofte (137, 942).

sterne (A.S. sterne, W.S. stierne, styrne, L. sterne, O. stirne), 7164 (stierne B); *-e*, 5846.

stille, stylle (A.S. stille, L. stille, O. stille, still), held hirę s., 126 f (: wylle); *-e*, 723 (stil D),[2] 1685 (stil D †), 8092; stillę, 7183 ‡ C.

swete (A.S. swéte, swœ́te, O. swet), 385,[3] 3350 f, 4087 f, 4367 f CD, 4400 f, 4510 f, 4662 f, 5151 f, 5169 f, 5441 f, 5588 f, 5936 f (B †), 6252 f, 6554 f, 7552 f; *-e*, 4126; swet[e], 4061 f (-e BCD); swete || how, 4120.

Rhyme words.—mete *métan inf.* (3350, 4087, 4367, 4510, 5936, 6554), *subj.* 1 *sg.* (5441), mete *mœ́tan inf.* (4400), grete *grétan inf.* (4400), flete *inf.* (4510), *ind.* 3. *pl.* (4061), ye his sorwes bete *subj.* (?) (5588), strete (5588), quiete (3350, 4662, 5151, 5169, 5441), Ariëte (6252, 7552), mansuete, (6554). [Var. D suete, swette.]

[1] Supply [*it*] in D.
[2] Supply [*as*] in AD.
[3] Supply [*seed*] in A.

Note.—Of the above the following occur in forms of address (*herte swete, myl dere herte swete*, and the like): 4120, 4367, 4400, 5441, 5588, 5936, 6252, 7552.

soote, 7034 f (soot B, swote CD) (: bote *A.S. bót*); sot, 4036 f (soot B, sote CD) (: in his fote (foot B): I mot *ind.* (-e BCD)).[1]—swote, 942 AB (swetę ‡ ? C).

thikke (A.S. þicce, L. thicke), 941 f (thekke C, thik D) (: the wedys wykke); *-e*, 1278 (thik D).

trewe (A.S. tréowe, W.S. tríewe, tríwe, L. treowe, O. trowwe), 1391 f, 3175 (-[e] B), 4490, 5043 f, 6079 (-[e] ? D), 6082 f (true D), 6101 (-[e] D), 6190 f, 6487 f (trew B), 7014 f (true D), 7069 f, 7434 f, 7694 f (drewe † C), 7728 f, 7764 f (myn owęnë hertë trewe), 7948 f.—Trewë as stel in ech condicion, 7194 (-[e] B), *if not a 9-syl. line.*—vntrewe, 3148 f, 3895 f, 5108 (-trow[e] B), 6213, 7660 (vntruë D), 7933 f, 8137 f.—trewe, 593 (-w BD, trowe C), 950 (-w D), 1424 (-w D), 1913 (-w D), 3843 (-w B, trew † with D), 4859 (soth C, sothe D), 5100 (trowis † C), 6272 (-w B, *-e* I [hauę] D), 8006 A, 8075 (-w B, true D).

Rhyme-words.—hewe *n.* (1391, 3148, 5043, 7764, 7933, 8137), newe *adj.* (1391, 3895, 6190, 6487, 7696 *perh. adv.*), *adv.* (7014, 7933, 7948), *inf.* (3148), knewe *ind.* 2 *pl.* (6487), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (6082), rewe *inf.* (6190, 7434), thou rewe (7069), rewe *subj.* 2 *pl.* (7728). [Var. C ontrewe.]

mèrye, mèry (A.S. mirige, mirg), a merye someres day, 3903 (merie C, mery D); mèrye, *pred. sg.*, 4515 f (: herye *inf.*); with mery chere, 1234 (merie C), 3072 AB; this murye morwe, 4405 (merie C, me[r]y D); we shullę ben alle merye, 3794 f (merie C) (: herye *laudo*); merye dayes, 2831 (merie C, mery D). (*All forms dissyllabic.*)

Note 1.—*fremde* (A.S. fremðe, fremde) occurs only in the definite use and in the plural,—*youre freudly manere speche*, 1333 f (frende BCp., frendely C, frend D, fremde G, friende John's), where *fremde* alone makes sense; *In this matere bothe* (*both B*) *fremed and tame*, 3371 ABG (frend C, frende D), where we should read *fremde*. *Dreye* (A.S. dryge) occurs only in the plural,—*Han . . . ded*[*e*] *ben and dreye*, 3194 f (drye BCD) (: pleye *inf.*: to seye); *He gan the teris wypen of ful dreye*, 5835 (drye D, dreye *inf.* ‡ C) (: seye *inf.*: preye *inf.*).

Note 2.—In *fawe*, which occurs once,—*he desireth fawe*, 5519 f (: slawe *p.p.*: with-drawe *p.p.*),—a final -n has been lost (cf. O.L.G. *fagan, -in*, A.S. *fagen*, and see ten Brink, § 44. *a*).

Note 3.—For the adj. *fre, free* (A.S. fréo), invariable in form, cf., for examples of all sorts, 840, 1073 f, 1402 f, 1856 f, 2206 f, 2970 f, 4364 f, 5633, 5642, 5721, 6214 f, 6507 f, 7032 f, 7186 f, 7725 f, 7753 f, 7768 f, 7838 f.

## § 47. In *allone, lame*, -e goes back to the Anglo-Saxon weak ("definite") ending -a.

[1] The right reading is *soot*, noun, which A mistook for the adj.

allone, alone[1] (A.S. eall ána), 97 f, 178 f, 358 f (allon B), 547 f, 694 f (allon B), 907 f (alon CD), 1602 f, 1640 f, 3255 f (alon CD), 3382 (aboue † C), 3506 f, 4882 f (alon C), 4943 (D ?), 5530 f (alon C), 5609 f, 5770 ‡ C, 6585, 6612 f, 6824 (alle one C); *-e*, 1021 (-n B), 1695 (-n B), 1775, 2301 (*om.* D), 2486, 4960 (allas † A), 7389 (-n B); allone here (*hic*), 806. (All singular except 907.)

Rhyme words.—mone *moan n.* (97, 694, 1640, 5609, 6612), euerichone (178, 907, 3255, 3506, 5530, 5609), echone (4882), grone *inf.* (358, 547, 907, 1602, 1640, 6612).

lame (A.S. lama, L. lome, lame), 1102 f (: blame *n.*).

§ 48. *Lyte, muche* belong in a category by themselves. On their relations to A.S. *lýt, lýtel, micel, mycel*, see especially Bright, *American Journal of Philology*, IX, 219.

lyte (A.S. lýt, *adv.*, lýtel, *adj.*) is said by ten Brink, § 231, to be "im Sing. wohl nur substantivisch gebraucht," but this is shown to be an error by two places in the *Troilus*: *the chaumbre is but lite*, 2731 f (: wyte *blame* acc.), and *yn place lite*, 7992 f (light † D) (: write *scribo* : endite *inf.*); compare also 2288 f and 7653 f, though in these two cases the word may well enough be substantive. In the definite use AB have *my litë closet* in 3505 AB (litil CD). In 826 f, 1339 f, 1354 f (lite(l), A), 1469 f, 2112 f, 2302 f, 2363 f, 2731 f, 3582 f, 3675 f, 3740 f, 7653 f, *-e*, 291 (lytil C † D), 1517 (D ?), 5992 B, 6539 B, *lite, lyte* is apparently substantive. Old-style figures indicate that the reading is *a lite*,—a phrase sometimes used adverbially.—*That is litë fors*, 7290 C, is a wrong reading for *my birthe accurse*. In 7290 C reads *a litë with*, doubtless for *a lite wight* (litel wight AB, littel wight D). *lite*, 4410 f (a ‡ lite D) (: wordes white), is adverbial; *lyte*, 4092 f, is plural (: white *pl.* : delyte *inf.*).

Rhyme words.—wyte *blame inf.* (826, 1469, 2363), *noun* (2731, 3582), delite *ind.* 3 *pl.* (1339), endite *subj.* 1 *sg.* (1354), *inf.* (1339, 2112, 7653, 7992), plyte *inf.* (2288), smyte *inf.* (2363), byte *inf.* (3582), write *ind.* 1 *sg.* (7992), *subj.* 2 *sg.* (2112, 7653), *inf.* (2302), myte (3675, 3740), white *pl.* (3740).

Note.—For *lytel, litel* [Var. B litil; C lityl, litil, lytil, lytyl; D litle, litell, litil, litill, liteell (5256)], adjectival, adverbial, and substantive, cf. (i.) 179, 216, 1241, 1327, 1730, 1590 BCD, 2163, 2165, 2420, 3389, 3443, 3935, 4252, 4401, 4453, 4487, 4530, 4663, 4860, 5243, 5385, 5546, 6109, 7289, 7403, 7468, 7818, 7865; (ii.) lytęl, litęl, cf. 5046, 5256, 5992 (lite B), 6539 (lite C); litel hed, 5095; litel hertes reste, 8112 (cf. 5243, C); litel hath, 5352; a litęl here (*acc. sg.*), 5265 (a lite B, a ‡ litèll D); a lytęl his, 6577 (a lite vnswelle B).

[1] A almost always has *allone* (*alone*, 2390).

muche (A.S. micel), 386 (muchel B, meche C, myche D), 442 (-el B, mechil C, mych[ë] D), 1313 (nuch † B, meche C, D †), 2156 (muchel B, meche C, mychil D), 3480 (B †, meche C, mich[e] D), 4529 (meche C, miche D), 5561 (-el B, meche C, moche D); thow hast so mechë don, 3228 (much i-do B, mychę ‡ for D); mechë knowe, 1260 C.—muche,—as m. as, 796 (meche AC, mych D), 3840 (meche C, mich D), 5156 (meche C, moch D); as meche as, 5998 C (wyd A, wyde BD); thus muche, 2948 (meche C, mych D), 7361 (meche C, much D); in as m. as, 7428 (meche C, much † D); so m. as, 1327 (meche C, mych D); for as m. as, 7715 (meche C, much D);[1] so muche honoure, 2981 (muchęl B, mechil C, D *om.* †).—so mych ‡ grace, 1070 D (?).—mechël of 2744 (muchel B, mechë C, mychil D). (Non-adjectival uses, substantive or adverbial, are indicated in the above list by old-style verse-numbers.)

## § 49. Several adjectives which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant, sometimes or always take -e in the *Troilus*. (Child, § 30; ten Brink § 231.)

Some of the -e's in the following list are perhaps to be explained on grammatical grounds. In *brode Phebus, false Poliphete, proude Bayard, heighe God, heyghe Ioue*, we perhaps have a petrified vocative like that recognized by ten Brink (§ 236. Anm.) in *goode fayre Whyt she heet* (B. Duch., 948), cf. *fierse Mars*, 2864 (-[e] D). (Cf., however, Zupitza, *Deutsche Litteratur-Zeitung*, 1885, col. 613, and Freudenberger, *Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts in Chaucer's heroischem Verse, Erlanger Beiträge zur Engl. Philol.*, Heft iv, pp. 37-39.) Is it not possible that *salte se, false worldes brotelnesse*, and *wode ialousie* (or read *the wode*?) are to be referred to the same idiom? The relation between a vocative and a constant epithet is in some respects sufficiently close. The exclamatory form *goode grace* may also be of the same vocative nature, but *harde grace* has nothing to do with address or with constant epithets. Observe *gon sithen longe while*, etc. (see *longe*) and *of olde tyme*.

bare (A.S. bær, L. bare, bar, P. Pl.$^{c}$ bar,$^{bc}$ bare), 662 f (: care *n.* : snare *n.*), 1195 f (: care *n.* : fare *pl.*), 4888 f (: wel-fare : care *n.*), 5830 f (: yfare *p.p.*); *-e*, 5887. [For definite form, cf. 3941, 6184.]

brode (A.S. brád, L. brad, brod, O. brad, P.Pl.$^{abc}$ brod), brodë Phebus, 7380 (broodë D, the ‡ brodë Phebus C).

[1] Supply [*me*] in D.

faire, fayre (A.S. fæger, L. fæir, fæire, O. fazzerr, P. Pl. fayre), the thriddë heuene faire, 2844 f (: debonaire : repaire *inf.*); in a ful fairë ‡ wyse, 5472 B (seerë † A, sècret(e) D, sècrë G).[1]—faire, 1309 (glad CD), 3253 (-r D, fayr nor C), 3564 (fair D).—fairę, 101 (fayr C), 1669 (-r BCD).

fair, fayr, feyr, (i.) 815 f (-e BCD) (: despeyr *n.*), 882 (-ę B); (ii.) 115 (-*e* BD), 277, 294 (goode B, good CD), 900 (-*e* B), 4448 (-*e* B, -ę ‡ so D), 5073 (fayr ‡ sche C), 6535 (-*e* B), 6810 (-*e* BD). [faire *extra metr.*, 1171 AB.] [In address : goodly fayrë fresshë may, 7775 f.]

false (A.S. fals, *late*, P. Pl. fals), falsë worldës brotelnesse, 8195 (-[e] B, -ę D); falsë Poliphete, 2552 C (that fals ‡ polyfete D, fals[e] AB).[2]

fals, sg., 87 AB, 593, 3656, 5278 (-ę D), 5725 (-ę D); cf. 6199, 6209, 6319, 7642, 7889)[3]; false, pl., 5321 (-[e] B, C †), 8144 (-[e] B).

ferne ( A.S. fyrn, *adj.*, fyrn-géar, *n.*, fyrn-géara, *adv.*, O. Sax. fernum gêre, P. Pl. fernyere), Ye fare-wel al the snow of fern[ë] yere, 7539 (fern[ë]yere B, fern[ëy]ere C, feuerer ‡ D) ( : here *hic*).[4]

fresche (A.S. ferse, L. freche, frech, O. fressh), Yong freschë (fresshë B, frosch † C, freisshë D) strong and hardy as lyon, 7193.

fressh, fresch, (i.) 1721 (-ę D); (ii.) 166 (-*e* B, frosch C, fressh ‡ lady D), 816 (-*e* CD), 1637 (-*e* BD), 1972 (-*e* BC), 2007 A (-*e* B), 2182 (-*e* B), 4626 (-*e* D), 5817 (frosche ‡ *pl.* C); 7207, 7473.

In address,—o goodly fresshë fre, 2970 (-[e] B, fressh and D(?)); fresshë wommanlichë wyf, 4138; cf. 7680, 7775.

Var. B fresh; C frosche, frossche; D freissh, -e.

goode (A.S. gód, L.O. god), And seyde On suche a mirour good[e] grace, 1351, (goodë B Cp., gode E, good[e] G). *Good[ë] gouernaunce*, 1552 CD, is an error for *goddes g.* *Goodę*, 44 AB (*om.* ‡ D), 6549 (god CD), and *goode*, 52 (D †), are mere accidents. *Goode Alceste*, 8141 (good BD) may be a "petrified vocative." Everywhere else *good* (var. B good(e)), except in plural and in definite forms, where grammar requires *goode* (cf. 335, 336, 627, 1247, 1254, 1556, 1667, 1763, 2743, etc., etc.).—goud, 1337 A (goodę B, godę C, good D). (Cf. the *substantive*, § 14.)

grete (A.S. gréat, O. græt). I find no good case of *grete* except, perhaps, *yn purpos gret*, 7939 f (grete BD) (: contrefete *inf.*).

[1] *Secre* is no doubt right (secre John's, secree E Cp., secret Harl. 2392).
[2] Supply [*yt*] in AB. Cp. and John's have *ȝe*, *ye*; Cp. has *falsë*.
[3] For cases of sing. *fals* (var. -e CD) before vowels, cf. 3140, 3646, 5043, 5656, 7061.
[4] Apparently Cp. and John's agree with A. Harl. 2392 reads *feuerere*.

gret, (i.) *66, 94[1] (D ?), 296 (D ?), *528[2], 1024, 1249, 1252[3], 2522, 2595 (C †), 2788 (-ę D), 3361, 3709 (om. † C), *4055, *4058, *4289, *4357, 4718, 5518, *6173, *6501, *6801, 8107, *8156. [Var. B greetę; D greet.] — (ii.) *284 (gretë ease ‡ D), 65, 587 (C *om.* †), 1290 (gret [e]stat C, -e † D), 1810, 1966, 2250 (D †), 2377 (D ?), 2476, *3377 (C †, D *om.*), 3475, *4476, 5212 (D ?), 5559 (-e D), 7344 (C †), 7842 ([a] gret C), *7992 (gret effect(*is*) C). [Var. D greet.]—gret hònour, 2654 (-e h. BD).

Note 1.—Such -e's as there are in A are none of them sounded. They are the following,—a ful gretę care, 1016 (a wol gret C, [a] ful gretę D); in gretę dishese, 2072 (gret C); a gretę douyneresse, 7885 (gret C); a bor as gretę as, 7832 (gret CD).

Note 2.—In 515 B (*gretę*), supply [*a*] and read *gretę* (gret AC, gretę D); cf. also 1252. In 1903 BD *a gretë rowte* might be read (And other of hirę wommęn ‖ a gretë rowte), but *gret* is the reading of AC.

harde (A.S. heard, L. heard, herd, O. harrd), no morë hardë grace, 713 (hard[ë] D).—hard, (i.) 836 (-ę B, -e C), 2321 (-ę B, D †), 2326 (-ę B), 2356 (-e B †, hard here D), 2990, 3776, 6119 (-ę D); (ii.) 4199 (-e E). (Cf. 4757, 5802, 6035.)

heighe (A.S. héah, M. héh, L. hæh, hæhȝe, O. heh). Two cases of -ë, —But that wot heighë god, 3869 (-[e] B, hy[e] D, wot ‡ I by god C); Thorugh purueyaunce and disposicion Of heyghë Ioue, 7906-7 (-[e] B, heye C, high[e] D). To which add,—in heuene hye, 4587 f ABC (heye E) (: gye *inf.* : companye).—highę, 3279 (heighę B, hey C, hyę D); heyghę, 4636 (heigh B, hey C, hyę D).

heigh, heygh, (i.) 1717 (hey C, hyę D), 3128 (hey C; D †), 3739 (hi C, hie ‡ D), 4165 (hey C, high ‡ is E), 5853 (hey C, high D), 6799 (hey C, hię D), 7330 (hey C, high D), 7342 (hy C, hię D), 7872 ‡ D (high). (ii.) 4113 (hi C, hiȝ D), 5220 (hey C, high D).

longe (A.S. lang, long, O. lang), gon sithen longë while, 718 (seth gone long while (?) D); nought go (gon BC, gonę D) ful long[e] while, 1592 (-e B); longë tyme agon, 1807 BD (-[e] A (?), -[e] C);[5] longë tyme agon, 7688 (-[e] D (?)). Cf. the A.S. accusative phrases *lange þráge* (*hwíle, tíd.*)—In *Or that it be ful longe,* 832 f (long D) (: honge *inf.*), and *Ten dayes nys so longë not tabyde,* 6716 (-ę(?) C), *longe* is perhaps adv. longë lette, 7214 BCGCp. John's (more A, lenger D). [longë here (*hic*), 3661 C$^{c}$.] longe (*adv.* ?), 4698 (long D).

[1] Old-style figures indicate that B and D have -ę; an asterisk indicates that B alone has -ę. [2] Supply [*a*] in A.

[3] "For gret powèr and moral vertu here." In B we might read: "For gretë power and," etc.

[4] Old-style figures indicate that B and D have -e (elided); an asterisk indicates that B alone has -e (elided). [5] Supply [*And*] in A, and read *long*[*e*].

long, (i.) 143 (longe? B), 2384 (-ę B), 3337 (-ę B), 5555 (-ę B, longe † D),[1] 5944 (mak[ë] long(e) sermon B, -ę D).

olde (A.S. eald, ald, L. ald, alde, olde, O. ald), of oldë tyme, 6833 BD (old[e] A, oftyn † C[c]).—oldę, 1481 (old CD); olde (*in address*), 4992. (Cf. *old*, (ii.) 6031, 7647.)

Note.—All the other cases of *olde* (not *oldę*) that I have noted are either definite or plural. Definite cases (singular) are the following,—3189,[2] 3537 (wolde † C, old[e] D), 4766[3] (old[e] ? D), 4789, 4803 f (BC *defect.*, the old D) (: holde *inf.*), 6123 (D †), 7489, 7499; The newë loue out chaceth (cacheth † A, schakyth ‡ C) ofte the olde, 5077 f (: holde *p.p.* : colde *inf.*); myn oldë hat, 3162. (*Oldë* in all these except as indicated.) For the plural indefinite, see the following verses,—130 f, 160 f, 2933 f, 3139 f, 4041 f, 4728 f, 5086, 5634 f, 6921 f, 7009 f, 7015, 7571 f, 7822, 7841, 7844 (C †), 7874 f, 7925, 8212, 8217. (In all of these the reading of all the MSS. is *oldë* except as follows: *-e* (elided), in 5086, 7015 A (old B); -[e], in B in 7841, 7844 (C †), 7925, 8212; -[e], in D in 3139; old, 4728 f D; oolde, 4041 f D; oldde, 7822 B. [old[e] ‡, 969 D.]—Plural definite,— -ë, 6742 (-[e] B), 6743 ‡ C, 8116; *-e*, 760 (old D), 6118 ‡ D (?).

proude (A.S. prút, L. prut), proudë bayard, 218 (-[e] D); proud (*before vowels*), 210 (*-e* B), 214 (pryde ‡ B).

salte (A.S. sealt), In heuęne and helle in erthe and saltë se, 2850 (-[e] BD).

wode (A.S. wód), Which that men clepeth wodë ialousie, 7576 (the wodë A).—wood, wod, (i.) 499 (-ę B, D †), 3635 (-ę B), cf. 2639; wod, (ii.) 3240 (*-e* B, *om.* † A), 4892 (*-e* B, *om.* † D), 5579 (*-e* B), cf. 5010, 6201.

Note 1.—Some adjectives show an -e which is grammatically unjustifiable and never sounded. In B this is very common; in A, however, it is pretty rare. Thus,—sikę, 575 (sik B, sek C); syke, 7957 (sik B, in † seek C, sike D); but,—syk, (i.) 2601 (sikę BD); (ii.) 2608 (*-e* D), 2614 (sek C, seke D), 6776 (*-e* D, sek C).[4] See also *faire*, *goode*, *grete*, *highe*, *olde*.

Note 2.—*It welę be to hire leue*, 5267 f C, is an error for *leue* inf. (ABD) (: greue *inf.*); cf. 2778, 3487, 5273 f, 6581. Of monosyllabic adjectives, which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant and which take no -e in the *Troilus* in the uninflected forms, many examples are given in §§ 53, 55, 67, 69. Cf. also *bold* (2930, 4695, 7158), *broun* (109 f), *fayn* (6556, 6788, 6851 f, 7376 f), *hoors* (5809), *hor* (7647 f), *lyk* (2125 f, 5910, etc.), *towgh*, *towh* (2110 f, 2929 f, 6464 f), *vnwar* (549) (cf. note 3), *wan* (1636 f, 4897 f, 7584 f), *warm* (2732 f), *worth* (2163, 4382, 5160), *wyd* (5289). In some of these words there are variants in -e (not sounded): thus, *hoor(e)* (7647 f D), *wann(e)* (1636 f D), etc.

Note 3.—For dissyllables in the indefinite use, singular, cf. heuenyssh, 8176, cf. 104; holsom, 4588; open, 1125; siker, syker, (i.) (ii.) 673, 920, 2455, cf. 4079; sonnyssh, 5398; sothfast, 5532; stedęfast, 5651 (stedfast BD); vnwàr, 304; a wonder thyng, 621, cf. 1120 D; yonder sonne, 2322; on ydel, 948 f, 6457 f, 6635; yuel, 8000; ywàr, 1483 (i- B, war C, warę D); as Argus eyed, 6121 f; rosy hewed, 2283; horned, 7013; lewed, 3210; blisful, blysful, (i.) 1765, 1917, 2176, 6323 (*voc.* ?), cf. 5778;

[1] C out of order.
[2] Old-style figures indicate that BD have *old[e]*.
[3] In B we must drop (*vp-*) and read *on* with A.
[4] *Sikë y mc feyne*, 2613 D, is an error for *syklyche*, etc.

dredful, 2130, 2343, d. herte 2186, 7694, B has *dredeful* in 2186, 2343, 7694; leful, 3362 (lefful C); skylful, (i.) 1477, 3780, (ii.) 3129; vnskilful, (ii.) 790; woful, (i.) 13, 1518, 2945, 5406, 5500, 6106, 6684, (ii.) 7683.

*Sorweful* is usually dissyllabic; *sorweful* (dissyllabic) is the regular pronunciation and spelling in AB, *sorweful* is favored by C, and D prefers *sorowfull* (cf. 14, 1149, 1548, 5036, 6604, 6779); but the word is sometimes trisyllabic: thus,— Cryseyde ful of *sorw[ë]ful* (sorwëful C, sorwëfull D, sorowful John's) pite, 5393, where, however, Cp. has *sorweful* and *pitee* (cf. also 7591 D, 7996 D); see §§ 57. *c*, 84. Cf. ernestful, 2812.

Note 4.—For adjectives in *-y* (A.S. *-ig*), indefinite, singular, (i.) before consonants, cf. almyghty (5355), angry (562), blody (5289, 7865 C), bysy (1359, 3884, 6307), cloudy (1853), dedly (5533), drery (13), hardy (2159, 7165), hasty (6230), heuy (3981), lusty, -i (157, 165, 951, 1837, 2184, 6147, 6756), myghty (1673), mysty (3902), redy (2081, 3545, 4627, 5870, 5873, 6378, 6420), sondry (440, 957, 5174), sory (14, 1179, 1549, 2141, 3886, 6503, 6990, 7445, 7461), thrifty (275), trusty (4665 ‡ D), vnmyghty (1943), vnweri (410, 1924), vnworthi (4126, 4991), wery (1296), worthy, -i (226, 979, 1265, 2784, 4011, 4701, 6696, 7226). For examples before vowels (with and without slurring of *-y*), see the Chapter on Metre. For the plural, see § 70; for the definite use, see § 57. *d*.

Note 5.—Adjectives in *-les* are the following (sing. and indef. unless otherwise noted): (i.) (ii.) botelas, 782 f (bootelees B) (see *graceles*); botmeles byhestes, *pl.*, 7794 (bottemeles C, botumles D); drynk[e]lees, 1803 (drenkynlees B, drynkeles C, drink[e]les D); endeles, 2168 (enfeyned † C, infynyte ‡ D *in a rather later hand*); gilt[e]les, 1413 (gilteles BC) (*perh. adv.*); the gilt[l]es in distresse, 2457 (gilteless B, gilteles C, giltles D) (*sg.* or *pl.* ?); graceles, 781 f (: causeles *adv.* : boteles); helcles, 7956 (heeeles † A); hertcles, 7957 (I herde † telle C); knotteles, 7132 B (-[e]- D, knot[e]les AB); lyghtles, 3392 (-lees B); makeles, 172 f (: natheles : prees *n.*); resteles, 4426; roteles, 5432 (rootheles B, ertheles ‡ C); routheleas, 1431 f (-les B, reutheles C, rowtheles D); specheles, 5032, 5829; ster[e]les (= without helm; Ital. word here is *governo*), 416 (stiërlees (?) B, stereles C, ster[e]les D); vertules, 1429 f (vertuelees B) (: routheleas).

## § 50. The following adjectives of Germanic origin also show an -e in the *Troilus*:

baddo (A.S. bæddel (?)), sowned in-to badde, 6338 f (: ye hadde *ind.*); cf. sownen ynto godo, 1029 f.

lowe (O.N. lágr, L. laih, O. lah), But hold hym as his thral lowe yn distresse, 439 (low BD)[1]. Cf. the definite form,—my lowe confessioun, 1613; lowe, *pl.* or *adv.*, 2869 (lawe B, low D).

meke (O.N. mjúkr, O. meoc, P. Pl.[c] meke), 8210 f (: seke *inf.*).

schere (O.N. skærr, cf. A.S. scír), an arwë schere, 6210 f C (clere AB, cler D) (: here *adv.*).

wykke, wikke (cf. M.E. wicche, A.S. wicc(e)a 'wizard,' wicce 'witch'), *-e*, 403 (C *om.* †, wykkyd D); now is wykke iturned vn-to worse, 3916 (wyk D, wikked torned B, like † C[c]); fro wikke I go to worse, 5502 (wo ‡ A, wikkeḍ D).

Note 1.—Cf. the following cases of the plural in the indefinite use,—wykke, 939 f (wyk D) (: thikke *indef. adj. sg.*), 1543 f (weke C, wyk D) (: thikke *adj. pl. or adv.*).

[1] Supply [*his*] in D.

Note 2.—*Wykked* also occurs. Thus,—7973 (wikked BD, wekedę C); cf. 1889, 3650. Cf. also the plural (39, 7118), the vocative (3679, where C has *welkedę*), the definite use (§ 57. *b*).

Note 3.—For *rakel* (cf. Swed. dial. rakkel *sbst.*, O. N. reikall *adj.*) see the following places,—with r. hond, 1060 (-yl D); eche r. dede, 3271 (rackle B, rakil CD); thow r. nyght, 4279 (rakle B, rakelę C); *pred.* (before a consonant), 4472 (-yl C). In 4484 is *rakle* an inf.?

§ 51. Romance adjectives preserve their final -e in the *Troilus* (Child, § 19; ten Brink, § 239). (A few Latin adjectives are included in the following list.)

I. Miscellaneous:

benìgne, benỳgne (O. Fr. benigne), 8232 f (: digne *pl.*); *-e* he was, 4644 (beninge B, -nyng D). (For pl., cf. 431 f, 2868 f.)

contraire (O. Fr. contraire), 212 f A (contrarie BD, -rye C) (: on the staire : debonaire). (Cf. necessaire.) See also § 31, to which add references to 418, 637. Contrarie, *adj.*, 5690 f (: tarie *inf.*); cf. 5665.

dèbonaire (O. Fr. debonere, -aire), *-e*, 181 (-ar B, -er CD); cf. o goodly debonaire, 2846 f (-eyre D) (: clere *pl.*).

digne (O. Fr. digne), 429 f (: benygne *pl.* : resigne *ind.* 1 *sg.*); digne, cf. 961, 3856. (For pl., cf. 2865 f, 8231 f.)

eterne (O. Fr. eterne), 2853 f (: descerne *inf.* : werne *inf.*), 3217 f (: gouerne *inf.* : yerne *adv.*).

huge (O. Fr. ahuge), 3498 (D †), 6049, 6428. [Var. heuge C.]

iuste (O. Fr. juste), 1612, 1812; iust[e], 4069, 7619 (-e BCD).

large (O. Fr. large), 7167 f (: Arge *n. pr.*).

mansuète (Lat. mansuetus, cf. Ital. mansueto), 6557 f (*l. om.* † C) (: swete : mete *inf.*).

necessaire (O. Fr. necessaire), 5683 f (: fayre *adv.*) (necessarie AB, -rye D, C cut out). (Cf. contrarie.)

nice, nyce, nyse (O. Fr. nice), 1808 f (: vyse (A †): cherishe *inf.*, -ice BCD), 1942 f (: vice), 2585, 5198, 5260 f (: vice). (For *pl.* cf. 3166 f, 4235 f.)

pale (O. Fr. pale, palle, pasle), 5402 f (: smale *adj. pl.* : bale *n.*), 6899 (C ?).

pryme, —at prymë face (=Lat. prima facie), 3761.

straunge (O. Fr. estrange), 6483 f (: chaunge *inf.*), 7223 (D †), 7995 f (strong † C) (: chaunge *n.*); his manère estraunge, 1077 f (straunge D) (: chaunge *inf.*).

trine (Lat. trinus, cf. Fr. trine), trine ‡ vnite, 8229 D.

II. For Adjectives in *-ble*, of all constructions, singular and plural, compare the following words in the places cited (C is fond of the spelling—*bele*, but sometimes has *-el*, *-il*).

able, 1292, 1821, 1988.
chàritàble, 7186.
còuenàble, 2222 f.
dìscordàble, 4595 f.
double, 1, 54, 7261.
èxcusàble, 3873.
feble, 7585.
hònouràble, 6798 f.
horrible, 6613.
humble, 124, 433, 1913, 2154, 2214, 2938, 2983, 4197, 4329, 4790, 6161, 7683.
ìmpossìble, 4153; cf. 783.
ìnuysìble, 8229.
muàble, 3664 f.
noble, 1404, 1416, 1732, 1822, 3739, 6747, 7342, 7686, 7920, 8115.
rèmuàble, 6344.
rèsonàble, 2220 f, 2991.
stable, 4593 f.
vnstàble, 3662 f.
visible, 8229.

Note 1.—For the treatment of these words before vowels (elision or non-elision depending upon accent), see 1821, 2938, 3739, 4790, 6747, 7186, 7342, 7920, 8229. For *symple* cf. 181, 7183.

Note 2.—For *tender* (O.F. tendre), see *tender of*, 3746 (tendre BD, -dir C); cf. *sobre was*, 7183 (-ere C). For *transitorie* (: memorie) see 3669 f.

Note 3.—French -é is of course preserved. Thus,—*loke that atempre be thy brydel*, 946 (atempree B, atempere † wel C, that thou † attempre be thy b. D); *sècre, secré*, cf. 744 f, 3128, 3154 f, 3601 (cf. also *sècret, secrèt* (?), (ii.) 2749, 2984, 3320); *prèue*, 3763 (priue B, pryve D, prime † C), cf. *prèuy*, 3629 (pryue BD, priue C).

§ 52. But some Romance adjectives take an -e in the *Troilus* that have none in French. In a few of the following instances one might be inclined to suspect the influence of a French feminine ending (cf. § 63). Some of the forms are vocative, but such are always indicated.

aduèrse (O. Fr. advers, avers), fortune aduerse, voc., 5854 f (: werse : diuerse *pl.*).

asùre (O. Fr. azur), a brochę gold of asure, 4212 f (g. and asure BCD) (: auenture : scripture).

clere (O. Fr. cler), 6210 f (schere C, cler D) (: here *adv.*); -ę, 3368 (cler C, -e D ?); cler, 5653 (-ę BD). [For def. form *clere*, cf. 7018 f; for pl. *clere*, cf. 2843 f, 2971 f, 4195 f, 6097 f, 6372 f, 6583 f, 6929 f, 7173 f, 7178 f, 7362 f, 7701 f.]

comùne (O. Fr. comun), fortune ys commune, 843 f (: fortune); she. . . traytour comune, 4667 f (: fortune : entune *inf.*); comune astrologer, 4257 (C †); by comune ‡ assente (?), 5008 D (on AC, oon B). [Cf. *pl.*, 5054 f.]

diuerse (O. Fr. divers), in diuèrsë wyse, 61 (dyuèrsę ‡ D). (Cf. Freudenberger, *Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts*, p. 39.)

dyuyne (O. Fr. divin), of dyuynë purueyaunce, 5623 A (de- BD).

fyne (O. Fr. fin), of fyn[ë] force, 6784 (-ë BD). [fyne, 5139 f C (: myn) *should be* fyn *n.*]

mene (O. Fr. meiien), Criseyde mene was, 7169 (-[e] B)[1]. [Cf. the def. form,—this menë while, 2892; in this menę while, 3618 AB (in this wyse † C, in this while D).]

pure (O. Fr. pur), for pure ashamed, 1741 (-ë schamyd C)[2]. [Adverb?]

queynte (O. Fr. coint), swetë harmę so q., exclam., 411 f (-t D) (: pleynte *n.* : feynte *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.*).

secounde (O. Fr. second), 7199 f (*pred. masc. sg.*) (secunde B) (: founde *p. p.*); cf. Ector the secunde, 1243 f (-ounde B, -ound D) (: wounde *n.* : abounde *inf.*).

soucreyne (O. Fr. soverain), o lady souëreyne, 4978 f (-ayne B, -aigne D) (: peyne *n.*).

Note 1.—Here may be added,—*the blood Thebàne*, 6964 f (Theban C) (: bane *n.*). The parallel form *Tròian Troiàn* (regularly *troyan* in C) has no -e, whether *adj.* or *sbst.* (cf. 1910, 4715, 4734, 4994 f (: man), 6489, 7240, 7272, 7275, 7283), except perhaps in the plural (cf. 145).

Note 2.—*Recrèaunte* has an adventitious -e due to the scribe: *Or be recreaunte of* (*-e for* B, *recreaunt for* C, *recreaunt of* D) *his owene tene*, 814. So *pleyne*, 5552 ABD (*pleyn* C).

Note 3.—For examples of the singular of Romance adjectives in the indefinite use, see the following (accent recessive except as indicated):—

èternèl (5724 f), funeral (6665 f), fynàl (4807 f), general (163, 893 f, 919 f, 4644 f, 4804 f, 7185 f), infernàl (6205 f), moral (1252, 6334), mortal (2860, 3218), inmòrtal (103), natal (2992), egàl (2979), royàl, reàl (432, 435 f, 4642 f, 6329 f, 8193); angwysshous (3658), bounteuous (883 f), cheuàl[e]roùs (7165), còrageùs (7163 f), coueytous (4215)[3], dèsiroùs (1051, 2186), deynous (290), disdeỳnous (2302 D), doutoùs (5654), enuỳous (1942), èuuyoùs (4542), greuous (6154, 7594, 7967, cf. 5566), hèỳnoùs (2702), ialous, ielous (3741, 3993), pitous, petous (111, 113, 422, 3760, 5345, 6161, 6918), dìspitoùs (6562 f), traytous (4542 A; traytour BCD); àbsent (6824, 7000 BCD), absènt (3330 f, 7000 A), diligent (2986 f, 3327 f), innocent (2647, 2808), prèsent (4810, 7110), presènt (2887 f, 4142); caytif (rather *sbst.* than *adj.*, 3224 B; castif A, captỳf CD), èntentỳf (1923 f), testỳf (7165), cf. gỳltyf (3861, 3891); àngelỳk (102), cèrteyn (2633, 3374, 4601, etc.), yn certeỳn, cèrteyn (697, 5570, 5607 C, 5667 f), vncèrteyn (5651), clos (2619), confus (5018), mat (5004), cùrteys (81), defèt (6981, 7582), discrèt (3319, 3785), esy (1083, 1705), èxpert (67), felon (6562), fortunat (1365), infortùnat (5406 D; -ed AB, ònfortùne C), fùtur (7111), gèntil (3746, 6336, 7294), ioly (2184, 7537), malapert (2929), pàrfit (4221, 7282), pepelyssh (6339), preignant (5841), sècret (2749, 3320), secrèt (2984), sòdeyn (1752), soür (4036 ‡ A), sùbget, -git (231, 8153), subtil (1342), vnàpt (971), in veyn (4254, 4976, 7736). Some of these occasionally show variants in -e (not sounded). For adjectives in *-ious*, *-uous*, *-ial*, *-icnt*, *-uel*, see Chapter on Metre. For adjectives in *-ay*, cf. *gay* (2007 f), vèrray (6267, very D).

§ 53. In the definite use (that is, when preceded by a possessive or demonstrative pronoun or by the definite

[1] In C supply [*hire*]. [2] D om. *for* (purë ashamyd). [3] Dissyllable?

article) monosyllabic adjectives take an inflectional -e (Child, § 32; ten Brink, §§ 232, 241).

I. Ordinals:

our first[e] lettre, 171 (-e B, our chef[e] l. ‡ ? D); the firste syght[e], 1754 (the ferst[e] C, the ferst † D); the firste tyme, 2841 (-[e] D). (Cf. also 280, 2298, 4615, 6603, 7303.) the *a*lderfirst[e], 2939 (the *a*ldir ferste C; D †); with the firste || it cam, 4725 (the ferst hit D). But,—the firstę || that, 7430 (see § 54).

the thridde ferthe fyfthe sixte day, 7568 (C † D †); Mayes day the thridde, 1141 f (-d D) (: bytydde *ind. 3 sg.*); the thriddë heuęne, 2844 (-[de] D). (Cf. also 4660, 5353.)

this ilke ferthe book, 4688 (this ‡ ferthë b. D). (Cf. also 6839, 6856).

the seuęnthë spere, 8172; herę seuęnthë hows, 1766 (seuęntë C, vij. D).[1]

that ilke nynthe nyght, 7466 (tenthë † C). (Cf. also 7044.)

the tenthe day, 6787 (the x[the] d. D). (Cf. also 6257, 6260, 6787, 7005, 7048, 7205.)

with his tenthe some yfere, 2334 (his t. sonne † B, his tensum † C, his x· somme D).

II. Monosyllabic superlatives:

for the beste, 581[2] f (-t C), 2409 f, 3890 f, 4171 f, 4831 f, 5539 f, 5950 f (-t C), 6090 f, 7969 f, 8113 f; the beste, 2533 f (-t C), 3295 f ([the] beste C), 3514 f (-t C), 3689 f, 3769 f, 5319 f, 5782 f (-t C), 6265 f (-t C), 7892 f (-t C); the best is 830 AD (-e BC); the faireste and the beste, 4122 f; my beste, 597 f (-t BC); thi beste, 1021 f (-t C, for the best D); the best[e] post, 993 (-e BC); the beste knyght, 1074 (-[e] BD); my best[e] frend, 1497 (-e C); thi beste gere, 2097 (-[e] D);[3] thë best[ë] harpour, 2115 (-ë C); his beste wyse, 4436 (-[e] D); the beste weye, 5954 (-[e] D); o frend of frendës the *a*lderbeste, 4439 f (no article in CD, which read *aldyr best*, *altherbest*). (Cf. also 474, 947, 1467, 3797, 5470, 5947, 5987, 6188, 7670.) But,—the best, 1825 f ACD (-e B) (: the thryftiest : the worthiest).

Rhyme-words.—I ne lest (leste) *prcs. subj.* (581), leste, lyste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (1021, 2533, 3514, 3689, 3890, 4171), leste *prct.* 3 *sg. ind. or subj.* (3295, 4831), reste *inf.* (597, 2409, 4122, 5950, 8113), *prcs. ind.* 1 *sg.* (5319), *noun* (3769, 3890, 4439, 5782, 6265), vnreste (5539, 7969), wreste *inf.* (6090), moleste *inf.* (5539), in geste (3295), breste *prcs. subj.* 3 *sg.* (597), Alceste (7892).

[1] Or,—Sat in herę seuënthe hows of heuęne the.
[2] Old-style figures indicate that D reads *best*.
[3] Insert [*ryght*] in A.

at the laste, 916 f (att[e] laste B),[1] 1040 f (at ‡ last D), 1230 f (attë laste B), 1484 f, 1776 f (-t C), 3938 f (-t C), 5185 f (-t C), 8002 f (-t C), 8182 f; at the last[e], 8093 (-e BD); at the last[e], 2023 f (-e BC); at the laste, 5885 (-ë ‡ as C, -t † D); at the laste her-of, 3407 (-t B) (cf. also 1584, 1599, 1909, 3457, 3961, 4417, 5097, 6796, 7509); to the laste, 1340 f; April[2] the laste, 3202 f (-t C); my laste, 537 f (D †), 1955 f (-t C); his laste, 3640 f; the last[e] shour, 4709 (-ë B). But,—at the laste the, 2009 (-të dede ‡ D); at the laste this, 5034; at the last this, 5914 (-ę BCD).

Rhyme words.—faste *adv.* (537, 916, 1040, 1230, 1776, 1955, 2023, 3938, 5185, 8002, 8182), laste *inf.* (537, 1040, 1955), caste *inf.* (1340, 1776, 3202), *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (1230, 3938, 5185, 8182), paste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (1484), Horàste (3640).

at the leste, 1447 f, 2293 (-[e] BD), 2415 f (-t C), 3156 f, 4002 f, 6439 f (at leste ‡ D), 6888 f, 7313 f (attë leste B), 8041 f; at the leste how, 4678; oon the leste, 4152 f (oon ‡ of the leste E); the leeste ioye, 4162; the leste poynt, 4386 (-[e] D).

Rhyme words.—heste, behest, byheste (1447, 2415, 3156, 4002, 8041), feste (1447, 4002, 4152, 6439, 6888, 8041), requeste *n.* (7313), at the meste (7313). [Var. B leeste, leest[e]; D leest.]

at the meste, 7310 f (attë meeste B) (: requeste *noun* : at the leste); the moste wondir, 2228 C (-[e] D, the grettest wonder AB); for the moste part, 3281 C (-[e] D, more AB); herę most[e] fere, 4183 (-e CE); my most[e] nede, 6194 (-e CD); compare,—now is most[e] nede, 3259.

the nexte word, 2942 (-[e] B; D †); this nexst[e] wyke, 2358 (the nexte C); the nexte wise, 697 BC (-[e] D).[3]

the worste, 1452 (-[e] D); the worste, 341 (-ę so ‡ C, -t so ‡ D); the worste poynt, 342 (the worst y ‡ D); the worste trecherye, 3120 (-[e] D); the worste kynde, 4468 (-[e] D). (Cf. 1389, 1622, 6459, 7090.) [Var. ABCD werste.]

III. Miscellaneous:

the bente mone, 3466 (-[e] B).

herę blake wede, *177 (-[e] BD); cf. 2405 f. (For indef. blak, cf. 309, 642, 1619.)*

the blynde lust, *8187; thy blynde and wynged sone, 4650 (blynd † D).* (For indef. *blynd*, cf. *628, 1106, 3370 f).*

herę brighte face, 4670 (-[e] D); the bryght[e] mone, 7011 (-e C); Criseyde the brighte, 6879 f (-t CD) (: a-light (-e B) *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* :

[1] Old-style figures denote that D has *last*.
[2] Three syllables (April AD, Aperil B, Aprille C).
[3] A reads: For this nys not yn certeyn the next wyse. Omit *yn* (with BCD Cp. John's) and read *the next*[e] *wyse*.

nyghte *inf.*). (Cf. also 5325, 7071, 7379, 7602.) herę fadres faire bryghte tente, 7385 (faire bright[e] D).

herę colde mouth, 5823 (-[e] B); my cold[e] care, 612 (-e C, the ‡ cold[e] D). (Cf. 2052 ‡ C, 5173.)

the dede slep, 2009.

his fixe and depe impressioun, 298 (B †, fyx C).

thi derke wede, 4273. (Cf. 5016.)

And nexst the derk[e] nyght the glade morwe, 944 (derke . . . glad[e] B, derke . . . gladde C, -[e] . . . -[e] D).

the foule netle, 941 (C †, foul[e] D); thy foule ennỳe, 4937. (For indef. *ful*, cf. 1981 and see § 55.)

his fulle myght, 7046 (-[le] BD) (cf. 610, 1052, 1419, 2637, 3278, 6438, 7902); at the fulle, 209 f (attë fulle B) (cf. 3055, 3359, 3376); herę ful[le] herte, 7083 A *should read* herę woful h. (*so* BCD).

that glade nyght, 3071 (cf. 944, 4488).

this olde greye, 4789 f (gray D) (: his eyen tw[e]ye).

his hote fyr, 445 (-[e] D). (Cf. 490, 6870. For indef. *hot, hoot*, cf. 1977 f, 2361, 2618, 5925 f, 7465.)

his lighte gost, 8171 (-[e] B).

my righte lode sterre, 7755 (-[e] D); my right[e] l. s., 6595 (-e C); thi righte place, 4970 (-[e] BD); his right[e] lady, 2150[1] (-e C), 4505 (-e C); my right[e] lady, 6930 (-e C), 7016 (bryȝte C, my right lady ‡ D); her right[e] cours, 2055 D (kynde ABC); the right[e] lyf, 1936 (-e C). (For indef. *right, vpright*, cf. 1418 f, 3823 f, 3840 f.)

hirę streght[e] bak, 4089 (streyte C, streiȝt[e] D, he[r] streyght[e] A).

the strong[e] cite, 7849 (-e BCD).

the swyfte fame, 5321 (C †).

My goode brother Troylus the syke, 2657 (D †) (: like *inf.* : syke *inf.*).

the white and ekę the rede, 4226 f (: drede *n.* : rede *inf.*).

Antigone the white, 1972 f (: syke *inf.* : endite *inf.*); cf. 2147 f.

his wod[e] peyne, 2440 (-e BC); the wode ialousye, 7576 (wode BCD G Cp. John's, *without the article*).

the fayrë bayë stede, 7401 f (-[e] BD); his bay[e] stede, 1709 (bayȝe C); but,—his stede bay, 1066 f (: day : ay).

this blewë rynge, 3727 (-[e] D, blowe C).

IV. Some examples are here given of the definite form of words which occasionally show an -e in forms not obviously definite (cf. § 49):

[1] Insert [*here*] in A.

this false world, 1505 (-[e] BD); thi fals[e] gost, 7884 (-e CD).

the good[e] wyse worthi fressh and fre, 1402 (goode BC); my goode brother, 2657 (my good trew brothir † D).

herę goode softly wyse, 2752 (hirę goodly soft[e] w. BD, hirę goodęli softe w. C); his gode gouernaunce, 3269 (wise CD); his good[e] gouernaunce, 3323 (-e C); my good[e] loue, 3851 A$^{c}$ (my good[e] myn B, myn goode myn C, good hert myn D); his goode chere, 6547 (-[e] D).

youre grete trouthe, 3834 (good[e] D).

his heigh[e] port, 1077 (hieghe B, hy[e] D)[1]; the heigh[e] worthynesse, 4451 (hyë C, hiȝë D).

V. owene, owen, owne (A.S. ágen), is found only in the definite use. I. Singular. (i.) Before consonants; always dissyllabic, however spelled. Thus,—myn owęnë lust, 407 (ownë BD); thin owęnë cheyne, 509 (own[e] BD, owen C); his owęnë curtasye, 2571 (owen B, owne D); myn owęnë lady, 7032 (swene † B,[2] ougne D) (cf. also 51, 442, 814, 1371 C (owne D), 1835, 1869, 1956, 2586, 2989, 4025, 4327, 4329 C, 6111, 6112, 6412, 6426, 6581, 6703, 6830, 6884, 6928, 7643, 7678, 7707, 7764, 7784, 8081); here owne place, 3060 (owen BD, owęnë C) (cf. 2950, 3757 (owęnë BC, own[e] D), 3943); myn owen lady, 6525 (owęnë C, ougne D) (cf. 772, 5067, 5751); myn owęnë herte, 5973 (swete B, ougne D) (cf. 3477, 5376 C); his ownë herte, 4662 (owen B, own[ë] D); thyn owen help, 795 (ow[e]n B, owęnë C, ownë D); myn owen herte, 6214 AB (owęnë C, ougnë D) (cf. 1530 (own? B, ouęnë C, own[ë] D), 6302 (own[ë] B, owęnë C, ougnë D)). (ii.) Before vowels, youre owęne (*predicate*), 6517 (owęn B, owyn C, ougne D.) II. Plural, his owęnë nedes, 3266 (owen B, own[e] D, owęne ‡ nede C); here owęnë men, 3438 (own[e] B, owne D).

Note.—For *myn owęnę throtę*, 1410 A, read *my throte*. The form *owe* (6111 C) is no doubt due merely to the omission by the scribe of the sign of abbreviation.

## § 54. Occasionally, however, -e is dropped in the definite form of monosyllabic adjectives.

his good wìl, 2294 (-ę BC).

this good plìt, 3981 (-ę B, thus good p. A).

my good wòrd, 7444 (goddę C); yourę good wòrd, 7985 (C †).

[1] Read [e]*straunge* in D.

[2] This form occurs several times in B; as, 4025, 4327, 6412, 6581, 7032. Cf. *sweue*, 2586 B.

In these cases the phrases were perhaps felt as compounds; cf. O.N. *góð-vili, góð-virki*, etc., and notice the accent. But not so in,—

this heigh matere, 3358 (he B, heyę C, hyę D).

yowre heyghę seruyce, 4130 (heigh B, heyę C, D †).

here heyghę compleynte, 5467 (heighę B, hire hyë pleynt C; D †).

thy wrong conceyte, 692 (-ę B, wrang D, C †).

my lowę confessioun, 1613.

Al be I not the firstę that dide amys, 7430 (the ferstę C, the furstę D).

the lastę, the last, see p. 124.

the pleyn felicite, 8181 (-ę B); this menę while, 3618 AB (p. 122).

Cf. the substantive use in:

Criseydë whichę that is thi lef, 5273 f (lief B, lyf C, the lefe D) (: a-gref: myschef). (For *lef, lief*, indef. sing., cf. 3706 f, 4461 f.)

Note 1.—Cases before a vowel, such as *hire old vsage*, 150 (olde C, the ‡ old D), and *herę playn entente*, 2645 (pleyne BC, pleyn D), of course prove nothing. *The next wyse*, 697 A, is an error.

Note 2.—In

> For which these wise clerkes that ben dede
> Han euere yet prouerbed to vs yonge
> That *firstë vertu* is to kepe tonge, 3134-6[1]

(-[e] BC, The first vertu is to kepe wel the tonge D), the definite form is used by a sort of *constructio ad sensum*, though the demonstrative word (*the*) is omitted. Cf. Parforme it out for now is *most[ë] nede*, 3259, and perhaps also And thanne *at erst[ë]* shal we ben so fayn, 5983 (*at erste* B, *att erste* D †, *atte erst[e]* G), but here note *atte* in G.

§ 55. In vocative phrases monosyllabic adjectives appear in the definite form when they precede the noun (as in A.S. *léofa Béowulf*) (Child, § 34; ten Brink, § 235).

o blake nyght, 4271 (-[e] D).

o blynd[e] world o blynd entencion, 211 (-ë . . . -d B, -ë . . . -e C).

o bryght[e] Làthona, 7018 (-ë C).

thow foule daunger, 4163 BE (fole C; A †).[2]

Graunt mercy good[e] myn ywys quod she, 6322 (goodë B, go[o]d[e] D, Graunt mercy Iwis goode myn quod sche C).

goodë nece, 2288 (-[e] D), 3473 (-[e] D); good[e] nece, 1468 (-e C); godę necë dere, 3817 (?) (-[ë] B, -ë C, good (?) D).[3]

gode brother, 3106 (-[e] D).

[1] From the *Roman de la Rose*: Sire, la vertu premeraine . . . C'est de sa langue refrener, 13117-21, II, 48, ed. Michel.

[2] For *foul, ful*, in the attributive and predicate uses (*indef.*), cf. 213, 1981, 5656, 6402, 6746 (foule A).

[3] Now doth hym sitte (sitten John's) now (*om.* BCGCp. John's) gode nece dere A.

goodë swetë, loue me, 6935 (-[e] D).

Now good[e] em for goddës loue I prey, 1394 (-ë BG, my good eem ‡ D John's Hl. 2392, myn em ‡ C, And good[e] em Cp.);[1] o good em, 1584 (-*e* BC); good hert myn ‡, 3851 D.

leue brother, 3172, 5120 (derë ‡ D), 5203, 6670, 6840 (-[e] D).

leue nece, 1336 (louë † B), 5588.

leue Pàndare, 5114 (C?).

o quyke deth, 411 (-[e] BCD).

Cf. the exclamatory line,—

o trust o feyth o depe asèüraùnce, 7622 (depë àssuraùnce ‡ C, depë àssuraùns ‡ D).

In 458 *good* is used in the voc. : Good (-ę B, God CDG, Goode? Hl. 2392) goodly (godely B, god Hl. 2392) to whom serue I (I sèrue CG) and (*om.* BD Cp.) laboure (-r DG).

But in definite or vocative phrases in which the adjective follows the noun no -e is added. Thus,—

myn owęnë lady bryght, 4327 f (: knyght) (cf. 7285 f).

o lufsom lady bryght, 6826 f (-e B) (: nyght), etc., etc. (Cf. ten Brink, § 235.)

## § 56. For adjectives of more than one syllable which do not stand at the end of the verse[2], the following rules as to -e in the definite and vocative constructions may be collected from the usage of the *Troilus*:

Of adjectives of more than one syllable those alone take -e which have a primary or secondary accent on the ultima, and are followed by a word accented on the first syllable.

The special cases of which the *Troilus* furnishes examples may be stated as follows:

I. Dissyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no -e when the following word is accented on the first syllable. The verse will not bear such an arrangement of accents as x′ xx′.

Example: *the wykkcd spyrit.* (See others in § 57.)

II. For the same reason dissyllabic oxytone adjectives take no -e when the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.

Example: *his sodcỳn comỳnge*, 380. (See § 58.)

[1] C has but nine syllables; AB Cp. become 9-syllable lines if *good* (*goodę*) be read.

[2] The *Troilus* affords no certain means of judging how such words were treated at the end of a verse except in the case of some plurals (see § 71).

III. Trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives (' x ') take -e unless the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.

Example: *the wòfullèstë wyght.* (See others in § 59.)

IV. But trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives take no -e when the following word is accented on the second syllable. The verse will not bear such an arrangement of accents as ' x ' xx '.

Example: *his èxcellènt prowèsse* (see § 60).

V. For the same reason trisyllabic paroxytones take no -e when the following word is accented on the first syllable.

Example: *th' crràtyk stèrres* (see § 61).

Examples under I.—V. follow (§§ 57—61).

Note.—Adjectives of more than three syllables are not common in the *Troilus*. The accentuation of *philosophical* is interesting in "To the, and the, philosophical Strode," 8220 (D †).

§ 57. I. Dissyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no -e in the definite and vocative uses when the following word is accented on the first syllable. (Cf. Child § 35; ten Brink, § 246.)

(*a*) Superlatives:

the grettest wonder, 2228 ([the] g. B, mostë C, most[e] D).

myn alderleuest lord, 3081 (-ę C[1]); myn alderleuest lady, 6939 ([myn] aldyr louęlyest ‡ C).

The following of course prove nothing:—

the hàrdest ìs, 1814 (-*e* B; D †).

the fàireste ànd, 4122 (-t BD), cf. 1832.

the grettest of, 4854 (-*e* C).

the kyndest and, 7892 C (*indef.* ABD).

Cf. in the plural,—

the worthiest and grettest in degre, 244.

the fresshest and, 4564 (-*e* B; C †; D †).

(*b*) the best[ë] sounded ioly harpe, 2116 (the bestë sowned B, the beste ‡ sowned(e) C, the best ‡ sownyd D).

thilke couered qualite, 2873 (couerd B, thilk[e] couerid q. D).

this furrëd cloke, 3580 (-ed(ę) C, furrid ‡ D (?)).

the heped(ę) wo, 4898 (-ed B, -id D).

Note.—Compare *on of the beste entecched creature*, 7195 (on the best (?) B, on of the beste entecched(e) C, on(e) of the best entached D) (: dure *inf.*). On the idiom, see Einenkel, *Streifzüge durch die mittelengl. Syntax*, p. 87, and Kellner, Caxton's *Blanchardyn and Eglantine*, Introduction, p. xvii (E.E.T.S.). Cf. also *the newe abaysshed nyghtyngale*, 4075 (abaysed B, abasschit C, abaschid D †).

[1] Or, *leuęste.*

my nakede herte sentement, 2885 (-d BD, hertis D).
this fals and wikked dede, 93 (wekedę C, cursyd † D).
that wykkedę dede, 3133 (-d BD).
that wikkedę wyuere, 3852 (-d B, the wikkid serpent † wythïr D).
the wykked spyrit, 7575 (wekedę C).
thy wynged, 4650 (D †).
this wrecched, 5283 (-ę C), 8180 (cf. 8214).

(*c*) that blisful, 6768; the blisful, the blysful, 1319 (C †), 1919 † (ȝe, blisful D), 4510, 6943.
this dredful, 1511 (C † *om.* this; dredęful B); hirę dredful ioye, 1861 (D †).
thi greful, 4948 (gerful B, gery C, greffuH D).
my sorwful, 4952 (reuful ‡ C, sorǫwfuH D), 4963 (woful C, sorǫwfuH D); this sorwful, 596 B (sorwęful C, sorǫwful D), 4895 (sorwęful AC,[1] sorǫwfuH D), 5030 (sorwęful C, sorǫwfuH D), 5456 (woful ‡ C, sorwęfuH D), 5822 (sorwęful C, sorwęfuH D), 5914 (woful C, woofuH D), 6359 (woofuH D); his sorwful herte, 6893 B (sorwęful ACD); herę s. h., 6543 (sorwę- CD).—the sorwful (before vowels), 10 (sorǫwful B, sory(e) D), 1537 (-wę- C, sorǫwful D, the soruful (*dissyl.*) hernest B).
my woful, 5505 (sorwęful C), 7733; herę woful, 5814 (his † w. B); the woful, 5447 (sorwęful C), 5801 (tho † w. B); this woful, 703 (thi w. BCD), 2446, 5022 (sorwęful C), 5027, 5034, 6560, 7077; his woful herte, 6997; herę w. h., 5884 ABD; the lassë wofulle of hem, 5794 (woful BC, woofuH D). [Var. D woofuH.]
the chyldyssh, 4010[2] (childishę B, childis C, childischę D).
thyn ire and folessh wilfulnesse, 793 (foolysh B, foly † C, folisshę D).
herę snowyssh throte, 4092 (snouwhitę ‡ C, snowę whit D[3]).

(*d*) thi blody, 3566 (-i C; D †).
the fery flood, 4442 (the firy feende † D).
yourę frendly, 1333 (frendë † B, frendęly C, frend † D) (*l.* fremde),[4] 1417 (freendęly B, frendęli C, lovęly † D).
his goodly, 2353 (-ęly B, goodli C); herę goodly, 173 (-ęly B, -ęli C), 446 (-ęly B), 2752 BD (-ęli B, goodë † A).
his happy, 1706 (-i C; D †)[5] (cf. 2467).
thyn heuy, 651.
the holy, 3384, 7860 ( [the] C).

[1] Supply [*ck*] in C. [2] Read *ielous* in AD for *ialousye* (*ielousye*).
[3] Omit (*On*) in D. [4] Insert [*to me*] in A. [5] Insert [*his*] in B.

ourę lusty folk, 560 (-i B)[1].
his manly, 2955 (-i C).
his rosy, 4597 (-i C; E †), 6641 (-i B; D †)[2].
the sely, 4033 (-i C); this sely, 6892 (cely B), 7456.
that smoky, 3470 (this smokë reyn C, smokis † D).
the mestë stormy, 1863.
the sturdy ok, 2465 (stordy B, sturdi C, sturdy *pl.* † D).
herę tery face, 5483.
the wel willy planète, 4099 (the welę wylly p. D).
this worthi, 7924 (the worthy B); this ilkë worthi, 8129. (Cf. 1243, 1402, 1416 CD, 2413.)

Note.—For *merye* see above, § 46.

(*e*) yourę bittre,[3] 3021 (-tyr C);[4] the bittyr, 5372 C (hir bitter D); that bittre[3] hope, 7276 (-tir C, the bitter D).
the gilt[l]es[5] in, 2457 (giltęles B, giltęles C, giltles D).
this litel, 8178.
thin yuel fare, 2086 (euelę C, evil D).[6]
the siker, 3763 (seker B, sekir C, sikir D).
the sothfast, 6388 ([the] -ę B); that sothfast, 8223 (the s. D); myn ow n hertës sothfast suffisaunce, 6302 (-ę B, sothęfast D).
the yonder hous, 2273 (-ę C[7], -ur D), 6938 (-yr C).

(*f*) Romance and Latin adjectives:
that noble gentil knyght, 1416 (nobęle and worthi CD, noble worthi D).
this gentil man, 3805 (ʒonę g. m. C).
that wysë gentil herte, 3789 (that g. wisë h. C, wys[e] g. D).[8]
this myddel chaumbre, 3508 (-il CD).
the fàtal, 6364 (fathel B).
herę crùël, 839 (*om.* † C); this crùwël, 6107 (cruël BD, crewël C); myn aspre and cruwel peyne, 5509 (cruel B, aspęr and crewel C, aspre ‡ crueH D); the crùël herte, 250 (crewel CD).
his rèal pàlais, 4376 (rial C; D †).
the cèrtayn, 5674.
this sòdeyn Dìomède, 7387 (cf. his sodeỳn comỳnge, 3801).
thilkë sòueyren (*dissyl.*) pùrueyaùnce, 5732 (sòuęreyn D).
yourę ioly wo, 2190 (-i C, om. † D).
his pitous face, 5023 (pi(e)tous † fate D).

[1] Dele (*in*) in D. [2] D may be emended by reading *cartë* (as in ABC) for *char.*
[3] Dissyllable. [4] Supply [*in*] in A. The word is in this line used substantively.
[5] Sbst., *insontem* or *insontes.* [6] In C omit (*al*). [7] Line too short in D.
[8] Supply [*good*] in A.

youre verray humble trewe, 2983 (humbele C); his verray slouthe, 1371 (owene C, owne D).
the parfit blysse, 1976.

§ 58. II. Dissyllabic oxytone adjectives take no -e in the definite use when the following word is accented on the second syllable.

here natỳf beauté, 102.
his sodeỳn comỳnge, 3801.
his syklỳche manère, 2628 (siklỳch B, seklỳche C, siklỳ D).

Note.—Cf. *Com(e) hire to preye yn his propre persone*, 2572 (*propere* B, *his (owene) propere p.* C), and *I com my-self in my propre persone*, 4745 (*in [my] p.p.* D).

§ 59. III. Trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives (′ x ˋ) take -e in the definite and vocative uses, unless the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.

*a*) Superlatives:

the frèndlyèstë wyght, 1072 (-[e] BD).
the frendlyest[ë] man, 1289 (-ë BC).
the fèrfullèstë wyght, 1535 (ferefullest[ë] B,[1] sorwefulestë † C,[2] frelyest † D).
the goòdlyèstë mayde, 1965 (good(e)lyest[ë] B, god(e)liestë C, goodliest[ë] D).
the wòrthièstë knyght, 3623 (-[ë] BD).
the wòrthièste, 1846 f (-t D) (: lyst, -e B[3]: at reste).
the wòfullèstë wyght, 5178 (-[ë] BD); the wofulleste, 4965 f (-t CD) (: vnneste *inv. sg.*: breste *inf.*).
the gèntilèstë trewëly, 7438 (-[ë] D). [*gentileste*, 3100 B, should be *gentilnesse*.]
on the gèntilèst[e], 7419 f (-e BCD) (: on(e) the worthyest[e], 7420 f (-e BCD)).
the thryftiest[e], 1822 f (-e BC) } : the best[e] (-e B). (In these lines
the worthiest[e], 1824 f (-e B) } we may safely read *-ë*, with B.)
I am one (oon B, on C) the (of the C) fairest (-e BC) out of (withoutyn D) drede
And *goodlyest*[ë] (goodelyestë B) who-so (ho so CD) taketh hede, 1831-2. Cf. the drèdfullèstë thingës, 6611 (dredefullestë B, dredfullest[ë] D).[4]

[1] Or, *ferëfullest*. [2] Or, *sorwëfulestę*.
[3] *lyste* should doubtless be read (*prcs. subj.* 3 *sg.*). [4] C reads *thynge* for *thynges*.

Elision is seen in :

the konnyngest of yow, 331.

the gentileste and ek, 1073 (genlyest † B, gentillest D).

the thriftieste and oon, 1074 (-t B, trustiest ‡ D).

Cf. the plural,—

the worthièst and grèttest in degre, 244.

the fresshest and, 4564 (-e B, frossest [and] C ; D †).

Note.—*Alderfirst*[*e*] and *alderbeste* are of course treated like monosyllables (see vv. 2939, 4439 f).

(*b*) Other adjectives, Romance as well as Saxon :

youre fresshë wommanlychë face, 6607 (womanly[che] D). Cf. the plural, tho wommanyssh[ë] thynges, 5356 (womman[y]sshë B, womanlichë C, the womanyssh[ë] D) ; and the vocative, o wommanlychë wif, 2948 (-[ë] BD), fresshë wommanlichë wyf, 4138 (-[ë] E, wemen lich[ë] C).

this fòrknowỳng[ë] wyse, 78 (-ë BC, in this ‡ wyse D).

Bygan for ioyë the amorousë daunce, 6093 (thamarousë B, the amerous[ë] CD).

O cruel god o dispitous[ë] Marte, 1520 (dispitusë C, O thou c. g. o dispitousë marte B, *thou* being above the line).

Cf. also, the Troiànë gestes, 145 A (the troyan BC *makes a bad 9-syl. verse, read* -[ë] ; troianys D).

§ 60. IV. But trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives take no -e when the following word is accented on the second syllable. The verse will not bear such an arrangement of accents as ′ x ′ xx ′.

the tèmpestoùs matère, 1090 (this tempestuos m. D).

his èxcellènt prowèsse, 438, 1745. (But,—your èxcellèntë doùghter, *Sq. T.* 145.)

§ 61. V. For the same reason trisyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no -e when the following word is accented on the first syllable. Thus,—

th erràtyk stèrres, 8175 (the erratyk B).

his vnhàppy dède, 6003 (-i B) ; cf. myne vnresty sorwes, 7718 (C †).

§ 62. The following may serve as examples of the vocative of adjectives of more than one syllable.

O moràl Gower, this bok(e) I directe

To the, and the, philosophical Strode, 8219-20 (D †).

o thow wykked serpent, 3679 (welkedę C, wikkid D).
o cruęel day, 4292 (cruwel B, cruel C, cruel † ladi D).
despìtous day, 4300 (dis- BC, dispitousę D).
inmortal god, 3027 (immortal D, o inmortal god *with slur* C).
enuỳous day, 4296 (C †).
Thou mysbeleueḍ and enuyous folye, 3680 (mysbeleuyd enuyous CD).
O olde vnholsom (on- C) and mysbyleued (-yd C, myslyued B, mysleuyd D) man, 4992.
o paleys desolat, 6903 f (-e D).
o paleys empty and disconsolat, 6905 f (-e D).
o thow woful Troylus, 519 (-H D).
o blysful light, 2843 (cf. 1007, 2145, 3547, 4159, 6945, 6962).
o brotel wele, 3662 (bretil C, Bbrotul ‡ 9-*syl.* D).
o verray cause, 2848.
redy to, 2847.
almyghty Ioue, 5741 (a. god C) (cf. 8105).
Thow myghty god and dredful for to greue, 6953 (dredęful B, mi3ty . . . dredfuH D) (cf. 2842, 2908, 5748, 7070).
lufsom lady, 7274 (louęsom CD) (cf. 6828).

But,—

o wommanlychë wyf, 2948 (-[e] BD).
fresshë wommanlichë wyf, 4138 (-[e] E, wemen † lich[e] C).
O cruel god o dispitous[e] Marte, 1520 (dispituse C; O thou c. g. o dispitouse marte B, *thou* being above the line).

Note.—The presence or absence of -e, it will be observed, depends, at least in part, on the arrangement of accents in the line.

§ 63. The *Troilus* shows few traces of the French inflection of adjectives.

*Seynt Idyot*, 903, and *the seynt* [i.e. *Criseyde*] *is oute*, 6916, throw no light on the vexed question of the forms *seynt*, *seynte* (which are discussed by Child, § 37, and ten Brink, § 242). In *o bele nece*, 1373 (beale B, CD *om.* o), and *a blaunche fèuere*, 909 f (-[e] D) (: keuere *inf.*), we surely have to do with the intentional use of a French feminine adjective. Against *o lady souereyne*, 4978 (-ayne B, -aigne D) (: peyne *n.*) may be cited *my souęreyn lady queene*, C. T. 6630 T. *Of dịuynë purueyaunce*, 5623 (de- BD) is comparable with *the seruyse divyne*, C. T. 122 (see ten Brink, § 242, Freudenberger, *Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts*, p. 39). Compare also the list of French adjectives that have an inorganic -e (§ 52).

In 6731 AB we have *infernals illusions* (enfernal C. infernall D) (cf. Child, § 43; ten Brink § 243; Skeat, *Piers. Pl.*, ed. 1886, II, 130). In 2859 *amoreux* should be singular.

§ 64. Adjectives in the Comparative Degree usually end in the *Troilus* in *-er* (var. *-ere*). Thus,—

(*a*) fairer, 454 (-est † A), 6843; no fayrer creature, 7171; pl., fairerę, 5064 (-er BD). (In all these C has *fayrerę*.)

frendliour, 885 (frenlyer B, frendelyerę C, frendlier D).

gladder, 884 (D †, -erę C), 3199 (-erę BC).

gretter, 241 (-erę C); grettere help, 2531 (-er D); grettere hardinesse, 566 (-er BD).

hardere, 5567 (-er D).[1]

hotter, 1005 (-erę C, hatter D); h. is, 449 (hatter B, hattere C, hatter he is D). (Cf. pl., -erę, 1623 (-er B), 4999 (-er D).)

leuerę, 1027 (-er? D), 1437 (B? D?), 3433 (-er D), 3949 (C †, D †), 4332 (-er D), 5227,[2] 5229 (-yr D); -ere han, 5232 (-erę ȝit † C. -er ‡ than D); lèuęre a, 3416 (-ęr a BD).

liker, 3870 (-erę C, like † or D).

proudder, 1223 (-erę C).

rather, my r. speche, 4179 (-erę C); my rathere speche, 8162 (-er BD).

outer, that outter hous, 3506 (other ‡ A, this vttir C, this ‡ litil D).

swyfter cours, 2470 (-erę C).

wiser be, 986 (-er of B, -ere C); wysere, 2087 (-er BD, -erę than C).[3]

worthier of, 251 (-ere C), *plural.*

So in the Romance adjective—

straungerę, 5050 (-er BD, strengerę ‡ C).

(*b*) lenger (A.S. lengra), 3541 (langer B, morë CD), 4703 (lenge[r] A), 7025 (-erę C, longer B), 7214 D (morë A, longë BC)[4]; lengerę, 1377 (-er D, longer B), 2050 (-er BD); lengere, 7022 (-er D, longer B). (So *lengest*, 474 (*adv.* ‡ D).)

(*c*) bettre (*dissyl.*) (A.S. bet(e)ra, bettra), 1262 (-er D), 1445 (-erę B, -yr C, -er D), 3772 (-erę B, -irę C, -ir † D), 5964 (-er B, -ir D), 7308 (-er BD), 7432 (-er B, -ir † D); my b. arm, 2735 (-ere C, -ir D). (In all these, unless otherwise indicated, C has *-erę*.)

bet, (i.) 257 (betir is ‡ D), 1211 (bettyr ‡ C, worth † A), 1213, 1315, 1514, 2539 (B †, D *adv.*), 2736 (betir ‡ to D), 3963 (bet(ir) myńde D, bet *adv.* A), 4065 (bettir ‡ than D), 7634 (best † C, bettir ‡

[1] Supply [ȝet] in C, [it] in D.
[2] CD insert *ben* (*be*), necessitating a harsh slur.
[3] Insert [*wel*] in A.
[4] Read *withouten* for *woth* in C.

wer it D). (ii.) 5253 (betere (it) is C, -ir is D), 5593 (-ere is C, bettir is D), 6404 (beste † D).

lasse, lesse (A.S. lǽssa), 703 f, 796 f, 1009 f (lesse(d) C), 2803, 2947, 3988[1], 5140 (allas † CD), 5465 f, 6981 f; for-the lessë harm, 4000; lasse, 5240. (Cf. *plural*, 6206 f.) lasse nede, 2617 C (A † B †, the lessë nede D), *a doubtful line.*[2] Cf. othere lasse folk (?), 4716. In *lesse he koude*, 2163, *lesse* has an adverbial force.

Rhyme words.—Nouns in *-nesse* (drerynesse, etc.) (703, 796, 5465, 6981), destresse *n.* (1009, 5465), gesse *inf.* (6981).

more (A.S. mára), I. as *adj. indef. sing.* in connection with nouns and pronouns,—nomorë hardë grace, 713 (n. m. hard[e] g. D); more vèrtu, 1264;[3] more feste, 1446 (festis † C); nomore feste, 6887; no more sorwe, 1491 (C †); routhe more, 1649 f (: sore *adv.* : lore *n.*)[4]; withoute more speche, 1582, 2506, 4352, 6751, 7494, 8079; more peyne, 2316; morë help, 2540 D (*perh. adv.*); the[5] morë thank, 2551[6]; morë pres, 2728; thi wo wax alwey more, 3084 f (: sore *adv.* : lore *n.*); the[7] more fere, 3414; withouten more lette, 3541 CD, 7214 A; his sorwe is muche more, 5561 (moore D) (: sore *adv.*); strof . . . ay which of hem was more, 7182 f (mor D) (: euere more *adv.*); more wo, 7415; Thorugh more (mor[e] B) wode and col the more fyr, 2417[8].—*more folk*, 4032, and *morë thyng*, 5205 (C † D †), are doubtless plural. II. more, moore, *substantive use*, 6452, 7772, 7974 (-[e] D); withouten more, 3815 f (: sore *adv.*)[9], 3998, 4795 f (: sorwes sore), 5038 f (: rore *inf.* : sikes sore), 6160 f (: yore *adv.*); withouten ony moore, 7560 f (moor D) (: sykes sore); cf. now is there litel morë for to done, 3389 (A erroneously inserts *but*); no more[10] (*sbst.*), 1044, 3032 (*-e* as B), 3192 f (: sikes sore), 3515, 6689 f (: yore : lore *noun*), 7161, 8094 f (moor D) (: euermore *adv.* : of yore), 8106 (na mor[e] B).

Note.—For *more* (of both kinds, *adj.* and *sbst.*,—and one or two in which the adverb-line is perhaps passed), cf. 796, 3518, 5187, 5933, 6047, 6321, 6363, 6492. Cf. what sholde I more seye, 1406, 2219; what sholde I more telle, 3435; what myght I more do or seye, 3892; what hym lyste he seyde vn-to it more, 5785 f (: sore *adv.*); what wole ye more, 7274; the harm that myghte ek fallen more, 1539 f (: sore *adv.*); not o word spak she more, 3899 f (D †) (: sore *adv.*).

[1] Read [o]*this* in D.
[2] And hast the (*so* DG Cp. John's, *om.* ABC) lasse (lesse D) nede to (*om.* BD, the to C) countrefete.
[3] Supply [*he*] in B.
[4] As neuere of thyng ne hadde I routhë more ([ne] D, no r. m. B, not r. m. C).
[5] The A.S. þý-construction.
[6] Dele (*me*) in AD (or slur).
[7] The A.S. þý-construction.
[8] Supply [*the*] in B. D reads,—*The morë wode.*
[9] Insert [*him*] in C.
[10] Sometimes written *nomore* (B *namore*).

morę, I. *adj. use*, morę nede is, 3699 (-ę now † B, it nedith morë (i.e. *potius*) sodeynly C, D?); Ech(ę) set by other morę for other semeth, 643; morę reward, 2218; out of morę respit, 6500 (withoutë ‡ morę respite D); cf. the more harm is, 7299 (C † D †). II. no morę (*sbst.*) in *there is no morę to done* and similar phrases, 574, 2511 (*-e* of CD), 3532, 7672; I kan no morę but, 3232, 4035, 4115, 4156[1], 7731 (moor D); yet was therę morę to done, 7455; yet sey I morę therto, 5734 (*-e* herto BD); nor axen morę that, 1232; yf I morę dorstë prey (?), 2521 (morë C, more y D)[2]; was worth morę than, 4382 (worthy CD)[3]; withoutë morę to, 2751 (*-e* is † B, *l.* to).

mo, moo (*plural*) (A.S. má, mé, *adv.*), 613 f[4], 614, 2490 f, 2566 f, 2651 f (*sg.* ‡ C), 3076 f, 3212 (morę C), 4356 f, 4881 f, 5162, 5490 (moorę D), 5787 f, 6303 f, 6592 f, 7127 f, 7626 f, 8044 f[5]. (Cf. 6521 f.).

Rhyme words.—wo, two, tho, so, fo, go, also.

Note.—Several of the passages cited contain the formula,—*withoutën wordës mo*. This occurs also in the form, *withoutën wordës morë* (cf. 5326 f, 6419 f, 8035 f.).

worse (A.S. wiersa, wyrsa), 4542 f (wors D); I go to worse, 5502 f (wors C); i-turned vnto worse, 3916 f (-s CD); in worse plyt, 1797 (-[e] D); with worse hap, 4088 (vois † B); ye may do me no werse, 5856 f. But,—wers though, 1950; wors that, 5144 (-ę D); wors than, 7056 (-ę D); wers of, 1947; *pl.* wers whi ‡, 1820 C (wors [why] ‡ D).

Rhyme words.—acurse (acorso) *inf.* (3916), 1 *sg. ind.* (5502, wors : fors C), curse (corse) 3 *pl. ind.* (4542), aduerse (5856), diuerse (5856). [Var. BC .werse; D wurse, wurs.] (Cf. 2880 f.)

## § 65. The Comparative and Superlative of adjectives are sometimes formed by means of *more* and *most* (Child, § 38, *d*). Thus—

more bounteuous, 883 f.

more gracious, 885 f.

the more worthi part, 2413.

the more swet[e], 4061 f (more swete BC).

more fayn, 6851 f.

more parfit loue, 7282.

more kynde, 7283 f.

[1] Supply [*these*] in A. [2] But supply [*3ow*] in C and read *morę*.

[3] worth(y) morę than CD (if *worthy* be kept, we must slur *morę than* (mor'n).

[4] The cases cited are adjectival unless the line-number is in old-style figures: in that case, the use is substantive. [5] In A read *othes* for *other*.

most meke, 8210 f.
most is to hym dere, 4947 f.
the mestë stormy life, 1863 (cf. § 87).
the most[ë] fre, 1073 (cf. § 87).

§ 66. The Superlative of adjectives ends in *-est*. Thus,—best (cf. 828, 2570, 2649, 2738, 4746, 4863, 5341, 6381, 6904, 7717 f, 8210); fairest, 5817 (fayrë ‡ C); leuest (cf. 1274); lothest am (cf. 1322); shortest (7137 BD); trewest, 4665 (trusty ‡ D), etc. B, C, and D sometimes show a scribe's -e, which, however, is of course never sounded (for 6664 BD is to be emended).

For superlatives in the definite use or in the plural see §§ 53, 57, 59, 70.

Note.—In one case we may perhaps suspect that a single *-est* serves for two adjectives,—

> And thus she lith with hewes pale and grene
> That whilom *fressh and fairest* was to sene,

5816-17 (frosche and fayrë ‡ were C).

§ 67. The Plural of monosyllabic adjectives ends in -e.

In the following list no definite or vocative forms have been included without notice. An asterisk indicates that the adjective follows its noun (as, *eyen bryghte*); old-style figures indicate that the adjective stands in the predicate (as, *eyen are bryghte*)[1]. No cases are included (without notice) in which the adjective refers to a plural *ye* singular in sense. For *bare, fresshe,* etc., see note at the end of the section.

(*a*) blake (A.S. blæc. Sg. blak, cf. 170, 175), my clothes euerychone Shul blake ben, 5441.

bryghte (A.S. beorht, E.W.S. -breht, L.W.S. -bryht. Sg. bright, bryght, 166 f, 2054 f, 5402, 6525 f, 8075, etc.), a fewë bryghtë terys, 3893 (-[e] BD); bryght[e],* 4972 f (-e D) (: sight (sighte) *n.* : lyght (lighte) *inf.*) (*in* C : dispyt †). Before vowels,—bright, * 7006 (*-e* C, of thi bright[e] bemes(?) D), * 7909 (*-e* C, out ‡ A). [Var. C briȝte.] And sygnyfer his candeles shewed bryghte, 7383 (bryȝt C, candell . . . light D) (: alighte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* : yf she myghte).

bygge (*etym. dub.*), bygge bowes, 4702 (big[gë] D).

colde (A.S. cald, ceald. Sg. cold, 5839 (-(e) BD); cold(e), 1783 f

[1] But these marks are not used with the singular forms given.

(cold CD), cf. 7465 f), * 264 f (cold D), * 4044 f, * 4102 f, * 6354 f, * 7705 f[1], * 8110 f (all these in the phrase *carës colde*); *-e* hem, * 4611 (tolde † E).

Rhyme words.—I tolde *ind.* (264), holde *inf.* (264, 8110), *p.p.* (4102), *subj.* 2 *sg.* (7705), byholde *inf.* (6354, 7705, 8110), folde *inf.* (4044, 6354), bokes olde (4044). [Var. D coolde.]

dede (A.S. déad. Sg., ded, cf. 723, 1494 f, 1527 f, 1739 f, 1930 f, 2135, 2441, 2784 f, 2921 f, 3923 f, 4414 f, 5162 f, 5819 f, 7609, 7866, etc.; dede, cf. 5041, 6922), * 1624 f (*sg. in* A, *but read* asshe[n]; as lede ‡ D), 3134 f, 3194 BD (-[e] AC), 3734 (a dedë † man A), * 4781 f, 5754 f, 5894 f (D †), 6178 f; floures . . . that winter dedë made, 1137; shulle . . . liggen dede, 5288 f (deed D).

Rhyme words.—rede *adj. pl.* (1624), rede *legunt* (3134), dede *n.* (3134, 5894), nede *n.* (5288), drede *n.* (5754, 6178), spredе *inf.* (4781), ledе *inf.* (6178).

depe (A.S. déop. Sg. dep, 1236 C (-ę ABD)), my ladyes depe sikes, 7038 (C †).

donne (A.S. dun(n)), 1993 f (dunne C) (: sonne *solem* : y-ronne *p.p.*).

dymme (A.S. dim(m)), *-e*, 1993 AB.

fayre (A.S. fæger. For singular, see § 49), floures fayre, 8204 f (fair D) (: a fayre *n.*).

felle (A.S. fel. Sg. fel a dede, cf. 6413), fel[l]e, * 4706 f (felle BD) (: quelle *ind.* 3 *pl.* : telle *inf.*).

glade (A.S. glæd. Sg. glad, cf. 592, 2623, 3489, 3493, 4633, 5067, 5349, 5387, 5471, etc.), * 1135 f, * 1233 f, * 1583 f, 2436 f (glad C; D †), * 2857 f, * 3453 f.

Rhyme words.—made *ind.* 3 *sg.* (1135, 1583, 3453), *ind.* 2 *pl.* (2857), wade *inf.* (1233), Wade *nom. pr.* (3453), hadde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2436).

goode (A.S. gód. For singular, see § 49), good[e], * 8222 f (garde † A) (: Strode *nom. pr.* : on rode); *-e*, * 1808 (*om.*† D). But,— of good condicïons, 1251 AD (-ę BC)[2]; in good † chaunces, 2432 D.

grete (A.S. gréat. For singular, see § 49), * 4722 f, * 5630 (B †, grete clerkes D), * 6499 f, * 7601 f, * 8122 f; grete àttendaùnces, 339 (gret C); gret ‡ effectis, 7992 C (*sg.* ABD).

Rhyme words.—strete (4722), hete *n.* (7601, 8122), trete *inf.* (4722, 6499), bete *inf.* (8122).

leue (A.S. léof. Sg. lef, leef, lief (var. B leu(e); D leef, lef(e)), cf. 3302, 3706 f, 3711, 3712, 4461 f), 4744 f (: acheue *inf.* : leue *credo*).

lyghte (A.S. leoht, liht, shortened from léoht. Sg. lyght, cf. 5072 f, 5146 f, 6232, 6437 f, 6715 f, 7047 f, 7481 f), * 2323 f (-t CD)

[1] Supply [*my*] in A.

[2] Omit (*to*) in D.

(: to the flyghte, -t BD), * 2471 f (-t CD) (: wighte *weight*). [Var. C lyȝt; D light.]

madde (A.S. ge-mǽdd, *p.p.* Sg. mad, cf. 5055 f), * 6569 f (made B, he † made C) (: hadde *habuit*).—be ye mad, 1198 f (made B, madde C) (: a-drad *p.p. sg.*, adradd(e) C).

prowdė (A.S. prút. For singular, see § 49), alle prowde (= omnes superbae), 1487 f (al[le] prowd D) (: lowde *adv.*).

quyke (A.S. cwic, W.S. cwucu, cucu, see Sievers, § 303. Sg. quyk, 2921), *-e*, 1137.

rede (A.S. réad. Sg. red, cf. 867, 1730, 1737 f, 2924 f, 3798 f, 4412 f, 7288 f), * 158 f, * 1136 f, * 1623 f, * 2936 f (*sg.* D †).

Rhyme words.—mede *pratum* (158, 1136), drede *n.* (2936), dede *adj. pl.* (1623), rede *ind.* 1 *sg.* (158), spredе *inf.* (1136).

salte (A.S. sealt. Sg. only in *saltė se*, 2850 (-[e] BD), see § 49), 543, 5592 (-[e] BD), 7278 (-[e] B); *-e*, * 7737; *-e* herę, * 5834 (-t B). Cf. hisę salte terys, 2171 C (-[e] BD, salty A).

sharpe (A.S. scearp. Sg. sharp, cf. (i.) 1876, 3268, 4373; -(ę), 5560 (-p BC); (ii.) cf. 786, 4467; -(e), 7632 (*hardly adv.*)), * 470 ‡ A (*definite* BCD), 3906 (-[e] D?); it maketh sharpe kervyng toles, 632 (-[e] D)[1]; *-e*, 7564.

shorte (A.S. scort, sceort. Sg. short, 7989 (-(ę) D); in short, 2490 (-ę B), 3076 (-ę B)[2]), 2041 (-[e] AD), 5298 (-[e] A), 6320 C (-[e] ABD), 7211.

sleye (Icel. slœgr), * 7261 f (slye C, slie D) (: lye *mentior* : yë); sley arn clerkes, 5634 (sleighe B, slyę were D).

Note.—The rhymes show that *slye* (not *sleye*) is the correct form.

smale (A.S. smæl), * 2276 f (: tale), 4304, * 5399 f (: bale : pale); *-e* he[r],* 4089.

smerte; sorwes, peynes smerte, 794 f (-t D), 3792 f (-t D), 4910 f, 5088 f (-t D), 5803 f (peynë ‡ smerte D), 6163 f, 6561 f (-t C), 7087 f, 7412 f (-t C), 7689 f, 7783 f (-t C).

Rhyme words.—herte (*everywhere*), sterte *inf.* (3792), he sterte *pret. ind.* (6561).

Note.—Skeat seems to regard *smerte* in *sorwes* (*peynes*) *smerte* as a noun. At any rate he puts *Compl. Pite* 13, *B. Duch.* 593, *Compl. Mars* 10, *H.F.* 316, along with *the wounde smerte* (*H.F.* 374), under smerte *sbst.* in his *Glossarial Index* (*Minor Poems*, 1888, p. 440). But *his sorwes wer so smerte*, *B. Duch.* 507, and *Were my sorwes never so smerte*, Id. 1107 (cited *ibid.*), surely make against this. Besides, the substantive seems to be

[1] In D supply [*yit*].

[2] *With short*[*e*] *taryinge*, 7137 A Cp. (*schort*[*e*] C, *shortest* BDG John's), is the only case which seems to countenance *shorte* in the sing., but in this line the superlative is clearly right. For cases of the singular *short* before vowels, cf. 2578, 2743, 3298, 4698, 5552 (?), 5598.

*smert* in the *Troilus* (cf. 5035, 5128, 5507; smert, 6780, may be a verb; *C. T.* 3811 T. is indecisive). Cf. also the entirely similar phrase *sorwes sore* (2427 f, 4794 f, 7718 f).

sore (A.S. sár. Sg. sor, 7002 (soor(ę) B; D †); sor(ę), 4263 (soor B)), * 2427 f, * 3191 f[1], * 4794 f, * 5037 f, * 7038 f, * 7559 f, * 7718 f (C †); *-e*, * 4613, * 7397 BD (-ë doun C, herę sorë sykęs ‡ A).

Rhyme words.—more (*all cases*), lore *n.* (2427), rore *inf.* (5037). [Var. BD soore.]

sothe (A.S. sóð. Sg. soth, cf. 1254, 4199), 5333 (-[e] A).

stronge (A.S. strang, strong. Sg. strong and, cf. 7165), * 57 f, * 7051 f, * 7227 f, * 7564 f; *-e*, * 4692 (strong D).[2]

Rhyme words.—longe *adv.* (*all cases*), *inf.* (7051), honge *inf.* (7564).

swyfte (A.S. swift), 4909 AD (-[e] B).

syke (A.S. séoc, Dur. Rushw. séc), 2903 f (*sbst.*), 3979[3], * 4014 f, 4204 f[4], * 7717 f (C †).

Rhyme words.—syke *inf.* (2903, 4014, 4204), pyke *inf.* (2903), lyke *inf.* (4204, 7717). [Var. BCD sike; D sijke.]

tame (A.S. tam), 3371 f (*sbst.*) (: lettë-game : frame *inf.*).

wete (A.S. wǽt, wét), * 7472 f (C †) (: hete *noun*), * 8053 f (: lete *inf.*).

white, whyte (A.S. hwít. Sg. whit, cf. 642, 2011, and see § 49), 1993 (-[e] D), * 3743 f (: for lyte : a myte), * 4090 f (: lyte *adj. pl.* : delyte *inf.*), * 4409 f (: lite *adv.*); *-e*, * 158 (whit D), * 1136 (*om.* ‡ D).

wronge (Icel. vrang-r. Sg. wrong, 4851, 7524 (-(ę) B), * 3646 f (wrong CD) (: longe *adv.*), * 4233 f (: longe *pl.* : stronge *adv.*).

wrothe (A.S. wráð), 140 f (: bothe), 4784 f (: bothe), 6504 f (-th BD) (: bothe). (Cf. below, § 69.)

wyse (A.S. wís. Sg. wys, cf. 630, 1798, 5076 f, 5749, 7183, etc.), * 954 f, 984 f, * 3694 f, 3784 f, * 4392 f, * 4533 f, 7942 f. Cf. yf ye ben wyse, 4031 f (: aryse *pres. subj.* 3 *pl.*).

Rhyme words.—wyse *n.* (954, 984, 3694, 3784, 4392), seruice, seruyse (954, 984), suffice, suffise *inf.* (3694, 4533, 7942), aryse *inf.* (3784), deuyse *inf.* (4533), degyse *inf.* (7942).

yone (A.S. geon), withinnë ȝonë ‡ wallis, 7096 C (the yonder AB, yonder D).

yonge (A.S. geong, etc. Sg. yong, (i.) 1721 (yung D), 7193; (ii.) 1837 (yung D)), 1204 (-[e] D); to vs yonge, 3135 f (-g B)

[1] Supply [*his*] in B.

[2] This line affords an excellent instance of the disregard shown for -e by D: "The grekys strong[*e*] about[e] troy[e] toun."

[3] Read *folk*[*es*] in B, *folkys* (for *follys*) in C.

[4] Supply [*that*] in C.

(: tonge); o yongë fresshë folkes, 8198 (-[e] D); yong and olde (*sbst.*), 130 (-*e* BC). [Var. B ȝong, ȝonge; C ȝonge.][1]

Further examples of the plural may be seen in :

In May that moder is of monęthes *glade*[2]
That *fresshë*[3] floures *blew* and *white* and *rede*
Ben *quyke* a-gayn that wynter *dedë* made
And ful of bawme is fletynge euery mede
Whan Phebus doth his *bryghtë*[4] bemes sprede
Right yn the white bolę[5] so it bytydde
As I shal synge on Mayes day the thridde, 1135-41.

(*b*) fele (A.S. feola, fela, Ps. N. feolu, -o; really old neut. adj.), on of so fele, 4772; thow sleest so fele, 5174. [*fele*, 4706 f A, is *f. l.* for *felle.*]

fewe (A.S. féawe, -a, Ps. féa). I. Without *a*,—fewe lordes, 2672; fewe folk, 2732 (-[e] D); wommen fewe, 7051 (few B). II. With *a*,— a sely fewe poyntes, 338 (C † ?); a fewe wordes, 3743 (-[e] D); a fewe bryghte teres, 3893 (-[e] B); of wordes but a fewe, 6996 f (: shewe *inf.*); a fewe of olde storyes, 7822 (C †, sue † D); in a wordes fewe, 5942 f AB (in [a] w. f. CD) (: shewe *inf.*).

(*c*) So in the plural of monosyllabic superlatives :

meste and leste, 167 f (B †; A ?; the moost and ek(e) the leest D) (: feste); most and leste, 4721 f (: requeste *n.*). (For "definite" plural phrases, *the meste and* [*ek*] *the leste, with the firste and with the beste*, cf. 6803, 7202.)

(*d*) Cardinal numerals (Child § 39. *c*; ten Brink, § 247) :

tweyne, tweye (A.S. *masc.* twégen, Kent. Rushw. twægen, North. tuége, tuége, etc.).

(1) tweyne, * 1705 f (twene C), * 2800 f, * 2820 f (-n D), * 3957 f, * 4332 f, * 5410 f (-n CD), * 5804 f, * 7634 f, * 7711 f; a nyght or tweyne, 3392 f (-n D, twey(e)ne C); we tweyne, 4049 f, 5138 f, 5450 f (-n D), 5920 f (twyne B), 7042 f; vs tweyne, 5965 f (twyne B); tweyn (: peyne), * 5412 f C. [4976 † f A, 5064 † f C.]

Rhyme words.—cheyne *n.* (1705), Eleyne (2800), peyne *n.* (2820, 4332, 5410, 5450, 5804, 5920, 5965, 7042, 7634), to seyne *inf.* (1705, 3392, 3957, 7711), reyne *inf.* (3392), streyne *inf.* (4049), compleyne *inf.* (5138, 5450, 7634, 7711), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (5920).

(2) tweye, * 1255 f, 1267 f (swychë tweye), 1896 f (*absolute use*),

[1] *ȝynge* occurs in 184 C,—*hyse ȝyngë knyȝtis* (*yonge* AD, *ȝonge* B).
[2] monthes gladde B. [3] fressch[e] B. [4] bryght[e] B. [5] bool B.

* 2917 f, 3665 f (*absolute*) (tweyen B), * 4791 f (twye A, tway D), * 4976 f B (tweyne † A, twye C †), 6075 f (a day or tweye, cf. 6045 f), * 8091 f (twye B, tuey D) (cf. * 4820 f, * 4909 f); vs, ye, yow, bothë tweye, 2242 f (to † C), 2277 f (tweyne † C), 2739 f, 3982 f, 7670 f (tweyne B) (cf. 5771 f, 6165 f, 6991 f); a day or tweye, 6276 B (two A, too C, tweyne D). For the definite use (as, *the tweye, this ilke tweye*), cf. 494 f, 4035 f, 4156 f, 5032 f. —twey, with twey ‡ vesàgis, 7262 C (two AB, tuo D), cf. 3349 ‡ D (*definite*).

Note.—D almost always has *twey* (but cf. 2383 f, 3074 f); C has *twey* in 6075 f, 7670 f.

Rhyme words.[1]—deye *inf.* (1255, 4909, 6075, 6991), seye *inf.* (1255, 2739, 2917, 3665, 4820, 4909, 5771, 6045, 6165, 7670, 8091), *ind.* 1 *sg.* (1267, 2277), pleye *inf.* (1896), *subj.* 2 *sg.* (3665), preye *inf.* (2739), *ind.* 1 *sg.* (2242, 6165), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (6045), leye *inf.* (2917, 7670), purueye 2 *pl. imv. or subj.* (2242), a-weye (2277, 4976), chimëney(-eye) (3982), this olde greye (4791), what weye (4820), by the weye (6991).

Note.—For *two* (var. C *to, too*; D *tuoo, to*), cf. 614 f, 645, 1671, 2777 f, 7736, 8226, etc.; *a-two*, 4317 f (on to C, a twoo D), 6543 f (oto C, in tuoo D), etc.

fyue (A.S. fíf), * 2117 f (: vpon lyue), * 6760 f (: dryue *inf.* : blyue *adv.*), * 7252 f (: on lyue); suchë fyue, 1211 f (: thryue *inf.*); swych[e] fyue, 1213 (D †). [Var. BC fiue.]

sixe (A.S. sex, W.S. siex, syx), set the world on sixe and seuene (six B, sexe C, vj D), 5284.

seuene (A.S. seofon, siofon, -an, -en, Ps. seofen), the blysful goddes seuene[2], 4045 f (: to heuene); seuene (*dissyl.*) kynges, 7858 (vij BD); on sixe (*q.v.*) and seuene (seue C, seuen D), 5284 f (: to heuene).

nyne (A.S. nigon, R.[2] nïone), ix. (= nyn) nyght, 5250 (nyne dayis ‡ ? C); ye sustren nyne, 4651 (ix that D); and othere of here wommen nyne or ten, 3440 (nynë or (?) C,[3] a .ix. or .x. D[4]).

twelue (A.S. twelf), * 1193 f, * 2484 f (twelwe C), * 6460 f, * 7287 f (.vij. † C); swych[e] twelue, 5064 f (tweine † C). (All rhyme with *my-, thi-, hym-selue.*)

Note.—But *ten* (cf. 60, 5982, 6602, 7569, 7713). Other numerals,—*thre* (cf. 2021, 3051 f, 3155 f, etc.), *twenty* (cf. 6069), *fyfty* (cf. 7856), *sixty* (cf. 441), *thousand* (cf. 58, 457, 531, 546, 819, 1227, etc.), *thousandys* (8165, -ës BD).

Note.—In Anglo-Saxon, when the cardinal numerals from 4 to 19 are used absolutely, they form cases according to the i- declension (see Sievers, § 325 and note).

[1] No cases of the *definite use* included.
[2] Supply [*tho*] in A.
[3] But supply [*othere*] and read *nyne*.
[4] Supply [*of*] in D.

(*e*) Monosyllabic participles (see also § 68):

with bygge bowes bente, 4702 f AB (bent D) (: mente 3 *pl.* : wente 3 *pl.*).

with herte and eerys spradde, 6084 f (: he hadde).

But cf. wommen lost thorugh, 3140 (C †).

(*f*) Romance adjectives:

preste wynges, 5323 (-[e] BD). (For sing. cf. 3759, 4824.)

tuskes stoute, 7817 f (: aboute : doute *n.*).

knyghtes stoute, 7856 f (: route *n.* : aboute).

floures blew and, 1136 AB.

Note 1. For examples of the plural of adjectives that end regularly in -e in the singular, cf. *grene* (1906 f, 5816 f, 6095 f, 6374 f), *kene* (1143 f), *kynde* (7333 f), *newe* (2554 f, 3893 f, 6192 f), *trewe* (2695 f, 2959 f, 4613 f), *vntrewe* (1871 f). For examples of the plural of adjectives that come under § 49, cf. *bare* (7910), *fayre, fresshe* (1136, 3453, 8198), *goode, grete, hye, heyghe* (3460 f, 4910, 7093), *olde* (see note s. v.), *proude* (1487 f). For the plural of Romance adjectives that end in the singular in -e, cf. *pale* (3466 f), *straunge* (1109 f), *nyce* (1109), *ryche and pore* (6406 f), *square* (7164 f) (sg. not in the *Troilus*).

Note 2. *Bonde* (A.S. bónda, *weak noun*) is used as an adjective (in the plural apparently) in "For as here lyst she pleyeth *with free and bonde*," 840 (bond D) (: withstonde *inf.*). For the singular, also adjectival, see "She wolde nought ne make hire-self *bonde* In loue," 2308 f (: vnderstonde *inf.* : in honde).

## § 68. Monosyllabic perfect participles *standing in the predicate* regularly take no -*e* in the plural. Thus—

(i.) Before consonants and at end of verse:

they be gon, 2243 f (-e BD) (: anoon, or noon A).

they were born, 4064 f (-e BCD)<br>bothë two be lorn, 4065 f (-e BD) } (: by-forn).

they were born, 5913 f (borne BD, bore C).

we be lost, 3937 (cf. 3140).

ye be brought, 3980 f (-e B, brouȝt CD) (: nought : thought *n.*).

ben . . . laft, 4180 f (last † C, lefte E) (: by-raft *p.p. pred. pl.*); cf. 4887 f, 4889 f.—ben wyst, 5739 (-e B), cf. 5681.

they ben met, 4523 f (mette C[e]) (: was it bet). So,—i-met, 1671 f (ymette D) ( : net *n.* : set *p.p.*).

this wordes seyd, 5573 (-e BD; seydë ‡ *dixit* C).

Til we be slayn (sleyne B) and doun oure walles torn, 6144 (torne D) (: lorn *p.p.* : sworn *p.p.*).

thei be wont to, 7023 (wontę BD, wonę C); cf. were woned to, 4553 (wontę B, wonę C, wont D).

(ii.) Before vowels:

thei ben met, 1237 (mette C; D †); ben set, 4986:

ben fled, 5530 (fledde D).

Note.—So also when the subject is *ye* in a singular sense: cf. (i.) 4049, 5597 f (: assent *n.* : anysement); (ii.) 2191, 2267.

But in two or three cases the -e appears. Thus—

dred(r)es weren . . . fled[de], 463 f (fledde B) (: bredde *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*, bred C †, bred D).

dores were faste y-shette, 3075 f (y-chette B, faste schette C, fast yshet D) (: lette *n.* : sette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

herę sperës were whette, 8123 f AB (whett D) (: mette 3 *pl.*).

And don thyn hod, thi nedes sped[dë] be, 2039 (speddë BC; D ?).

Cf. And fond two othere ladyes sette and she, 1166 A (sete B; sate *pret.* 3 *pl.* D).

§ 69. Monosyllabic adjectives *standing in the predicate* do not always take -e in the plural (Child, § 41; ten Brink, § 234). Thus—

(*a*) hem that ben not worth two fecches. 3778 BCD (*sing.* A).

Cf. 3696, 4009, where *worth pl.* is followed by a vowel.[1]

wysë men ben war by folys, 635 (-ę D, ware ‡ of B).[2]

dedę were his iapes, 1076.

shal we ben so fayn, 5983 f (feyne B; D †) (: ayen : seyn *inf.*).

tonges ben so prest, 1870 f (-e B) (: lest *n.*).

O verrey loues nice and blyndę be ye, 202 (fooles nice and blyndę B Cp. John's; C †; ἄλλως D ‡).

(*b*) So particularly when the adjective in the predicate refers to a subject *ye* (expressed or implied) used in a singular sense. Thus—

be ye mad, 1198 f (made B, madde C) (: adrad *p.p. sg.*, adradd(e) C).

Note.—In,—Be ȝe (*so* C G.Cp.; ye DE John's, *om.* AB) nought (not CD) war (ware BD) how fals (false Cp., that fals D) Polyphete, 2552, *ye* is necessary to the sense. We should read *war* and *falsë*. Cf. § 49. Cases before vowels (as, *glad*, 3019) of course prove nothing.

ȳe be wroth therfore, 1385 (-ę D). Cf. p. 141.

Now beth nought wroth my blod my nece dere, 1679 (-ę D); beth not wroth with me, 6508; so, before vowels, in 7972, 7977. [For sing. *wroth*, cf. (i.) 349, 842, 1012, 2158, 3127, 3572 f, 3886 f, 3924, 3952 f, 7827, 8138; (ii.) 581 (be ‡ ȝe wroth C), etc.]

(ye that) ben so loth to, 2996 (-ę D). [For. sing. *loth*, cf. (i.) 3211, 3574 f, 4181; (ii.) 1893, 6384.]

beth al hol || no, 3010 (-ę D, hoolę B).

ye ben to wys || to, 3709 (-[e]? C, wis B).

[1] For sing. *worth*, cf. 3675, 4382, 5428, 7245.

[2] For sing *war*, see p. 146.

beth glad now, 5978 (-ę D; C?).
beth wel war, 4022 (-ę D); beth war of men, 8148 (-e D). [For sing. *war*, cf. (i.) 203, 1360, 2266, 4544 f; (ii.) 2103, 3426, 4464, 7922; ware, 6896 (war CD).]
and ye so feyr, 6533 (-ę BD).

So occasionally when the plural adjective is used attributively.

Ten Brink's remark, "Im Plural des attributiv stehenden Adjectivs (gleichviel ob starker oder schwacher Flexion) tritt die Apocope [des flexivischen -*e*] kaum ein; niemals, wenn der Adjectiv voransteht" (§ 236) is not borne out by the *Troilus* MSS. The following lines are significant :—

And ben *of good condicions* ther to, 1251 A (goodę B, goodę condisciounys C, And to be of good c. therto D). We have no warrant to read *condicion*.

Ne for no *wysę men* but for foles nice, 3166 (no wis man C, wysę man D). Here one is tempted to read *man*. (No note in the Cp. collation.) But *wyse men* is a quasi-compound, cf. 5749.

Hath lordes oldę thorugh which withinne a throwe, 7824 (old C, high D).

Note.—Cases before a vowel (as *ful*, 4223, 8176) of course prove nothing.

§ 70. For adjectives of more than one syllable which do not stand at the end of the verse, the rule as to -e in the plural is the same as that already stated as to -e in the definite and vocative constructions of such adjectives (§ 56).

Of such adjectives those alone take -e which have a primary or secondary accent on the ultima, and are followed by a word accented on the first syllable (cf. Child, § 40; ten Brink, § 233).[1]

Note.—For convenience, words in *-re* (*-er*), *-le*, have been included in the following list. A few sporadic cases of *-ę* (as in *lewedę*) or *-e* (elided) will be observed.

(*a*) the worthiest and grettest in degre, 244.
the fresshest and, 4564 (*-e* B; C † D †).
strengest folk, 243 (cf. alderwisest han, 247).

[1] In the list that follows, no definite or vocative examples, or examples before a vowel, or *h*, are given without notice.

(*b*) conforted most, 249 (-id C, -yd D) (*predicate*).
thonked be ye, 1935 (*sg.* CD).
tresses vnbroyden hangen, 5479.
twynned be we, 5138, 7042.
here dorres sperid alle, 6894 (-ed BD, -ede C).
feyned loues, 8211.
payens corsed olde vyces, 8212.
(Cf. also 3931, 5670, 6186, 7482, 7702, 7907, 8143, etc.)

(*c*) ȝoure lewede obseruaunces, 198 C (ȝour lewdë obseruaunce ‡ D).
hire wykkede werkes, 997 (-ed B, -id D).
these wikkede tonges, 1870 (-yd D).
we wrecched wommen, 1867 (wreche[d] C; D †).
these wrecched worldes appetites, 8214 A (this B, the D).
(Cf. also 1905, 1906, 1907.)

(*d*) the blysful goddes, 4045 AB,[1] 7613.
maisterful or (*pred.*), 1841 (mastirful C, maystrëful D).
sorwful[2] sykes, 4203 (soruful C, sorowful D), 7717 (sorweful CD).
sorweful[2] teres, 7737 (sorowfull D).
the sorwful, 6346 (sorwefull D).
wilful tacches, 3777.
o wofulle eyen, 4971 (woful B, cruël † C, wofull D).
hise woful wordes, 1658. (Cf. 5002, 5797.)
here woful wery gostes tweyne, 5804 f (wery woofull D).

(*e*) goosish peples speche, 3426 B (gos(y)lyche † A, C † *om.*, gosisshe D)[3].
here sonnyssh herys, 5478 (-*e* here B[4]).

(*f*) her sydes . . . fleysshly, 4090 (flessly C, fleschly C, fleishely D).
shaply ben, 6114 (shapely B, shappely D).
gyddë ‡ apis, 906 C (goddës apes ABD).
many wordes, 1233 (-ye BC, meny D).
In sondry londes sondry ben vsages, 1113 (sundry D).
sondry formes, 8076.
to yow angry Parcas, 6366 (angurry D).
vnthryfty weyes, 6192.

(For other cases, definite and indefinite, of the plural of adjs. in -y, cf. 233, 251, 742, 1112, 1203, 1233, 2171 A, 2324, 2436, 4046, 4208, 4223, 4287, 6532, 7164, 7332, 8122, 8133, etc.)

[1] Supply [*tho*] in A.
[2] Dissyllable throughout.
[3] A and D have *pcple speche*, haplography for *peples speche*. The textus receptus has *goofish*, see Mätzner s.v. *gofisch*. G has *goossish*. E has *gosissh*. Cp. has *goosissh poeples*.
[4] Read *here*[*s*] in B (: teres : eeres).

Note.—For *mcrye*, see above, § 46, p. 113.

(*g*) bittre[1] bondes, 3958 (bittere[1] C, bittir D); bittre teris, 5800 (bittere C, bittir D); bittre weren, 5798 (-tere C, bitter D); thi bittre peynes smerte, 5088 (-tere ? C, bitter D †).

with-innę tho yonder wallys, 7096 (with-innë ȝonë wallis C, with-innë yonder D).

(*h*) certeyn tymes, 4273; certeyn folk, 6396.

ye do hem còrteys be, 2868 (curteis B, curteys D).

esy sykes, 4205 (esię C).

tho that ben expèrt in, 2452.

o fatal sustren, 3575 (-(ę) D †).

gentil hertis, 2847.

ye humble[1] nettes, 4197 (vmbele[1] C).

parfit and, 7333 (-*e* B; C †; perfite D[2]).

the subtilę stremes, 305 (subtyl C, sotil D).

folk vngiltyf suffren, 3860 (ongilti C, vngilty D †).

his throwes frènëtỳk and madde, 6569 (feruentike † B, fren[e]tik D, frentyk † he made C).

The plural -e is shown in

the *Troiànë* gestes, 145 A (the troyan[e] BC, the troianys ‡ D),

and perhaps in

Fy on youre myght and werkes so *diuerse*, 5857 f (: thow fortune aduerse : no werse) (cf. § 52, above; Child, § 42; ten Brink, § 241).

Cf. othere besye (*dissyl.*) nedes, 355 (-y CD); cf. however, 7352 (A †).

Note.—In *amoreux hem made*, 2859, we have a French plural (*amerous* D). See also § 63.

§ 71. The treatment of the plural of adjectives of more than one syllable at the end of the verse, is illustrated by the following examples. (Cf. also § 70, at the end.)

hem that falsely ben apeỳred, 38 f, *rhyming with*

hem that ben des(es)peỳred, 36 f (despeyred B, dispeired D).

alderwisest han . . . ben plesed, 247 f (-id C, -yd D) *rhyming with*

thei . . . han ben . . . esed, 249 f (-yd D) (: apesed *p.p. sg.*).

the feste and playes pàlestràl, 6667 f (: funeral).

[1] Dissyllable throughout.

[2] In C read *parfit* (printed, *þarfit*) and supply [*and*]; in D supply [*and*].

the thynges tèmporèl, 5723 f (temporall D) (: euery del : èternèl).
other thyng collateral, 262 f (thinges D, thyngis collatrial C).

Note.—*Thei be rungen*, 1890 f A, should read *Thei be runge*.

## § 72. Adjectives in A.S. *-líc* (*-lic*), O.N. *-ligr*, appear in the *Troilus* with the ending *-ly* or *-lich*.

Ten Brink (§ 270) seems inclined to recognize a tendency on Chaucer's part to use *-lich* instead of *-ly* when the following word begins with a vowel[1], but the *Troilus* MSS. do not given evidence in favour of such a tendency: one can only say that the ending *-ly* remains unchanged in the definite use, in the plural, and in the vocative, and that when the poet wishes for metrical or other reasons to add an inflectional -e, he employs the form in *-lich*.

In the following list *old-style figures* indicate that a vowel follows; *def.* = definite use (singular); *def. pl.* = definite use (plural); *pl.* = plural (indefinite use); *voc.* = vocative singular. Examples not distinguished by any of these signs are in the indefinite use, singular number, and are followed by a word beginning with a consonant. It will be observed that the *Troilus* affords no instance of an adjective in *-ly* or *-lich* (*-liche*) at the end of a verse.

For forms in *-lich*, *-liche*, see under *estatlyche*, *goodly*, *heuenliche*, *gostlyche*, *grysly*, *syklyche*, *wommanlyche*.

dedly, 5533 (dedęly B), 5560 (dedęly BC).
erthęly, 5543 (erthly B, wordęly C).
estàtlychę, 7186 (-lichę B, statlỳchę (?) C, estàlich D).
fleysshly, 4090 (flessly B, fleschly C †, fleishęly D) (*pl.*).
frendly, 538[2], 1234 (*pl.*), 1417 (lovęly ‡ D) (*def.*), 5060. [Var. B freendly, frendęly, freendęly; C frendli, frendęli.]
goodly, 162 AB[3] (*def.*), 173 (*def.*), 277, 373, 405 (sauory B, sauery CD), 446 (*def.*), 458 (*voc.*), 1070, 1366 (goodliche C), 2031 (*perh. adv.*)[4], 2113, 2210 (C ? D ?), 2353 (*def.*), 2752 (goode A) (*def.*), 2846 (*voc.*), 2970 (D †) (*voc.*), 3975 (*def. pl.*), 4315 (D †) (*voc.*), 4448, 5072 AB, 7081 (*def. pl.*), 7185. [Var. B godęly, goodęly; C goodęli, godli, goodli.]
gòsylychę peple speche, 3426 (goosish peples s. B, gosisshę peple s. D; C[c] †). (See p. 147, footnote 3.)
grysly, 2785 (grysęly B, grèsëllichë C)[5], 4817 (grisęly B, gresęly C).
helply, 6491 AB (helpyn *inf.* C, helpë *inf.* D).

[1] "Aus einem genauen Studium der Ueberlieferung . . . ergiebt sich u. a., dass Chaucer . . . vor anlautendem Vocal . . . vielfach *-lich* und *-liche* statt *-ly* gebraucht."

[2] In 538 C read *gladyth* for *gladede*.

[3] In AB the line is too long; CD Cp. Harl. 2392 om. *goodly*. G reads: And to the temple in her goodly best wyse

[4] In C read *haste* for *laste*.

[5] But in C supply [*I*] and read *grèsęlichę*.

hèuẹnlichẹ, 104 C (heuẹnysh B, heuẹnyssh B, heuẹnly D).
holy, 1203 (*pl.*).
homẹli, 2644 C (*apparently adv. in* ABD, homly).
knyghtly, 1713 (-ẹ- BC).
lovẹly, 1417 ‡ D (*def.*).
lykly, 4112 (I lykly was to sterue) (lykë to (?) D[c]).
manly, 2348 (-li C), 2955 (-li C) (*def.*).
oonly, 6330; saue only Ector, 1825 (oonly B, onli C); oonly worthinesse, 6330 (oonẹly B, onẹly D).
shaply, 6114 (-ẹ- B, shappẹly C) (*pl.*).
softly, 2752 (soft[e] BD, softe C) (*def.*).
sunnẹlich was, 5398 C (sonnyssh ABD).
sỳklychẹ, 2613 (sikliche B, sekly C, sike ‡ D (?)); his syklỳchẹ manère, 2628 (siklỳch B, seklỳchẹ C, siklỳ D).
well willy, 4099 ABC † (wel(e) wylly D) (*def.*).
wòmmanlỳchë wyf, 2948 A (-lich[e] BD, -liche C) (*voc.*); wommanlichë wyf, 4138 (women lich[e] C, womanlich[e] D) (*voc.*); tho womanlichë thyngis, 5356 (wommanyssh[e] AD, womman[i]sshe B); yourẹ fresshë wommanlychë face, 6607 (-liche BC, womanly[che] D); wòmmanlỳ, 287. (In 6940 *wommanly* is apparently an adv.)
worldly, 3655 (wordly B, wordẹli C)[1], 3670 (wordly B, wordẹli C), 4478 (wordly B, wordẹlis ‡ C), 5497 (wordly BD, wordẹly C).
worthẹli, 1424 (worthi A, worthy BD).

With these may be compared:

sely, 338 (*om.* ‡ C) (a sely fewe poyntes), 871, 1768, 4033 (*def.*), 5165, 6152 (*pl.*), 6892 (*def.*), 7456 (*def.*). [Var. B cely; C seli.]
vnsely, 35 (vnseely D).
weldy, 1721 (worthi ‡ C).

## PRONOUNS.

### § 73. I. Personal Pronouns.

I (A.S. ic). Usually *I* or *y* in all four MSS. But the following cases of *ich* have been noticed: 678 ABC, 864 A (iche here B), 2143 B, 2145 BD, 3474 B, 3549 B, 3715 B, 3770 B, 4319 B, 4660 AB, 4733 B, 4762 B, 4976 B, 4991 B, 5245 AB, 5287 AB, 5294 AB, 5411 B, 5419 B, 5467 B, 5585 B, 5727 A, 5999 A (ichẹ B), 6053 AB, 6213 AB, 6312 B (ych A), 6403 AB, 6493 AB, 6589 AB, 6590 AB, 6781 B, 6928 B, 6933 B, 6942 B, 7062 B, 7110 B, 7234

[1] In B supply [*so*].

AB, 7296 B, 7624 B, 7710 A, 7718 A, 7959 A (iche herte B), 7988 B, 8130 B. *ych* also occurs, 6312 A, 7745 A; and, iche hym, 5594 B (cf. above 7959).

As *I* best kan to yow lord yeue *ych* al, 1914 (I . . . Ich B, I . . . I † ȝow . . . I al C, y . . . y D †).

Clippe *ich* yow thus or elles *I* it mete, 4186 AB (eche . . . [ellis] ich C, I . . . I D).

Why suffre *ich* it whi nyl *ich* do it redresse, 6403 (ich . . . ich B, I . . . I CD; *om.* do BCD).

Note.—*I* occurs in rhyme as follows: (1) with adverbs in *-ly*, 416, 430, 1103, 1269, 1629, 2087, 2511, 2619, 2760, 2910, 3594, 5351, 5545, 5679, 5926, 7436; (2) with *redy*, 983; (3) with *by*, *therby*, 1629, 5679.

thow (A.S. þú), 894, 909 (thou C), 933 (thou CD), 6633 (thu C, thou D), etc., etc.; thou, 898 (thow BD), etc. (In rhyme,—two cases, —thow, 2088 (thou C) (: now : how), 6695 (ȝow C, thou D) (: nowe, now BD).)

*Thow* in the reduced form *-ow* is very often attached to verbs. Thus:—

artow, 509 AB (art thou C, art(e) thou D); ertow, 5079 B (thow art A, are thou D); cf. 731, 5195, 5303, 5757. But,—art thow, 507 (artow B, art thou C, art(e) thou D), 3579 (art tow B), etc.

hastow, 554 (hast thou CD); cf. 617, 904, 962, 3145, 3681, 4297, 4301, 4453, 4945, 5039, 5057, 5148, 5158, 5301, 5751, 5755, 6868 † B, 6951, 6952.

sholdestow, shuldestow, 6714 (schuldist thow C, shuldest thou D); cf. 7651.

maystow, 623 (mayst thou CD); cf. 673, 2101, 3738, 4927, 7522, 8074. But,—mayst thow, 5208 (maistow B, mayst thou C, maist thou D); cf. 7493.

myghtestow, 4924 (mayst thu C, maist thou D).

dostow, 5177 (dost thou C, dost(e) thou D); cf. 7097.

ne *h*astow, 5512 (ne hast thou? C, ne haue ye? D).

ne *h*addestow, 4938 (ne *h*addyst thou C, ne *h*addist thou D).

wiltow, wyltow, 1011 (woltow B, wilt thow CD); cf. 4931.

woltow, 2446 (wiltow B, wilt thou C, wilt thow D); cf. 5513, 7520. But,—wolt thow, 2532 (wiltow B, wilt thou C).

nyltow, 792 (nylt thou C, nelt thou D), 8071 A (nyl to B, nil thou D); cf. 4269, 4912, 4965, 5151.

neltow, 5150 (nyltow B, nylt thou C, nylt(e) thou D).

nodestow, 4106 (noldestow B, noldist thou CD).

wostow, 588 (wost thou C, w. thow D); cf. 611, 775, 781, 843, 851, 855, 901, 956, 967, 3091.

wistow, 4486 (wistist thou C, wist thow D).

oughtestow, 6908 (auȝtist thow C, oughtest thou D).

canstow, kanstow, 757 (canst thou C, canst thow D †); cf. 5122 (canstu C), 5192.

darstow, 7642 (dastow A, durst(ist) thow C, darst(e) thou D).

dorstestow, 767 AB (durstyst thou C, trist thow D).

shaltow, 803 (schuldyst thou C, thou shalt D); cf. 5271 (shaltow(e)) B, 6391.

blamestow, 841 (-yst thou CD).

gabbestow, 5143 (-ist thou C, -est thou C).

intendestow, 6841 (entendist thow C, entendest thou D).

listow, 5056 (lyst thou C, liest thou D).

profe̊restow, 4303 (profrestow B, proferist thow C; D †).

sekestow, 4297 (-yst thou C, -est thou D).

sestow, 2888 AB (seest thou D).

seystow, 7524 (seistow B, seyst thou C, sêest thou D); cf. 7654, 7886.
seydestow, seidestow, 912 (seydist thou CD); cf. 917, 918.
slombrestow, 730 (slomberyst thou C, slumbrist thow D).
thenkestow, 2458 (thynkestow B, thinkist thou C, thinkyst thou D); cf. 5511, 5750.

It will be seen that these forms are common in AB, very rare in C (canstu, 5122) and hardly found in D. AB have, however, full forms in *-est, -st thow* (*thou*), as well as the contracted forms.

Once the affixed -ow (= thow) is reduced to -e,—*Wher arte ?* (art D) (: *carte*), 7524.

Thart (= thow art), 4471 (thow art A, thu art C, thou art D).

he (A.S. hé), 21, 1164 f, and *passim*. he Ixiôn, 6575 (the ‡ I. D; C$^{c}$†).

Note.—The colloquial contraction written *a* occurs (cf. *a* for *have*), but not in A: And on the Grekes ofte a wold a see, 7030 D (ost he woldë se A, oost he wold[e] se B, oftë wolde he se C). Perhaps the scribe intended *a* † *lough*, 3260 B, for *he lough* (and low AC, or lowe D). For elided or slurred *e* in *he*, see § 125. In 6440 C, *Antenòrë* = *Antenòr he*; but cf. 5327 f.

she, 178 (scho B, sche C), 679 (sche C), 1166 f, 1689 f (sche C), 2832 f (sche C), 3995 (sho B, sche C † D), 4369 (sche CD), 5829 (see C), 7479 f (sche C), 7667 (che B, sche C), and *passim*; she Criseyde, 3968 B (cf. 1901 ?). For the elision or slurring of -e in *she*, see § 126.

it (A.S. hit), nom., acc., and with prepositions.

Usually *it* in all four MSS., cf. 5686 f (: sit *sedet* : yit), 5765 f (: yet : wit), 7124 f (: wit : yit), and *passim*.

But *hit* occasionally occurs (as, 297 D, 346 D, 1545 D, 2222 D, 3244 D); yt, 57 A.

Note.—Ten Brink's rule "dass Chaucer nach einem auslautenden Vocal, der nicht elidirt werden soll, stets *hit*—nicht *it*—schreibt" (§ 270) is not observed in the *Troilus* MSS.

me (A.S. mé) dat., acc., and with prepositions. (*a*) Dat. without prepositions, 142 (?), 403 f, 828, 1120, 1274, 3152 f, 3416, 4744, 5497 f. (*b*) Other oblique uses, cf. 1578 f, 4324 f, and *passim*. For *mĕ* with a preposition, see *by me*, 2076 f (: tyme : pryme). For elided or slurred *-e* in *me*, see § 126.

the (A.S. þé), dat., acc., and with prepositions. (*a*) Dat. without prepositions, 829, 2177, 4299 (thee D), 8094, 8100 f. (*b*) Other oblique uses, cf. 6771 f and *passim*. What eyleth the, 4993 f.

hym (A.S. him), dat., acc., and with prepositions. (*a*) Dat. without prepositions, 82, 188, 694, etc., etc. (*b*) Other oblique uses, *passim*. [Var. him.]

hire, here (A.S. hire), *dat. and acc.*, monosyllabic, not distinguished in spelling from the possessive (cf. (i.) bef. consonants; 126, 131, 177, 286, 315, 361, 370, 388, 454, 481, 840, 976, 1050, 1360, 1687, 1778, 1999, 2010, 2069, 2205, 2239, 2450, 3311, 3398, 3523, 4094, 4824, etc.; cf. (ii.) bef. vowels, 974, 1749, 3408, 3972, 4029,

7223, etc.). Forms without -e occur even in A : thus,—her anoon *acc.*, 116 A; to hyr spak, 3972 A; as hir lyste, 3974 A; sen her laughęn, 7144 A.—Notice the following cases in rhyme: here (*eam*), 2876 f (: to were = *weir*); of here, 3109 f (hire C) (: swere *inf.*); here (*eam*), 4484 f (hire BC) (: bere *inf.* : tere *inf.*), 5274 f (hire BC, her D) (: swere *inf.*).

It may be that when *hire* was emphatic it could be dissyllabic, even in the middle of a verse. Thus—

For-thi som grace I hope yn *herë* fynde, 973 A (hyrë C, hirë Cp., in her y D, in hyrę to B, in hir to G).

Biseching *herë* syn that he was trewe, 7948 A (hirë B, hirę that C, hir that D, hir[e] that sithe he Harl. 2392). [*Here* is not really emphatic. No variation in Cp. collation.]

In the following cases, however, a comparison of MSS. shows that the dissyllabic form is to be rejected: 977 C, 1056 A, 2159 C, 4827 A, 5365 C, 7212 C, 7226 C, 7454 AC, 7905 C.

Note.—In the light of the rhymes just cited, I cannot understand ten Brink's remark (§ 250, Anm. 3): "Sicher, dass für den Sing. Fem. ihm [Chaucer] blos *hire hir* [not *here her*] geläufig war."

we (A.S. wé), 3707, 4856 f, 6176, and *passim.*

ye (A.S. gé), 26 f (ȝe B), 198 (ȝe CD), 202 f A (ȝe BC), 340 f (ȝe BCD), 5996 f (ȝe BC), 8055 f (ȝe BC, yee D); cf. 1364 f, 1373 f. 1667 f, 2860 f, 3441 f, *and passim.* For *yĕ* with a preposition, cf. *your.*

they, thei (O.N. þeir), 60 (theyę B), 136 (thai B, the C), 763; cf. 134, 1167, 1260, 1302, 4224, etc., etc.

us (A.S. ús), dat., acc., and with prepositions, 1034, 1412, 1526, 1585, 6488, and *passim.* For examples of the dat. without prepositions, see 1181 f (: Pandarus : thus), 1868, 6010. (*Us* rhymes with *-us* in Pandarus, Troylus, Deiphebus, Tydeus, and with *thus:* cf. 620 f, 1181 f, 1207 f, 1286 f, 1517 f, 2273 f, 2404 f, 2563 f, 6842 f, 7400 f, 7414 f, 7841 f, 7925 f.)

yow, you (A.S. éow), dat., acc., and with prepositions, 331 f (ȝow BCD) (: prow *n.* : how), 1329 (ȝou B, ȝow C, *om.* † D), 4975 (ȝow B, you D), and *passim.* For examples of the dat. without prepositions, cf. 342, 431, 1421, 7728, etc., etc. [yowe, 4763 f (ȝowe B, ȝou D) (: now).] *yow* rhymes with *now, prow, how* (cf. 331 f, 2523 f, 2746 f, 3165 f, 3853 f, 4322 f, 4406 f, 4491 f, 4763 f (yowe A), 5540 f, 5988 f, 6492 f, 8103 f).

*Yĕ* in *fro ye*, 5 f (: Troye : ioye), is apparently a reduced *your* (cf. *arte* for *artow*), whatever one may say of *ayeyn ye*, 334 AB (C †, ȝe D), where, on the whole, *ye* prob. = *yea.*

hem (A.S. him, heom), 908, 2791, 2805, 4227, 4521, etc., etc.

Note.—*Hem* is found in all MSS.; *him* or *hym* sometimes replaces it (as, 31 A, 303 BD, 518 B, 558 B, 911 B,[1] 1284 (?) CD, 2567 B, 4240 A); *them* is found only in D (see, e. g., 29, 31, 36, 50, 558, 4862, 5805); theym, 41 D.

## § 74. II. Possessive Pronouns.

my, myn (A.S. mín). I. Sing. (*a*) my *before consonants:* my fo, 837 (myn C, my wo ‡ B); my brother, 2496 (myn C); my lord my brother, 2535 (myn . . . myn C) (cf. 2711); my dere brother, 2760 (myn C), etc., etc.; mi spirit, 423 AB (myn C, the D). (*b*) myn *before vowels:* 16, 407 (D †), 432 (C †), 683, 772, 1134, 3081 (my D), 6112 (my D), 8081 (myne D), etc., etc. (*c*) myn *before* h: myn herte, 599, 606, 1652, 1664 (my D), 6593 (my D), etc.; myn hod, 2195 (myne D); myn hows, 3037 (my D); cf. 530, 1845, 1954, 3001, 3157, 6866; my dere hert allas myn hele and hewe, 461 (mi . . . myn B, myn . . . myn C); myn herte ayens my lust, 1560 (myn hest † . . . myn C, my hert . . . my D). (*d*) myn *before consonants:* myn peyne, 1560 AC (my BD); on myn byhalue, 2543 AC (my BD); myn dere herte, 3685 AC (my BD); go litel myn tregedie, 8149. C, so far as I have observed, uses only *myn*, whether before vowels or consonants[2]; cf. 527, 612, 616, 2188, 2366, 2705, 2711, 2735, 3018, 3085, 3713, 3788, 3838, etc. (In some of these cases the n is written in C; in others it is represented by the familiar stroke.) Cf. myn swetë herte, 5973 B (myn ownë AD, myne C.) (*e*) *my* before vowels: my auctor, 394 (myn BCD); cf. the variants under *b*, above. (*f*) When the possessive follows its noun, *myn* is of course the only form used. Thus,—Com(e) nece myn my lady queene, 2799 ABD (necë mynę myn C); cf. 1510, 2280 (mynę B), 2320. And so when the possessive stands in the predicate (cf. 21, 3835, 5141 f (myne BD) (: for fyn)), and when the noun is omitted (cf. 3849, 6960). II. Plural: myn peynes, 2984 (my BD, mynę C); my sorwes, 4014 (mynnę C); my cares, 7705 B (D ?, mynę C, [my] A); myne othere lordes, 2566 (myn D). —mynë wordes, 4173 ABC (my E);[3] cf. 6680 ‡ C.—lordes myne, 4733 A (myn BD).—myn eyen, 7699 ABD (mynne C).

thi, thy, thyn, thin (A.S. þín). I. Singular. (*a*) thi *bef. cons'ts.:* thi brotheres wyf, 678 (thyn C, thy D); thi bed, 2602 (thin C); thy destene, 520 (thi B, thyn C), etc., etc. (*b*) thyn *bef. vowels:* thin

[1] "Som of *hem* took on *hym*."
[2] *myne* (5973 C) is merely a graphical variety.
[3] No variations noted in Mr. Austin's collation. 9-syl. in E.

owęnë cheyne, 509 (thyn CD); thyn auenture, 2604 (thin BD); cf. 513, 795, etc.—thi synne and thyn offence, 556 (thi . . . thin B, thyn . . . thyn C, thi . . . thyn D). [thine, 5751 D.] (*c*) thyn *bef.* h: thyn help, 672 (thi BD, that † C); thyn hert, 928 (thin BD); thyn hod, 2039 (thin BD). (*d*) thyn *bef. cons'ts.*: thyn peyne, 589 (thi B thy D). C, so far as my notes indicate, uses *thyn* exclusively,[1] whether before a vowel or a consonant (cf. 346, 524, 587, 653, 677, 801, 926, 935, 1018, 1916, 2481, 2588, 2597, 2696, 2723, 3237, 3580, 4829, 4946, 5079,[2] etc.). The other MSS. usually have *thi* before a consonant (but cf. thin lif, 5079 D). (*e*) I have observed no instance of *thy* before vowels. (*f*) When the possessive is in the predicate, *thyn* is of course used, cf. 861, 1036, 3118 f (-e C) (: engyn), 4354, 6303, 6950. So when it follows its noun: cf. 8232. Cf. to han for thyne, 3255 A (thyn BC, thin D). II. Plural: thi prouerbes, 756 (thynę C, thy D); thi sorwes, 794 (thynnę C); thi bryght eyen, 4295 (thynę C).—thyne olde ensaumples, 760 (thin BD); thyne eeres, 2107 (thyn B, thin D); thyne hestes, 3261 (thine B, thynne C, this ‡ D); thyne † heuenes, 3460 C; thin hornes, 7015 (thyne B, thine D, thynne C); thyn eyen, 7522 (thynne C, thine D); thyn owęnë folk, 6951 (thynne C, thin D).—thynę nedis, 2039 C (thi AD, thy B); thynnę ‡ dremys, 7651 C.

his (A.S. his), so *passim* as possess. pron. with both masc. and neut. nouns sing. and plu. Cf. especially *a friend of his*, 548, 3638 f (: this); *a man of his*, 4883.

Note 1.—No MS., except perhaps D, by far the worst of the four, is free from the spelling *hise* (-e of course never sounded) for the possessive with plural nouns. Examples are: hise auentures, 3 AB (cf. 471 AC, 2430 AC, 5535 A); hisę foos, 994 A; hisę bestë iapes, 2252 A (cf. 1658 AC, 1808 A (hysę C), 2117 A (hesę C), 2121 A, 2436 AC, 3339 AC, 7410 BC, 7452 AC); hise houdes, 3026 AB; hesę worthi dedes, 8133 A; hesę eyȝen, 1948 C; hese hondes, 2059 C, 8165 A; hysę bony[s], 305 C.—C even uses *hise* for the singular: hisę chere, 7591 C.[3]

Note 2.—*Is* is occasionally found for *his*. Thus, 637 B, 4206 C, 6071 A, 6167 A. *Dethës* = *deth his* in 469 C (Lo here his lyf and from the *dethes* cure).

hire, here, possessive (= her) (A.S. hire).

In the attributive use before consonants A varies between *herę* and *hirę*: for *herę*, cf. 839 (C †), 5764, etc., etc.; for *hirę*, cf. 95, 107, 975, etc., etc. Varieties are, BC hyrę; BD hir; C hyr; D her. (Cf. also, for further examples, 102, 108, 126, 173, 281, 282, 285,

[1] thynn fo, 4828 C.

[2] In some of these cases the n is written in C; in others it is represented by the familiar stroke.

[3] Supply [*so*] in C.

427, 542, 846,[1] 1150, 1304, 1688, 1699, 1759, 1853, 1911, 2717, 3439, 6944, etc.) An examination of these cases, which are fair examples of the use of *here*, *hire* before consonants, will show that A has *-e* in all of them (*here* or *hire*); that the usual form in B is *hire*; in C *hire* or *hyre*; in D *her*.[2] Forms without the *-e* are not common except in D, and are hardly found in A.

Good lines to illustrate this word are :—*Hire* wommen soonë til *hire* bed here broughte, 1999 (hire . . . hire? . . . hire B, hire . . . hire . . . hire C, her . . . her . . . her D). *Hire* gouernaunce *hire* wit and *here* manère, 3058 (hire BC, her D). Al thoughtë she *here* seruaunt and *hire* knyghte, 3825 (hire . . . hire BC, her . . . her D).[3]

Note.—Cases before vowels present no interest, for there elision would in any case reduce the word to one syllable. The spellings are in general the same as those already noted. (Cf. *e. g.* 305, 347,[4] 1335, 1619, 1737, 3060, 3408, 6426, 7228[5]. For cases before *h*, cf. 127, 655, 1742, etc.)

Absolute use :

A kynges herte semeth by *hires* a wrecche, 889 AB (hire C, her D).

And that I thus am *herës* dar I seye, 4450 (hirës B, ȝouris † C, her[ë]s D).

Shal han me holly *heres* til that I deye, 5106 (hires B, his † C, hirs D).

Note 3.—It is doubtful if the possessive singular is ever *hirë* (disyllabic) in this poem. The following cases, which seem to require or admit that pronunciation, disappear as evidence on a comparison of MSS. : 1350 A, 1903 C, 1995 A, 1999 B, 5221 C, 7132 C, 7316 C, 7413 C †, 7510 C.

The following two passages admit of a dissyllabic *hirë*, but may also (if one likes the sound) be scanned as lines of nine syllables :

With a certayn of *here* owene men, 3438 (hire own B, hire owene C, her owne D).

I comende *hire* wysdom by myn hood, 7514 ABC (hir witte D).

oure (A.S. úre), gen., as singular possessive. In the attributive use the regular spelling of ABC is *oure*, D usually has *our* (cf. (i.) before consonants, 171, 558, 559, 1518, 1728, 2506, 5985, etc.; cf. (ii.) before vowels, 710, 1448, etc.). But *oure* is also found in D (as, 5721); and neither A nor B is free from *our* (thus, our wreche, 7259 ABD (oure C), cf. 965 B, 8157 B, 8186 B).

All these cases are monosyllabic. Indeed, there seem to be no

[1] This and 847 illustrate the indifference of A with regard to *hire* and *here*: That as *here* ioyes moten ouer gone So mote *hire* sorwes passen euerychone (hire . . . hire B, hyre . . . hire C, her . . . her D).

[2] *Here* is rare in C (see 1853); *hire* is rare in D (see 6944).

[3] In B, read *though*[*të s*]*he* ; in D, *thoght*[*ë*].

[4] *hyr* B.

[5] In most of these A has *here*.

cases of dissyllabic attributive *oure* (sing. or pl.) in the *Troylus* (see 5906, where *ourë* would give an intolerable verse, and 3598 C, where comparison of MSS. restores the monosyllable). Cf., however, the following predicate use: she shal bleuen oure, 5201 f (our D) (: owre = *hour*). In the plural possessive use the attributive form is the same as in the singular. Thus,—oure hierdes, 3461 (our D); ourę walles, 6144 (our BD); ourę ‡ cruel foone, 8229 D; cf. 1598, 2017, 4109, 4955, 5866, 8206.

your, youre (A.S. ēower). (*a*) Attributive position:

Both forms are found in A before consonants. Thus: your, 429 (ȝour BD, ȝorę C), 4955 (ȝour B, ȝourę C); youre (in A the usual form), yowrę, 122, 1180, 1219, 1307, 1426, 1508, 2190, 2523, 2801 (ourę † C), 3051, 4018, 4830 (-*e* B), 7099, 7236, etc., etc.. [Var. BCD ȝourę; BD ȝour; D your, yowr, ȝowr; B iourę, ȝowrę; C ȝourrę.] (For *youre*, cf. 337, 2526, etc.; for *youre* where h follows, cf. 334, 1378, etc.) *Youre* is monosyllabic in the attributive position, except perhaps in 2687, 3509; other exceptions (as, 198 AB, 1388 C, 5548 C, 7267 C, 7985 C) vanish on a comparison of MSS.

(*b*) In the predicate:

he is youre, 1672 f (ȝoure BC, ȝoures D[1]) (: oure *horam*); yourës is Mi spirit which that aught[ë] yourë be, 422-3 (ȝour[e]s . . . ȝour[e]s B, ȝourë . . . ȝourë C, your[is] . . . youris D)[2]; he that is . . . yourës fre, 2206 (ȝoures B, ȝouris C, youris D);[3] I haue ben yowrës also, 2944 (ȝoures B, ȝouris C, youres D);[4] cf. 4450 ‡ C; I was youre and, 6342 (ȝoure B, your D); I am yourë ‡ aH, 6303 D (thyn ABC); I am ȝourę ‡ bi, 4354 D (thyn AC, thin B).

hire, here, = their (A.S. hire), monosyllabic, not distinguished in spelling from here = her. Cf. (i.) *bef. cons'ts.*, 49, 63, 149, 151, 154, 705, 763, 907, 997, 1126, 1260, 1286, etc., etc. Cf. (ii.) *bef. vowels*, 51, 150, etc. The variant *heir* (5804 D, 7323 D; heirę, 8218 D) deserves notice. *Their* is sometimes found in D (cf. 4861, 5369, 8123); *therę* occurs in C 5803.

In,—Of *here* toris and the herte vnswelle, 5808 AC (hire B, *om.* † D), one has one's choice between *herë* and a 9-syl. line. 3304 A, however, should be corrected.

§ 75. III. Reflexive and Intensive Pronouns. The compounds of *self* (A.S. self, sylf, etc.) appear in the

[1] *rh.* houris D.
[2] In B supply [*that*] in 423; in C dele (*the*) in 423.
[3] In C supply [*al*].
[4] Supply [*al*] in D.

*Troilus* in the forms *-self, -selue, -seluen.* (Child, § 46; ten Brink, § 255. Cf. also § 79 below.)

my self, myn self, my selue, my seluen.

myself, (i.) 537 (my silf D, myn seluę C), 669 (-ę B, myn self C), 2286 (myn seluęn the † C), 5204 (myn seluë ‡ C; D †), 5286 (myn s. C, my selfę D); cf. 3729, 4495, 4940. (ii.) 628 (myn saeluë ‡ sen C, my seluë ‡ sen D), 927 (myn s. C), 7637 (myn seluyn C); cf. 2225, 3632, 4745; my self hate, 5501 (-ę D, myn self C).

myn self wil, 2094 (my s. BD); myn ‡ silf vnnethe, 7770 C.

my selue, 1191 f (myn s. C) (: twelue), 7286 f (meselfue B, myn sellęue C, my silf D) (: twelue); my selue I, 5903 (my silf D, myn seluyn wolde C).[1]

my seluen, (i.) 5439 (myn self[e] C, my silfę ‡ D), 6108 (myn selue C, my self[e] D), 7635 (my self[e] D, myn self ‡ to C).

thi self, thy self, thyn self, thi selue, thi seluen, thyn seluen.

thi self, thy self, (i.) 963 (thyn s. C), 4466 (thyn s. C, thi silf D),[2] 6750 (thyn s. C, thin s. D); cf. 717, 768, 2450 CD, 4098, 5079 A, 5266 BD, 5282, 6633. (ii.) Cf. 882, 2542, 5252; thi self hire, 2450 (thi selft B, thyn self preye C, thy s. pray D). thyn self fordon, 5753 (thi s. B, thyn s. C, thinę s. D).[3]

thi selue, 3101 (-ën B, thyn -yn C, thy -yn D), 5062 f (thyn s. C, thi silue D) (: swych[e] twelue).—thi self[e], (i.) 5253 (thi seluen B, thynself? C ‡, thinself[e] D); thi self[ë] helpen, 5190 (-en B, selue (?) C; D †). (ii.) thi selue, thy selue, thi selfe, cf. 3141 (-yn ‡ C), 3212, 5513 (?), 8074.

thyn seluen, (i.) 622 (thi s. B, thyn seluë C, thi self[e] D), cf. 3098 ‡ C.—thi seluën, (ii.) 852 (thy self[e] D, C †), 5262 (thyn seluyn C, thi self[e] D), 5512 (thyn self[e]? C, yourę silf[e]? D), 6700 (thyn seluyn C, thin seluen D), 7669 (thyn -yn C, thi self? D ‡).

hym self, hym-selue, hym-seluen.

hym-self, (i.) cf. 320, 896, 1460, 1864, 2163, 2249, 2558 BC, 3270, 3397, 5787, 5890, 6401, 6704, 6869, 6969, 6986, 7031, 7536, 7894. [Var. C hym selfę (320); CD hym silf.] (ii.) Cf. 457, 745, 815, 1544, 5746, 5824,[4] 6626, 6980, 7135 (seluyn C ?), 7148,

[1] Metre doubtful: My (Myn C) selue (self B, seluyn C, silf D, selfe G) I wolde (wolde I C) haue (hau B, a C) slayn (slawe C, slayne DG) quod she tho. (No variations in Mr. Austin's collation.)

[2] Supply [*ne*] or read *silf*[*e*] in D.

[3] Supply [*so*] in C.

[4] Supply [*it*] in C. D, *himsilfe* (?).

7233. [Var. CD selfe; C selue.] Before *he, his*, cf. 662, 5890 C, 6572, 8184 AB.

hym-selue, 2485 f (: twelue), 6461 f (hymę-s. BD) (: twelue). hym self [y]beten, 741 (h. s. ybeten BD, h. s. i-bete C). hym-self[e], (i.) 2558 (h. self BC), 4907 (-en B, -e C, h. silf to (?) D), 6704 CD, 7396 (h. self ABD 9-*syl.*), 7940 (-en B, -e C). hym seluë sle, 5581 (-en B, -[e] D, -[e] fle † C).

hym-seluen, (i.) 256 (-[e] CD), 302 (-[e] D), 604 (-ë C, -[e] D †), 7586 (-yn C, -[e] D); himseluyn, 3397 C (-self ABD).

herę-self, hirę-self, herę-seluen, *singular feminine.*

herę-self, (i.) 7079 (hirę-s. B, hir sowlę D). (ii.) hirę-self, herę-self, 3619 (h. seluyn C, her self D),[1] 5299 (hir self D, hirę self[ë] wolde ‡ C), 5418 (h. selue C, hir selfe D); herę self hym, 2716 (hirę s. BC, her self al D).

hirę-self[e] bonde, 2308 (-en B, herę self[e] C, her selfe D);[2] herę seluë èxcusỳnge, 112 (hirę seluen B, hyrę seluë C, herself[ë] D).

herę seluen, (i.) 3568 (hirę s. B, hirę seluyn C, her self D),[3] 5197 (hirę seluën B, hirę self[ë] C, hir self[ë] D), 5475 (hirę-s. B, hir self[ë] D).—hirę seluęn she, 1736 (h. self BC, her self D); herę-seluęn distorben, 5765 (hirę-self C, h[i]rę self C, hir self D).

ourę seluen se, 2416 (-yn C, our seluyn D).

yourę self, yow self, yourę selue, yourę seluen, yow seluen.

yourę self, (i.) 2368 (ȝourę BC, ȝour D), 3751 (ȝ. BC, your D). (ii.) 118 (ȝourself B, ȝourę s. C, ȝour s. D),[4] 5896 (ȝ. B, ȝ. sylf C, your silf quod D); your self, 3621 (ȝourę s. BC), cf. 5513 D; ȝourę selue ‡, 2951 C.

yow self, (i.) 1308 (ȝourę s. B, your s. D, ȝourę self[e] ‡ C), 2245 (ȝourę s. BC; D †), 3847 (ȝourę s. BC).[5] (ii.) 1323 (ȝourę s. C, ȝour self D, ȝourę seluęn B).—yow seluën leste, 4172 (ȝourę s. B, ȝourë ‡ selvyn C, your self[ë] D).

yourę selue, (i.) 3510 (ȝ. seluen B, ȝ. seluyn C, your selvyn D); yourę silf[e] (?), 5512 D.

yourę seluen, (i.) 1216 (ȝ. B, ȝowrę selve C, ȝour self[e] D), 7244 (ȝourę B, your self D †, *l. om.* † C), 7247 (ȝourę B, ȝourę seluyn C, your self[e] D), 7364 (ȝourę B, ȝourę sylf[e] C, your self D ‡); yowrę seluen, 3967 (ȝourę BD, ȝ. -yn C).

[1] Supply [*a*] in A.
[2] If we read *makë* (-*yn* C), we shall have *hirę-self* in two syllables.
[3] In this v. ABC have *dane*, D *diane*, for *Daphne*. In D read *daphne her self*[*ë*] *shct.*
[4] Supply [*yc*] in B.
[5] yow self ‡ D (9-syl. ?).

hem self, hem seluen.

hem self, (i.) 4683. (ii.) 915 (hym s. B),[1] 1543, 1875 ‡ D.

hem seluen so, 4710 (h. self[e] D).

## § 76. IV. Demonstrative Pronouns.

that (A.S. þæt), as demonstrative pronoun, *passim*. That = the, that oon(*e*), 5349 A (that oon B, that on C, the toone D).

tho (A.S. þá), plural demonstrative (in substantive and adjective uses), cf. 924, 1078, 2452, 3272, 4016, 4223, 4285, 4813, 5087 f, 5293, 5356, 5797, 5835, 6025, 7033, 7096, 7569.

thilke, *sing.*, 185 (the *i*lke C, that D ?),[2] 939 (-[e] D, thynke ‡ C), 2873 (-[e] D), 3305 (-[e] B, the *i*lke C, that D ?),[2] 4387 (-[e] BD, theilke C), 4501 (-[e] B, ilke C, that D ?),[2] 5732, 6196 (ilke C †), 6213 (that ilke CD), 6318 (theilke C), 7550 (theilke C), 8053 (-[e] B, that ilkę C), 8202; thilkë harme, 3560 (-[e] D).[3] [Var. B thylke, thylk[e].]

thilke, *pl.*, 4114 (ilke CD), 5377 (theilke C), 5667, 5711 (-[e] B). [Var. B thylk[e].]. thilke effectes, 2857 (thi[l]ke B, thilk D).

that ilke, *sing.*, 2347 (-[e] D), 5409 AB (that ylke D), 5435 (-[e] B, that ylke D), 5898 (-[e] B), 7466.

this. Singular of course monosyllabic, and almost always written *this* (cf. 424 f (: is : i-wys), 484, 551, 1035, 1509, etc., etc.). *Thisse*, 1010 f A (this BCD) (: i-wysse : ysse *est*), is perhaps due to an attempt to indicate the unvoiced sound of final *s*.

Plural variously written : *this* (7, 540, 5090, 5537, 5573, 6683, etc.), *these* (169, 561, 1188, 2350, 5952, 8086, 8116, etc.), *thise* (2110, 3460);[4] but always monosyllabic, as well before consonants as before vowels.

For further examples of the plural, cf. 705, 742, 893, 903, 995, 1086, 1870, 1875, 2152, 2391, 2469, 3134, 4299, 4533, 5333, 5347, 5642, 6359, 6707, 6742, 6743, 7423, 7502, 7599, 7711, 7935, 8091, 8142, 8214.

Note 1.—2350 C is corrupt. In 2153 A, transpose *alle* and *these*. In 3193 A, insert [*as*]. In 4332 A, read *werë* and *thesę*.

this ilke, *sing.*, 2791 (-[e] CD), 4688 AB, 6401 (this ylke D), 7232, 7876, 8115, 8129; cf. 1822 AB.

this ilke, thise ilke, these ilke, *pl.*, 3349 (this ilk[e] BD), 4180 (-[e] B), 5915 (thes ilke D), 7674; cf. 4035, 4156, 4236, 5032, 5810.

[1] Supply [*thei*] in C. [2] 9-syl. in D. [3] Supply [*al*] in C.

[4] *This* and *these* are common in A; *this* and *thise* in B; D has often *thes* (561, etc.). Varieties are,—*thyse* (919 B, 2110 B), *thecse* (1971 Cc), *t*[*h*]*ese* (5090 D).

Note 2.—A remnant of the A.S. demonstrative *þém, þám, þán*, is seen in the phrase *for the nones* (561, 2466 f, 4847 f, 5090). The A.S. instrumental *þý* appears in *forthi* (cf. 445, 973, 1127, 4471, 4984, 5052, 5067, 5279), *fórthi* (cf. 691, 1114, 1952, 5585).

Note 3.—For *at the* written *attë*, see § 53. II. Cf. *tother, attother*, § 79.

## § 77. V. Interrogative Pronouns.

who, *nom.* (A.S. hwá), 551 (ho C), 2338 (ho CD), 3593 (ho CD), 7626, etc.

whos, *gen.*, 2275 (whas B, hos C), etc.

whom, *dat.*, 6598 (ho *nom.* ‡ C; D †).

whom, *acc.*, 3428 (hom C, what ‡ that D), etc.; whom that I loue, 717 (hom that C).

what, I. *Sbst.*, nom., 828, 1214 f; acc., 320, 356, 3159 f. II. *Adj.*, nom., 401, 3512, etc.; acc., 552; of what man, 3992; what = why, 1347, 1377, cf. 1308. (Rhymes with *that* and *hat*.)

Note.—Remnants of the instrumental *hwý* are seen in *why* (cf. 1760 f, 3992 f) and in *for-whi, for-why*, 714, 1097, 2601 (also occurring as a variant of *forthi*).

which, see under Relatives.

## § 78. VI. Relative pronouns (and pronominal adjectives), and the interrogative (etc.) *which*.

that, *passim*. that = id quod, 7567. ho at = who that, 3861 C.

whos, *gen.*, 532, 700 (C †), 787 (whois C), 5025, 7680 (whoos D), etc.; the whos, 7339 (whos C †, the woos D), 7722 (whos (?) C).

whom, *dat.* and *acc.*, 189 (whan C), 533 f (-(e) D) (: from), 937, 2802; cf. 98, 1244, 1912, 6676, etc.; for whom that, 766 (C †).

who so, 147 (ho so C); cf. 77, 603, 857, 2880, 4104, etc.

what so,—in what wyse so yow lyste, 3889 (that ȝow C; D †).

what, as a "general relative,"—of what it be, 2418; euery gentil womman what she be, 8136; or of what wyght that stont, 3338.

which.

I. Interrogative (in both direct and indirect questions and in exclamations).

A. *Singular*. (1) *Adj.*, which hous, 2274 (wich C, whiche D); to enqueren which thyng cause of which thyng be, 5672 (which . . . whiche B); whiche ‡ opynyoun, 5635 D (whos AB). (2) *Sbst.* which of, 3040 (wich C). (3) = qualis, *interrog.*, which a labour, 199 BC (swych l. A, such a l. D); what thyng and which is he, 401 CD (-*e* B, what A); into wich helle, 5374 C

(vnto which heH D; *st. not in* AB). (4) = qualis, *exclam.*, which a thonk, 803 (wych C; D †); which a dede, 5893 BD (swych A, wich a drede C).

B. *Plural*, which (= quales ?) doutances (*ind. quest.*), 200 (-ę B, with † D, which dotaunce[s] C).

II. Relative.

A. *Which* (without *the*).

(*a*) *Which* is used as a relative pronoun for all genders, with or without a following *that*. In the following examples the *which* is a simple relative (not attributive adj.); the presence of a following *that* is indicated by old-style figures in the verse-number.

(1) *Singular*, which, *bef. cons'ts.*, cf. 74, 78, 94, 106 (whiche B), 206, 527,[1] 1471, 7217. [Var. BC whichę; C wich, whych, whechę.]—which, *bef. vowels*, cf. 261 (whych C), 7925 C; in which he, 366 (*-e* B, wich C); of which hym, 3345 (wich C, of thę which D).—whichę, 54 (thę whichę B), 1121 (whechę B, *om.* † D), 1415 (wich C; D †), 2231 (which [that] ? B; *l. om.* † C), 2492 (which BCD), 2677 (wichę B, wich C, which D), 2689 (which CD), 2843 (which BD), 3374 (which D, whichë = which she, *haplography*, C), 5273 (which BD, wich C), 7578 (of which ‡ he C, for whichë ‡ cause D).—whiche he, 1712 (wiche B, quych C, which D).

(2) *Plural*, of wich that, 4236 C (whom AB, wychë ‡ I E; in which that, 8199; which er, 3575; which I, 7569 (*-e* B, the whiche C);[2] whichę that 2858 (which B), 3427 (which as B, wich that C, which that D).

(*b*) *Which* as a relative adj. (not = *qualis*). (1) *Singular*, by which reson, 5710 (whichë D),[3] cf. 7578 D. (2) *Plural*, of whichë ‡ sykis, 4207 C (wych[ë] ‡ D, swichë A, shwich[ë] B *defect.*).

B. *The which*. Used either (*a*) as a purely relative pronoun, or (*b*) as a relative adjective (not = *qualis*).

(*a*) (1) *Singular*, the whiche, 3565 (the which BD; C †); *bef. cons'ts.*, the which, 603 ([the] whichę C), 7241 (-ę C). (2) *Plural*, the whiche he, 4884.

(*b*) (1) *Singular*, thę whichë tale, 5328 (-[ë] BC); the which[ë] cote, 8016 (-ë C, -e ? D ‡); the whichę thyng, 4331 (the which

[1] C has *the whechę* for *to whechę*.
[2] Supply [*of*] in A.
[3] 9-syl., exc. in D; but we are hardly to read *which*[*ë*].

B, the wheeh C).[1] (2) *Plural*, the whichë frendes, 6046 (-[e] BD; C †).

Note 1.—In 5930 we are apparently to read: "Soth is the wo the which that we ben inne," but the MSS. vary. *Which* is sometimes miswritten by the scribe for *swich*, as 3299 D (cf. 2435 D).

Note 2.—*Which* . . . *his* is equivalent to *whos* in "The kynges dere sone, The good[e] wyse worthi fressh and fre, *Which* alwey for to do wel is *his* wone," 1401-3. Cf. "*Which* with a thred of gold she wolde *it* bynde," 7175 C (but read *woldë bynde*). Cf., perhaps, "Er doth . . . Dryf out the gost *which* (*so in* ABD John's, whiche G, that CCp.) in myn herte *he* (*so in* ABDGCp. John's, *om.* C) beteth," 5572.

Note 3.—*As* is used as a relative pronoun (= that) in 3244 C,—*this as thow dost* (this that AB, [this] that D), and in 3427 B,—*thynges which as neuere were* (which(e) that A, wich that C, which that D).

swich, such (A.S. swile, swelc). Examples are,—

I. Singular:

In A, swich, swych, such, (i.) 475, 550, 1794, 1970, 2153, 3338, 6627, 8001, etc.; (ii.) 296, 369, 521, 619, 762, 985, 1750, 1813, etc.—In B, swich, swhich, shwich, swihch, (i.) 127, 475, 550, 777, 1794, 1879, 1970, 3338, 3604, etc.; (ii.) 369, 521, 1351, 1750, 3320, 3382, 3604.—In C, swich, swych, swech, (i.) 412, 1794, 1879, 1970, 2153, 3338, 4070, etc.; (ii.) 296, 369, 521, 762, etc.—In D, such, (i.) 1794, 2153, 3338, etc.; (ii.) 2245, etc.

Note.—Forms in silent -e occur in all four MSS. Thus,—in A, *swiche* (412)[2], *suche* (1351); in B, *swiche* (291, 475, 562, 935, 1088, 2216, 2355, 3002, 3236, 7314, 7926), *swhiche* (412), *swuche* (1663), *swiche* (619, 762, 955, 985, 1713, 2245, 3176), *swhiche* (296), *shwiche*, (2784); in D, *suche* (550; cf. 2355, 4070). Cases in which we have an apparent -ë (before a consonant), as, *swichë*, 227 B, 4581 B (cf. 1393 C, 1970 D, 3306 C, 6627 D), all depend on bad readings; so also *swych[ë] auenture*, 5991 A (swich[ë] C, suchë D), in which we should read *swich* (*swych*) *an* (with B cp. John's Hl. 2392; *swiche an* G).

II. Plural[3]:

The plural ends in -e. Thus,—swiche fyue, 1211 (-[e] D, A †); swyche tweye, 1267 (such[e] D); suche tales, 1393 (-[e] B, -[e] D, -[e] tale[s] C); swiche sikes, 4207 (-[e] B, whiche C, wych[e] E). So we should read,—swych[e] fyue, 1213 (-e BC; D †); swych[e] sorwful sykes, 4203 (-e BE); swych[e] twelue, 5064 (-e D, -e tweine † C). Before vowels this -e is elided and often not written: cf. 1292, 2435, 3523, 3696, 3985, 4009, 4205, 6192, 6737. Cases of apocope occur: swich thornes, 2359 (swechę C, suchę ? D);[4] if ye be swych youre, 1426 (swichę B, swich C,

[1] Either *the whichę thyng trewëly*, or *the whichë thyng trewęly*.
[2] Supply [*the*] in A.
[3] Variations in spelling not registered except as they concern final -e or MS. A.
[4] It is possible to read *swich*[ë] if we read *sendę* (mittat); BD have *send*.

such D); swych festes, 7792 (swich B, swechę C, suchę D). For *suchę thyngis*, 562 C, read *swech thyng*.

## § 79. VII. Other pronominal words.

same (O.N. samr, *definite* sami; cf. A.S. same, *adv.*), selue (A.S. sylf, self, *definite* -a), in the definite use,—the same prys, 1266; the same thing, 1269; cf. 2606, 4390 (the selue wyse C), 6087 (C †, the self[e] wit BD), 8018; the same hele, 7779; this same wyse, 5706 (the s. D); that selue wyse, 3197 (selwe C, self[e] D); this selue swerd, 5902 (seluyn C, the same D). (Cf. m̄yself, etc., § 75.)

som (A.S. sum), *adj. and subst.* I. Sing. (i.) 33, 555, 844; cf. 973, 1215, 1344, 2210, 2884, 3333, 4658, 7068, 7115, etc. Irrational e's are sometimes found, even in A: as, in somę lond, 1123 ABD; sommę swych fantasye, 3874 A (som B, sum C, somę D †). [Var. BD somę; C sum; D sommę.] (ii.) 1197 (-*e* D), 2079 (sum C, some D †). II. Plural, some, (i.) 240 f (: ynome *p.p.* : ouercome *p.p.*), 2234 f (: by-come *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.*), 3449 f (: ycome *p.p.* : nome *p.p.*), 5630 f A (sone † B, som D) (: to come : ouercome *p.p.*), 5730 f (C †, som D) (: come *inf.* : ouer-come *p.p.*), 7246 f (som C, somme D) (: come *inf.*); somme, 5657 f A (some B, som D) (: to come); som men, 1132 (somę B, somë graue D), 1341 (sum C, somę D), 2503 summę C, somę D)[1], 7123 (somen CD, somme han A), 7167 (-ę BD); somę, 1866 ‡ D, 2669 ‡ D, 3333 ‡ D; some, 1132; som, *before vowels* (var. BCD some, D somme), 911, 1042, 2257, 2523, 4403; some han, 913; somme han, 7123 (som men B, somen CD).

And *somë* (somme G) wolë (wold BDG, wolde C Cp. Hl. 4912), mucche (muche B, frete meche C, monche D, methe G, frete Hl. 4912) here (hire B, her D, he G, and Hl. 4912) mete (mone C, brede D, meten G, be hem self Hl. 4912) allone (alon CD, al on G, alone Hl. 4912). See ten Brink, § 327.

And *som* (somę BCD) thow seydest hadde a blaunchë feuere, 907, 909.

somwhat, sumwhat (A.S sumhwæt), *sbst.* (used also adverbially), cf. 672, 1646, 2078, 2394, 2410, 5187.

other (A.S. óðer). I. as *adj.* (*a*) *singular*, other (var. B oother; D othir),[2] both definite and indefinite, before both vowels and conso-

[1] Read *wold*[*e*] in D.

[2] *Othere* is sometimes found in the singular; see 352 C, 489 C, 4055 A, 4826 C, 7039 A. In 348 C, read *othir enchesoun* for *othir entencioun*.

nants : cf. 348, 352, 444, 489, 577, 702, 707, 709, 1574, 1592, 1639, 1894, 2079, 2251, 2537 f, 2747, 3506 ‡ A, 3586, 3953, 4050, 4573, 4826, 6180, 6493, 7573, 8044 A, 8055;[1] non other wyse, 5955 (not otherwyse C); o tyme ek and other, 2537 f (: brother); the tother side, 7050 A (that other BCD); at the other out it wente, 5096 (attother C, at other? D); noon nother, 7039 B. (*b*) In the plural of the attributive use (whether definite or indefinite), *othere* (dissyllabic) is the regular spelling of AC, *other* of B, and *othir* or *other* (var. *odir*) of D : cf. 179, 355, 463, 465, 1583 (oothere B), 1854 D, 2152, 2260, 2430, 2527, 2566, 3777, 4716, 5539, 5995, 8139 A. But *other* also occurs in A : cf. 26, 314 (other thing) (?), 1860.

II. As substantive : (*a*) singular, *other*, *another*, regularly : cf. 203, 643, 1449 (*neut.*), 2063, 2703 f, 3093 f, 3521, 3819, 4888, 5068 f, 5118 f, 5271 f, 5792, 5911, 7871 f. [Var. D othir.] *othĕre* occurs : cf. 203 C, 3093 fB, 5253 A (prob. plural); an other in, 3618 (a nother B, another C, a nothir D), cf. 5351 A. (*b*) Plural. Forms as in I. *b* : cf. 1903, 3440, 5310, 6305, 6735 (oother B), 6738 (oother D); but I have not noted *other* in A.—these othere in (*pl.*), 893 A (other B; C?; other vertus? D). For *othĕrĕ seyn*, 6735 C, read *othĕre seyn* [*that*].]

Note.—For the genitive singular *otheres* (dissyllable), see 3792, 4532 (othir† D), 8127 (other† D); otheris, 3586‡ D. [Var. C otheris *dissyl.*] For the genitive plural *otheres* (dissyllable), see 8139 BD (othere *dissyl.* A).

ech (A.S. ǽlc), adjective and substantive; eche, 510, 2703 (ich B, euerychę ‡ C), 3031 (ich B, iche C); cf. 637, 643, 1127, 3263 A, 3266, 3850 D, 4182, 4890, 5069, 5911 A, 6204; ech for, 5074 (iche C, eche D); eche rakel dede and eche vnbrydled chere, 3271 (ech . . . ech B, eche . . . eche C, eche . . . eke D). eche, 1432 (ech BD, vch C), 1479, 3819 (ech BC), 4532 (ich B), 4888, 5000 (ech B), 6149 (ech BD); cf. 2063, 2567, 3263 C (ich B), 3792, 4074, 5911, 7871, 8112; eche hym, 1071 (ech B, eche wight D†); eche a del, 3536 (ech B); iche, 3275 C (eche D; euery wyght AB); ech, *bef. vowels*, 1078 (*-e* D), 4644 (*-e* BCD).—echone, 4880 f (echon C, euerychon ‡ D) (: allone).

Note.—The *Troilus* MSS. give no evidence for a dat. *eche* (see ten Brink, §§ 255, 260 *β*).

euery (A.S. ǽfre + A.S. ǽlc) counts as a dissyllable (cf. ten Brink, § 262). The usual spelling is *euery* (cf. 84, 101, 185, 268, 328,

[1] *Another* is variously written *an other*, *another*, *a nother*, *a-nother*, cf. 577, 709, 1894, 3953, 6493.

382, 397, 444, 844, 1097, 1273, 1280, 1478, 1613, 1675, 1686, 1800, 1889, 1975, 2033, 2074, 2262, 2472, 2663, 3023, 3068, 3196, 3275, 3339, 3369, 3445, 3469, 3670, 3850, 4527, 6012, 6341, 6998, 7121, 7478 (var. euęri, as 3074[1] C, 3322 C). But *euęrich* (2251 B (euere-ich), 4338 B, 6533 AB), *euęrych* (6180 ACD, 6533 D, 7683 B), *euęrychę* (512 D, 2703 C ‡), and *euęryche* (6533 C) also occur. In the following lines we must read *euerych*, *euery* as a trisyllable, or regard the verses as consisting of nine syllables:

Euery thing that souned into badde, 6338.

Euerych (euery C) ioye or ese (ese (is) C) in his contrarye, 7742 (D †).

Note.—Certain apparent instances of trisyllabic *euery* (*euęri*) disappear on comparison of MSS. Such are 2676 A, 3074 C, 3334 C, 3362 A, 3671 A.

*euęrychon* rhymes sometimes with words that have no final -e, sometimes with those that have. Thus,—euęrichon, euęrychon, 154 f (-oun B) (: Palladion), 5633 f (: on : noon); euęrichone, 176 f (-ychon B, echëon ‡ D) (: allone); euęrychone, 847 f (-on C) (: ouer gon(e) *inf.*), 905 f (-on BCD) (: allone : grone *inf.*), 5611 f (-on CD) (: allone : mone *n. moan*) (cf. also 2683 f, 3254 f, 3507 f, 4880 ‡ f D, 5529 f, 5440 f, 8230 f).

any, ony (A.S. ǽnig), sg. and pl., cf. 20, 23, 848, 963, 1259, 8044, etc. [Var. C oni; D eny.]

eyther (A.S. ǽgðer), adj. and sbst., (i.) 4792, 7869 (D †), 8127. (ii.) 5695. [Var. BD either; D eythir.]

Note.—For *eyther* in *ȝoure eyther loue*, 4830 B, A has *bothere*, C *bothois*, D *bothe*, EG Cp. *brother* †, John's *bother*, Harl. 2392 *bothes*.

neyther (A.S. ne + A.S. ǽgðer), sbst., (i.) 5033; (ii.) 5792 (other † C). [Var. BD neither.]

bothe (O.N. báðir), *adj. pl.*, 139 f, 4782 f, 5698 f, 6506 f (both BD, bethe C); bothe yow, 983; vs bothe two, 1034; hem bothe leste, 4521 (hem ‡ two ? D),[2] 6880 (-[e] B). (Cf. also 687 (-[e] D),[3] 984, 1248 (bathë ? B), 1412, 1526 AC, 1572, 1585, 2277, 2373 (bathë B), 2825, 3262, 3784, 4007, 4065, 4160 BCD, 4312, 5254 ? D, 5794, 5894 (-[e] D),[4] 6176, 6512, 7497); bothe, 1414 (-ë apaire ‡ D; bethe C), 2961 (both BD), 4528 (both BD), 4955 (both BD, bothę † ȝoure C), 5546 AD (both B), 5592 (both ‡ with D), 5595 (both B); bothe his, 2059 (both B); -e here (*gen. sg.*), 2914 (both B, -ë ‡ D).

[1] Read *woyd*[*ed*].
[2] brought[e] C, or supply [*that*].
[3] Old-style verse numbers indicate that B has *both*[*e*].
[4] Supply [*we*] in D.

Rhyme words.—wrothe *adj. pl. prcd.* (*all exc.* 5698), forsothe (5698).
Note 1.—There are no genuine cases of apocope (cf. 4955 † C, 5592 ‡ D). In 1526 BD, for *bothe to deye* read *bothe deye* (with AC).
Note 2.—The genitive plural is seen in *ourę bothe labour*(ę), 965 (*our bothe* D, *our bothis* C); *hirę bothe auys*, 3295. Cf., however, *yourę bothcrę loue*, 4830 (*eyther* B, *bothcis* C, *bothe* D, *bother* John's, *bothes* Hl. 2392, *brother* † EGCp.).

owene, owen, owne, see § 53, V., p. 126.

men = one. The use of *men* as an indefinite pronoun (= Ger. *man*) is seen in *men is nought alwey (y)plesed*, 3288 (man is C, men be D), and in *men was wont*, 5528 (men werę wonę C). In such cases as *men clepeth*, 6674 (callyn ‡ C, clepë ‡ an D), 7576 B (-ęth A, -yn C, -ë D), *men seyth* (seyn BD) (see other examples in § 97), the verb may be regarded as plural (cf. *of whos folye men ryme*, 532 f, and see 241, 748, 7105 f). The form *me* does not occur in the *Troilus* (but see 5496 † C).

oon, on, o; noon, non, no (A.S. án, nán).[1] I. The full forms are found in all substantive constructions; so also in adjective constructions when the adjective follows its noun or stands by itself in the predicate. Thus,—

of yow oon, 350 f (on(e) BD, on C); to louę swych on, 369 (oon B); so goodly on, 373 (on(ę) B); quod first that oon(*e*), 5349 (oon B, on C, the toon(*e*) D); I loue oon(ę) best, 667 (on C, on(ę) D); cf. 203, 521, 619, 626, 955 (an B), 1668, 1923, 2259 f, 2666, 2770 f, 7271 f; 8227 f, etc., etc.

oon (*neut.*) thenketh the bere, 6115; oon (*neut.*) of the tweye, 494 (on BC; D †); auauntoure and a lyere al is on, 3151 f (oon(e) B, on(e) D, is al on C); euęre yn oon, 816 (oon(ę) B, on C, on(ę) D); they felle at oon, 3407 f (atton(e) B, at on C, at on(e) D); on(e) of tho (*neut.*), 5087 (oon B, on C, oon(e) D).

whan ye ben on, 2825 f (oon B, on(e) D); cf. 4247 f, 5254 f.

oon the best, 474 (on(ę) D, on ‡ ǫf the beste C); oon the beste knyght, 1074 (oon(ę) B, on D); on(ę) the fairest, 1831 (oon B, on(ę) D ‡ (?), on ‡ of the fayreste C).

clerkes grete many on, 5630 f (oon(e) B, grete cl. m. on(e) D).[2]

nas noon so faire, 101 (non BC, so fair was non(e) D); cf. 188, 1287, 1587, 1830, 1862, 2826 f, etc.); non(*e*) of tho, 924 (noon B, non C); thenk not on smert and thow shalt fele noon, 5128 f none B, non C).

pes ther may be noon, 6021 f (non BC, non(e) D); other bote is noon, 4050 f (non BC, noon(e) D); other wolę she non, 3153 f

[1] Cf. ten Brink, §§ 247, 264, 270.

[2] B † omits *clerkes*.

(noon B, non(e) D); swych a ryng I trowe that ye haue non, 3735 f (noon C, none D); nor other cure canstow noon, 757 (non(e) B, non C, *om.* † D); cf. 1451 f, 1702 f, 1809 f, etc.

cause non, 3993 f (noon(e) D); storye noon, 3341 (B † C †, non(e) D); lady noon, 6308 f (non C); bote noon, 7690 f (non BD; C †).

Pl., But whether that sche children hadde (hadde ‡ c. A) or noon, 132 f (non BC, non(e) D) (: goon *inf.*).

II. In the attributive position, *o, no* are the forms usually found before a consonant (but C is fond of *non*); *on, oon, non, noon,* before a vowel or *h*. Thus,—

o day, 1573 (a B, oo C); o thing, 3725 (on C); not o word, 3899 (a B, on C; D †), cf. 1023; o god, 6506 (on(e) D, on † good C); cf. 673, 1122, 1253, 2118, etc.

no deuocioun, 187 (non C); no man, 238; no shame, 374 (ne † CD); no maner weye, 495; cf. 437, 590, 600, 631, 640, 670, 685, 689, 714, 722, 733, 737, 1281, 4118, etc.

Pl., no dremes, 7644; no suche tales, 1393 (non swich tale † C); cf. 7089.

oon entente, 61 (on D); on assent, 5008 (oon B, comune ‡ D), etc.

noon other bote, 352 (non BCD); non yuel, 1666 (non BCD); non other wyse, 5955 (not ‡ C); cf. 1538, 3826, 6805, 7039, 7451, 7573, 8055, etc.

Pl., none other fownes, 465 (doon † A, non C, non othir ‡ fantasye D).[1]

noon helpe, 695 (non BCD); non hosbonde, 1839 (noon B, none (?) D); noon harm, 1886 (non CD), cf. 1661; noon hope, 3257 (non BC, no D); non heuy thought, 3981 (no B); noon hede, 4671 (non BD); noon honour, 6771 (non BCD); non(e) hate, 477 (non CD).

Note 1.—As indefinite article *a* is used before consonants, *an* before a vowel or *h*: an other, 540 (another C, a nother B, other *pl.* ‡ D), cf. *other,* above; an a, 171 (D *om.* ‡ an); an asse, 731; an errour, 1001; etc., etc.; an heuenysh, 104 (a ‡ perfit D); an heuene, 1722, 1911; an hors, 223; an hauk, 671; an hows, 1058; an hed, 1952 (han hed B); an herte, 2956; an hard request, 2990; an heigh matere, 3128 (D †); an halle, 3698; an helle, 7759; etc.

Note 2.—In 645 ABD, *Sith thus of two contraries is a lore* (on lore C), *a* apparently = the numeral rather than the article (see also the variants in the examples under *o*, above).

ought (A.S. áwiht, áht, ówuht, óht), (i.) cf. 578, 3309, 5947, 8100, etc.; (ii.) cf. 123, 1028, 3366, 7485, etc. [Var. B aught, ouzght;

[1] In C, read *desyre* for *desyred.*

C ouȝt, auȝt; D aught, oght.] Woot *ought* my lord . . . this matere, 2711 (-(e) B, ouȝt C, oght D); that I haue out myswent, 633 (aught B, ouȝt C, oght D).

nought (A.S. náwiht, etc.), (i.) cf. 444 f, 1690 f, 5180, 5729 f, 6463 f, 7483, 7527 f, etc.; (ii.) cf. 4878, etc. [Var. BC nouȝt; D noght.] For *nought, nowght*, as a strong neg. particle, cf. 576 f, 807 f, 4344 f; an interesting "transitional" case is 1660 f: But for to saue his lyf and elles *nought* (-ȝt C, not D) (: wrought *p.p.*).

## § 80. *Al*, singular.

I. In its strictly adjective use *al* (sg.) is commonest before the definite article (cf. 212, 1192, 1224, 1506, 1833, 1966, 2626, 2844, 3220, 3277, 7581) and other more or less definite words. Thus,—before *this* (cf. 504, 551, 1101, 1262, 1383, 1509, 1934, 2405, 2446, 2580, 2675, 2685, 2798, 2892, 3173, 3302, 3358, 6764)[1]; before *that* (cf. 1036, 3071, 4751); before *thilke* (cf. 2873, 3560); before *thi* (cf. 522, 589, 830, 2401, 2597, 3205); before *my* or *myn* (cf. 721, 873, 1954, 1956, 2083, 2770, 2977, 3020, 3085, 3235, 3843, 4140, 4146, 4749, 5602);[2] before *his* (cf. 265, 327, 665, 994, 1142, 1419, 1657, 2442, 2623, 2637, 3278, 3726, 6438, 6927, 7902); before *here* (*poss. sg.*) (cf. 2214, 2555, 2752, 2757); before *hire* (*poss. pl.*) (cf. 63); before *swych* (cf. 2824, 4241, 7125); before *youre* (cf. 4741).

Note.—In these uses the word is regularly written *al*; but *alle* (*allę*) is also found.[3] Thus,—allę this thyng, 2001 A (al BC, alt the thinges D); allę this matere, 2514 AB (of ‡ this m. C; D (?)); allę the richesse, 3191 (al BC, al the ‡ rehetyng D (?));[4] allę this work, 3544 (al CD); allę that tale, 4245 (al BD; C †); allę ourę labour, 948 (al C); allę his fulle myȝt, 1419 C (allę his ful[le] C, al his fulle A, al his ful[le] D) (cf. 7046). Cf. also, for *allę* in these uses, B 212, 1192, 1506, 1509, 1934, 1954, 2083, 2405, 2824, 3220, 7125; for *alle his*, B 265, 994, 1142, 2623, 3726, 6927.

II. The half substantive use of the singular *al* (as in: *here is al, al is wel*, etc.) requires no special notice. The proper form is of course *al* (cf. 544, 952, 1045 f, 1406, 1757, 2000, 2297, 2583, 3101, 3148, 3370, 3482, 3494, 3687; 4459, 4641, 7378), but *alle* is sometimes found; the final -e, however, has no significance, and is never sounded (thus: allę, 2583 B, 3370 B; allę, 1406 B, 1757 B, 3482 B, 3687 B, 4459 B, 7378 B). For the substantive use of *al* (sg.) as object of a verb, where the proper form is of course *al*, cf.

[1] For cases where no noun follows the *this*, cf. 351, 386, 2544, 2591, 2716, 4638, 5062, 5734.

[2] Remark 1914 f.

[3] B 2626 is unmetrical, unless, with Furnivall, we supply [*to*].

[4] Supply [*his*] in B.

1302, 1914 f, 2409, 2680, 3102 BCD, 3766, 4027, 4166 f, 5636, 8180. Here too *alle* is found, both at the end of the verse (cf. 4166 f B) and elsewhere (for *allę*, cf. 1302 B, 3102 A, 3766 B; for *alle*, cf. 4207 B), but the -e is never sounded. For *al* (sg.) used substantively after prepositions (as, *yn al, for al, ouer al, with-al*, etc.), cf. 396, 437 f, 921 f, 1129 f, 2306, 2494, 2655, 2709, 3306, 3319 f, 7183 f, 7682 f. As before, the variants in -e are merely graphical (cf. 921 f B, 1129 f B, 2655 f B, 7183 f B, 7682 f B; for *allę*, cf. 396 B, 3306 C). Exception—with alle, 288 f (: falle *inf.*). *This is the only case.*

Note. 1.—Observe: *he al hool*, 3855; *thy lady vertuous is al*, 891 f (alle B) (: in general : yn special); *whos I am al and*, etc., 4449 (*alle* B); *this* (= this is) *al and som*, 5855 (*alle & sommę* D), cf. 5936.

Note 2.—The spelling of AC is almost uniformly *al* (*aH* occurs, however, in 386 A, for example). In D aH is very common.

III. The form *allë* in the singular is found or required in the following verses:

In whom that *al*[*le*] *vertu* lyst abounde, 1244 (all[e] B, euęry D; C *is diff.* †).

As *alle trowthe* and *al*[*le*] *gentillesse*, 1245 (alle . . . alle B, al[le] . . . al[le] C, in all[e] trouthe and all[e] ientilnesse D).

To euery wight that *alle prys* hath he, 1273 (al the prys C, al[le] pris D).

By *al*[*le*] *right* it may do me no shame, 1848.

In *al*[*le*] *ioye* and surętе out of drede, 1918 (alle . . . seurte B, al[le] . . . seurte CD).

Thurgh which is *al*[*le*] *sorwe* fro me ded, 1930 (Thorugh [which] is allë s. f. m. d. B, Thour wiche as † al sor f. m. d. C, Thurgh which is al[le] sorow fro me dede D).

To flemen *alle manerę vice* and synne, 1937 AB, (To fle[me]n alle maner v. & s. C, To flemë al[lë] manerę v. a. s. D).

Of *alle ioye* hadde opned herę the yatе, 3311 (al[le] B, alle . . . opęnyd C, al[le] ioy . . . opęnyd D).

With *alle ioye* and *allë frendës fare*, 3447 ([and] B, al[le] i. & al[le] frendis f. C, al[le] . . . al[le] D).

And in despit hadde *alle wrecchednesse*, 4629 (al[le] C, despite had al[lë] D)

And *alle worldly blysse* as thenketh me, 5497 (And (and) alle B, And euęry wordęly ioye C, all[e] wordly blisse D).

By *alle right* and in a wordes fewe, 5942 (al[le] BC).[1]

[1] In CD supply [*a*].

As I that *al*[*le*] *trouthe* in yow entende, 6311 (all[e] D).

Thus Pandarus with *al*[*le*] *peyne* and wo, 6861 (alle D).

Enlumyned with the sonne of *alle blysse*, 6911 (enlùmynèd with sonne of a. b. B, enlùmynyd with the forme of a. b. C, enlùminèd with sonne of a. b. D).

And here I dwelle out-cast from *alle ioye*, 6978 (cast out C, out(e) cast(e) D).

And thus despeired out of *alle cure*, 7076 (oute BD ; 7 *lines om.* † C).

But *alle trouthe* and *alle gentilnesse*, 7980 (al[le] . . . al[le] B, alle . . . al[le] C, alle trouth and al[le] D).

But subgit be to *alle poesyé*, 8153 ABD (*not in* C).

It will be observed that in all these cases *alle* has a natural accent, and consequently needs an ictus, and that the noun that follows is accented on the first syllable. In these circumstances the form *al* is obviously impossible. In other words, the verse will not bear such a phrase as *al sorwe* when *al* is emphatic: the poet must use a form *alle*, or give up the phrase. Child (§ 30) has cited several cases of this *alle*. Ten Brink ignores the idiom. Freudenberger, Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts in Chaucers heroischem Verse, 1889 (Erlanger Beiträge, iv.), p. 35, remarks that Chaucer "vor Abstrakten im Singular häufig die schwache Form *alle* setzt, was auch die bessern Hss. meist haben," referring to ten places in the *Canterbury Tales* and to eight in the *Troilus* (1848, 1930, 3311, 3447, 4629, 5942, 7980, 8153). As to the grammar of the final -e, one hardly dares to hazard a guess.

If the noun that follows allows an accent on the second syllable, *allë* is of course unnecessary. Thus,—

As to my dome in *àl Troyès cyte*, 100 (allę B).

To *àl honoùr* and bounte to consente, 2529 (alle BC).

Note.—In *al nyght*, either *al* or *nyght* receives the accent, but not both. Hence,—àl nyght, 3705 (C (?), allę B), 4308 ; al nỳght, 3710 (allę B), 3715 (allę B, al † wold D).

IV. *Al*, whether adjective or substantive, has in the plural (1) regularly the form *alle*, which is of course elided to *alle* before (2) vowels, and (3) *h* in certain cases. When such elision takes place, we sometimes find (4) the *-e* left off, as in the case of all other words in elided *-e*.

(1) ye wysë proude . . . folkës alle, 233 f (folk[es] alle C, folkys alle D) (: thralle *inf.* : bifalle *inf.*).

allë ye, 340 (al[le] D).

of allë louers, 376.

Mystrusten alle or elles allę leue, 688 (al . . . al[le] C, aH . . . al to leue D).
the Grekes alle, 1039 f (: falle *inf.*).
alle prowde (*omnes superbae*), 1487 (al[le] D).
herę brighte thoughtes alle, 1854 f (aH D) (: falle *inf.*).
this otherę termes alle, 2152 f (: calle *inf.*).
alle folk, 2695 (al[le] BD); cf. 2813.
hem alle thre, 2805 (C (?); al[le] D) (cf. 987, 3051).
on alle syke, 2903 (al[le] D).
thyne hestes alle kepe, 3261 (this hestis aH[e] D).
alle tho that lyuen, 3272 (al[le] BD).
of vs alle, 3600 f (of hem alle BC, of hem aH D) (: calle *inf.* : falle *inf.*).
as ye wommen demen alle, 3614 f (aH D) (: calle *inf.* : calle *reticulum*).
amonges alle, 3700 f (aH D) (: halle *n.* : falle *p.p.*); cf. 6614 f.
we shullę ben alle meryę, 3794 (al[le] BD).
in alle nedes, 4614 (allę the B, al the D).
the goddes alle, 4930 f (aH D) (: calle *inf.* : falle *p.p.*).
of sorwes alle, 5163 f (: byfalle *inf.* : calle *ind.* 1 *sg.*).
hom they wenten alle, 5392 f (aH D) (: out of the halle : falle *inf.*).
alle, 5670 f (aH D) (: falle *accidunt*); cf. 5712 f.
among vs alle fynde, 6488 (al[le] B).
houses alle, 6910 f (aH D) (: out falle *p.p.*).
this drede I most of alle, 7067 f (aH D) (: by-falle *accidat* : falle *cadam*); cf. 5762 f.
herę corn and vynes alle, 7833 f (aH D) (: in stalle).
(Cf. also 561 f,[1] 903 f, 3527 f, 3530 ‡ B, 5090 f, 5130 f, 6143, 6533 f, 6561, 6725, 6894 f, 6955, 7426 f, 7542 f, 7783.)

(2) men myghte on vs alle y-se, 1439 (alle se C; *om.* † D).[2]
the goddes alle, 3226 (al D).
his(ę) wordes alle, 3339; cf. 4384.
I speke hem alle vnder correccioun, 4174.
myn otherę thinges alle yfere, 5995 (al B, aH D)[3]; cf. 8134.
to fayllen alle yfere, 6114.
(Cf. also 240, 463, 688, 2858, 3449, 3608, 4109 ‡ D, 4609, 5730, 6141, 7246.)

(3) alle herę (*poss. sg.*) lymes, 282 (al D).

[1] In all the cases in rhyme cited is this parenthesis the rhyme-words are infinitives.
[2] Supply [*myghte*] in B.
[3] Supply [*ek*] in B.

alle herę (*poss. sg.*) wommen, 3530 (al D, allë ‡ wommen B); alle herę sore sykes, 7397 (aH D); cf. 2513.
alle his goodly wordes, 7081 (7 *lines om.* † C, aH D).
alle hirę (*poss. pl.*) goddes, 8213 (aH D).

(4) ye lyue al yn lyst, 330 (loue al in rest C$^{c}$).[1]
al and some, 1448[2], 2234 (alle C).
al hirę folk, 1995 B (alle C, aH D);[3] cf. 1704.
aH hisę fyngres, 2117 (alle BC, al D).
hirę folk weren al aweye, 2279 B (alle C, *om.* † D).[3]
thei slepten al ifere, 3588 (alle C).
Don olde affeccions al ouer go, 5086 (alle BC, aH D †).[1]
late hym haue al yfere, 2562 (alle B). [Singular?]
brethęren al yfere, 5868 (alle BCD).[4]

V. But *allę* is the plural form before *the, this,* etc., when these words count as a syllable (ten Brink's rule, § 255). Thus,—
allę ‡ the ladyis, 186 C (ay ABD).
allę youre obseruaunces, 337 (al D).
allę the men, 838 (al D).
allę these othere, 893 (allę this other B, al the other? D ‡).
allę the othęs, 1384 (al C, aH D; othës B, othis CD).
allę the weyes, 1907 (al D).
allę the folk, 1973 (al BD). [Plu. verb.]
aH the thingęs ‡, 2001 D (*sg.* is right).
allę the dores, 3075 (aH D).
allę the temples, 3225 (al D).
allę thesę thynges, 3641 (al this wonder B, of this wonder CD); cf. 2405 C.
allę yourę wordes, 4409 (al B, allę thesę C).
allę the goddes, 4514 (al the goodnes † D).
allę the nedes, 4614 B (al the D, alle nedes AC).
allę yourę frendes, 6218 (alle ‡ ourę C).
allę this nyghtes two, 6683 (al B, allę thesę C, aH thes D).
allę thesę thynges, 8086 (al B, aH D).

Note.—Allë thesę loueręs (?), 2153 ‡ A, needs transposition (*thesę l. allë*).

al the peple, 1743 (allę B).
aH the thingęs, 2001 D ‡ (allę this thyng A, al BC).
aH thesę thynges, 2350 (al this B, C †, al this thing[es] D).

[1] Can this *al* be adv.?
[2] Singular?
[3] A ‡ omits *alle*.
[4] Supply [*and*] in C.

al this folk, 2652 (allę thisę folk C); al the world, 3119 (al BC, al the peple D)[1]; cf. 1463, 3119, 3264, 3318, 4765.

al the prophesies, 7857 (allę D, -cy C).

Ten Brink (§ 255) leaves the impression that *alle* pl., is usually apocopated before "syllable-building" article *the* (or pronoun), *but not otherwise.* This is surely not accurate. We should expect such apocope as well when *the* is reduced to *th'*, if the word following the *th'* is accented on the second syllable. Thus we have,—

This yard was large and rayled aH the aleỳes, 1905 (allę thalèyes B, allę the aleỳs C, D *om.* al).[2]

Indeed it is hard to see how we can in any circumstances have the order "*àllë* × '" without apocope. Accordingly we find,—

Anòther daỳ shal tòrne vs àllę to iòye, 6293 (aH D, com vs al D).

This is o word for al, this Troylus 4502 (al, that B). [Sing. ?]

Now hem he hurte and hem allę down he caste, 1284 (cf. *var. ll.*), is not a sure case. *Allę* may be merely the adverbial *al.* Similarly the construction of *al* is not entirely unambiguous in,—

And of the furyes al she gan hym telle, 7861 (furies also? C, fùriès she ‡ D). [Should we read *als*?]

Me from disesis from allę peynys smert, 7783 C, should be emended to *disese of allë peynys*, &c., as AD indicate.

On hys by-haluę which that vs allę sowle sende, 2819 A, is also clearly wrong. The reading of G: On his half which(e) that soule vs allë sende, seems right, and is rather supported by B † and C. Cp. and John's read: On (Of J) his halfe (half J) which (*om.* J) that soule vs alle sende.

In 688 D, read *allë leue* for *al to leue.*

Note 1.—In 3765, *Consìdęrëd àllë thìngës às thęy stòde* (*al*[*lë*] *thing*[*is*] D), is of course to be read, not,—*Consìdërèd allę thìngës*, etc. But cf. *Consìdęred àH*[*ë*] *thỳng it maỳ not bè*, 2375 (*al*[*lë*] *thyng*(*e*)) B, *allë thyng*(*e*) *C*, *al thing wel*(*e*) D). In 1920, *al* is doubtless a collective singular.

Note 2.—In the following lines *thyng* is probably to be regarded as a plural.

Ouęr al[le] thyng he stood [for] to byholde, 310 (alle thing(e) . . . for to B, alle thyng(e) [he][3] . . . for to C, al[le] thing (s)he stood [for] to D).

Necc al[le] thing hath tyme I dar avowe, 3697 (allë thyng(*e*) BC).

[1] In the case of collective nouns (like *world* = people), I have assumed that they take plural constructions unless the text has some indication to the contrary (as, *e.g.*, al the world *is* blind, 3370). This remark of course does not apply to *al this world* = this universe, 3215, and such cases (cf. 3302). For doubtful instances, cf. 173, 804, 1573, 4086 (allę this world AB), 4446.

[2] A reads *gardan*, repeated by error from the preceding line. *Yard* is surely right (ȝerdę B, ȝerd CD). C omits *was*, which must be supplied.

[3] *thyngë* = *thyng he.*

In alle thyng(e) is myn entente clene, 4008 (al[le] B, alle thyng . . . entent[e] C, al[le] thing al D).
That wost of allë thing(e) the sothfastnesse, 5742 (of al this thyng(e) B, of al this thyng C, of allë thing(e) D).
As to: Whan that he sey that al[le] thyng was wel, 3538 (alle thyng(e) B, wostë alle thyng(e) C, wist[e] that al thing D), see p. 109.

§ 81. The genitive plural of *al* (cf. Child, § 44; ten Brink, § 255) remains in the *Troylus* in,—

alderbeste, 4439 f (alder beste B, aldyr best C, altherbest D).

alder best (*adv.*), 1001 (alder best(e) B, aldyr best C, althermost D).

alderfirst, 1062 [1] (altherferst D), 4736 (alderfirst(e) B, alther ferst D); alderferst, 5494 (aldirfirst(e) B, aldirfirst D [2]); alderfirst[e], 2939 (aldir ferste C, altherferst[e] D [3]).

alder-lest, 604 (alderlest B, al there † lest C, altherlest D).[4]

alderleuest, 3081 (aldir leueste C, alther levest D), 6939 (aldyr loue-lyest ‡ C).

aldermost, 152 (althermoost D), 248 B (addermost A, aldyrmost C, althermoost D), 996 (aldyr most C, althermost D); [5] althermost, 4107 ‡ D[c].

alderwisest, 247 (aldyrwysest C, altherwysest D).

## ADVERBS AND OTHER PARTICLES.

§ 82. Anglo-Saxon adverbs in -e preserve their termination in the *Troilus* (Child § 69; ten Brink, § 246, Anm.).

Note.—Besides Anglo-Saxon adverbs, the following list includes a few later analogical formations. For *blyue, inne, oute, thanne, whanne*, see § 88.

blythe, 4836 f C, is an error for *blyue*.

bryghte (A. S. beorhte), 7383 f (-ȝt C, light ‡ D) (: alighte *pret.* 3 *sg.*: myghte *pret.* 3 *sg.*); bryght and shene, 4700 (-*e* B); shyneth bright, 1849 f (-e B, -ȝt C) (: put . . . to flyght).

clene (A.S. cléne), -*e*, 4672, 7417,[6] 7561, 8058.

depe (A.S. déope), 1655 (-*e* C), 3434, 5251 f (: wepe *pres. subj. sg.*), 6621 f (: wepe *inf.*); -*e*, 272, 4341 (-e ‡ D).

dere (A.S. déore, W.S. díere, dýre), 8164 f (: pere *n.*: here *inf.*); -*e*, 810, 7329 (der D); -*e* haue, 4953. [Var. B deere.]

[1] A 9-syl. verse in ABD (C cut out).
[2] Supply [*me*] in D.
[3] Supply [*the*] in D.
[4] Supply [*him*] in D.
[5] For *arn* (*arc*) C (D), read *erren*.
[6] Supply [*saide*] in B, [*is*] in C.

faire, fayre (A.S. fæg(e)re), 1413 f (: apeyre *subj.* 1 *pl.*), 4398, 5684 f (: necessarie[1]); *-e*, 1971, 6710 (*om.* ‡ C).

faste (A.S. fæste), 534 f (-t B), 748 f, 917 f, 1038 f, 1229 f, 1282 f, 1361 (*om.* † A), 1742 f, 1773 f, 1957 f (-t C), 1983 f, 1985 f, 2022 f, 2239 f (-t C), 2249 f (-t C), 2360 (-[e] B), 2443 f, 2650, 2795 (-[e] B), 2999 f (-t C), 3936 f, 4029 (-[e] B, -[ë] ‡ hent D), 4609 (-[e] BE), 4779, 4792[2], 4884 (-[e] B), 4916 (-[e] B), 5182 f, 5336 f, 5576 (-[e] B), 5892[3], 6901, 6959 (-[e] B), 7317 (*-e* ‡ haddę C), 8004 f (-t C), 8185 f; fast[e] for, 962 (-e C); *-e*, 3069 (-t BD), 4705 ‡ A (sharpe B, sharp C), 6736 (-t BC), 6817; fast (*before vowels*), 1174 (*-e* C)[4], 2789 (*-e* C), 7019 (*-e* CD); fast he, 190 (-ë ‡ he C)[5]; *-e* he, 360 ‡ D, 2180 AB, 7598; *-e* herę (*gen. sg.*), 7374 (-t B; *om.* † C); *-e* hadde, 7317 ‡ C; *-e* homward, 2388 (-t BD).

In all cases registered above in which *faste* occurs at the end of a line D has *fast*, except in 5182 and in 8185 (which is not found in D). Old style figures indicate that D has *fast[e]*. In 1361 D it is possible to scan *fast.*

Rhyme words.—laste *inf.* (534, 1038, 1957, 5336, 8185), the laste, my laste (534, 917, 1038, 1229, 1773, 1957, 2022 (last[e] A), 3936, 5182, 8004), caste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (1229, 1282, 2443, 3936, 5182), caste *inf.* (748, 1773, 2249, 2999, 5336, 8185), paste *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (1742), thraste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2239), faste *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* (2249), agaste *inf.* (1982).—faste *adv.* : faste *adv.* (1983-5).

foule, fowle, *-e*, 5684, 6239 (foul B); *-e* his, 6129; -ę falle(?), 5124 (-ë CD; -ë B †).[6]

fresshe, 2985 D (frosch[e]? C, fresshly A, freshly B).

hard[e] (A.S. hearde), hard or, 1353; hard hym, 4373 (*-e* C).

heighe, heyhe, hye (A.S. héah, héage), heighe, 1486 f (hie C, hy D); hye, 3026 f (highe B, hyȝe C), 5861 f (heye B, high D, in ‡ hye C); heighe, 5658 (heigh B, high D), 6371 (?) (heigh B, hie † D), 6622 (heigh B, hye C, hie D); heyhe, 4985 (heighe B, hey C, high D).

Note.—For *hygh and low*, 3260, and *hye or lowe*, 2869, see note to *lowe.*

Rhyme words.—eye (*l.* ye) (1486), prye *inf.* (1486), glorifie *inf.* (3026), dye *inf.* (5861), melodie (3026), companye (5861):

hoote (A.S. háte), drenken (*l.* dronken) hadde as *hoot* and stronge, 4232 (hote B); cf. I hadde it neuere half so *hote* as now, 4492 (hoote B, hoot D, ofte † C).

i-lyke (A.S. ge-líce), To seruen (-yn B, *-e* D) and ben (ben(e) D, ay ben C) ay (*om.* CD) *i-lyke* (*i-lik* C, *y-lyke* D) diligent, 2986; Was euęre *y-lyk*[ë] (i-lik[e] C, yholde ‡ B) prest, 3327. (Cf. *lyk*, § 83.)

[1] So AB; *-rye* D. We must read *necessaire.*
[2] Read *ran*[*ne*] in D.
[3] Supply [*hire*] in B, [*her*] in D.
[4] Supply [*seyde*] in D.
[5] But supply [*ful*] and read *faste.*
[6] But *hath* in A is the corrector's insertion.

late (A.S. late), 3310 f (: yate *n.*), 7104,[1] 7504 f (: yate *n.*); late, 1483 (lat B, -ë war C), 3218, 7106; latë ‡ is, 7433 (-*e* BC, -ë ‡ it (?) D).[2]

longe (A.S. longe, lange), 59 f (long D), 617 f, 1487, 1630 f (long D), 2212 (langë B), 2325 f (long D), 2330 (-[e] D, -*e* B), 2475 (-[e] ? D), 2680 (-[e] D), 3043 (long † shal D), 3647 f (long D), 4988 (-[e] D), 5133, 7054 f, 7225 f, 7495, 7565 f (long D); -*e*, 2008[3], 2075, 3207 (-ë ‡ ich B)[4], 4159, 4270 (-ë ‡ as BC[5], -*e* [as] E), 5770 (alonë ‡ be C), 6350 (-ę ‡ D), 6659 (lengęr ‡ endure D), 6795; -*e* he, 723 (long D)[6]; -*e* hadde, 5832 (-*e* ‡ hire (*sg.*) C)[7]; longë ‡ of, 2807 A (-*e* his B, long his D, -*e* herę (*pl.*) C); longë here (*hic*), 3661 C[c] (-[ë] D, alwey AB).

Rhyme words.—longe *inf.* (617, 1630, 7054), honge *pres. subj.* 2 *pl.* (2325), *inf.* (7565), wronge *adj. pl.* (3647), stronge *adj. pl.* (59, 7054, 7225, 7565).

Note.—In some of the following cases there may be confusion between the adverbial and the adjective construction:

For it were a long disgression.

Fro my matère and you to *longę* to dwelle, 143-4 (-ë dwelle C, for yow long to dwelle D).

Or that it be ful *longe* (long D), 832 f (: honge *inf.*).

*Long* streyght he hyrę leyde, 5825 (-ę B, a long ? C, longë streyt(e) D).

Ten dayës nys so *longë* not tabyde, 6716 (-ę to ? ‡ C, -ë to D).

How *longe* it was bytwene, 7449 ABD ([how] longe C).

Thenk not *longę* to abyde, 7518.[8] (*Certainly adj.* = Don't regard it as tedious.)

To *longe* were it for to dwelle, 7847 (long it B, [al] to longe C, longe it D).

lowe (O.N. adj. lág-r), heng here hed ful lowe, 1774 f (lawe B) (: throwe *n.*); stoupen on hirę stalk[e] lowe, 2053 f (: rowe *n.* : throwe *inf.*); lowe lowte, 3525 (-ę ‡ to D, low ‡ *risit* (?) C); she stood ful lowe and stille alone, 178 (low BD); I . . . wol . . . folowe herę spirit lowe or hye, 5861 (low B, forth ‡ C).

Note.—In "For *hygh and low* withouten ony drede I wole alwey thyne hestes alle kepe," 3260-1 (*heigh* † *a lough* B, *hey and low* C, *hy or lowe* D), and "And *hye or lowe* after (after that D) a wyght entendeth The ioyes that he hath yourę myght it sendeth," 2869-70 (*heigh or lawe* B, *hye or low* D), the construction is probably adverbial rather than adjectival.

lowde loude (A.S. hlúde), 1485 f (-d D, froude † C), 2005 (-[e] D), 2162 f (-d D), 3520 f (-d D), 3585 (-[e] D, -ę ‡ C), 7868 f; -*e*, 390 (-d D)[9]; -*e* ‡ he, 6568 C (deth ABD), 7607.

Rhyme words.—prowde *adj. pl.* (1485), the proude *sg.* (7868), koude *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2162, 3520).

[1] "But al to latë cometh the letuarye."
[2] AD easily emended so as to read *late*.
[3] Old-style figures indicate that D has *long*.
[4] But read, *longe ich* [*it*].
[5] In BC supply [*whan*] and read *longe*.
[6] Supply [*as*] in AD.
[7] Supply [*he*] in B.
[8] Dele the first (*to*) in A.
[9] Supply [*for*] in C.

narwe (A.S. nearwe), narwe ymasked, 4576 (harde ‡ C, narwe yma[s]ked A).

newe (A.S. nēowe, W.S. nī(e)we, L. neowe), 222 (-[e] B, new y-shorn D), 440 f, 2985 f, 4541 f, 6628 f, 7013 f, 7020 (-[e] BD, -ę ‡ C)[1], 7696 f (new B), 7935 f (anewe ‡ C), 7946 f; newe and newe, 2958 f (new and newe BD); newe, 364 (new B), 1907 (new BD), 5119 (new D), 7373 (new D, newęly ‡ now C); *-e* his, 2766 (new B, now ‡ D); new hym, 4388 (*-e* BCD).

Rhyme words.—hewe *n.* (440, 4541, 7935), trewe *adj. sg. indef.* (7696, 7946), *sg. def.* (2985), *pl.* (2958, 7013), vntrewe *prcd. sg.* (7935), rewe *inf.* (2958, 6628), knewe *ind. 3 pl.* (4541).

rathe (A.S. hraðe), 2173 f (: bathe *inf.*), 4867 f (: skathe *n.* : bathe *inf.*), 7300 f (: skathe *n.*).

rowe,—loken rowe, 206 f (lokyd row D) (: browe *n.*).

sharpe (A.S. sċearpe), 729 f (: harpe *n.*), 2119 f (: harpe *n.* : harpe *inf.*); *-e*, 4705 (sharp D, faste ‡ A). [Var. B charpe; C scharpe.]

shene (A.S. *adj.* scī(e)ne, scēne), 4700 f (: bytwene), 5901 f (: quene). [Var. B sheene; C schene.]

shorte; short[ë] for to syke, 2900 (schorte C). Cf. This (= this is) *short* and pleynę theffect of his message, 5552 (*-e* B, schort C, Thus shorte D).

smerte, 4905 f (: herte : sterte *inf.*).

smothe (A.S. smōðe), That han herę top ful heighe and smothe y-shore, 5658 (smoth D).

softe (A.S. sōfte), 195 f (soft D), 279 (-[e] B, *-e* he C, soft he D),[2] 914 f (soft D), 2113 f, 3284 f (soft B), 3450 (-[e] BD), 3509 f, 4480 f (-t B), 5202 f (soft B), 5884 ‡ C, 6710 f (soft B), 6982 f; *-e*, 1735 (softly ‡ synk D), 2914 (-t B, *om.* † D),[3] 4377 (-t B), 6446 (-t B);[4] soft vnpynne, 3540 (*-e* C); softe he, 3408 (-t BD). [soft † gan, 5024 B.]

Rhyme words.—ofte (*all*); a lofte, on lofte, o lofte (914, 3509, 6710).

sore (A.S. sāre), 667 f, 751 f, 827 (-ę ‡ to D), 1080 f, 1540 f, 1642, 1647 f, 2182 B (so[re] A; do ‡ C; *om.* † D), 2988, 3082 f, 3654 (-ę ‡ to D), 3748 (sor(w)e C), 3814 f, 3842,[5] 3898 f, 4370, 5378 f, 5487 f (soor D), 5559 f (C?), 5783 f, 5848, 5879 (for † B),[6] 6425, 6495, 7101 f, 7241 (D?); *-e*, 95 (therfor ‡ D), 1200; *-e* he, 3964 (ë ‡ he B, *-e* I † D), 4313 (soor B); *-e* hath, 1618.—sorę, 1404 ‡ C.

Rhyme words.—more *adj., adv., sbst.* (*all except* 7101), soore *inf.* (667), lore *n.* (751, 1080, 1647, 3082, 7101), of yore (5378). [Var. BD soore.]

[1] Perhaps adjective.
[2] *softe he* may be right.
[3] *softe* [*vp*]*on* C.
[4] Supply [*he*] in B.
[5] In C read *sore* [*that*] *I.*
[6] In C read *therwith*[*al*].

stille (A.S. stille),[1] 752 (stil[le] BD),[2] 2213 f (stiH D) (: bille *document*), 5183 f (: distille *inf.*); stille, 178 (stil D), 2000 (stil BD), 2579 (stil D), 3541 (stil D), 3790 (stile C, stiH D), 5016,[3] 5183 f (: distille *inf.*); stille ‡ gan, 1627 A (*-e* BC, stiH awey D).[4] [Var. BC stylle.]

stronge (A.S. strange), 4232 f (: longe *pl.* : wronge *pl.*). [Cf. *hoote.*]

swythe (A.S. swíðe), 5413 f (: a thousand sithe : lythe *inf.*), 7747 f (swith D) (: a thousand sithe : blythe *pred. adj. sg.*). [Var. B swithe.]

swote (A.S. swóte), swoot[e] smellen, 158 (swote B, swete C, swete smellyng flouris D).

thikke (A.S. þicce), 1541 f (thekke C, thik D) (: wykke *pred. adj. pl.* (weke C, wyk D)); thikke, 6018.[5] [Var. B thykke.]

vnnethe, vnethe (A.S. unéaðe), 3876 (-[e] B), 7583 (vnneth hym (?) BD); *-e*, 354, 1089 (-ę ‡ ȝet D),[6] 5485 (-th B, vnnethis D), 6394 (vnnethęs B), 6762 (-th B, -thë † vs D),[7] 7770 (-th D); *-e* he, 4095 (-th B, -this D), 6398 (-th B, -th ‡ for D). [Var. C onethe.]—onethę, 4920 ‡ C (wonder is the AB, wondrë is the D). (Cf. *vnnethes*, § 91).

In 1089 the accent is on the first syllable; in all the other cases, on the second.

warme, though thou sittë warme, 4472 f (: harme *inf.*).

wete, ybathed was ful wete, 5477 f (: trete *inf.*).

wyde (A.S. wíde), 629 f (: gide *inf.*), 1700 f (: ryde *inf.*), 7458 f (: chyde *inf.*); wydë where, 3246 (weyde C)[8]; wyde, 384, 1260 (meche ‡ knowe C, wyde know D). [Var. BD wide.]

yerne (A.S. georne), 2993 f, 3218 f (ȝe[r]ne B), 4774 f, 4863 f.

Rhyme words.—werne *inf.* (2993, 4774), yerne *inf.* (2993, 4863), gouerne (gouuerne A) *inf.* (3218), descerne *inf.* (4863), eterne (3218).

To these may be added the Romance words *clere* and *ferme.*

clere, 1910 f, 6237 f, 6671 f (cler D), 6941 f.

Note.—In "*cler* stod on a ground of sykernesse," 3824 (*clere* B; *clerë* D," which om. *a*), *cler* is doubtless an adjective.

Rhyme words.—dere *adj.* (6237, 6671, 6941), here *inf.* (1910), here *ind. or subj.* 1 *sg.* (6941). [Var. B cleere.]

ferme,—and thow this purpos holde *ferme*, 2610 f (: conferme *inf.*).

[1] Some of the cases cited may be adjectival. It is impossible always to distinguish between *stille* adj. and *stille* adv. even in Anglo-Saxon (cf. Grein, s. v.).

[2] In C supply [*that*].

[3] Dele (*ony*) in A.

[4] Transpose in A and read *stille*; in B supply [*to*].

[5] Supply [*flen*] in C.

[6] A has *comynge*, D *comyng*, for *connyng.*

[7] In D supply [*it*] and read *vnnethe.* Supply [*wel*] in A.

[8] Supply [*so*] in D.

Note 1.—*Deuoute* appears to be an adverb in

> Hire old vsage wolde thei not letten
> As for to honoure hire goddes ful *deuoute*,

150-151 (: aboute : doute *n.*); but it is possible that the construction is adjectival. In 5552: This (= this is) short and *pleyne* theffect of my message (pleyn C, Thus . . . pleine D), the construction is perhaps adjectival.

Note 2.—*Scarcë* (with hiatus), 1128 D, should be *scarsly*.

Note 3.—For *maugre* (O. Fr. malgré, maugré), prep., cf. 4713.

## § 83. Exceptions to § 82.

ryght (A.S. rihte), cf. (i.) (ii.) 99 f, 171, 288, 307, 1022, 1200, 2090, 2636 f, 3070 (?) f, 4674, 7614 f; vnright, 7024 f.

*Aright* (A.S. on riht) has of course no -e: cf. (i.) (ii.) 2085 f (-e B), 2346 f, 3070 ‡ f D, 3494 f, 5073 f, 6125 (-(*e*) B), 6919, 7480 f, 7943.

lyk (cf. A.S. gelíce), (i.) 5322 (-ę BD); (ii.) 1080 (-*e* D), 1129, 2700 (-*e* B, as ‡ D). vnlyk that, 2741 (-ę BD). (Cf. *ilyke*, § 82.)

Note 1.—For *fayn* and *loth* in an adverbial sense, see § 85, note 1. For *adoun*, see § 88, note 1, p. 201.

Note 2.—*Lest* (A.S. þý lǽs þe, L. leste) has lost its -e. Thus,—(i.) lest 319, 4013 (-ę B), 4032, 4253 (list B, lest C, lestę E), 4815 (list B), 4828 (-ę B), 5333 (-ę D, ȝif ‡ C); lyst ye, 2680 (list B, lest C, lest ‡ y D); (ii.) lest, 2133 (-*e* B); l. he, 5091 (list B); lyst it, 321 (lest BCD).

## § 84. Adverbs in *-liche, -lich, -ly* (A.S. *-líce, -lice*, O. N. *-liga*).

Ten Brink (§ 270) thinks he has discovered a tendency on Chaucer's part to use *-lich* or *-liche* before a vowel or h.[1] The following lists (I. and II.), which are meant to be exhaustive, exhibit the testimony of the *Troilus* MSS. on this question.

List I. contains all the adverbs which in any of the four MSS. show a form in *-lich* or *-liche*. When the same adverbs have also a form in *-ly*, references are added for that form.

List II. is intended to contain all adverbs in *-ly* not already included in I. Old-style figures indicate that the word that follows begins with a vowel or *h*. Variants in any way significant are registered, but trivial irregularities in spelling are not always noticed. It will be observed that occasionally some MS. has a form in *-lye* or *-lie* (see under *bisily, fermely, hardyly, lustily, preuely, shortly, sikerly, straungely, vnhappily*), but this spelling is unknown to A and is chiefly affected by D.

[1] "Dass er vor anlautendem Vocal oder *h* vielfach *-lich* and *-liche* statt *-ly* gebraucht."

The somewhat reckless insertion or omission of an interior *e* deserves attention (see especially *trewely* and *softely*). Some of these interior *-e* 's are due merely to analogy (cf. Child, § 71; ten Brink, § 262).

An examination of I. and II. shows that, so far as the *Troilus* MSS. are admissible as testimony, there is no tendency to use *-lich* or *-liche* before vowels and *h* to the exclusion of *-ly*, but that, on the other hand, *-lich* or *-liche* is not common before consonants. In A *-lich* (*-liche*) occurs 25 times before a vowel or *h*; in B, 39 times; in C, 16 times; in D, 8 times; whereas *-lich* (*-liche*) before a consonant is found only twice each in A and C, three times in B, and once in D. In all MSS. *-ly* is far commoner before a vowel or *h* than *-lich* (*-liche*). In the following cases (*a*—*c*) none of the four MSS. has *-lich* (*-liche*):—(a) before vowels, 771, 978, 1064, 1357, 1369, 1448, 2200, 2335, 2451, 2691, 2936, 2972, 2998, 3062, 3180, 3201, 3296, 3312, 3351, 3591, 3642, 3643, 3723, 4028, 4187, 4385, 4561, 4656, 4840, 4886, 5042, 5615, 5668, 5950, 6263, 6382, 6423, 6846, 6853, 6922, 6941, 6950, 7189, 7197, 7300, 7304, 7445, 7527, 7656 BCD, 7728, 7853, 8067, 8171, 8209, cf. 1578; (b) before *he, his, hym, hire* (poss. sg.), *heres* (sg.), *hastow, haue, hadde*, 89, 209, 274, 306, 366, 1645, 2157, 2344, 2378, 2409, 2504, 3398, 3496, 3632, 3922, 4169, 4416, 4424, 4430, 4458, 4752, 5057, 5106, 5474, 5586, 5612, 5617, 5787, 5855, 6100, 6579, 6869, 6885, 7899, 7947 (-ly(*e*) D), 7998, 8007, 8169; (c) before *helpe*, 2315; before *how*, 7449. In all, then, we have nearly a hundred instances of *-ly* before a vowel or *-h*, not counting those places in which one or more MSS. have variants in *-lich* (*-liche*).

In most of the cases of *-lich* (*-liche*) before a vowel or *h*, the adverb is polysyllabic, and an ictus falls on the termination (as, *cèrteinliche*). One might be tempted to conjecture that under such circumstances *-lich* would be preferred to *-ly* as a means of avoiding an hiatus which the ictus would make particularly noticeable; but even here *-ly* is very common (see *bisily, blỳsfully, cùrteysly*, etc.). In the present state of our knowledge, therefore, it is hardly safe to formulate a rule as to *-lich* or *-ly* before vowels and *h*, even in the cautious words of ten Brink (cf. also supra, § 72).

When the metre requires an additional unaccented syllable, the full form *-lichë* is used, never *-lyë* (see *sodeynlyche, tendreliche, wonderliche*). In rhyme *-ly* only is found.

I.

certeinliche, 6463 B (-ly ACD). certaynly, -eynly, (i.) cf. 713, 1257, 1571, 2763 f, 3401, 4616, 5295, 5459 ‡ D, 5622, 5681 f, 5714 f, 6681, 7197, 8079; (ii.) cf. 2451. cèrtaynly ‡ I (with slurred *-y*), 1531 A (cèrtein *adv.* B, sèrteyn C, cèrteyn D).

craftyliche, 2111 C (craftily AB, craftly D).

cruwellyche, 5966 A (crueliche B, crewelly C, cruelly D). cruwel[ly], (i.) 8119 (cruely B, cruelly D).

delyuerlyche, 2173 (-ly C, -lich D).

digneliche, 2109 (dyneleche C, dignlych D †).[1]

ententiflych and, 332 (-liche B, -lich D, ententif(ul)ly C).

esilyche he, 317 (-liche B, -ly D). esily, (i.) 2073; (ii.) 2998.

eternaliche, 6202 B (-ly AD, -ally ‡ within C[c]). eternally, (i.) 5137, 5449.

fer-forth-lich as, 2943 C (ferforthly D, feythfully AB).[2]

feruentlyche hym, 6046 A (-liche B, -ly CD).[3]

formeliche, 5159 B (-ly A, -aly C, formably ‡ D).

fullyche, 316 (-liche B, -ly CD); Therfore as (as a A) frend fullych yn me assure, 680 (-liche B, -ly y[n] D). fully, (i.) cf. 319, 2383, 2611, 2840, 3003, 3100, 3124, 3417, 3635, 3850, 4690, 4942, 4954, 7044, 7129, 7392, 8179; (ii.) cf. 391, 3180, 4656, 7720; fully his, cf. 4424. fully excuse (with slurred *-y*), 3652 (ful BC).

hasteliche, 5980 C (-ely AD, -ily B); hastilechę the, 6787 C (-ely ABD). hastely, (i.) cf. 4284, 5577 f, 7656 ‡ A (-ily a BCD), 7675; (ii.) 4886, 7656 BCD.

nameliche, 743 BC (-ly AD); -elych of, 1297 A (-liche BC, -ly D); -elich, (i.) 5254 C (-ly B, nam[e]ly A, -ęly D (?)); -elychę, 5996 (-lichę BD, -ly C). namely, (i.) 165, 7466, 7927; nam[e]ly, (i.) 6220 (-ë- BCD).

onlyche, 5994 A (-lich B, only ‡ but (?) C, onęly it D),[4] 7040 (-ly BC, onęly D). only, oonly, (i.) 480, 1445, 3104 (onęly B), 6330 (oonęly B, onęly D)[5]; (ii.) 3351 (C † D †); al oonly here (*eam*), 5758 ([al] only C, al onęly D †).

outreliche his, 1795 B (vttirly A, vttirliche C, vttirlich D). outrely,

[1] C has: I wot thou nyłt dyneleche ne mystileche endite. ABD have no *mystileche*.
[2] In A supply [*I*]; in D supply [*had*], or read *havë*.
[3] In BD, read *The which*[*ë*] at the beginning of the line. In C the verse consists of nine syllables, unless we read *The wich*[*ë*] for *ffor wich*.
[4] CD need correction.
[5] Perhaps adjective.

(i.) 8057 (-erly B, vttyrly C, vtterly D); cf. 382 f, 2089 f, 4328 f (outęrely C); (ii.) outrely he, 5617 (vttirly D).[1]

pitouslyche, 6676 B (-ly ACD). pitously, pytously, (i.) cf. 2161, 2438, 2584, 5476, 5564, 5574 f (pitusęly C), 5836, 6442 f (pitousęly C), 6623 f, 7244, 7787; (ii.) cf. 5042, 5911, .6922; before *h*, cf. 6100, 6579, 6885, 7947 (pitouslye he D); dispitously hym, 8169 (ful ‡ pitously D).

pleynlich al, 2708 B (-ly AD †, -li C). pleynly, playnly, (i.) cf. 395, 2211, 4519; (ii.) cf. 1357, 1448; p. hire (*poss. sg.*), cf. 2378.

rowfullych his, 6353 A (rewfulliche B, pitously D).[2] rowfully she, 7092 (reu- C, ruę- D, ioyful † B); rufully, 2907 f (reu- BC, rew- D).

scryvenlich ‡ or, 2111 D (scryuenyssh A, stryuenyssh B, coryously ne C).

secundelich ther, 2826 A (-ound[e]ly B, -undeli C, -ondly D).[3]

sobrelyche he, 1733 A (-liche B, sobirli C, soberly D), 6656 A (-lich B, sobirly D, sobèrëlïchë ‡ grette C)[4]; sobrelich he, 6869 (sobrely D, soft[e]ly B, softely C); sobreliche he, 7536 B (-ly AD, sobęrely C)[5]; sobrèlych on, 7292 A (-liche B, -ly D, sobirly C). sobrely, (i.) 3796 (-irli C), cf. 3000 f D, 6444 f; (ii.) 3201 (sobęrely C), 4840 (-irly D); sobrely he, 4430 (-irly C); s. hym, 4458 (-ęrely C). [sobręly for, 7372 D (*read* shortly).]

sodeynlychë red, 2924 A (so deynlyche B, sodeynli[che] C, sodenly[che] D), 3798 B (-lych[e] A, -li[che] C, sodenly[che] D); sodeynliche, 3934 C (-ly AB, sodenly D)[6], 6617 B (-lych A, -ly CD); -lyche his, 3198 A (-liche B, -li C, sodenly D); -leche his, 8022 C (-ly AD, -li B). sodeynly, (i.) cf. 231, 1758 f, 3636, 3699 (sodeynly A; D (?)), 3801, 4084, 5924 f, 6563, 6855 f; (ii.) cf. 3642, 4028, 6853; before *h*, cf. 209, 274, 306, 1645, 4416, 7899.

sorwfullyche he, 7996 B (sorwęfully AC, sorwëful he D).—sorwfully, (i.) 114 (sorowful ‡ D), 596 A (sorwful *adj.* B, sorwęful C, sorọwful D), 605 (sorweful (?) C, sorowfully (?) D †), 1513, 4012, 6421, cf. 1603 ‡ D; (ii.) 3643, 6423 (soberly ‡ D); s. he, 3922 (sorwfulli [he] sight D). [Var. B sorọwfully, sorufully; C sorwęfully, -li; D sorọwfully, sorwęfully.]

sternelych it, 3519 A (-lich BD, -liche C).

tendrelichë wepte, 5015 A (-lych[ë] B, tenderely ‡ (?) C, tendirly ‡ (?) D)[7]; -lyche, 5031 (-lich B, èntirely C, tendirliche D). tendrely,

[1] In B supply [*to*].
[2] Leaf cut out of C.
[3] In CD read *deuyneth* for *denyeth* C, *deignith* D.
[4] In 6656 C supply [*tho*] and understand *sobercliche* as = *soberelich he*.
[5] In B supply [*ful*].
[6] Accent in D ?
[7] A certainly has the right reading.

(i.) 111 (-erly BC, pytous ‡ and D), 7088 (-yrly C, -irly D), cf. 6445 f; (ii.) tendrely he, 5612 (-erly B, -ęrely C, -irly D).

trewëlyche the, 7414 B (-ely ACD); -elyche, 6077 (-eliche B, -ely CD); -eliche, 1249 B (-ely C, -[e]ly A, tru[ë]ly D), 2246 C (-ely AB, tru[ë]ly D); -[ë]liche, 6773 B (-elich (?) C, truëly (?) D, -ewęly ‡ A); -[ë]lich as, 7350 B (-ely ACD); -elych it, 246 (-eliche C -[ë]liche B, -[ë]ly D); -eliche he, 6476 BC (-ely AD); trewęliche, 6743 (-ęlyche ‡ C (?), truęly D). [Var. D truëly.]—trewëly, (i.) cf. 1326 f, 1713 f, 2909 f, 3001 f, 3020, 3677, 4331 f, 4778 f,[1] 5349 f, 5601 f, 5717 f, 5725, 6112, 6509, 6857 f, 7179, 7438 f, 7986, 8083; (ii.) cf. 5950, 6382, 6846, 7189, 7350, 7445, 8067; t. how, cf. 7449. [Var. B trew[ë]ly (*common*); C trewęli; D truëly, tru[ë]ly, trew[ë]ly, treüly, treuëly, truęly ‡ (6846), truly † (7445).] trewly, (ii.) 1578 (trorwely † C, trew[ë]ly D); trewęly, (i.) 6537 ‡ A (-ëly BC, truëly D), cf. also 8067 (trulyę yef D).

vnkyndelich and, 617 D (-ely A, -[e]ly B, onkendely C).

verraylyche, 4387 A (-liche B, -ly C, verily D); -lich hym, 6086 A (verrily C, verily [him] D, ver[ray]liche ‡ it B).

womanlichę, 2753 C (-ly AB, -ly ‡ him D).[2] wommanly with, 6940.

wondurliche, 729 B (wondyrliche C, wonderly A, -urly D); wonderlychë loude, 3520 A (-lichë B, -irlichë CD).

Note.—In 5466 C *child lichcra defacc* should be *chyldisshly defacc*. In 6899, *with chaunyed deedlych pale facc* (*deellich* † B, *dutt & D, pale dedlych was* ‡ C), *deedlych* is apparently an adjective.

## II.

bisily, bysily, bysyly, cf. 771, 2442, 3995 f, 5148, 5331, 5384, 5603 f, 6815, 6933 f ‡ C, 7046. [Var. C busily, busyly, besyly; D besily, besily(ę).]

bitterly, cf. 4543.

blysfully, 6933 f (busily ‡ C), 8171 AB.

brennynly, 607 (brennyngly B, brenyngę (?) C, brennyng D †).

byhouëly, 1346 f (be- CD).

coryously (*trisyl.*), 2111 ‡ C, see *scryvenlich* in list I., above.

cowardly, 5858 (couardęly C).

curteysly, cf. 5252 ABD.

debònairlỳ, 2344 (-erly CD), 2998 f (-erly CD).

dredfully, 2213.

[1] In 4778 *trewëly* is much more probable than *trewęlỳ*.

[2] In C read *saliwe* for *seluyn*.

falsęly, 38 (falsly B), 89 (falsęlỳ ‡ C, fálsly ‡ broken D); falsly, 5855 (-ęly CD).[1]

febęly, 518 (fiebly B, febly CD).

feithfully, feythfully, cf. 1348 f, 2662, 4514, 4776 f AB, 7439 f (fey(i)thfully C, fei3tfully D).

fermely, 4330 f (formely † C), 4385 (formely † C), 6858 f (-lie D, frendely *adj.* ‡ (?) C).

fiersly, 4602 B (fersęly C, freshly ‡ A, fersly D).

finally, fynally, fynaly, cf. 2409, 3398, 3848, 4877, 5547 f, 6089, 7377, 7398, 7790, 7818, 7998, 8007. finạly, 682 (fynạli B, fin(i)ạlly C, final *adj.* D).

frely, 3484 ‡ C, 4561 (-lỳ ‡ D).

frendly, 2972 A (freshęly ‡ B, frenli ‡ sumtyme C), 3201 (frenly on C, frendly vn D), 3484 ‡ D. (In 6858 ‡ C *frendëly* is perhaps an adjective.)

fresshly, freshly, cf. 2985 (frosch[ly] (?) C, fresshe D), 4602 A, 5119, 6753, 7373; freshęly, 2972 ‡ B. [Var. C fresschęly, froschęly; D freisshly.]

genęrally, 86 (*line om.* † C).

gentilly, 1272 f.

gladly, cf. 1336, 3484 AB, 4187, 6936 ‡ B.

goodly (goudly, 3832 A), cf. 253, 2347, 2575,[2] 2691, 2805 f, 2936, 3496, 3832, 3877, 4627, 6936, 6941. [Var. B godęly, goodęly; C godly, goodęly, goodli.]

gostly, 7393 (gostęly D).

hardely, 1389 (-i C, -ily D), 2510 f (-i C, -ily D), 3055 f (-ily BCD), 6182 (-ily B, -eli [ne] C, -ily [ne] D), 7527 (-ili C †; D †), 7669 (-ily BC); hardyly, 2097 (-ily BCD)[3], 2802 f (-ily BD, -ili C), 7487 f (-ily BC, -ely(e) D).

heighly, 2818 (họly ‡ D, heyly [3ow] C).

hertëly, 2362 f (-[e]- B, -ily D), 2762 f (-eli C, -ily D); hertęly, 7304 (hertly B).

holly, hoolly, cf. 366, 2206, 2818 ‡ D, 2987, 3118, 4169, 5057, 5106, 5474, 6950, 8209. [Var. CD holy.]

homly, 2644 AD (in BC prob. adj.).

humbly, 2342 (humili C); humbëly, 2804 f (humblëly B, vmbëly C, humb[ë]ly D), 7717 (humili C).

inly, cf. 640 AB, 4448.

[1] In A read *hauë* as=*haue ye.*

[2] Scansion? In A read *good*[*ly*].

[3] In A read *hardyly* [*right*] *yn.*

inwardly, 1349 f; ynwardly, 2817 ‡ D.
largely, 2792 (-li C).
lightly, lyghtly, cf. 1374, 1753, 2324, 2473, 2732, 3062, 3646, 5131. [Var. B lightęly; C lyȝtęly (-li).]
lowly, 2207 (louli C), 6537 (lawę- B, louę- C, lou- D); lowęly he, 2157 BC (lowly D, louę- A).[1]
lustily, 6931 f (-li B, -ly(e) D).
manly, 5284 (namęli ‡ C), 6393.
mekely, 1101 f.
myghtily, 428 f, 6625 f (-[i]- D, -ely B).
nedfully, 5666, 5716 f (nedę- D); nedę-, 5736 (ned- B).
nedly, 5632 (nedę- B); nedę-, 5668 (ned- B, nedfully *as* ‡ D).
newęly, 7373 ‡ C (*l.* fresshly).
nicely, 7515 f.
openly, 5225 (openly it? D).
perpetuely (*quadrisyl.*); 4596 (-ualy B, -uël *adj.* ‡ C, -ueH D †).
platly, cf. 3628, 3723, 5586.
preciously (*trisyl.*), 5252 ‡ C (*see* curteysly).
preuely, preuyly, pryuely, cf. 80 f, 380 f, 2200, 2261, 3592 f, 4427, 5316 f (previly(e) D), 5787, 6263, 7513 f.
richely, 1710 f (-[e]- B).
saufly, 5982 (sauły CD); sauły, 6850 ‡ C.
shortly, cf. 2567, 3018, 3312, 3390, 3543, 3959, 3998, 4278, 5003, 5312, 5333, 5615, 7372, 7395, 8189. [Var. B shorthly; C schortęly (-li); D shortly(ę).] shortęly, 3390 (-ily B, schortli C, shortly D); cf. 5544 C (shortly he D).
sikerly, sykerly, cf. 1605, 3000 f ‡ C, 3588, 4776 f CD,[2] 5314 f (sikirly(e) D), 7485 f. [Var. C sekirli; D sikirly.]
skarsly, cf. 1128 (scarcë ‡ in D).
skilfully, 5927 f.
sleyly, 1547 (sleughtęly B, sleli C, slely D), 2270 (sleigh- B, sly- C, sle- D)[3]; sleyghly, 6446 (sleighę- B, sly- C, s[l]e- D).[4]
softely, 78 f (C? D?), 1604 (-[e]- D, softly ‡ hym A), 1712 f, 2621 f (-[e]- (?) B), 2814 (-[e]- D, softly B †), 2817 (softly ‡ D)[5], 3000 f (-[e]- (?) B, sekyrly C, sobrely D), 3591 (-[e]- BD), 5017 (-[e]- B, softly ‡ D), 5577 f ‡ C, 6869 C (-[e]- B, sobrelich A, sobrely D); soft[e]ly, 2335 A (-e- BCD); softly, 1604 ‡ A; cf. 7516 f (where

[1] In AD supply [*this*].
[2] In CD supply [*it*].
[3] In C dele (*this*).
[4] Supply [*he*] in B.
[5] In B read [*ful*] *soft*[*e*]*ly*; in C, [*ful*] *softeli*.

*softĕly* is no doubt the right reading). [Var. C softeli; D softily.]
sothly, cf. 4350, 5459, 5627, 6850, 7372 ‡ C. [Var. BD sothęly.]
straungely, cf. 7318 (-li(ę) D); cf. 2508 f.
thryftyly, 3053 f.
vnfelyngly, 1104 f.
vnhappily, -pyly, 666 (onhap[i]ly C, vnhappy[ly] D), 7300 (vnhapp[i]ly(*e*) B, -happi[ly] C, -happely D).
vulgarly, 6175 (-[l]y A, wolgaly C).
warly, 3296.
wikkedly, 1526 (wekedęli C).
wofully, 1603 (sorȩw- ‡ D).
worthily, 1271 f.
wrongfully, 414 f (wrongę- B), 2504 (wrongli † C), 7853.
wylfully, cf. 1369.
wȳsly, cf. 205, 949, 1064, 1459, 6710 (wisęly (?) C), 7654 (wisë- ‡ D). [Var. BD wysę-; BCD wisę-.]
wȳsly, cf. 2315, 3555 ‡ D, 3632, 3767, 4343, 4360, 4495, 4752, 5043, 6026, 6106, 6519, 7728 (wisęly *as* C ‡). [Var. BC -ę-; D wiss-, wissę-.]

Rhyme words.—Adverbs in *-ly* rhyme usually with each other, but the following rhyme-words also occur: I (428, 1101, 1104, 1271, 1272, 1626, 2089, 2508, 2510, etc.), by, therby (380, 382, 1626, 2362, 4776, 4778, 5574, 5577), why (1758), grant mercy (1326).

Note.—In 2111 AB, one *-ly* seems to be used for two adverbs (cf. Shakspere's *fresh and merrily*): "Ne *scryuenyssh* (stryuenyssh † B, coryously C, scryvenlich D) or (ne C) *craftily* (craftyliche C, craftly D) thow it (*om.* C) wryte."

## § 85. The following adverbs which have *-e* neither in A.S. nor in the *Troilus* deserve notice:

amys (see Mätzner), cf. 491 f, 1398 f, 2133 f, 2593 f, 3015 f, 3112 f, 3687 f, 3876 f, 3967 f, 4022 f, 4471 f, 5933 f, 7102 f, 7430 f, 7549 f, 7641 f, 8047 f, 8090 f.

Rhyme-words.—is, ywys, this.

Note.—Cf. that yet is mys and, 5929 (that is amys D); that is mys, 6010 f (that is amisse D) (: is : this); al that was mys, 7789 f (amys ‡ CD).

anon (A.S. on án), (i.) (ii.) cf. 75, 324, 349 f, 2096 f, 2636 f, 2840, 3396, 3406 f, 3516 f, 3545 f, 3991 f, 4704, etc., etc. CD occasionally have *anon(e)*; B sometimes has *onon*. (Accent in 2636 ?)

ful (A.S. ful *adv.*), (i.) 151, 167, 3589, 5472, 6630, 6633 (fullę BD), 7614, 7998; (ii.) 378, 626; ful humble, 124. [Var. D fuƕ.]

Note.—Ten Brink, § 246 Anm., notices that "das steigernde *ful* (*ful wel*, *ful hard* u. s. w.)" has no -e. Of the above-cited cases all but two are instances of this "steigernde *ful*." These two, however, do not come under ten Brink's category: they are,—"Who koude telle aright or *ful* discryue," 6630, and "But fynally he *ful* ne trowen myghte," 7998.

hom (A.S. hám). See nouns, § 18.

ɲygh, neigh, neih, ney, *adv.* and *prep.* (A.S. néah, néh, *adv. and prep.*), (i.) (ii.) cf. 108, 180, 499, 543, 582, 2325, 3345, 5019, 5035, 5894, 6895. [Var. B neȝgh, neyghe; C nyȝ, nyh, nyȝh; D ny, nyę, niȝ (4404 ‡ D).]

streyght, streyt, straught (A.S. streht, *p.p.*); streyght, (i.) 53 (streght B), 4802 (streught B †, streyt C), 5905 (streughtę B, streyȝt C, streitę D), 6655 (streght B, streyt C, streytę D); (ii.) 324 (streght B, styrte † C), 607 (*streght* B, streyt C), 6351 (streyte B, *streite* D); streygh[t], (ii.) 2258 (streght B, streyt C, *streight* † D); streyght he, 5825 (streught B, streyt C, streyte = streyt he D).—streyt, (ii.) 2546 (streght B, streight D, [as] streit C).—straught, (ii.) 3394 (streight BD, streyt C).

wys (really neut. adj. used as adv., cf. *y-wys*), god so wys be my *saluacioun*, 1466 (wis CD); god so wys me saue, 2063 (wis CD); as wys as I the serue, 3555 (wis C, wisly † D); as wys I neuere, etc., 6317 (wis BC, wisse D).

ynough, ynowgh, ynowh, ynow, inow (A.S. genóg, genóh), (i.) 2108 f, 2675 f, 2927 f, 3039 f, 4471, 4796, 5058, 5720, 6462 f, 6654, 7213, 7357, 7459, 7533 f; (ii.) 5346 (inow (of) C).

Rhyme words.—towh, towgh, tough (2108, 2927, 6462), lowh, lough *prot. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2675, 3039, 7533). [Var. B inough, ynough(e); D ynow(e), inough, inowh.]

y-wys, i-wys (A.S. ge-wis, *adj. neut.*), (i.) cf. 425 f, 802 f, 1213 f, 1313 f, 1814 f ([y-]wys A), 5353 (iwiss(*e*) D), 8095 (i-wiss(e) D), etc., etc.; i-wysse, 1012 f (i-wis BC, ywys D) (: this(se) : ys(se)). Cf. *wys*.

Note.—In *cucle*, *yucle*, *-cle* merely represents syllabic *-l*. Thus—*ful yucle fare*, 626 (ouelę C, evil D). This becomes consonantal before a vowel; as, *cuęle apayed*, 5304 (yuęl B, euiłł D), cf. 649; *yuęle as*, 6601 (yuęl B, iuęle C, yuęłł D).

A few Romance words are used adverbially without termination:

certeyn, -ayn, -ain, (*a*) with accent on the ultima, (i.) cf. 492, 1475, 1476 ‡ B, 2654 f, 3631 f, 4118, 5720 f, 5780 (-(ę) D), 7491 f; (ii.) cf. 5266. (*b*) With accent on the penult, (i.) cf. 674, 1809, 3996, 4782; (ii.) cf. 3938, 5864 (-(*e*) D). Cf. the use of *syker* in 2076.

còmplet, cf. 7191 (perh. rather adj.).

egàl, 5322.

plat, cf. 681, 1664.

seur, al so seur as day comęth, 5083 (sure D).

Several adjective formations in *-les* (A.S. -léas) are used adverbially (cf. § 49, note 5). These are (i.) (ii.),—

causeles, 779 f (-lees B), 3853, 6139 ABD.

douteles, 1499 f (-[e]- D), 1579 C (-[e]- AD, trew[e]ly B), 2614 f, 4220 (-[e]- E),[1] 4630 (-[e]- D), 4764 f (-[e]- D)[2], 5092 (dought[e]les D), 5161 C, 5897 (douȝt[e]les D).

dredeles, 1027 B (-[e]- ACD), 3368 (-[e]- AD)[3], 3844 (-[e]- AD), 4738 B (-[e]- AD), 5940 (-[e]- A)[4]; -lees, 1041 B (dred[e]les AD), 1270 B (dred[e]les ACD).

endeles, 4685.

gilteles, 1413 BC (-[e]- AD) (perhaps adj.).

knot[te]les, 7132 (knotteles C, knott[e]les ‡ out D).[5]

nedeles, 2612 f.

Note 1.—*Fayn* and *loth*.—The adjective *fayn* (A.S. fæg(e)n) is used in connection with *wol* and *wolde* with the force of an adverb. Thus,—wolde I *fayn* remeue, 691 (fayne B); I wol right *fayn* with al my myght ben oon, 2770. Examples of this use may be seen in 3064 f (feyne B, feyn CD) (: ayen : seyn *p.p.*), 3497 f (: agayn ; rayn *n.*), 7358 f (-e BD) (: ayeyn); cf. 3769, 3854, 3945, 4359, 6432, 6550, 6914, 7595, 8104, in most of which the word that follows begins with a consonant. *Fayn* in this idiom has no proper -e, though B and D sometimes add one, which, however, is never sounded (so 2310 A).[6] (Cf. *fawe*, note 2 at end of § 46.) Similarly the adj. *loth* (A.S. láð) is used with an apparently adverbial force: God wot of thing ful ofte *loth* bygonne Cometh ende good, 2319-20 (lothe D†); For trewely ther kan no wight yow serue That half so *loth* yowre wratthe wolde deserue, 6509-10 (soth † C).

Note 2.—*Wonder* in connection with adjectives and adverbs (*wonder blyue*, *wonder wel*, etc.) is sometimes regarded as the first part of a compound; but it was apparently felt as a separate word (cf. the adjectival use of *wonder* in such phrases as *this wonder maludye*, 419). For examples cf. *wonder blyue*, 7912; *w. cruwel*, 7831; *w. faste*, 5336 (marueilously *slurred* ‡ D); *w. ofte*, 139 † A; *w. sore*, 751, 1540, 3964; *w. stronge*, 7564; *w. wel*, 288.

Note 3. For *scryuenyssh or craftily*, see note at end of § 84.

Note 4.—For *half* used adverbially (cf. A.S. healfe *instr.* with compar.; healf- *in comp.* healf-déad, etc.), cf. (i.) 6510 (-e D), 7101, (ii.) 1152.

Note 5.—The following adverbs, etc., of various formation, are for convenience thrown together in a note:

ay (O.N. ei, cf. A.S. á, áwa, and see *o* below), (i.) cf. 186 (alle ‡ C), 2488 f, 3376 f, 6515 f, 7074 f, 7158 f, 7985 f; for ay, cf. 4454 f, 4655 (aye D); tho forth ay, 1069 f; (ii.) cf. 180, 5593; for ay and *o*, 2167 f C (and oo D).

eft (A.S. eft), (i.) 137 BC, 4322 (-(e) CD), 4374 (-(e) D), 4395 (-(e) B, ofte ‡ D), 4525 † D (erst ABC), etc.; (ii.) 6391 (-(*e*) D), 6979 (-(*e*) D), etc.

est (A.S. éast). See *west*.

fer (A.S. feorr), (i.) 853, 2203; (ii.) 18[7], 451, 565 (ferre [as] D), 888, 1301, 2305 (fayre ‡ C; *om.* † D), 3275, 3325, 3502[8]; fer han, 4653 (B†);

[1] In E read *a*[*l*]*s*[*o*].
[2] In D, read ȝe for *is* (*yis ?*): otherwise *dout*[*e*]*les* is adj. ‡.
[3] 9-syl. verse.
[4] In C ‡ perhaps adj.
[5] In C read *thour*[*out*].
[6] For 7595 D is to be emended by transposition. In 2310 C we are to insert [*to*], not to read *fayn*[*ë*].
[7] Supply [*I*] in A.
[8] Read *lyggen* for *lyn* in C.

fer henne, 5908 (fere B); from a fer his, 313 (from affer C, from ferre her 9-*syl.* D).[1] [D has usually *ferr(e), ferr*(e).]

forth (A.S. forð), cf. 2345, 4809; tho forth ay, 1069 f; emforth, -(e), cf. 1328, 2082, 3841; fro this forth, cf. 1094, 1529, 4976; ferforth (accented on either syllable) in the phrases,—so ferforth, as f. as, so f. that, thus f., how f., cf. 121, 2045, 2191, 4336, 5553, 5960. (In these examples no note as to whether a vowel or *h* or a consonant follows.)

on . . . along (ylong) (A.S. on (æt) . . . gelang), *On* me is nought *ylong* thin yuel fare, 2086 (along CD, along(e) B)[2]; but it were *on* hym *along* ye, 3625 (-(e) B, on al † a long ye D).

*tho (A.S. þá), cf. 1600 f, 1766 f, 2290 f,* 2487 f, 2913 f, 3968, 5402, etc., *etc.; er tho, 6811 (or this* C, or thoo D).

wel *(A.S. wel), cf. (i.) (ii.)* 12, 57, 68, 76, 131, 167, 288, 1177, 1677 f (wele ΔBD) (: del : stel), 2297 f, 3538 f, 3552 f, etc., etc. (Often written *wele* in BD and sometimes in A (cf. 246, 837, 1677 f), but of course the -e is never sounded.)

west (A.S. west), est or west, 7795 f (est or weste B, est and west D) (: best *adv.* : lest *ind. 3 sg.*); est and west (*as sbst. acc.*), 2138 f (est and weste B) (: lyst *ind. 3 sg.*); by est or west, 7114 f (weste B, be(n) est or west C, by este or west D †) (: lest *ind. 3 sg.* : best *pred. adj. sg.*); by west and ek by este, 7556 f (by weste . . . bi este B, he † west . . . he † est C, by weste . . . by est D) (: byheste *n.*).

yond. See note at end of § 86.

## § 86. Comparison of Adverbs (Child, § 70; ten Brink, p. 134). Comparative degree.

Of the "old" adverbial comparatives, A.S. *bet, wiers, má, lés, néar (nýr), ér* survive in the Troilus (*a*); for *síð*, see § 88, p. 196. Other adverbial comparatives are adjective forms: (*b*) (I.) *bettre, more, lasse, derre*; (II.) A.S. comparatives in *-or* and their analogues.

(*a*) bet (A.S. bet), (i.) 275[3] (b. hire ‡ C)[4], 1363, 2524, 3963, 6832 (but † C), 7284, 7629 (beste † B), etc.; the bet, 481, 1177 f (bette BCD) (: let *p.p.*, lette BCD), 1589 (C †), 1921 f (bett B, bete C) (: beset *p.p.*), 2600, 3819 (the b. ‡ other (?) C); cf. 746, 3318, 3332, 4406, 5562, 6020, 7347, 7405; For yf it erst was wel tho was it *bet*, 4525 f (bette C) (: met *p.p.*). [Var. B bett; BD bett(e).] bet, (ii.) 3264, 3965 (B † C †), 4333 (the bettir ‡ endure D); bet and bet shal, 3556 (. . . wil C).

wers (A.S. wiers, wyrs), wers bygon, 7691 (wors B, werse C, wurse D); wors(*e*), 2703 (wers(*e*) B, wers(e) C[c], wors D).

In 5856 f, *no werse* (wurse D) (: aduerse *voc.* : diuerse *pl.*) is an adjective.

mo (A.S. má), euere mo, 1465 f (-more † D), 4268 f, 4603 f (euer more † moo E); cf. 418 f, 787 f, 6088 f, 7026 f, 7418 f, 7502 f. neuere mo, 2498 (neueuermore † C; D †); cf. 5645 f.

[1] Or supply [*a*] in D.
[2] Dele (*al*) in C.
[3] Old-style figures indicate that D reads *better, betir, bettir, betre*, though the metre calls for *bet* (cf. 746 C).
[4] Supply [*gan*] in A.

Rhyme words.—to and fro (418, 6088), two (418), also (5645), so (1465, 4603, 7502), wo (787, 1465, 4268, 7418), go *inf.* (4268, 4603, 6088, 7026, 7502), ago *p.p.* (7418), tho *adv.* (7026). [Var. BE moo.]

les (A.S. lés), preserved in *nathëles* (A.S. ná þé lés), (i.) cf. 19, 170 f (: makeles : prees), 750, 916, 923, 1552, 3011, 3214, 3424, 3827, 3925, 4327, 5185, 5716, 6098, 6462, 6546, 6872, 7141, 7232, 7932, 8002; (ii.) cf. 5536, 5629; n. he, cf. 4814, 7547.

C usually has *neuere the les* (trisyllabic, as if *ne'ertheless*). Other variants are *nathelees*, 750 B, 916 B, 3011 A; *nathales*, 5536 B; *nethcles*, 3925 D, 4327 D; *nathelessę*, 5716 D, 7232 D; *neuerles*, 6872 C; *nath*[*e*]*les*, 6098 A.

Note.—For *lest* (A.S. þý lés þe), see § 87, n. 3.

ner (A.S. néar, nýr), the ner the fyr, 449; the ner he was, 448.

*Ner I come*, 1647, may be either positive or comparative, and there is a similar uncertainty with regard to 2902 (nere D)[1], 4404 (ni3‡ D), and 6443 (neer B, nere he D). For the positive *ner*, *neer*, cf. 451, 582 C.

(*b*) II. bettre, betre (A.S. bet(t)re, *neut. comp.*), 2300 f (betere C); b. plese, 3728 (better BD, betere C); bettre his, 3729 (more BC, betęr D); the bettre, 2780 f (bettere BC); the b. pleyne, 2616 (bettere B, betere C, betir D); the bettre at, 6013 (bettire C, betęr D.) (All dissyl. except 3729, 6013.)

Rhyme-words.—lettre (2300, 2780); vnfettre *inf.* (2300).

more, (A.S. máre, *neut. comp.*), 647 f, 669 f, 753 f, 883 (C ?), 885 (-ę C), 931 (-ę C ‡ D ‡), 1082 f, 1820 AB, 2413 (D ?), 2424 f, 4061, 5380 f, 5488 f (mor D), 6007 f (D †), 6387 f, 6851, 7036 f, 7282 (C †), 7283, 7716 f, 7719 f, 8096 f (cf. 2540 C, 5610 D); *-e*, 2556, 3324 (D †), 4021, 4494 (-ë ‡ me C), 4919 (*om.* ‡ D), 6007 (mor B; D †), 7036, 7329 (-ë ‡ to C; D ?), 7744, 7751 CD (manęre ‡ A); more he, 448; more here (*sing.*), 2717 (C †); but,—nomorë haue, 3013 (namorë han B, no more han C ‡).

morę than, 376[2], 532 (-ë ‡ D), 537 (mor B; D (?)), 578 (-ę C (?); mor † D), 1425, 3162 (-ë B; C ? D ?), 3873, 4389, 5654; the morę that, 406 (-ë C ‡ D); morę ‡ thrust, 406 D; ne morę desirede, 567 (ner morę D); nomorę com, 1515; for euerę morę myn, 1915 (mo BC); euerę morę whan, 4243 (mo BC); nomorę come, 6130 (nomor B, no morë ‡ C); euerę morę lo, 4946 (cf. 2498 C)[3]. But,—morë than, 1226 (-ę C), 3289; morë that, 4493; morë thing, 539 (morę ȝe C, mor ye D).

Rhyme words.—lore *n.* (647, 753, 1082, 2424, 6387), sore *adv.* (669, 753, 1082, 5380, 5488), *adj. pl.* (2424, 7036, 7716), soore *inf.* (669), of yore (5380 8097), restore *inf.* (6007), more *adv.* (7716), no more *sbst.* (8096). [Var. BD moore.]

[1] Supply [*in*] in A.

[2] We can avoid *morę* in this verse, but only by reading *allę louèrs* instead of *allë lòuers*.

[3] *I kan no morę but*, 4654, seems to be substantive.

lasse (A.S. lǽsse, *neut. comp.*), 284 (lesse B; C †), 651 (lesse BD), 1986 (las[se] D, lesse hire B)[1]; lasse hadde, 886; the lasse, 2928 f (the les CD), 5278 f, 5794 (the lesse C), 5971 (the lesse D, lasse B, lesse[2] C); the lasse, 967 (the lesse, B, [the] lasse D).

Rhyme-words.—masse *missam* (2928), passe *inf.* (2928, 5278).

derre (A.S. dēorre, *neut. comp.*), boughten they . . . it derre, 136 f (dere BD) (: werre *n.*); to ben presed derre, 174 f (: sterre).

II. deppere (A.S. dēoppor), 1570 (depter † B, depper D).

ferther (A.S. furðor), f. go, 3123 (-ere C, forther BD)[3]; ferther-ouer, 5689 (further o. D, further now B); no ferthere out, 5969 (forther B, further D).

gladlyer (*dissyl.*), (ii.) 8140 (-lier B, gladder D).

hyer (A.S. héa(h)or), 2671 (heighere B, heyȝere C, hier D).

lengere, lenger, longere (A.S. leng); lengere, 1065 (langer B), 1683 (neuere C, neuere (?) D), 2478, 2699 (D †), 3010, 3183,[4] 3400 (-er B, -ere C, -er aftir D), 6370, 7273, 7562 (cf. 5370 C (-er D ?)[5]; lengere, 2603, 2707 (*line om.* † C), 4870[6], 8029 (langer B); lengere here (*hic*), 4970; longere, 2327 (lengere C). (In all the instances so far cited, unless there is a note to the contrary, B has *longer*, D *lenger*). lenger, (i.) 5610 (nothyng † C, morë ‡ D), 5852 (langer B, more C †).

leuere vnwyst, 2594 (leuer D).

rathere, rather (A.S. hraðor), (i.) cf. 835, 865, 3221, 3415, 4825, 5186, 5256, 5589, 5701, 6410; (ii.) rathere, 5650 (-er BD); -ere here (*hic*), 6111 (-er BD); -ere anoon, 5102 (-er sterue B, -ere s. C; *om.* † D).

sonner, 1771 (sonere C).

Note.—For *after* (adv. and prep.) cf. 30, 1581, 2434, 4888, 5597, etc.; for *heder, hider, hyder*, cf. 5594, 6022, 6849 f, 6977; for *whider, wheder*, cf. 3233, 4944, 5309, 6791, 6849 f; for *yonder, yender*, cf. 2231 f, 3505 f, 6928 (yende A), 6931, 7032, 7033 (for *yonder* as an adjective cf. *that yonder place*, 6943; *the yonder hill*, 6973; ȝondir ‡ *he*, 2369 C (*yend* A, ȝonde B, ȝend D ?); *yender* ‡ *I*, 6975 D (*yond* A, ȝondo BC); *ȝondir is*, 7525 C (*ȝond is* B, *yond nys* A, *yondę nys* D)[8]; for *outher, outher* (*other . . . or*, cf. 1501, 2433, 2436, 5193; for *other* (= or), cf. 3665 A (*or* BCD); for *neyther* (*neither*) . . . *ne* (*nor*), cf. 312, 1370, 3364, 5433, 5926; for *whether*, cf. 425, 1398, 2237, 5673; for *wher, where* (= whether), cf. 270, 2348, 2551 C, 2736, 2908, 3888, 5493, 5824, 6356.

[1] This line is best scanned "And ay gan loue hire lassë for to agaste." In B, transpose *lesse* and *hire*.

[2] BC om. *the*.

[3] Supply [*wol*] in A.

[4] Read *nay* for *make* in A.

[5] This stanza is not in AB.

[6] D ? (supply [*in*] and read *blis*[*se*]).

[7] In A supply [*ye*].

[8] In 6928 B for ȝonder *saugh ich* (*yender saugh* D, ȝondyr *say* C, *yendę saugh* A) read *yond saugh ich*. 6936 B for ȝonder *so* (-ir C, *yonder* D), read *yond so* (with A); in 7521 C for ȝondir *sche*, read *yond she* (-ę D, ȝondę B). For *yond*, cf. also 5685.

§ 87. The superlative adverbs *best* and *mest*, when preceded by the definite article, may take an *-ë* after the analogy of adjectives (cf. Child, § 70; ten Brink, p. 137, Anm.).

The following are all the cases in which *the* is used with these superlatives in the *Troilus:*

on the bèst[ë] soùnded ioly harpe, 2116 (on the bestë sowned B, (vp)on the bestë sounëd(ę) (?) C, (vp)on the best[ë] sownyd (?) D).

the beste ynòrisshęd, 7184 (best BD); the beste entèchëd, 7195 (best BD); [the] beste yprèysëd, 7836 (the beste C, the best D, the best [y]preysed B).

the mestë stormy life, 1863 (moost[ë] B, mostë C, most[ë] D).

the most[ë] fre, 1073 (moost[ë] BD).

When no *the* precedes, the forms are *best* and *most*. Cf. for *best* (i.) (ii.) 47, 332 f (: lyst *n.*, leste B, rest C$^{c}$), 718, 1001 (alderbest), 1322, 1914, 2481 f (: yf the lyste, lest B, lyst CD), 2515, 2667, 2697, 2758, 3196, 3208, 3454, 3901, 4107, 4494, 4822, 4951, 6752, 6792, 6995, 7137, 7145, 7440, 7630, 7677, 7793 f (: west : lest *lubet*), 8064. For *most*, cf. (i.) (ii.) 152, 230, 242, 720 f, 1332, 1748, 2235, 2453 f (: wost *scis*), 2495 f (: wost), 3523, 4617, 4628, 4947, 5223, 5259 f (: ost : wost), 6283 f, 6955, 7067, 7426, 8120, 8143, 8210, etc.

Note 1.—In none of these cases is *best* or *most* preceded by *the* or by a demonstrative or possessive pronoun. In all of them A has the form *best* or *most*. Variants in -e occur, but the -e is never sounded (for *most(e)*, cf. (i.) 1332 B, 2235 B, 5259 f D, 6283 f, etc.; for *best(e)* (i.) (ii.), see B in 1001, 2515, 2667, 3454, 4494, 7740, 7793 f).

Note 2.—For *almòst àlmost* (A.S. eal- æl-mæst), cf. (i.) (ii.) 1855, 2906 f, 2995, 3138 f, 5368.

Note 3.—*Best* and *mest* excepted, no superlative adverbs take an -e in the *Troilus*. Examples are (i.) (ii.): *first, fyrst, ferst* (cf. 381, 659, 1875, 4076, 4834, 6318, 6930, 6944, etc., etc.), var. BD *first(e)*; *last* (cf. 7550 (-(ę) B; D (?))); *erst* (cf. 299, 842, 2425, 4389, 4512, 4518, 4525, 4830), var. BD *arst*; *next, nexst*, as adverb (cf. 2067, 3386, 4098, 4100), as preposition (cf. 399, 941 (9-syl.), 943, 944, 1729); *lest* (cf. 1925, 2236, 4110[1]); *strengest feythed*, 1000 (*strenghest* B, *strengest fichid* C); see also *alderfirst, alderlest*, § 81.

§ 88. The following particles, of various formation, appear in the *Troilus* sometimes or always with an *-e* (cf. Child, § 72).

In this list are thrown together, for convenience: (i.) particles in A.S. *-an, -on,—aboute, abouen, -e, byforn, byfore, toforn, byhynden, -e,*

[1] Perhaps substantive in the accusative case.

*bitwene, selde, sithen* (etc.), *withinne, withouten, -e*; cf. *aside, byside*; (ii.) particles in A.S. *-a,—soone, yore*; (iii.) *inne, oute, out, thanne, whanne*; (iv.) *nowthe* (A.S. *nú þá*); (v.) *-mele* (A.S. *mǽlum*); (vi.) *atwynne, yfere, blyue, bothe*; (vii.) *therfore, -for, wherfore, -for*. For *down, adown, gruf, asunder*, see notes at end of list. For *by weste*, see § 85, note 5.

aboute, abowte (A.S. ymbútan, onbútan), 149 f, 268 f[1], 1819 f ‡ C, 1904 f, 2478 f, 2556, 3523 f, 3950, 4692 (-[ë] D), 5063 f, 5342 f, 5364 (C †), 5377 f, 5937 f, 6231 f (C †), 6448 f, 6463, 6763 f, 7483 (abouȝtë C ?), 7657 f, 7814 f, 7859 f, 8008 f; *-e*, 2553 (-t D, -ë for ? C ‡), 4072, 6586; *-e* his, 3911, 4575 (D †), 6618, 7588, 7595; *-e* hym, 4562 (hym àboute alwey A, *which transpose*); -ę her (*sing.*), 3642 (-yn C), 5479[2], 5531 (*-e* (?) ‡ B); aboutę thin, thi, 863 (-t C), 7019; -ę the, 4904; but,—abowtë this, 3380 (-ën B, -[ë] D, -yn his C).

Rhyme-words.—doute *n.* (149, 1819, 2478, 5063, 5937, 6231, 7657, 7814, 8008), route *n.* (268, 1904, 5063, 5342, 5377, 6448, 6763, 7859), deuoute (149), lowte *inf.* (3523), with-oute (268, 3523), stoute *adj. pl.* (7814, 7859).

abouen, aboue (A.S. on-bufan); aboue, 230 f, 3720 f, 3869 f, 7367 f, 8193 f, 8207 f; abouë euęry, 6517 (-ën B, -yn C, *-e* ? D ‡); aboue, 3617 (vpon ‡ C), 8182; aboue ‡ thi, 3580 A[3]; -ę the goddes, 4930 (-ÿn goddis C); abouęn, (ii.) 6341, 6561 (-ë C, -yn D).

Rhyme words.—loue *n.* (*all*), shoue *p.p.* (3869).

aside, asyde (as if A.S. on sídan), *-e*, 291 (on syde D; C †), 5886 (*om.* † C); *-e* his, 7290 (*-e* a BCD).

a-twynne (cf. O.N. tvinnr), 4508 f (a twyn D) (: bygynne *inf.*), 6276 f (a-twyn C) (: wynne *inf.* : with-inne). (Cf. *atwo*, etc., 6893 f.)

blyue (A.S. bí lífe), 595 f (bilyue B), 958 f (bylyue B), 1222 f, 1293 f, 2622 f, 2690 f, 3067 f, 4836 f (blythe † C),[4] 5157 f (blyf C), 6017 f, 6526 f, 6759 f (biliue B), 7912 f; b[e]lyue, 2598 f (belyue C, blyue ? D).

Rhyme-words.—thriue, thryue *inf.* (958, 1222, 1293, 2690), dryue *inf.* (2598, 2622, 3067, 5157, 6017, 6759, 7912), stryue *inf.* (4836, 6526, 7912), al my lyue[5] (595), my lyue[5] (1293), yn al his lyue (2622), his lyue[5] (6526), on lyue (1222, 5157), of lyue (2690), hyue *n.* (6017), fyue (6759). [Var. D blive.]

bothe (bothen) . . . and (O.N. báðir *pron.*, cf. A.S. bá, bá-twá); bothe thow and I, 711 (bothen B); bothe fals and foul is, 6746 (-[e] B); so *bothe . . . and* in 168 (D †), 7131 (-[e] B), 8077 (-[e]

[1] Old-style figures indicate that D has *about*.
[2] Supply [*al*] in D.
[3] BC have *vpon*, D has *on* (l. *vpon*).
[4] In D read *a*[*l*]*s*[*o*].
[5] Expressing *time*.

B); bothe . . . and[1], cf. 97, 130, 167, 264, 464, 1396, 1397, 5340, 5705; bothe he . . . and, 1718 (D †); bothe heroner and faukon, 5075 (both B, bothe ‡ goshauk and C$^{c}$). But,—As seyden *bothe* the meest and ek the leeste, 6803 BD (bothe meste = both the meste C, A *om.* ek); cf. 167 AB (-e C), 1862 ‡ D, 2423 ‡ D.—bothen worship and seruyse, 82 AB (bothe C; D †).

byforn, biforn (A.S. beforan), 221[2] f (aforn C), 376 f (byforne D), 1226 f (byfor D), 2356 f (beforne C), 3144 f, 3917 f (aforene C, byforne D), 4062 f (biforne D), 5022 f (aforne C, beforne D), 5636 f, 5755 f (byfore: born A, beforn C), 5910 f (byfore C, beforne D), 6520 f (byforne D), 6644 f (beforne D), 7806 f (byfore C, beforne D); b. withouten, 5646 (-fornę B), 5663 (biforę B); b. oure, 5641; b. haue, 7463 (before BCD).

Rhyme-words.—corn (221), shorn *p.p.* (221), born, born(e) *p.p.* (376, 1226, 2356, 3144, 3917, 4062, 5755, 5910, 6520), lorn, y-lorn *p.p.* (376, 3917, 4062, 5910, 7806), sworn, i-sworn *p.p.* (5636[3], 6644), to-torn *p.p.* (5022), thorn (2356). [Var. CD beforn.]

byfore, 5660 f, 5701 f, 6389 f (to-fore B); byfore, 2051 (beforn C, byfor ‡ he D), 3582 (byforne B, afore C, byfor D), 6120 (bifor B, to-forn C); be-forë certeinly (?), 5681 D (? byforn A, ? bifor B); byforę the, 1428 (byfor D); -ę that, 5739 (-ę the BD); -ę to, 5639 (befor B, beforn D). [Var. BC bifore; CD before.] (Cf. 5755 f A.) byfor noon, 7485 (biforę C, beforę D).

Rhyme-words.—forlore *p.p.* (6389), yshore *p.p.* (5660), more *root* (6389), therfore (5660, 5701).

byhynden, byhynde (A.S. be-hindan); byhynde, 1604 f (-d D), 1724 f (-d D), 2192 f (-d D), 7174 f.—byhyndën othere, 179 (-yn C, -[en] D).

Rhyme-words.—mynde (1604), fynde *inf.* (1724), *pl.* (2192), rynde *n.* (1724), bynde *inf.* (7174). [Var. (*at end of line*) C behynde, -hinde; D behinde, -hind, -hynd.]

byside, bysyde (A.S. be sídan), 1161 f (: gyde *pres. subj.* 2 *sg.*), 4623 f (: ryde *inf.*); -*e* hirę (*poss. sg.*), 1819 A, 3464, (*poss. pl.*) 1819 B; -*e* hym, 7045 (-ë B[4], -ë was D[5]); therę be sÿdÿn schal, 3510 ‡ C. [Var. C besyde; D beside.]

by-twene, bi-twene (A.S. betwéonan), 1908 f, 2791 f, 3096 (bytwyxën B, betwixë C, bytwix[ë] D), 3343 f, 4698 f, 6092 f (betwen D), 7449 f (betweyne B, betwen D); by-twen[ë] wyndes, 417 (betwexen B, betwexë C, bytwix[ë] D).

[1] Var. BD *both . . . and.*
[2] Old-style figures indicate that B has *byforne* or *biforne.*
[3] *swo* A, *sworne* B, *sworn* D. [4] But supply [*this*] and read -*e* (elided).
[5] But supply [*him*] and read -*e* (elided) (?).

Rhyme-words.—grene *adj. sg.* and *pl.* (1908, 2791, 6092), shene *adj. def. sg.* (1908), *adj. pred. sg.* (6092[1]), shene *adv.* (4698), I wene *pres. ind.* (3343, 7449), queene (2791), contene *inf.* (3343). [Var. BC be-twene.]

inne[2] (A.S. inne), 387 f (in C, yn D), 821 f (yn D), 1091 f (yn D), 1936 f (in C, yn D), 1960 f (ther ‡ yn D), 3499 f (in C, yn D), 3753 f (in C, yn D), 5422 f, 5568 f (in C), 5921 f, 5930 f; inne, 7882 (in D).

Rhyme-words.—gynne *pres. ind. sg.* (1936), bygynne *inf.* (387, 1960, 3499, 5921), bygynne *ind. 3 pl.* (1091), wynne *inf.* (387, 821), synne *n.* (821, 1936, 3753, 5422), twynne *inf.* (5422, 5568, 5930).

ther-inne (A.S. þǽr-inne), 3537 f (-in D), 4474 f (-ynne D), 5447 f (-in CD); ther-yn but, 1354 (-in BCD).

Rhyme-words.—bygynne *inf.* (3537), vnpynne *inf.* (3537), wynne *inf.* (4474), twynne *inf.* (5447).

mele (adverbial termination, A.S. -mǽlum, dat. pl. of mǽl, mél, *n.*, *m.* (?)), stundëmele (A.S. stundmǽlum), 7037 (stormyal † C).

nowthe (A.S. nú þá), 978 f (nouthe CD, nought † B): youthe: kouthe *posset.*

Note.—*Now* is sometimes spelled *nowe*, even in A, but the -e is never pronounced (cf. 2357, 4674, 5691, 6693 f, 8101 f).

oute (A.S. úte, út, út of), But at the yatę there she shoulde outë ryde, 6395; the seynt is oute, 6916 f (out D) (: route *n.*); thow art oute, 7882 f (: doute *n.*); oute of, 3857 (out C, out ‡ hym D), 4672 (out D); out of, 3894 (*-e* B).

ȣut (*adv.*), *before consonants*, 1061, 4701, 4708[3], 4872 (-ę D), 4874 (-ę (?) D), 4919 (-ę BD), 6912 (-ę D), 7733 (-ę D).

thurgh-out, thorugh-out; t. a, 3443 (throw-out C?); t. the, 4566 (thourout C); t. Troye, 5323 (thour-out C ‡).

selde (A.S. seld-, seldan), 1462 f (scld D) (: bchelde *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.*); seldë sc̄ÿnge, 5085 (*perh. adj.*); scelde, 1253 (selde B, seldë seyn C, seldom seyn D).

sithen, sethen, sith, syn (A.S. síð þám, siððan, etc.).

I. In causal sense:

A almost always has *syn*. Thus, (i.) 520, 1665, 2144, 2953, 3108, 4324, 4954, 5215, 6859, etc. etc.; (ii.) 721, 1133, 1380, 1856, 3429, 4006, 4767, 5081, 5107, 5164. Other forms found in A are: sith,[4] (i.) 645, 696, 1345; (ii.) 598, 1380, 1524,

[1] A has *she*[*ne*].

[2] Either pure adverb (as in *this Diomede is inne*), or prepositional (in such phrases as *lyf that I am inne*).

[3] Read *brayn*[*es*] in D.

[4] That no rule can be formulated as to *syn* or *sith* according as *th* does not or doe, begin the following word may be seen by comparing 645 and 696 with 520, 2144, 2953, 3108, 4324, 6859.

1527, 3211; (*before* h) 1794, 3422; sithę, 719; sithęn that, 934; sithęn I, 720.

B, like A, commonly has *syn*. Other forms are: sith, (i.) 645, 696, 1665, 2144, 3256; sith, syth, (ii.) 598, 720, 1380, 1524, 1527, 3211; sith he, 1794, 3422; seth, (i.) 520; sen, (i.) 3993, 6859; seyn, (i.) 3980; (ii.) 4006; sithën thow, 934[1]; sithën thende, 1345.[2]

C has usually *sythę* or *sithę* before consonants (for sythe, sithe, before vowels, see 598, 1380, 1524, 1527, 4006). Other forms are: syn, (i.) 4319, 4954, 5057, 6859, etc.; (ii.) 5164; sith, (i.) 3422, 5171[3]; (ii.) 3429; seth, (i.) 520; sithë, (i.) 960 ‡, 2953 ‡, 3256 ‡, 5231 ‡, 6717 ‡ (cf. 1345); sythyn ‡ thyn, 891; sythyn that (or sythÿn that ?), 4971 ‡; sythyn al, 721.

D commonly reads *seth*. Thus,—(i.) 645, 696, 1665, 2144, etc., etc.; (ii.) 1524, 1527, 1856, etc.; *before* h, 1794, 3422.[4] Other forms are: syn, (i.) 4971, 4975, 5057; (ii.) 5087; synn your, 4977; sen, (i.) 4954, 4994[5]; sith, (i.) 520, 6909; sithę, 5146, 5171, 5215, 5254; sythę, 5174; sithe, 5107, 5164; sithë ‡ we, 6887; sithęn, (i.) 3980 ‡, 3993 ‡; (ii.) 4006; sithën ‡ that, 4319, 6859; -ën I, 5231.

II. Temporal (= *cum*):

sith that, 2354 (-ę C, seth D), 4064 (syn they B, sithë they? C, sethën thei? D); sith I, 3627 (syn C, seth D).

III.

gon sithën longë while, 718 (-ë C$^c$, seth? D); sithën honge, 833 (sythën B, sethyn D, sythę ‡ me C); sethën do, 3086 (sythë C, seth[e] D, sithen B †).

IV. Preposition:

sith that day, 2497 (seth the D; C †); syn mydnyght, 3444[6] (sen B, sin C, tul D).

soone, sone (A.S. sóna), 234 (-[e] B, C †), 524 f, 553, 1160 f, 1296 f (D †), 2376 f (soene B), 2395 f, 3185 (D (?)), 3500 (-[ë to] B, -ë ‡ for to D), 3515 f, 4376 f, 4548, 4551 f, 4727 f, 4812 (-[e] B), 5432 (C(?); -[e] B), 5455, 5743 f, 5789 f, 5838 f, 5922, 5935 (D †), 6074 (C(?); -[e] B), 6432 f, 6641 f, 6754 f, 6958 f, 7008 f, 7210 f, 7265 f, 7454 f, 7574[7], 7578 (D ?), 7662 (-[e] B[8]; D †), 7671 f, 8082

[1] Read, *sith* [*that*] *thow*?
[2] Read, *sith the ende*?
[3] Dele [*that*].
[4] Supply [*that*].
[5] Supply [*To*].
[6] Supply [*in*] in A.
[7] Supply [*for to*] in A.
[8] Or, *writë* (*prcs. subj.* 3 *sg.*) and *soon se.*

(cf. 1999, 5317 C ‡); soone, sone, 41, 1531[1], 2693, 2951[2] (D ?), 3410[3], 4309, 4358, 5938, 8204, etc., etc.; soon as, 2769 (-*e* CD);[4] soone he, 6657, 7595 ‡ C; -*e* hope, 3794 (soon B, -*e* y D); soonë on, 7727 (-*e* vpon CD); soonę, sonę, 2954 (soon B),[5] 4368 (-ë C$^c$; D †), 8030 ‡ A (-ë BCD).[6]—eft soones, eft sones, 2553 (-ęs ‡ D, -ys ‡ aboute? C), 2736 f (eftt sonys C) (: what to don is); eft-sone hym 4843 (-*e* hem C, -ęs hem B, wel ‡ sone hym D.

Rhyme-words.—mone, moone *moon* (524, 1160, 2395, 6641), to done (1160, 1296, 2376, 3515, 4376, 4551, 4727, 5789, 6432, 6641, 6754 f, 7008, 7210, 7265, 7454, 7671), bone *boon* (4727, 6958), trone (5743, 5838).

thanne, thenne, than (A.S. þonne), *temporal and illative*[7]; thenne, 409 f BC (thanne A, than D †) (: brenne *subj.* 1 *sg.*), 1295 f (thanne C) (: henne *adv.*), 2638 f (than C, then D) (: renne *inf.*), 3471 f (than C, then D) (: henne *adv.*); thanne, 7790 f (than CD) (: whanne). *Before consonants:* (1) thennę, 865 (thannę B, than D; C †), 1052 A (than B, tho D); (2) then, 529 (than BD, thannę C), 803 (than BD, *om.* ‡ C); (3) thannę, 849 (D †), 2000 (than B, tho C; D †), 2247 (than BD) (cf. 2510, 3048, 3474,[8] 4922, 5218, 5496, 5741); (4) than, 221 (thannę B), 349 (ȝet ‡ D), 2167 (thannę C) (cf. 2461 ‡ D, 2710 ‡ D, 2832, 3347, 5249, 5686, 5693). In the following instances *thanne* (temporal or illative) seems to have two syllables before a word beginning with a consonant,—498 (-[ne] B, -nę ‡ D), 2966 (-[ne] B; D †), 7354 (-[ne] BD); than[ne], 7652 (-ne C); cf. 4585 ‡ C, 5138 † C, 6622 ‡ C. *Before vowels*: (1) thanne, 1489 (than D) (cf. 2973, 3158, 3255, 3346, 3485, 3718, 4845; (2) than, 874 (thanne BC) (cf. 1435, 1670, 2710, 3658; 3927). *Before* h: thanne he, 4313 ‡ D, 4459 (than B), 4585 (than D, thannë ‡ wolde he C); than haue ye, 1413 (thanne C); than hastow, 4945 (thanne C); thanne hastow, 5301 (than CD).

than = *quam* (A.S. þonne, þon), (i.) 532 (D †), 537, 614, 1226, 2471, 2671, 3014, 3289, 3415, 3873 (thannę B), 4065 (thannę B), 4825, 5050 (then B, than ‡ is D), 5253, 5257 (C †); (ii.) 1425, 3988 (D †), 4497 (er † A); than he, 819, 3332 (thanne B, as C).

whanne, whan, when (A.S. hwonne); whannę, 2067 (when B, whan D), 3874 (when B, whan C, wher D †), 4001 (when B, whan C), 5355 (when B, whan CD) (cf. also, 71, 1002, 1237, 1672, 1689, 1849, 2095, 2255, 2386, 2577, 3445, 3925, 4001, 4257, 4665,

[1] Read *certayn* for *certaynly* in A.
[2] Old-style figures indicate that B has *soon*.
[3] Supply [*to*] in D.
[4] Supply [*I*] in B.
[5] Before *that*. If we read *soonę*, we have *neuere how*; if *soonë*,—*neuere how*.
[6] Dele (*forth*) in A, and read *soonë*.
[7] In 2107 A, *than* = *whan* (*whan* CD, *when* B).
[8] Supply [*I*] in A.

4693, 4989, 5790, 5909).—whan (*bef. cons'ts*), 155, 1139 (when B), 2278 (when B), 3386 (when B, whi † C), 3513, 4071 (when B, whannę D), 4801 (cf. also 358, 545, 876, 914, 1369, 2107 (than A), 2185, 2209, 2569, 2669, 2805, 2825, 3036, 3044, 3294, 3418, 3450, 3985, 4043, 4076, 4237, 4243, 4423, 4521, 4624, 4915, 5207, 5482).—when (*bef. cons'ts*), 3195 (whan CD), 5249 (whan CD).

Before vowels both *whanne* (*whenne*) and *whan* (*when*) are found. Thus,—whanne, 85 (when B, whan C †), 4239 (whan B, when E) (cf. 4270, 4321, 4755); whan, 1483 (when B; C †), 1868 (when B) (cf. 2000, 2471, 2474, 3074, 3437, 3698, 4668, 4811); whenne, 404 (whanne C, whens ‡ D); when, 3083 (whan CD). Similarly before *he*, *here* (poss. sg.), *hem*: whanne 505 (when B, whan D) (cf. 1820, 2630, 5330); whan he, 323 (when B) (cf. 750, 1731, 2941, 3907, 4080, 4634).

Note 1.—*When* is the usual form in B, whether before a vowel or a consonant; but *whan* also occurs in B (as, 155, 3513, 4239, 4801).

Note 2.—No good case of *whannë* (*whcnnë*) *or whan*[*në*] occurs in the interior of the verse. Apparent cases are to be corrected, usually by the insertion of *that* (cf. 196 AD, 351 AB, 545 C, 1880 A (D ?), 2386 D, 3446 BD (C ?), 3925 C, 4624 D (C ?). *Whanne* (*whan* CD) occurs once in rhyme, in 7791 (: *thanne*).

therfore, therfor (A.S. þére + A.S. fore)[1]; wherfore, wherfor.[1]—therfore, 5661 f, 5699 f (therę- B); wherfore, 2496 f (wherę- C, wherfor D). Before consonants,—therforę, 813 (-for B; C †; therfor ‡ hym (?) D), 855 (-for B)[2], cf. 5662, 7365, etc.; therfor, 17 (-ę B, *om.* † D), 574 (-ę C), 576 (-ę BC), etc.; wherforę, 430 (-for[ë] B, whereforë C, wherfor[ë] D).[3] Before vowels,—therfore, 472 (therę- B, therfor D †), 680 (-for BD), 761 (-for D †), cf. 133, 1385, 1480, 3180, 5467, 5702, etc.; therfor, 488 (-*e* C), etc.; wherfore, 981 (wharfor B, therfore C, therefor D), 1100 (-for BD), 2423 (-for BD, whereforę C), cf. 3676; wher-forë ‡ er, 3123 (-fore BC, wherfor D)[4]; cf. wherfor he, 311 (war for C).

Rhyme-words.—to-fore (-forn A) (2496), byfore (5661, 5699), bore *p.p.* (2496), y-shore *p.p.* (5661).

to-forn,[5] to-fore (cf. by-forn, by-fore); to-forn, (i.) 1381 f (biforne B, before C, byforn D), 1042 (-nę B, -forë ‡ D), 1516 (-nę B), 2448 (-forę C, -for D), 3177, 3691, 4481 f (-ne BC); (ii.) 2077 (-ne B,

[1] These words are accented indifferently on the first or the second syllable.
[2] In C supply [*what*]; in B read *be*[*se*]*che*.
[3] BCD omit [*my*] (not necessary to the sense) before *lord*.
[4] But supply [*wol*] in A, and read *wher-fore*.
[5] Commonest in the phrase *God to-forn*.

-for D), 4168 (-ne B, -forn [I] E), 7326 (-ne BD).—to-fore, 2494 f BCD (to-forn † A), 5381 ‡ f C, 6418 ‡ f C.

Rhyme-words.—y-born *p.p.* (1381), sworn(e) *p.p.* (1381), lorn *p.p.* (4481); wherfore (2494), bore *p.p.* (2494) [sore *adv.* (5381), more *adv.* (5381), more *adj. pl.* (6418)].

whanne, whan. See after *thanne, than.*

wherfore, wherfor. See *therfore.*

with-inne[1] (A.S. wiðinnan), 1061 f (-yn D), 2462 f (-yn D), 2815 f (her yn D †), 3818 f (-yn D), 4206 f, 4620 f (-in C, -yn D), 6277 f (-in C), 7332, 8023 f; *-e*, 1108 (-yn D), 1167 (-yn D), 5940 (-in B, that ‡ in C), 6075 (-in D), 7818, 7824 (-in D) (cf. 3443 D); *-e* here (*sg. poss.*), 1745 (-in BD), 1762[2] (-in D); *-e* his, 6837 (-in D)[3]; *-e* hym, 7135 (with[in] C).—with-innę the, 267 (-in D), 305 (-yn D), 7544 (-ë nyght BC); -ę tho, 7096 (-ë ȝonë C, -ë yonder D); -ę myn, 8060 (-in D).

Rhyme-words.—bygynne *inf.* (1061, 2462, 2815 (?), 3818), wynne *inf.* (1061, 2462, 4620, 6277), blynne *inf.* (4206), twynne *inf.* (8023), a-twynne *adv.* (6277).

Note.—The form *in-with* is found in *in-with myn*, 4341 (riȝt ‡ in D), and *in-with here* (poss. sg.), 7385 (with-inne CD); and this may perhaps be the right reading in some of the cases where the MSS. have *with-innę* or *with-inne.*

with-outen, -owten, wit-outen,[4] -owten[5] (A.S. wiðútan), (i.) 1714,[6] 1799, 1922, 2477, 3308, 3590, 3815, 4105, 5038 (-ë C), 5162 (-ë D), 5787 (-ën(e) D), 6020 (C †), 6303, 7681 (-ë CD), 8035 (-ë C), etc. [Var. CD -yn.] (ii.) 1757, 3077, 3260, 4655, 5066, 5646, 5663 (-ë D), 5733, 6255, 6258, 7127 (-ë ‡ wordis C), 7560, 8166. [Var. CD -yn.] with-outęn awayte, 3421 (B †; -oute C; D †); -ęn answère, 5820 (-oute C); withoutęn his, 2365 (-yn C, -out D); -ën here (*sing.*), 5756 (-yn C); -ën ho, 2168 AB; -ën hond, 3030 (-yn CD).

with-oute, -owte, 270 f (-t D), 1321 (-en B), 1696 f (-t D), 2506 (-en B, -yn C), 3076 (-en B, -yn C), 3526 f (-t D), 3587 f, 4703 (-en B)[7], 4795 (-en B, -yn C, without ‡ (?) D), 5257 (-en B), 5427 (-en B)[8], 6033 (-en BD, -yn C)[9], 6430 f, etc.; without[e], 1838 (-en B, -yn C, -out ‡ (?) D); *-e*, 4827 (-ęn B, -out thassent D)[10], 7142 (-out B,

[1] Preposition in 267, 305, 1108, 1167, 1745, 1762, 3443 D, 5940, 6075, 6837, 7096, 7135, 7332, 7818, 7824, 8060.

[2] *Hire* is dative in ABC (in all of which the line seems to consist of nine syllables), possessive in D. The line needs considering.

[3] Supply [*and*] in C. [4] 6020. [5] 8590.

[6] Old-style figures indicate that D has *without* (which, before consonants, makes the line short by one syllable in the cases in question).

[7] *without eny* ‡ D. [8] Dele (or slur) *I* in A.

[9] Read *whereę*[*with*] in C. [10] Supply [*ne*] in AD.

-ęn D)[1]; -*e* his, 5430 (-ęn B, -yn C †); withoutę the yates, 7541 (ouer † C); -without ‡ bothe, 1862 D.

Rhyme-words.—route *n.* (270, 1696, 6430), route *inf.* (3587), shoute *inf.* (1696), aboute (270, 3526), lowte *inf.* (3526), doute *n.* (6430).

Note.—It will be seen from the foregoing examples that our MSS. use *with-outën* or *with-outë* indifferently before a consonant, the reading often varying in the same line. Compare also the following cases, in all of which a consonant follows: (1) (*A has* -ën) 361,[2] 2490, 2563, 2856, 3332, 3541, 3998, 4150, 4200, 4583, 5362, 5839, 6363, 6385, 6419, 6900, 7214, 8035[3]; (2) (*A has* -ë) 1668, 2651, 2725, 2751, 2974, 4352, 4881, 5326, 6160, 6654, 6751, 7494, 8079. It is to be observed that all the instances of *withoutë*, -*ën*, cited are prepositions, except the four in which *with-outë* (never -*ën*) occurs at the end of a verse. These last are adverbs.

yfere, ifere (*i. e.* i(n) + fere, dat., cf. A.S. gefér, on gefére), 1237 f, 1253 f, 1995 f, 2122 f, 2201 f, 2334 f, 2351 f, 2562 f, 3073 f, 3115 f, 3357 f, 3588 f, 3660 f, 4554 f, 4689 f, 5452 f, 5866 f, 5868 f, 5995 f, 6016 f, 6096 f, 6114 f, 6706 f, 7176 f, 7216 f, 8134 f.

Rhyme-words.—chere *n.* (1237, 2351, 3073, 3588, 4554), deere, dere *adj.* (2562, 3115, 5868, 6016, 6114, 6706), here *inf.* (2201, 3588, 7216, 8134), here *hic* (1253, 3357, 3660, 4689, 5866, 5995), matere (1237, 2122, 2334, 3357), manere (4554), fere *companion* (5452), bere *feretrum* (5868), clere *adj. pl.* (6096, 7176), appere *inf.* (1995). [Var. B i-feere, i-fere, yfeere; CD in fere; D yn fere, in fer.]

yore (A.S. géara, L. ȝ(e)are), 6159 f, 6418 f (to-fore ‡ C), 6687 f; of yore, 5381 f (tofore ‡ C, of yoor D), 8097 f (of yoor D); yore ago, 6680 (yoor D).

Rhyme words.—more *subst.* (6159), *adj. pl.* (6418), no more (6687, 8097), more, euerȩmore *adv.* (5381, 8097), sore *adv.* (5381), lore *n.* (6687). [Var. BD yoore; C ȝore.]

Note 1.—*Down, doun, adown, adoun* (A.S. of-dúne, dúne-stígian, adúne, adún-weard *Chron.* 1083) show no -e (except sometimes -(ę) in D): cf. (i.) (ii.) 110 f, 184 f, 299 f, 359, 1065 f, 1284, 1492 (adowyn B), 1744 f, 2202 f, 2938, 3815, 3921, 4434 f, 4625 f, 4896, 6795 f, 6924 f, 7174, 7222 f, 7368 f, 7386 f, 7675 f, 8013 f, etc., etc.

Note 2.—*Gruf* in the phrase *fallen gruf* (O.N. falla á grúfu) occurs once: *fil gruf and* 5574, (grof CD).

Note 3.—For *asunder* (cf. A.S. on-sundron) see 3502 f (a sundyr C, a sundre D), 4181 BE (a sondry A †, a sundir C), 4605 ABE † (asundęry C), 7346 f (a sundir C, a sondr D).

Rhyme words.—thondre *n.* (-er B, -yr C, -re D), yonder (-re D), wonder *n.* (-ir C, wondr D).

§ 89. To the list in § 88 may be appended: I. *atwixen, -e, bytwyxen, -e, aweye, eke, often, -e, saue;* II. *here, there, where,* and their varieties,—particles in which the form of the termination has been influenced by various analogies (cf. Child, § 72, *b*).

[1] Supply [*nat*] in D. [2] Dele (*ony*) in A and read *with-outën lette.*
[3] Cf. also 1820 CD, 1831 ‡ D, 6431 ‡ C.

atwixen, atwixe (cf. by-twyxen), atwixen noon, 6835 (attwexen B, betwixe CD); *-e* here (*sg.*), 5483. (See variants under *bytwyxen.*)

aweye (A.S. onweg, aweg), 1208 f (-y D), 2279 f (-ỳ D †), 4977 f, 5019 f, 5544 f (-y A, to dey C, to deye D), 6456 f (-y D), 6820 f (-y CD). [Var. BD awaye; C awoye.] aweỳ, awaỳ, (i.) 572, 2600, 6263 f, 7431 f. [Var. C. awoy.] (Cf. 574 ‡ C, 1195 ‡ C, 1196 ‡ C.)

Rhyme-words.—pleye *inf.* (1208), deye *ind.* 1 *sg.* (1208), seye *inf.* (5019, 5544, 6456), seyę *ind.* 1 *sg.* (2279), tweye (2279, 4977[1]), weye (6456), pleye *inf.* (6820), keye *n.* (6820).—day (6263), way (7431), weylawey (7431), may 3 *sg.* (6263).

bytwext. See *by-twyxen.*

by-twyxen, by-twixen, bi-twixen, be-twexen (A.S. betwix, betweox, betwuxt), 417 B (betwexe C, bytwix[e] D, bytwen[e] A), 585 (betwethë C),[2] 1896 (-e C), 3096 B (betwixe C, bytwene A), 3248 betwethę (?) C ‡), 4157 (betwixe C, bitweyne B, bytwix[e] E), 7249 (atwixen B, betwixe CD); *-ën* hope, 2392 (betwethë C),[3] 6993 (atwixë C, betwen[ë] D), 7570 (betwixë CD); *-ën* hem, 135 (betwixë C); bytwyxęn hem, 7219 (betwethe C, betwixe D)[4]; bytwyxe vs, 5771 (betwixe C, bytwen D); bi-twyxën Orcades, 7334 (betwethë C, betwen[ë] D). [Var. B betwixen, bytwexen, betwyxen.] bytwext vs, 6165 (bytwyxe B, atwixe C, bytwixe D).

eke (A.S. éac, éc, cf. A.S. tó éacan), 2761 f (ek C) (: byseche *ind.* 1 *pl.*, bisike B, beseche B), 2918 f (ek C) (: beseche *inf.*, byseke BD, besek C), 4790 f (ek B) (: cheke *n.*: byseche *inf.*, -seke BD, beseke C), 6296 f (ek C) (: beseche *ind.* 1 *sg.*, beseke BD); ek, 3571 f (eke BCD) (: bysek *ind.* 1 *sg.*, biseke B, beseche C, byseke D); ekę, 475 (ek C, echę D), 1720 (ek BC), 4226 AE (ek BC), etc.; ek, (i.) 32 (*om.* † D), 1827 (ekę D), etc.

ofte (A.S. oft), 135 f (-t D), 196 f,[5] 212 (-en B, -[e]? D), 625 (-en C, -yn D), 912 f (-t D), 940 f, 1145 (*om.* † D), 2114 f, 2319 (-en B, -e (?) C, *om.* † D), 2406, 2466, 3127, 3286 f, 3511 f (-yn † C), 4091 f, 4361 (-[e] B), 4479 f, 4485 (oft to B, al day CD), 4799,[6] 4876 (-[e] B, offte D), 5204 f (-t B), 5793 C, 5828 C, 5881 f, 6351 B, 6373 f, 6708 f, 6980 f (-t B), 7030 C (ofte a wold a = oftë wolde he D, ost A, oost B), 7945 (-t ‡ and B); oftë tyme,[7] 913 (-[e] D), 1850 (-ÿn C), 1877, 3971 (-yn C; B †), 5823 (-[e] B), 7939 (-[e] B), 7946 (-[e] B), 8121 (-[e] B); oft[e] tyme, 7172 (-e CD); ofte, cf.

[1] *twcy(n)e* A.
[2] Old-style figures indicate that D reads *by-twix*[ë].
[3] In D read *des*[*cs*]*peraunce.*
[4] In D read *Troy*[ë].
[5] Old-style figures indicate that B and D have *oft*[ë].
[6] Supply [*hem*] in C.
[7] Variants of *tyme* not registered, see *tyme*, § 2, p. 3.

344, 646, 740, 1782, 1876, 2419, 3168, 3903, 4561, 5164, 5166, 5400, 5828, 6037, 6351, 7052, 7078, 7589, 7685, 7931[1]; ofte he, 506 (-t B, offte D), 4579,[2] 6100 (-t B, -ë ‡ pitousely C, -e † ful D), 6969 (-t B); *-e* his, 445, 2343 (eft † C), 3976 (-t B), 4625 (-t B; D †); oftë hastow, 904 (-en B, -[ë] C); ofte, 346 (-t BD), 137 ‡ A (-t ‡ (?) D), 139 † A, 4395 ‡ D, 5828 D (cf. 3171 † D, 4561 ‡ D); ofte tyme, 5986 (oft B, oftyn ‡ there C, ofte ther D).

Rhyme-words.—softe *adj. and adv.* (135, 196, 912, 940, 2114, 3286, 3511, 4091, 4479, 5204, 5881, 6708, 6980), on lofte, a-lofte, o lofte (135, 940, 3511, 5881, 6373, 6708).

often as, 3143 (-t D); -en here-byforn, 3144; -en here (*eam*), 5387 (-[en] B, -ë D; C †); -en harme, 333 (-ë C, -[ë] D).—often for, 2331 (-e C, -[e] D); -en myght[e], 3351 (-[e] ‡ (?) D; C †); -en peyne, 4058 (-e CD, oft ‡ peynës (?) B); -en gan, 5024 (offte D, soft † B); -en was, 7465 (-[e] B, -e CD); -en seyde, 583 (-e C, -[e] D) (cf. 625); -en se, 4056 (-[e] B); oftyn ‡ tyme, 6833 C[e]; oftyn as, 3168 C. (Cf. 1876 ‡ C, 2419 ‡ C.) [Var. CD -yn.]

saue (O. Fr. sauf), *-e*, 395 (-e ‡ that (?) D), 1241 (D ?), 1825, 3351 (C †, D †), 3632, 3729 (saf D), 4617[3], 4754, 7040, 8167, 8168; *-e* here (*poss. sg.*), 7176 (saf C); *-e* his, 1710 (saf C)[4], 6573; saue Troylus, 2489. Cf. Myn honour sauf I wol, etc., 3001 (sauyn † C, savë ‡ I D).

here (=hic) (A.S. hér), 121 f, 292 f, 399 f, 1124 f, 1183 f (heere B), 1252 f (her D), 1337 f, 1577 f, 1680 f, 2058 f, 2189 f, 2714 f, 2729 f, 2836 f, 3355 f, 3483 f, 3489 f, 3661 f, 3678 f, 3790 f, 4053 f, 4149 f, 4690 f (heere B), 4970 f, 5102 f, 5205 f, 5558 f (heere B), 5582 f (heere B, her D), 5865 f (yfere † A, her D), 5870 ‡ C, 5976 f, 5993 f (her D), 6212 f (her D), 6297 f (her D), 6829 f BCD (there ‡ A), 7108 f (her D), 7361 f (her D), 7538 f. [1281 f D ‡ (see *there*), 4990 f D ‡ (see *there*).[5]]

Rhyme-words.—chere *n.* (121, 292, 1124, 3483, 6297), manere (292, 1124, 3678, 5582), matere (1577, 2714, 3355, 4149, 7108, 7361), preyere (3483, 6297), here *inf.* (121, 399, 2189, 2714, 2836, 5205, 6829), yhere *inf.* (5976), lere *inf.* (2729, 5102), ye me lere *imv. or subj.* (1183), yfere *adv.* (1252, 3355, 3661, 4690, 5865, 5870 ‡ C, 5993), dere *adj. sg.* (1337, 1577, 1680, 2058, 2189, 3489 (drede † A), 3790, 4053, 4149, 4970, 5205, 5558, 5870 ‡ C, 5976, 6829), clere *adj. sg. and pl.* (6212, 7361), of fern[e] yere (7538).

[1] In most of these cases B reads *oft*; so sometimes D, and once, at least, C (7931).
[2] Old-style figures indicate that BD have *oft* (for *ofte*).
[3] In D read [*y*]*dred*.
[4] In D supply [*ful*].
[5] For the rhymes of these two lines see under *there*.

Before consonants *here* apocopates its -e, which, however, is regularly written except sometimes in D. For *herę* (var. B heerę; D her), cf. 868, 1054, 1096 (A †), 1115, 1188, 1282, 1409, 1462, 1515, 1728, 2076, 2208 (hirę B), 2338, 2815 (D ?), 3235, 3953, 4303 (hirę C), 4844, 4902, 5139. Cf. also, herę byforn, 2356 f,[1] 5910 f (therę C, her D); hèrę-to, 3362 B (herto CD, herë ‡ myghte A); hertò, 5734 f BD (thertò A); herę with al, 6441 CD (ther-with-al AB). For *here*, cf. 432, 1406, 1525, 1569, 2405, 2688, 2814, 2990, 3341, 3476; for *here* in compounds (*here after*, and the like), cf. 938, 3377, 3515, 4805; for *her* in such compounds (the second member beginning with a vowel), cf. 984, 1094 D, 1193, 3407; for here before *his, hym, haue*, cf. 469, 1544, 4415 A.

Instances of *herë* in the body of a verse are at any rate very rare. The strongest case is: "Intendestow that we shul *here* bleue," 6841 AB (but: *herę beleue* C, *ther be-leue* D)[2] where *here* is emphatic (or at any rate has the ictus). In the following apparent cases comparison of MSS. shows a better reading: 3362 A (*l.* herę-to), 5594 A (*l.* hyder), 6826 C.

there (A.S. þǽr, þér), 1281 f (thare B, here D), 2095 f, 3366 f (thare B), 3411 f, 3428 f, 3469 f, 3593 f, 4162 f, 4990 f (here D), 5305 f (ther D), 5359 f (ther D), 6024 f (ther D), 6146 f (theere B), 6186 f (ther D), 6829 f ‡ (here BCD)[3], 7242 f (ther D), 7273 f (ther D), 7543 f (ther D), 7721 f (ther D).

Rhyme-words.—ere, eere *n.* (1281, 3593, 5305), gere *n.* (2095, 6186), were *ind.* 2 *sg.* (4162), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (3428, 3469, 7543), *subj.* 1 *sg.* (4990), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (2095, 3366, 3411, 5359, 6024, 7242, 7721), fere *n.* (3411, 3428, 3469, 3593, 4162, 6024, 7273), fere *inf.* (6146), ellys where (5359, 6186), tere *n.* 7242, 7543).

therę, 3993 (ther BD); cf. 4049, 4198, 4227, 4368, 4570, 4658, 5111, 5760, 5761, 6022, 7033, 7455, etc.—ther, (i.) 4483 (-ę C), 5606 (-ę BC), 5614 (-ę D); cf. 5505, 5630, 5649, 5685, 5843, 5859, 6021, 6156, 6308, 6316, 6509, 6532, 7085, 7609, etc,; ter mot, 5698 A (ther BD).

In compounds before consonants: thèrby, 447 (tharby B); therby, 383 f, 5682 f; thèrfore, 472 (therę-fore B, therfor D †); therfòre, 133 (therfor D); cf. for further examples, 17, 243, 247, 266, 274, 488, 574, 576, 627 f, 680, 761, 813, 855, 1161, 1251 f, 1385, 1434, 1480, 1576, 2094, 2137, 2935, 3180, 3378, 4232, 5467, 5662, 5702, 5734 f, 7365, etc., etc.

[1] See also § 88, under *byforn*.
[2] Cp. John's appear to agree with A, but Hl. 2392 has *beleue*.
[3] For the rhymes see under *here*, which is the right reading.

there, 273 (ther BD); cf. 892, 1960, 2604 (thare B), 3247, 3406, 3415, 3510, 4902, 5048, etc.; ther, (ii.) 5243 AB (ther but D; C ‡) (cf. 7341).—there he, 1282 (thar B, that † C) (cf. 1418); there haue (*pres. ind.* 2 *pl.*), 3042 (ther B); ther helpeth, 5962 (-*e* CD). In compounds in which the second member begins with a vowel *ther* is usual: thus, ther-after, 5208; ther-inne, 5447 f (therin CD); cf. 333, 1354, 1454,[1] 1703, 2282, 4474 f; there-vp-on, 4805 C.

The strongest cases of dissyllabic *therë* are: That he cam *therë* ‖ and that he was born, 3915 (ther[ë] B, therë or CD)[2], and And *ther*[*e*] lat vs speken of oure wo, 5906 (therë C).[3] In 604 † C, 3420 A (*l.* therof), 5357 C (*l.* thennes), 6737 C (*l.* therof), comparison of MSS. affords a corrected reading.

Note.—*ner* (= *ne ther* ?) occurs in 1262 A, but is perhaps merely a slip of the pen for *per*.

where (A.S. hwǽr, hwér), 4239 f (whare B), 6582 f (wher D); euery where, 4724 f; ony where, 3534 f; ellys where, elles where, 5360 f (ellis wher D), 6183 f (ellis wher D), 7407 f (elles wher D).

Rhyme-words.—feere *n.* (4239), ere *n.* (4724), gere *n.* (6183), tere *n.* (6582, 7407), were *ind.* 3 *pl.* (3534, 4239, 6582), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (5360), there (5360, 6183).

wher, (i.) 357 (-ę [that] C), 1880 (-ę C) (cf. 1291 A, 3874 ‡ D, 5795); no where, 4302 (no wher B, nower C, nowherë ‡ D); and in compounds of *wher* in which the second member begins with a consonant (as, *wher-so*, *wherby*, *wherfor*), cf. 311 (whefor A, war for C), 409 (where-to B), 430, 436, 981, 1100, 1387 f, 2423, 2496 f, 3123 (A ?), 3620, 3676, 5774 (whar-with B).

where, 3501 (whare C, wher D); wydë where, 3246 (wher CD); wher, (ii.) 1164 (-*e* B); where as, 1357 C (wher D, there A, ther B); wher as, 3358 BD (-*e* C, there A). In composition (*wher-on*, etc.): wher-ǒn, 1776; whère-of, 4489 (wherof BCD).—where he, 1285 (wher BD); wher he, 1461 (-*e* BC), 2236 (-*e* C); wher hym, 1291 BD (-*e* C, wher that A), 2034 (-*e* C); where hastow, 5158 (wher BD); wher hastow, 276 (-*e* BC); no wher hool, 954.

There are no cases of *wherë*. All apparent cases yield to comparison of MSS., as in 357 C (wherë ‡ hem), 1291 C (wherë hym), 1932 A, 4302 D.

Note.—From a comparison of the rhyme-lists to *here*, *there*, and *where* (which are complete), it will be seen that these fall into two classes which do not cross: (*a*) rhymes to *here* and (*b*) rhymes to *there*, *where*. A

[1] Seems to be a 9-syl. verse.
[2] But the reading of Cp. is certainly right: *there* ‖ *and that that*.
[3] No note in Mr. Austin's collation.

striking instance of the difference in the sound of (*a*) and (*b*) is shown by 6581-5, where, the order of rhymes being *ababb*, the rhyme-words are: *dere, where, clere, were* (erant), *tere* (*n.*).

§ 90. *Ever* and *never* (A.S. *æfre, nǽfre*) are (as a rule) dissyllabic before consonants and monosyllabic before vowels and weak *h*.

The usual spelling, whether before vowels or consonants, is *euere, neuere* in ABC (and so often in D); but *euer* and *neuer* are not uncommon in BD, and *euer* is found in C 3605, *neuer* in A 2843, C 1362.

For the spelling *euer*, see B, 9, 418, 2299, 2494, 2681, 4243, 4268, 5772, 6785, 7892; for *neuer*, see B 294, 501, 534, 675, 910, 970, 3199. There are some petty variants: as, *nevir* (4942 D), *ewere* (7892 C), *evyr* (6025 D).

I. Before consonants both words are regularly dissyllabic: cf. for *euere*, 418, 584, 638, 1151, 1465, 1864, 1915, 1925, 1958, 2117, 2656, 3086, 3121, 3354, 3473, 3519, 3556, 3653, 4021, 4243, 4268, 4440, 4603, 4681, 4942, 4946, 4966, 5049, 5161, 5179, 5772, 5984, 6082, 6126, 6387, 6405, 6593, 6781, 7026, 7181, 7418, 7502, 7691, 7719, 7892, 8096.

For *neuere*, cf. 37, 294, 534, 539, 586, 639, 641, 675, 774, 910, 959, 1219, 1228, 1386, 1653, 1671, 1813, 2316, 2354, 2498, 2545, 2692, 2968, 3093, 3199, 3229, 3331, 3409, 3427, 3626, 3706, 3711, 3712, 3717, 4088, 4503, 4550, 4869, 4961, 5002, 5059, 5135, 5521, 5858, 5862, 6022, 6142, 6486, 6788, 7139, 7143, 7187, 7238, 7341, 7724, 8045. So before consonant *y* in the phrases *euęrę yet, neuęrę yet*: cf., for *euęrę yet*, 1325, 2080, 3135 AB, 7123; for *neuęrę yet*, cf. 657, 812, 1278, 1916, 3161, 3548, 3682, 3896, 4288, 4447, 7991.

II. Before a vowel both words are regularly reduced to one syllable by slurring: cf., for *euęre*, 9, 318, 513, 541, 816, 1290, 1633, 2229, 2238, 2299, 2494, 2681, 4685, 5749, 6025, 6264, 6306, 6785, 6814, 7119, 7439, 7745, 8224. For *neuęre*, cf. 501, 622, 1329, 1362, 1522, 1574, 1643, 2183, 3000, 3236, 3550, 3605 (neuęrę thoughte A), 4356, 4375, 5250, 6243, 6518, 6804, 7198.

III. Before *he* and *his* the same slur takes place as before a vowel: cf., for *euęre*, 541 ‡ C, 2958, 5095, 6799 (C †), 7136, 7534; for *neuęre*, cf. 1946, 4188.

But before other *h*'s, the dissyllabic pronunciation seems to be the rule: thus, euëre haue (*subj.* 1 *sg.*), 1225 (euër B); neuëre han (*inf.*), 3414 BC (neuërę the AD); euëre help, 1040 D ‡; neuëre

how, 2954 ;[1] neuëre half, 4492 ; neuëre herte, 7746 AC (-ër D). Cf., however, neuęre haue (*inf.*), 6104 AB (neuëre haue C, -er? D ‡) ; neuęre han (*inf.*), 900 B (neuęre a A ; C †).

Note 1. The only case of *ever* or *never* in rhyme is 7442-4,—*neuere*, 7742 f (*-er* D) : *euere*, 7444 f (*-er* D).

Note 2.—The following lines in which there are various readings (some MSS. following the word with a vowel, others with a consonant), may be compared, but are of little utility (presenting no instances which transgress the general rule, except for a manifest corruption or two) : (1) for *euere*, cf. 236, 787, 1205, 5461, 6807, 7003, 7305 ; (2) for *neuere*, cf. 1755, 3605, 5101, 6317, 6528, 6811.

The rule, then, is clear enough. *Euere* and *neuere* are dissyllabic before consonants ; monosyllabic before vowels. This is the enunciated (as to *euer*) by ten Brink, *Compleynte to Pite*, p. 176, n. to v. 33, who indeed makes it so stringent that he changes *euer* to *ay* in that verse. It seems doubtful, however, if the present state of our knowledge allows us to emend in this way (and this is admitted by ten Brink, *Ch's. Spr. u. Versk.*, § 263). The *Troilus* contains some cases which seem to show that Chaucer allowed both *euere* and *neuere* to count for a single syllable before consonants. I give the sure, or tolerably sure, cases first :

Quod Troylus for al that *euere ye* konne, 776.
To ben hire helpe yn al that *euere they* myghten, 2709 (*om.* † D).
As *euere she* was shal I fynde yn som route, 5065 (As she euyr was D).
She wolde come as soone as *euere she* myghte, 6874 (euer D).
Nas *neuere yet* thing seyn to ben presed derre, 174 (B † ; -ęr C, -ëręt seyn D).
So hyd it wel I telle it *neuere to* mo, 613 (neuer D).
Were hise nayles poynted *neuere so* sharpe, 2119.
Now goode nece be it *neuere so* lyte, 2288 (-er B).
For she was wys and louede hym *neuere the* lasse (not = *natheles*), 2928 (neuer C ; D †).
To knowe of this ye were it *neuere so* lite, 7653 (D *om.* ye ; neuer D).
Cf. Be she *neuere so* faire or (ne so C) wel ishape (schape C), 3253 (no note in Austin).

Cases that are easily emended by comparison of MSS. are : (1) for *euere*, 897 BC, 3316 BD, 4620 C, 7420 C ; (2) for *neuere*, 739 BC (but perh. BC are right), 883 C, 1655 A, 2461 D, 7056 A, 7356 C, 7791 C ; and some cases of *nèuęre the lès* in C (as, 170 C, 750 C, 916 C) where *natheles* is the correct reading. Very doubtful is 1144 ; and one does not like to dogmatize on 3253 or 4406.

Such of the above cases as are certain (for it will be observed that emendation to *ay* is impossible in the four cases 776, 2709, 5065, 6874, and no emendation for *neuere* can be devised) seem sufficient to show that ten Brink's rule is not rigid.

[1] That is, if we read *sonę* (*soon* B) *that*. If we read *sonë that*, we have *neuęre how*.

On the other hand in a few cases the dissyllabic forms are found before vowels. Thus,—

God helpe me so I neuërc other mente, 1449.
Fro this forth shal I neuëre eten bred, 1529.
And neuërc other creaturë serue, 5110 (neuër D).
The obseruaunce euërc yn youre absence, 5445 (C †, euër D).
Less secure are 897 AD, 4763 BD[1]; and certainly to be emended (as comparison of MSS. easily allows) are 3103 D, 3146 C, 6816 C.[2]
Similarly *cuërc his*, 6799 C † and *ncuërc his*, 4181 C ‡, are to be corrected.

Note 3.—Such monstrosities as *cuërë* and *neuërë*, sometimes perpetrated by this or that scribe, mean nothing, of course, and are easily corrected by comparison of MSS. (cf. *e.g.* the various readings in 2525, 2623, 3234).

§ 91. The following particles end in the *Troilus* sometimes or always in *-es*, *-s* (Child, § 73). This is sometimes an A.S. *-es*, sometimes a formation by analogy.

(i.) *ayens* (*ayeyns*, *ayen*, *agayn*, *afornyeyn*), *elles*, *nedes*, *to medes*, *towardes* (etc.), *vnnethes*; (ii.) *hennes* (*henne*, *hens*), *thennes*, *uhennes*; (iii.) *ones* (*nones*), *twyes*, *thries* (*thrie*); (iv.) *alweyes* (*alweys*, *alwey*), *other weyes*, *amonges* (*among*), *togedères* (*to-gedre*); (v.) *algates* (*algate*), *ascaunces*, *certes*. In the following list the examples cited occur before a consonant (not *h*) unless there is a note to the contrary.

afornyeyn (A.S. foran, on-gægnes), afòrn yeyn vs, 2273 (a-for-ȝeynes B, aforn [ ] C, aforyens D). (Cf. *byforn*.)

algates (cf. O.N. alla gǫtu, *adverbial acc.*), algàtës hem, 2866 (-is D); algàte, 2049 (-ę ‡ D), 2754 CD, 7434.

alweyes, (cf. A.S. ealne weg, *adverbial acc.*), alweỳes arise, 2754 A (alwaỳes B, algate CD); alweỳs a, 6415 (alweỳes B, alwoỳ C, aH-weỳ D). (Cf. weyes.)

àlwey, (i.) 782, 1403 (D †),[3] 1468 (-oỳ C, -eỳ D), 3084, 4477, 4942 CD (èuërę AB), 6505; àlwey here (*hic*), 3661 AB (cf. 1818 ‡ B); àlwey, (ii.) 1122, 1803. alwèy (i.), 1847, 2437 B (A ? C ?; àlwey C; D †), 5618 f; alweỳ hym, 2169 (àlwey D ‡). [Var. B alway; C alwoy; D alwei.] (Cf. alwaỳ, 6288 f C †; àlwoy ‡ his, 3328 C.)

amonges (A.S. ongemang, onmang), (i.) 7835 (omanges B, among[e] C); (ii.) 893 (amangë B, among[ë] C, almong D ‡), 2260 (-ë B, -is C, -[is] D), 3700 (-is CD), 6614 (omanges B, amongis C, amongë D); among[ës] al, 4765 AD (-ë B).

among, 1970 f (-e B) (: song *n.* (-e BC)), 3110, 3702 (-ę B), 4658 f

[1] Where A seems to have two light syllables before the cæsura : *neuĕrĕ* ‖ *yif*.
[2] So probably 7807 A. In 3327 read *èuęre yliỳk*[ë].
[3] Supply [*his*] in C.

(: song *n.* (-e B)), 4727 (omangę B), 6148 (omangę B, amongę D), 7051 (-ę D, omangę B), 7944 (-ę D, omangę B); among (*before vowels*), 6488 (*-e* D, amang B, amongis C), 7911 (*-e* D,[1] amange B); among his, 5037 (amang B); among hem, 5359 (*-e* D, amange B, amongis C).

ascaùnces (etym. dub.), 205 (asscauunis C, askauns D), 292 (aschaunis C,[2] askauns D[3]).[4]

ayèns, ayeỳns, agaỳns, ayèn, (A.S. on-gægnes, on-gægn).

I. As preposition:

(*a*) *Before consonants*,—(1) ayèns, 603,[5] 1316 (ȝenis B, ayen D), 1561 (ȝeynist B, ȝen C), 2142 (ȝeyn B). [Var. B ȝeins; CD ȝens.] (2) ayeỳns, 3831 (ȝenis B, ȝenys (?) C ‡, ayens (?) D ‡). (3) ayèn, 2005 (ȝein B, ȝen CD), 5029 (ȝein B, ȝen C, ayenst D). Cf. here ayèns, 2465 (ȝenis B, ȝens C).

(*b*) *Before vowels*,—ayèn, 4837 (ȝeyn B, ȝen C); ayeỳns, 2499 (ȝeins B, ȝens C, ayens D); afòrn yeyn vs, 2273 (a-forȝeynes B, aforn † C, a foryens D). Cf. ther ayènis, 1454 (ȝeyn B, ȝen C, ayens D).[6]

(*c*) *Before h*,—agayns his, 4362 (ȝeyns B, ȝen C, ȝens D); ayèns hire (*poss. sg.*), 5175 (ȝeyns B, ȝens C).

II. As adverb.

(i.) ayèn, 1476 (certeyn ‡ B), 1606,[7] 1694, 3061 f, 4425, 6972 (àyen ‡ D), 7277, 7964[8] (cf. 5980 f, 6588 f, 6848 f, 7373 f, 7493 f, 7661 f); agaỳn, 3495 f (-e BC, ayen D), 5665 f (ageyne D); ayeyn, 7360 f (ȝeynne B, ȝeyn C, ayen D). (ii.) ayèn his, 280; agaỳn hym, 1533 B (ayen D; hym àgayn by A[9]). [Var. B ȝeyn, ȝein; C ȝeyn, ageyn, ageyne, ȝein, ȝen, ȝyn, ȝin; D ȝen.] ayènward, 3592 (ȝeynward B, ȝyn- C), 6243 (ȝin- C, ȝeynwardę B, *om.* † D).

Rhyme-words.—certaỳn (5665, 7493), seyn *ind.* 3 *pl.* (5665), seyn *inf.* (5980, 6848, 7373, 7661), seyn *p.p.* (3061), sleyn *p.p.* (6588), fayn (3061, 3495, 5980, 6848, 7358, 7373), rayn *n.* (3495).

certes (O. Fr. certes), (i.) 572, 773 (D †), 1618, 4108 f (: desertes *pl.*), 4138, 5652, 5687; (ii.) 3651, 4320. [Var. BC certys; CD certis; C sertis, sertys.]

[1] Supply [*the*] in D.
[2] Supply [*what*] in C.
[3] If the reading of D were to be kept, both these lines would consist of nine syllables, and we should have to accent *àskauns*.
[4] In 292 *ascaunces* translates Boccaccio's *quasi dicesse*.
[5] Perhaps 9-syl. Supply [*the*] in C.
[6] 9-syl.
[7] Supply [*now*] in CD.
[8] Supply [*ne*] in ACD.
[9] Transpose, and read *agaỳn*.

elles, ellys, ellis (A.S. elles), (i.) (ii.) 345,[1] 688, 728, 948, 972, 1564, 1660, 2160, 2237,[2] 2775,[3] 3408, 3433, 3661, 3811 (D †), 3933,[4] 3996, 4183, 4186 (*om.* † C), 4204,[5] 4268,[6] 4353 (C ?), 4622 (*om.* ‡ D), 5085, 5718, 5729,[7] 5931, 7740 f (cf. 1501 C ‡, 5992, 5999, 6418, 6701, 7033, 7067, 7407, 7519, 7664, 7844, 8160). [Var. C eH (= ellis).]—elles-where, ellys-where, ellis-where, 5360 f, 6138 f, 7612, 7681. [Var. C eH (= ellis).]

Rhyme-words.—wellys *pl.* (7740), helle ys (7740).

Note.—I do not think a good case of *elles* (monosyllable) occurs (cf. 371, 3517 D, 4268 E, 4353 C).

hennes, henne (A.S. heonon, L.W.S. heonone); hennes, 4679 (-nis D), 7624 (henys ‡ C, hens ‡ D); hen[ne]s, 3009, 6766, 6970, 7016 (hens ‡ (?) D), 7254 (hennes D), 7258, 8080 (*leaf gone in* C)[8]; hen[ne]s hye, 6852 (hennes B, henys C)[9]; hens away, 572 (henne B, hene C); hens (*before consonants*), 574 ‡ D, 4267 A ‡ (hennës B, henys C, hen[ne]s E), 7220 ‡ D (*l.* he).—henne, 1294 f (: thenne), 3472 f (hende † B, hen CD) (: thenne), 5908 f (: brenne *inf.*).

medes, in *to medes* (A.S. tó médes, Sievers § 320), Myself *to medes* wole the lettre sowe, 2286 (Myn seluen † the medis C, My self † the medis D).

nedes, nede (A.S. néde, níede, nédes, níedes); nedes, 1524 (nede C), 3458 (nedes (?) A), 4004, 4362, 4551 (D †), 6015, 6681 (C ‡ D ‡), 7715,[10] 8025, cf. 5277 ‡ C. [Var. CD nedis.]—nede, 1756 f (: drede *n.*); nede, 4129 (nedis C), 6261 (C †; nedes ‡ D).

nones. See *ones*.

ones, onys (A.S. éne, *Pet. Chron.* ánes), 472 (D †), 549[11] (om. ‡ D),[12] 792, 2742, 4429, 4499 (D †), 6129, 6933, 6934, 7402; onys haue, 1566[13];—at ones, at onys, 90 f, 804 f 2024 f, 2468 f, 2708 (D †),[14] 3192 (-es ‡ thei D), 4845 f, 5503 f, 6404 (D †), 6406; at ones er, 2961 (-ys or CD). [Var. BD oones; CD onis; B atonees.[15]]

Rhyme-words.—bones *pl.* (90, 804), stones *pl.* (2024, 2468), the nones, nonys (2468, 4845), non is (5503).

for the nones, nonys, 561, 2466 f, 4847 f, 5090. [Var. B noones.]

other weyes. See *weyes*.

thennes (A.S. þanon), 3987 (thenë C, thennë D), 5396 (then[ne]s CD);

[1] D has *for good* ‡. [2] Supply [*that*] in D, and read *liue* for *dye*.
[3] A is defective. Hiatus in D. [4] Supply [*of*] in C. [5] Supply [*that*] in C.
[6] *elles* (?) E. [7] Supply [*it*] in B; l. [*co*]*me* in D.
[8] In these cases (3009-8080), except when otherwise noted, B reads *hennes*, C *henys*, D *hen*[*ne*]*s*. [9] Supply [*if*] in D. [10] Supply [*me*] in D.
[11] Old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows. [12] Supply [*in*] in B.
[13] Supply [*haue*] in B. [14] 9-syl.
[15] As to the pronunciation of *atones*, cf. the division *a-tonys* in C 2024.

then[ne]s, 5357 (tennes B, therë ‡ B, thense *dissyl.* D), 6924 (tennes B), 7034 (thennes B, thenys C), 7143 (thennes B), 7248 (thennes B, thens ‡ D), 8177 (thennes B). [then[ne]s ‡ wolde he, 6839 C.]

thriës, thrie, thrÿe (A.S. þríwa); thries hadde, 6372 (cf. 2484 ‡ D); thrie, thrye, 1174 f (thry D), 1548 f (threye B), 2370 f.

Rhyme-words.—companye (1174), iupartie (1548), folye (2370), yn hye (1174), lye *mentior* (2370).

togedęres, togedre (A.S. æt-, tó-gædre), togedęres euere, 5984 (-gidęres B, -gedir D, -gederę d[w]elle C); to-gedre [1] so, (to-gidere B, to-gederę C, to-gider D).[2]

to medes. See *medes.*

towàrdes (A.S. tó-weardes), etc.; towardes, (i.) 523 [3]; (ii.) t. hire, 2307; t. hym, 6080. [Var. BCD towardis; C -ys.] towàrd, (i.) 5017 (-ę BD), 6054 (-ę B, -ęs D; C †), 7004 (-ę B); to Troyëwàrdes and, 59 (troy[e] wardis D); to meward shal, 6328 (-ę BD).—thèderwàrdęs ‡ gan, 2335 (thiderward B, thedirward C, thidirward D) [4]; cf. whedirwàrdës, 4944 D (wheder A, whedir(e) B, whedyr C); vpwàrdis ‡ at, 3047 D; her-àftirwàrdis ‡ for, 984 D (her afterward A, here efterwardę B, here aftyrward C), cf. 6193, 7291.[5]

Note.—Other words in *-ward*[6] are: *ayènward*, 3592, 5689, 6243; *bàkward(e)*, 6215; *downward*, 1991, 2790, 6211; *èstward*, 4261 BE, 6640; *hòmward*, 2388, 3463, 6845, 7545; *inward*, 2810, 2817; *oùtward*, 2789; *ùpward*, *vpwàrd*, 2913, 3047, 5821, 7471, 7723.

twyës (A.S. twíwa, *Chron.* 1120 twiges), 2484 (thriës ‡ D), 2940 (D ‡), 6460 (twiis C),[7] 6760 (twyë B), 7252. [Var. BCD twiës; B tweyes; C twiȝis, twyis.]

vnnèthes, vnèthes (A.S. unéaðe), 301 (-ë (?) C, -is D),[8] 1651 (-is D, onnethis C), 4911 (-ë C, -is D). (Cf. vnnethe, § 82.)

-wardes, -ward. See *to-wardes.*

weyes. He feleth other weyes dar I leye, 4500 (otherę wayes B, otherę woyis C, other-wisë D). (Cf. alweyes, algates.)

whennes (A.S. hwanon), 408 (whenys C †, when[ne]s D); when[ne]s, 402 (whennes B, whennys C, when[ne]s D).[9]—whens ‡ euery, 404 D (whenne AB, whanne C).

[1] Dissyllable.
[2] Supply [*me*] or [*I*] in D.
[3] Read *a*[*l*]*s*[*o*] in D.
[4] Read *soft*[*ë*]*ly* in A; dele (*he*) in D.
[5] *Aftęrward* ‡ *ros*, 4261 A (*aftyrward* ‡ C, *estward* BE).
[6] Variants not noted, but no MS. has *-es, -is*, in the cases cited. *In some* MSS., however, -e is at times written, though never sounded. *In this note no distinction* is made as to whether vowel or consonant follows.
[7] Dele (*he*) in B. In C, dele (*be-*) and (*ë*); then read *twiis.*
[8] Supply [*how*] in C. ("A later *to* stuck in." Furnivall.)
[9] In both 402 and 408 we may reduce *whennes* to one syllable by reading *comëth* instead of *cometh.*

## VERBS.

§ 92. Present Indicative.—The First Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends regularly in -e (Child, § 48; ten Brink, § 184). Thus,—

I. In rhyme:

beseche, byseche, 855 f (be[se]che B) (: leche *n.*), 2505 f (: speche); cf. 1331 f, 3235 f, 3597 f, 4178 f, 5116 f, 6749 f, 7492 f, 7972 f; be[se]che, 5811 f (biseche B, beseche C, besheche D) (: speche); beseche, 6294 f (beseke BD) (: eke *adv.*); bysek[e], 3573 f (biseke B, beseche C, byseke D) (: ek *adv.* A, eke BCD).

defende, 2818 f (: amende *subj.* 3 *sg.* : sende *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

defyne, 5052 f (: ruyne *n.* : deuyne *inf.*).

desire, 6954 f (: ire).

deuyse, 3277 f (: seruyse), 4921 f (: suffise *inf.*).

directe, 8219 f (: corecte *inf.*).

dye, 420 f (deye AC) (: maladye); cf. til I dye, 5061 f (deye C, dey D) (: eye); til that I dye, 6319 f (deye BC$^{c}$, dey D) (: ywrye *p.p.* : eye); cf. also 4449 f, 5106 f.

gesse, 989 f (: goodnesse : wikkednesse), 1803 f (: dronkënesse : distresse).

grete (A.S. grétan), 4100 f (: the swete : planete).

herye, 3793 f (herie CD) (: merye *pred. pl.*).

hope, 932 f (: drope *n.*).

leue (*credo*), 993 f (: greue *inf.*), 4743 f (: acheue *inf.* : leue *adj. pl.*).

leye, 1046 f (ley D) (: seye *inf.*).

loue, 927 f (: loue *n.*), 1935 f (: loue *n.*).

lye (*mentior*), 2368 f (: thrye : folye); cf. 1385 f (: eye).

mene, 1666 f (: clene *pred. sg.*).

mete (A.S. *métan*), 4186 f (: swete *voc.*).

pace, 5467 f (pase C) (: deface *inf.*).

recomaunde, 7777 f (: comaunde *inf.*).

rede (*lego*), 159 f (: mede *pratum* : rede *adj. pl.*).

rede (*moneo*), 258 f (: lede *inf.*).

requere, 1443 f (-ire CD) (: chere *n.*).

resigne, 432 f (resyne C$^{c}$) (: digne : benygne).

sacrëfise, 6786 f (: aryse *inf.*).

sayle, 7004 f (: bewayle *inf.* : fayle *subj.* 1. *sg.*).

serue, 15 f (: sterue *inf.*), 3555 f (: til I sterue).

seye, 3124 f (dey *inf.* ‡ D) (: though I preye : wreye *subj.* 2 *sg.*), 4236 f (seyde † B) (: pleye *inf.*). (Cf. note, below.)
stere, 1089 f (: clere *inf.* : matere).
suppose, 2339 f (: rose).
swere, 3214 f (: spere).
swete,[1] 2550 f (: Polyphete : plete *inf.*).
telle, 2681 f (: dwelle *inf.*).
trowe, 2106 f (: glowe *inf.*).
warye, 7741 f (: contrarye).
wene, 3249 f (: Polixene), 3341 f (: bytwene : contene *inf.*), 5455 f (: sustene *inf.* : tene).
write, 4675 f (: endite *inf.*), 7989 f (wryȝte C) (: endite *inf.* : lite *adj.*).

II. Before consonants:

bidde, 3717 AB (preyę to (?) C, pray to D), 4312.
breke, 3157 BC (A ? D ?).
combre, 4941 (combęre C; D †); cf. suffre, 2947 (-er B, -ęre C).
fele, 6679, 7632.
graunte, 785 (-[e] D), 1575 (-[e] B ? D ?).
iape, 1225.
kepe, 676.
loue, 2495, 5421, 6283.
mene, 4637, 7367.
quake, 3213.
recche, 5460, 8082 (-[e] B; rekke D).
seche, 7303 (seke D).
sterue, 2615.
thanke, 1240 (-[e] D, -*e* it B).
thenke, 991 (thynkę † to C, thenk *imv.* † D), 3249 (thynkë BC, thenk it D).
vouchë sauf, 2268 (wouchę ‡ D), 4752 (D †).

Before *th*:

bydde the, 1020 (-[de] D); coniùre the, 3035 (D †); fynde that, 8121; mene this, 6168 (-e thus † C; D ?); pose that, 3413 ABC[c] (suppose ? D ‡); preyë the, 6963 (-[e] D); reioyse thus, 7528 (reioyë C).

Before *y* (consonant):

telle yow, 3620; trowe ye, 5538 (-*e* I C †).

III. This -e is regularly elided before a vowel. Thus,—

clepe, 8, 7126; hope, 47 (B ‡ (?) ‡), 2139, 2357,[2] 2610[3]; late, 133 (latt B); fele 400[4]; pleyne, 409 (C † D †), 534[5]; consente, 414; compleyne, 415; hide, 581 (hid(d)e B); loue, 667, 1382; hope I (: redy), 983; drede, 1012; hate, 1018, 5501, 8095; answère, 1454[6]; make, 1569, 7966[7]; yeue, 1914 (C † D †); fare, 2593[8];

[1] Perhaps subjunctive.
[2] -e C; D †.
[3] Read *hold*[*e*], later in line, in CD.
[4] Supply [*no*] in A (D †).
[5] *pleyn taught* † D; *pleynë caught* B.
[6] 9-syl in D ‡.
[7] Supply [*ne*] in C.
[8] Supply [*her*] in D, or read *farë a mys.*

passe, 2680; mene, 2712; recche, 2954; warne, 3011; here, 3031; cause, 3113; rede, 3500[1]; excuse, 3878; clippe, 4186[2]; ende, 4660 (D †); suffre, 6403 (-fere C); write 7695; speke, 8225.[3]

I *knowe* also and alday *here* and se, 1818 (know D).

Nece I *coniure* and heighly yow defende, 2818 (O nece I conioure & heyly defende C).

Yet eft I the *by-seche* and fully seye, 3124 (The pray y eft al-thogh thow shuldest dey D ‡).

For that I *tarye* ‖ *is* al for wykked speche, 7973 (-*ie is* CD).

IV. Elision before *h*:

by-come here (*poss. sg.*), 434.
speke hem, 4174 (cf. 4176 E).
loue hym, 5562 B (loueth † A).[4]
counte hem, 6726.
holde hym, 7734.
hope his, 8068.

V. Exceptions.

There are several genuine cases of *-e*:

deye ye, 6594 (dey D).

preye the, 6693 (pray D); pray the, 6668 (-e B, -e ȝow C); pray to, 930 (-e B), 1667 (-e C); pray to god (?), 5101 A (preye god BC, pray g. D); pray yow, prey yow, 1101 (-e B), 2362 (-e (?) B), 2491 (-e B, -ë ‡ that C),[5] 6301 (-ë ‡ quod B),[6] 6494 (-e B), 7984 (-e B). Cf. also,—preye to, 7726 C (prey[ë] god A, pray to D); pray to, 3717 D (preye C, biddë god AB); pray with, 2145 A. (-*e* I C, pray ich BD).[7]

seye yow, 7361 (sey CD); seye that, 5640 (sey D), 5692 (sey BD); -e though, 5703 (sey D); sey nought, 1758; sey for, 2738; sey not, 7365, 7366, 8142; sey no, 7771; sey this, 3165 (-e nought B, sei not C, sey not D).

knowe not, 1267 (note ‡ not D).

loue parde, 717; loue yow, 6296 (C ‡ ? D ‡ ?). Cf. also *loue*, 1332 ‡ B (-*e* ACD).[8]

mene that, 4133 (-e ȝe † B, -ë ‡ wil C, thus he ‡ wyll E).

rede that, 495 (-*e* I CD).

sette the, 1452 (set BD).

Cf. also dwelle, 6978 ‡ C (-*e* ABD); hope, 973 ‡ D (-*e* B; A ? C ?), 3794 ‡ D (-*e* ABC); leue, 7418 † D; lyue, 3647 ‡ D (-*e* ABC); make, 3183 ‡ A (*l.* may); plight ‡ my, 6272 D (*p.p.* ABC); trowe,

[1] Read in B, *soon*[*e to*]. (D ?)
[2] Insert [*ellis*] in C.
[3] Supply [*to*] in A; [*I*] in B.
[4] D too long. C has a different line.
[5] D ridiculously inserts *deiphebus*.
[6] *Preyë*, with -e fully sounded, may well enough stand for *prey ye* = *prey yow*.
[7] In B, read *god* for *and*.
[8] Supply [*that*] in C.

3735 A (trow I B, trow y D, -*e* C). In 1491 *bidde* appears to be the right reading.

Note 1.—The final -e is often omitted at the end of a line in one or another MS. Thus,—assent, 2143 f C (-e ABD) *rh.* entent CD (-e AB); begyn 1934 f C (gynne AB, y bathë ‡ yn D) *rh.* in C (inne AB, yn D) *rh.* syn C (synne ABD); bryng, 2394 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* incomyng D (-e ABC); bysek, 3573 f A (-e BD, beseche C) *rh.* ek A (eke BCD); consent, 929 f CD (-e AB) *rh.* repente *ind.* 1 *sg.* ABC (-t D) *rh.* entent CD (-e AB); fast, 2251 f (-e AB) *rh.* fast *adv.* CD (-e AB) *rh.* cast *inf.* CD (-e AB); feynt, 410 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* pleynt D (-e ABC) *rh.* qweynt D (-e ABC); ges, 1372 f C (gesse ABD) *rh.* wrechednes CD (-sse AB); ges, 4569 f D (gesse ABC) *rh.* largesse ABCD *rh.* gladnes D (-sse ABC); repent, 926 f D (-e ABC) (see *consent*); repent, 1610 f CD (-e AB) *rh.* entent CD (-e AB); thenk, 2498 f D (-e A, thynke BC) *rh.* forthenk *inf.* D (-thynke ABC); trow, 2284 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* sow *inf.* D (-e ABC) *rh.* ou know D (-e ABC); trost, 3208 f C (trist D, triste AB) *rh.* lest *subj. prcs.* 3 *sg.* C (lyste AB, list D) *rh.* wost *prct. subj.* 2 *sg.* C (wyste AB, wyst D); trust, 1332 f CD (-e A, triste B) *rh.* lyst *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (-e AB, lust D) *rh.* kyst *ind.* 3 *sg.* (keste A, kiste B, kust D *later hand*).—So especially in verbs ending in *-eye, -aye.* Thus D has *prey, pray* in the following places in which the other MSS. have -e,—760 f *rh.* sey *dico* D (-e ABC) *rh.* deye *inf.* AC (dye BD), 1588 f *rh.* purvay *inf.* D (-e AC, pleye† B), 2218 f *rh.* say *inf.* D (-e ABC), 2244 f *rh.* twey D (-e AB, to† C) *rh.* purvey *imv. pl.* D (-e ABC), 2293 f *rh.* sey *inf.* D (-e ABC) *rh.* dey *inf.* D (-e ABC), 2755 f *rh.* plye† D (pleye *inf.* ABC) *rh.* lay *inf.* D (-e ABC), 2813 f *rh.* play *imv. pl.* D (-e ABC), 6531 f *rh.* obey *inf.* D (-e ABC), 8105 f *rh.* sey *inf.* D (-e AB), 8147 f *rh.* sey *ind.* 1 *sg.* D (-e AB), 8224 f *rh.* sey *dico* D (-e AB). So also,—sey, 1266 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* twey D (-e ABC), 1525 f *rh.* dey *inf.* D (-e ABC), 2280 f *rh.* twey D (-e AB, tweyne C) *rh.* awey D (-e ABC), 5431 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* deye *inf.* ACD (dye B); ley, 1046 f D (-e AB) *rh.* sey *inf.* D (-e AB); dey, 1209 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* pley *inf.* D (-e ABC) *rh.* awey D (-e ABC), 1512 f D *rh.* purvey *imv. or subj. sg.* D (-e ABC), 2954 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* sey *inf.* (-e ABC). In 1394 f, A has *prey*, D *pray*, while BC have *preye* (: seye *inf.* ABC, say D). Cf. prey, 5955 f CD (-e AB) *rh.* say *inf.* C (sey D, seye AB) *rh.* wey *acc.* CD (-e AB), 6935 f D (pray C, preye AB) *rh.* pley *inf.* D (play C, pleye AB) *rh.* sey *inf.* D (say C, seye AB); sey *dico*, 5585 f CD (-e AB) *rh.* dey *inf.* CD (-e A, dye B).—In the interior of the verse an -e necessary to the metre is sometimes omitted by the scribe: as,—*trow*[e], 1881 BD (-e AC); cf. 601 AD, 1020 D, 7726 A, etc.

Note 2.—The omission of elided -*e* is not uncommon. Cases of it occur in all the MSS. Cf. the following lines (old-style figures indicate that A omits the elided -*e*): I. before vowels: 240, 263, 406, 424, 759, 864, 1103, 1191, 1269, 1807, 1818, 1836, 1837, 2423, 2533, 2590, 2879, 2951, 3090, 3102, 3124, 3249 D, 3347, 3474, 3478, 3689, 3735, 4020, 4191, 5585, 5908, 7448, 7608, 7734. II. Before *h*: 3649.

Note 3.—Hiatus is very rare. "I *fyndë ek* in storyes ellys whore," 7407, seems a pretty certain instance, though B has *fynde*, saving the metre by the insertion of *the* before *storyes*. Cf. also *louë oon*, 1923 AD (-*e* B, leue† C); *menë‡ I*, 3463 A (-*e* B, -*e* it CD); *bathë‡ yn*, 1934 D (bathe *inf.* AB, -ę‡ *inf.* C); *takë‡ it*, 7951 A (-*e* BD, tok‡ C).

Note 4.—For the monosyllabic *se*, cf. (i.) 842 f, 1517, 1818 f, 2909, 5907, 5986, 6261, 6268, 7355, 7432, 7498, 7525, 7736 f, 8058; (ii.) se hym, 1418; se herę (*eam*), 7521. [Var. BCD see.]

§ 93. The Second Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends in *-est* (*-ist*, *-yst*), *-st* (*-ęst*) (Child, § 49; ten Brink, §§ 184, 186, 259). Thus,—

I. *-est*:

abydest, 7538 (-yst C).[1]
biddest, 5118 (-yst C, counsellęst ‡ D).
coniestest, 5688 (-iect- B, comittist † D).
counseỳlest, 2613 (-ist C, -ist D ‡).
desirest, 7821 (-ist ‡ C).
deuysest, 5205 (demys † C, demist † D).
deynest, 4277 (-yst C).
dremest, 7645 (-yst C).
endurest, 785 (-yst C, -ist D).
errest, 4964 (-yst C).
farest, 5125 (-[e]st C).[2]
feynest, 6776 (-yst C).
hyëst, 4283 (hiȝest D).[3]
knowest, 4951 (-yn ‡ C, -ist D).
ledest, 1612 (-ist D †).
louest, 2481 (-is C, -ist D).
menest, 3179 (-ist C, -yst D).[4]
regnest, 8227.[5]
semest, 2601 (-yst C, -ist D).
sorwest, 5302 (-ist CD), 5763 (-ist C).[6]
stondest, 3089 (-ist CD).
suffrest, 3863 (-fęrëd ‡ C, -frist D), 4309 (-frist D, sufferyst C, sooffrist(e) B).
thinkest, 2591 (-ist CD).
tornest, 196 (-yst CD).[7]
tristest, 720 (-yst C †, -ist D ?).
waylest, 556 (-yst C, -ist D).
wenest, 5688 (-ist D), 7885 (-yst ‡ C, -ęst ‡ D).

II. *-st*, *-ęst*:

(*a*) Monosyllables:

flest, 4277 (fleest BD).[8]
lyst (*jaces*), 2076 (list B, lyęst D).
seist, seyst (*dicis*), 834, 932 (sest C) (?), 1033 (seyst(e) B), 5111 (seyęst (?) D), 5784 (sest C), 7526 (seyęst D), 7883; cf. 720 CD.
sleest, 5174 (slest BC); slest(e), 5117 A (slest BC, sleest D).

Note.—In 8154,—"And kys the steppes there as thow *seest* pace,"—it is perhaps better to read *steppęs* and *sëest*.

(*b*) spekęst, 2508 (-ist CD).
rennęst, 6211 AB (-yst C; D (?)).
èntermètyst, 1019 ‡ C (?) (entremetist ‡ (?) D).

Cf. also the variants under I.

Note.—Forms in *-is*, *-ys*, un-Chaucerian and due to the scribes, are *louis*, 2481 C (-est AB, -ist D), and *demys* †, 5205 C (demist † D, deuysest AB).

[1] Supply [*that*] in CD (?).
[2] Supply [*thow*] in C.
[3] Supply [*so*] in C; [*for*] in D?
[4] Supply [*wel*] in A.
[5] Supply [*&*] in D.
[6] 9-syl. in C.
[7] Supply [*ful*] in AD (?).
[8] Supply [*thou*] in C; dele (*niȝt*) in D.

§ 94. The Third Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends in *-eth* (*-ith*, *-yth*), *-th* (*-ęth*, *-ịth*, *-yth*) (Child, § 50; ten Brink, §§ 184, 186). Examples are:

I. *-eth* (*-ith*, *-yth*):

He *spendeth iusteth maketh* festeynynges

He *yeueth* frely ofte and *chaungeth* wede, 4560-1 (all ending in *-yth* in C, in *-ith* in D[1]).

weneth, 216 (-yth C, -ith D).

gynneth, 218 (-yth CD).

priketh, 219 (-yth C, -ith D).

turneth, 324 f (-yth C, -ith D); soiȯrneth (-yth C, -ith D): borneth -yth C, vnournith † D.[2]

serueth, 332 (-yth C, -ith D).

asketh, 339 (-yth C, -ith D).

thenketh, 403 (-yth C,[3] -ith D).

knoweth, 450 (-yth C, -ith D).

causeth, 551 (-ith D).

defendeth, 603 (-yth C, offendith † D): offendeth (-yth C, -ith D).

auayleth, 604 (-yth C): sailleth (-yth C, flayleth † A): assaylleth (-yth C, -ith D); etc., etc.

The above cases are chosen from lines which all four MSS. give. Cf. also the following examples, also from such lines, in which AB have *-eth*, CD *-yth* or *-ith* or both: 625, 632, 667, 764 f, 766 f, 858, 1296, 1458 f, 1850, 1882 f, 2002, 2065, 2072, 2142, 2216, 2471, 2510, 2536, 3877, 4493, 4494, 4981 f, 7876, etc., etc.

It appears, then, that the usual ending in unsyncopated cases is *-eth* for A and B, *-yth* or *-ith* for C and D. But C sometimes has *-eth*: as, *seseth*, 1873; *axeth*, 2156; *desireth*, 2235; *causeth*, 2331; *crieth*, 4979, etc. That D sometimes has *-eth* is shown by the first list of examples; others are: *nedeth*, 2626; *endeth*, 5166; *beteth*, 5572; *flowreth*, 6239; *dredeth* 7026, etc. The usual ending of D is *-ith*, as that of C is usually *-yth*.

Note 1.—Forms in *-it*, *et*, *-yt* are occasionally found. Thus,—*brestyt*, 258 C (read *brest*); *comyt*, 402 C (read *comth*); *fallit*, 142 C; *fallyt*, 212 C; *preuet*, 7311 B (perhaps meant for preterite); *louet*, 8001 B (possibly meant for preterite); *rennet*, 2839 B; *turnyt*, 1883 f C (: *spornyth*); *wexit*, 942 C. *Brennyt*, 5340 C, is probably meant for a preterite, and so perhaps *entendit*, 6832 C. It is barely worth while to note such spellings as,—*dauntcht*, 1484 B; *forȝetcht*, 1460 f B; *getcht*, 1461 f B; *hang[e]ht*, 2071 B; *louȝt*, 8001 C; *pleyeht*, 840 B; *styntcht*, 3740 B; *thenketht*, 221 A; *doutheth*, 6251 B; *ettheth*, 1458 f B; *surmounttheth*, 3880 B; *chasithe*, 5077 D; *occupie the* (for *occupiethe*), 7685 D.

Note 2.—A few examples of the third person singular in *-rs*, *-s*, occur in B: *comes*, 5715 B (comth AD); *has*, 3457 B (hath BCD); *loues*, 1753 B (-ede AC, -yd D); *thankes*, 2306 B (thonked A, thankede hym C; thonkyd D). *Repeles*, *medales*, *weres*, in A, 4956 f, 5001, 4744, are mere

[1] But *iustịth* ‡ D. [2] Cf. 4979-81-82. [3] Supply [*wykke*] in C.

scribes' blunders for *repeled, meddled, weren.* In 5100 C, *trowis* should be *trewe is.* (Cf. Child, § 50 ; ten Brink, § 185.)

Rhyme words.—The ending *-eth*, 3 sg., rhymes usually with itself : cf., besides the places already cited, 1892-4-5, 2869-70, 4493-4, 4979-81-83, 5235-6, 5571-2, 6574-6, 7146-7. But see also *semeth*, 643 f (-yth C, -ith D) (: the wyse it demeth AB, the wise demyn C, thes clerkis demith D), and *occupieth*, 5498 f (C †) (: men lieth).

II. The Present Indicative Third Person Singular in *-ẹth, -th* (*-e-* syncopated) is not uncommon. As we should expect, we find instances of it (*a*) in verbs ending in *a vowel*, or (*b*) in *m, r, v* (or *f*); but (*c*) it is not confined to such verbs.

(*a*) Verbs ending in a vowel :

lyth, lith, 1550,[1] 1800 (lyȝt C), 1826, 2658,[2] 2823 (lyȝth C),[3] 4890 (lith(e) D), 5005 (lięth D), 5078 (lyëth D),[4] 5120 (leyth C, lięth D), 5530 (lięth D ?),[5] 5816, 7648 (lięth D), 7650 (lięth † D),[6] 7780 (lięth D). (Cf. 1551 A, 7633 CD, 7782 C.)

pleyęth, 840 (-ęht B, pleyth D).

pŭrueięth, 5728 (-ueyth D, -ueyęd ‡ A).

seth, seeth,[7] (*videt*), 4082 (sey ? C), 4410 (seeth (?) D),[8] 5625, 5636, 6595 (sey † C), 7546 (sey *pret.* C) ; seyth, 2339 (seth B, sey C, seyd † D) ; cf. 6820 C.

Whoso me *seth* he *seth* sorwe al at onys, 5503 (seeth . . . seeth B, seeth . . . seyth D).

seyth, seith (*dicit*), 1004 (syth B, sey ‡ C), 1181 (syth B), 1755, 1940 (sayịth C), 2461, 3110 (soith B), 3153, 3344, 3638, 3876, 6265,[9] 7042, 7246 (sithe † C), 8014 ; *seith*, 1103 D, seems to be dissyllabic, but read *seydë* (cf. AB). In 2394 : He song as who *seyth* (seith BD, seth C) sumwhat I brynge, are we to insert *he* before *who* or to read *seyèth ?* Mr. Austin's collation makes no note.

sleth, 7706 (sleeth D).

Note.—*fleth*, 5323 C, is a wrong reading. In D 4410 we are hardly to read *knowęth.*

(*b*) Verbs in *m, r, v* (*f*) :

comęth, 402 (comth B, comyt C, -ith D),[10] 405,[11] 408 (-yth (?) C, -ith (?) D),[12] 1369, 1461 (comth B), 1728 (-yth B), 2320 (comth B),

[1] *li*[*c*]*th* (?) C ; but supply [*now*] and read *lith.* [2] Supply [*to*] in CD.
[3] Supply [*of*] in B. [4] But read *new*[*ë*] and *lyęth* in D.
[5] But supply [*now*] in D, and read *lięth.*
[6] But supply [*him*] in D, and read *lięth.*
[7] *Seeth* is always monosyllabic in this list. A has usually *seth*, but *seeth* in 6595 ; D has usually *seeth.*
[8] Not a very certain line as to metre ; apparently a nine-syllable verse.
[9] Supply [*that*] in A.
[10] If we read *whens* (so AD), we must read *comëth* (*-ith*) ; if *whennës* B (*-ys* C), *comth.*
[11] Old-style figures indicate that CD have *-yth* or *-ịth.* [12] Cf. 402.

2338 (comth B, -yth (?) C, -ith D), 2420 (comth B), 2470, 2877[1] (D †), 3721 (comth B), 5083 (-yth C), 5166, 6754 (come B, comth D), 6789 (comth D, -yth C),[2] 7104 (-yth C, comth D), 7505 B (-yth B, comth D, com(*e*) ‡ A). (Cf. 4067 ‡ B, 5761 ‡ C, 7486 B); bicomęth, 1880 BC (-eth A ‡, -ith D ‡), 1882; ouercomęth, 6246 (-yth (?) C †, -comth D †).

comth, 5704 (-ęth B), 5715 (comęs B), 7034 (-ęth B, -yth C),[3] 7516 (-yth C), 7532 (-yth C).[4] (Cf. 7486 D, 7506 ‡ D.)

For al that *comęth comth* by necessite, 5620 (comth . . . comth D).

semęth, 889 (-yth C, -ith (?) D), 3030 (-yth C, -ith D); cf. 7969 D.

menęth, 1472 A (-ith D, mene ‡ B, mene 2 *pl.* C[c]). Cf. 1806 ‡ D, 7513 C ‡ D ‡.

beręth, 939, 940, 1272 (-ith (?) C, -ith D †), 1486 (berth B †), 6823 (-yth C, kepith ‡ D).

faręth, 956.

sweręth, 1739 (swerth B), 7793 (swerth B).

byhouęth, 5666, 5716; cf. 5967 CD.

dryfth, 7695 (dryuyth C, dryuęth D).

louęth, 4605 (-yth C, -ęth E[5]), 7793 (-yth C),[6] 8109 (-ęd ‡ D); cf. 5562 † A.

But,—

comëth, 7486 (-yth C, -ęth B, comth D); cf. 3904 ‡ D.

semëth, 1201 (-yth C, -ith D), 5549 (-yth C),[7] 6664 (-yst † C, -yth D).[8]

menëth, 1806 (leuyth ‡ C, menith D), 7798 (-yth C).

farëth, 1080 (-ith D); cf. 652.

dryuëth, 7464 (drieeth C †, driueth D †). (Cf. 1085, 7903.)

louëth, 1404 (-yth (?) C, -ith D), 1815 (-yth C, -ith D), 1862 (-yt C, -ith D), 2854 (-ith D).

(*c*) Other verbs:

likęth, 3227 B (-ith C, -ëth ‡ A, lykę ‡ D); cf. 7729 C (D (?)).

makęth, 1318 (-eht B, -yth C, -ith D)[9]; cf. 2468 C.

nedęth, 1261 AB (-ith C † D †), 2475 AB (-ith ‡ C, -ith (?) D)[10]; cf. 6699 ‡ C.

spekęth, 6599 (-ęn ‡ B, -ith C).

thenkęth (*videtur*), 1292 (-yth C, -ith D),[11] 1486 (B †; -ith C), 2714

[1] Supply [*that*] in B.
[2] But supply [*that*] in C, and read *-yth*.
[3] In AD read *then*[*ne*]*s*.
[4] Supply [*that*] in D.
[5] Supply [*now*] in E.
[6] "That wonder was and *sweręth* she *louęth* hym best."
[7] Supply [*me*] in C.
[8] Supply [*for*] in BD.
[9] Dele (*to*) in C.
[10] In D, read *long*[*ë*].
[11] Supply [*for*] in D.

eth ‡ B, -ịth C, -ith ‡ D),[1] 5146 (-yth C, thinkest † D), 6942 (-ịth C; D (?)); me *of*-thynkẹth, 1043 (mathynkẹth B, me *a*thinkith ‡ D).

But,—

likëth, 1247 (-yth C, -ith D), 1527 (likë † ȝow C, -ith D), 1615 (-ith CD),[2] 3196 AB, 4809 (-ith CD).

makëth, 4669 (-ith D).

nedëth, 1096 (-ith D),[3] 1547 (-ith CD), 1582 (-ith CD), 3791 (-ith CD), 4305 (C †; -ẹth D), 4485 (-yth C, -ith D), 4518 (-yth C, -ith D), 8211 (-ẹth D). (Cf. 740 A, 3699 CD.)

thenkëth (*videtur*), cf. 1392 ‡ D, 2714, 3222, 5497, 5772, 5926, 6483, 7235. Cf. thenketh (*putat*), 1118 (thynketh B, thenkyth D).

Note.—In some cases of apparent *-ẹth* (*-yth*, *-ịth*), a comparison of MSS. makes it certain or probable that the unsyncopated form is right. See 142 D, 195 C, 868 D, 1087 B, 1397 D, 1464 CD (*perhaps right*), 1566 (?), 1876 C, 4674 B, 4901 D, 5967 CD; and cf. also 1631 ‡ C (?), 3084 ‡ C, 3792 † B (?), 4479 ‡ CD, 5390 C †, 6598 C †. See other cases of syncopated *-yth* in the variants under § 95.

§ 95. The following examples of the third person singular in *-t* from verbs in *t*, *d*, *s*, occur in the *Troilus* (Child, § 51; ten Brink, § 186):

abìt, 1084.

bet, 1498 (let B, redịth C, ret D).

bitìt, 1133 (betỳt D); by-tỳt, 6708 (bitìt B, be-tỳdỳth C, betiddẹ ‡ D). (Cf. *tyt*, below.)

bytrènt, 4073 (be- C; bi- D (?)); cf. 5532 (?).

blent, 4667 (blent(ẹ) B).

brest, 258 (brestyt C, brestith D), 4479 (brestyth C, brekịth D).

drat, 3170 (dredịth D).

forbèt, 1802 (forbed(ẹ) C, forbod(ẹ) D †).

halt, 1122 (holt D), 3849 (holdyth C, holt D), 4216 BE (holt AC), 4478 (haldyth C ‡, holt D), 4589 (hast † C), 4606 (holt E), 6711 (holt C, halt(*e*) D); holt, 4562 D (held AC, hold B).

hent, 4667 (hent(*e*) B).

hurt, 6713 (hirt C).[4] (*Preterite?*)

last, 5250 (lestyth (?) C, last(ẹ) D).

lat, 4862 (lat(ẹ) them [not] D).

let, 1967 BC.[5]

[1] In B read *sith* for *soth*.
[2] In CD read *dcs[es]peraunce*.
[3] Insert [*other*] in A (D ?).
[4] Supply [*a*] in D.
[5] But AD have *led*, and a past tense seems almost necessary: "*led herẹ lyf*."

lyst, lest, lust, cf. 518, 840, 852, 1308, 2136 f, 2233, 2479 f, 3243 f, 3417, 3493, 3781 f, 5753, 7716 f, 7796 f, etc.; lyst(ę), cf. 2479 f.
ouer-sprat, 1852 (ouersprad D).
put, 5683.
ret, 1498 D (see *bet*).
rist, 937 (ryseth C), 1897, 4894 (ryst(*e*) B, risith D), 5825 (rist(*e*) D); vp rist, 6105 (rist vp C).
ritt, 2369 (ridę † B, rit C, ridith D); right, 6423 (rit(e) B, rauȝt ‡ C, ritt(ę) D),—read *rit*.
sent, 2208 ABCD; but the metre is short by one syllable except in D, which reads *sent to*. Perhaps we should read *sent*[*ë*], pret.
sit, 12 (sitt D), 246 (sitt B, seyth † C, syt D), 976 (sitt B), 2020 (syt D), 3869 (is ‡ B, syt D), 5685, 5688 f (: it : yit), 5693, 5699, 5701, 6596 (sitt(ę) D), 7367 (sitt B, sitt(*e*) D), 7675 (settith D), 8207 (sitt BD).
smert, 6780 (-(*e*) D). Perhaps noun.
stant, 602 (stonde † B, stondith C), 2273 (C (?); stont D), 2463 (stond C, stont D),[1] 2477 (stont C, stond D †), 2698 (stont D), 3338 (stont AD), 3627 (stont C), 3745 C (stont AD, stant(*e*) B), 4404 (stont AC), 5212 (stont C), 5679, 6048 (stant(ę) B),[2] 6596 (stant(*e*) B, stont C), 8091 (stont B, stant(*e*) D); vndirstant ‡, 8005 C (-stod A, -stood B, -stood(ę) D).
tret, 1432.
tyt, 333 (tit B). (Cf. *bitit*, above.)
went, 1121 f (went(e) B) (: shent *p.p.*), 1897 (*om.* † B, wentë C).[3]
writ, 394 (writ(ę) B, wryt CD).
wryth(ę), 4073 (writh(ę) B, written ‡ (?) D).
yelt, 385 (ȝelt B, ȝildyth C, yeldith D).

But forms in *-eth* are found. Thus,[4]—
beteth, 5572 f.
biteth, 4493 f (: delyteth).
dredeth, 7026.
eteth, 1458 f : foryeteth : geteth. (Cf. *et*, Leg. G. W., 1389.)
knetteth, 4590 (endytyth ‡ C, kennyth ‡ D).
lasteth, 4664.

[1] Supply [*she*] in D.
[2] Supply [*thus*] in D.
[3] May perhaps be preterite (*went*[e] *here*).
[4] Trifling variations in spelling are not registered.

lysteth, listeth, 671, 1785 (leste *pret.* C, lest D †), 4659 (lest[e] *pret.* (?) D).
nedeth, 1096, etc.
rideth, 1773, 6924 (redyn ‡ C).
sendeth, 2870 f (: entendeth).
smerteth, 667 (cf. *smert*, Ch's. ABC, 152).
spredeth, 2065.
stenteth, 3740; stynteth, 4076.
stondeth, 2231 (l. om. C).

Cf. also hasteth, 949, 4549 (-ith ‡ D); threteth, 5571 f B (-yth C, treteth A, treth † D); thursteth, 7769 (trustyth † C); wasteth, 1478; and the Romance verb,—iusteth, 4560.

§ 96. The Plural of the Present Indicative ends regularly in *-en* or *-e;* but forms occur in *-eth* (and rarely in *-es*) (cf. Child, § 52; ten Brink, § 186).

Before consonants, -en is commoner than -e; in rhyme, -e is commoner than -en. Before vowels or h, -en and *-e* (elided) are regular, -ẹn (apocopated) is rare. For *-eth*, *-es*, see § 97.

The following list is arranged as follows: I. -en before consonants. II. -en in rhyme. III. -en before vowels. IV. -en before h. V. Syncope: -ẹn, -n. VI. -e before consonants. VII. -e in rhyme. VIII. Elision: *-e* before vowels. IX. Elision: *-e* before *h*. X. Apocope: -ẹ. XI. Present plural of A.S. *flēon, sēon, slēan, wrēon.*

I. *-en* before consonants: (*a*) First Person:
seggen we, 4856 (siggen B, seyde ‡ C, sey we D).
seruen bothe, 6506 (-e D, were † C).
departen ye and I, 7436 (-yn 2 *pl.* C).
(*b*) Second Person:
preysen thus, 1180 (-in D, pryse C).
lyuen by, 1435 (-yn CD).[1]
slepen so, 1632 (-in C, -yn D).
faren wel, 2234 (-e C †, -yn D).
felen wel, 2368 (-e C, -yn D).
holden regne, 2871 (-yn D).
heren wel, 2994 (-yn CD).
liggen wel, 3511 (-yn C, -e D). (Conditional sentence.)
lysten for, 4652 (lest[e] to D).
comen be, 4989 (-[e] D, -yn to C).
louyn most, 5259 C (-eth AB, -eth 3 *sg.* D).[2]

[1] Dele (*that*) in A. [2] Query this line?

knowen wel, 6030 (-e C); cf. 2737 B †.
mystrusten me, 6268 (-yn C$^c$).
touchen nought, 7359 (-e C, -[e] D).[1]
yeuen me, 7778 (-yn C, -e D).[1]
requeren me, 7963 (-yn C, -e D).

(*c*) Third Person:

reden not, 241 (-yn C, -ith D; B †).
slepen sófte, 914 (-e C, -(t)en B; D †).
writen clerkes, 954 (-e C, -yn D), 3694 (-yn CD), 4041 (-yn C); w. folk, 4680 (-yn D); w. they, 6083 (-e CD);[2] w. that, 7179 (wotyn † C).
faren wel, 1248 (-e C, -yn D).
tellen that, 1270 (-e CD); t. xx., 6069 (-e C †, -[e] D), t. this, 6728 (-yn C, -e D).
fallen thikke, 1541 (-es A, -e C, -yn D); f. chaunces, 5760 (-yn C (?), -en D (?)).
louen wommen, 1819 B (-yn CD, -ęn ‡ a A); l. nouellęrye, 1841 (-yn CD).
defamen loue, 1945 (-yn CD).
speken but, 1946 (-yn CD).
curen folk, 2665 (-e C, -ith D).
dreden shame, 2867 (-yn D).[3]
wondren so, 2874 (-in D).[4]
sęruen the, 2882 (-yn D); s. best, 4107 (-yn CD$^c$).
techen bokes, 2933 (-in C, -yn D).
lyuen soth, 3272 (-yn CD).
dremen thynges, 3427 (-yn D, demyn C).
callen fals, 3656 (-yn D, tellen B, -yn C); c. loue, 4224 (-e C, clepen E).
comen nough[t], 3660 (-yn D (?), -[e] C).
bryngen folk, 4046 (-yn C, -eth B).
commenden so, 4534 (-yn CD).
drawen forth, 4546 (-yn CD, -[e]n B).[5]
desiren now, 4864 (-yn C).
vsen frendes, 5343 (-yn C).
bytiden by, 5719.
semen dede, 5754 (-yn C, -ë D).

[1] Subjunctive?
[2] Supply [*of*] in C.
[3] In 4718 *dredden* (*dredęn* B, *dreddyn* D) is of course preterite.
[4] Read *thing*[*es*] in A.
[5] Apparently a 9-syl. verse.

purpòsen pes, 6012 (-yn C, -ed † D).
proceden thei, 6733 (-yn C, -en ? D).
wenen lese, 6744 (-e C$^{c}$ D).
knowen folk, 6778 (-en D (?), -yn C (?)); cf. 4951 C).
stonden for, 7482 (stodę they C).
showen bothe, 8077 (-yn D).

II. -en in rhyme. Third Person :

dryen, 303 f (: eyen : dyen *inf.*).
treten, 742 f (-e C, -yn D) (: beten *p.p.*).
deseyuen, 1370 f (-e C; D †) (: receyuen *inf.* : weyuen *inf.* B (weylen † A)).
dremen, 1885 f (demen ‡ CD) (: semen 3 *pl.* : quemen 3 *pl.*).
semen, 1887 f (-yth † (?) C, -yn D).
quemen, 1888 f (-yn CD).
crien, 1950 f (cryȝen C) (: eyen *pl.* : dryen *inf.*).[1]
vsen, 3865 f (-yn CD) (: excusen *inf.*).
laboùren, 4107 f (-on B, -yn CD$^{c}$) (: honouren *inf.* : socouren *inf.*).
gȝauen, 4304 f A (-ë BCD) (: hauen *inf.* (-e BCD)).
growen, 4602 f (-yn C, grevyn † E) (: flowen *inf.*).

III. *-en* before vowels. (*a*) Second Person :

apeysen, 2864 (-yn D).[2]
bathen, 22.
compleynen, 4685 B (-ës A, -yn D).
demen, 3614 (-yn CD).
knowen, 240 (-ë C, -yn D).

(*b*) Third Person :

wepen, 7 (-yn D).
stonden, 418 (-yn CD).
techen, 698 (-yn D, cechyn † C).
tiren, 787 (-yn C, -in D).
erren, 996 (arn C †, arë D †).
wenen, 1356 (-yn CD), 1977 (-ë CD).
stoupen, 2053 (-ë C, -yn [on] D).
spreden, 2055 (-yn D, spryngin ‡ C).
longyn, 2431 D (-eth AB, -ith C).
shenden, 1675 (-yn C, -ë D).
slepen, 1630 (-in C, -yn D).
stonden, 428 (-yn CD).
suffren, 6195 (suffere *dissyl.* C, suffryn D).
hakkyn, 2466 D (-ë C$^{c}$, -eth AB).
lyuen, 2858 (-in D).
lyggen, 3527 (-yn CD).
slepen, 3608 (-in C, slepę that ‡ D).
reden, 3905 (-yn C, -e in D).
drynken, 4058 (-yn C, -eth D).
holden, 4596 (-ith E †, hold † in C).
encressen, 5241 (-yn C).
hangen, 5479 (-ë [al] D).

[1] Subjunctive ?

[2] Read *fers[e]* in D.

fallen, 5667.
comen, 5712.
deliten, 6095 (-ë C).
passen, 6360.
lasten, 6764 (tweüs lestith D).
speken, 6795 (spokë they C).
blamen, 7123 BD (-ë C, -ëd *p.p.* A).
commenden, 7124 (-yn C, comaundyn ‡ D).
tellen, 7841 (-yn C), 7925 (-yn C).

IV. *-en* before *h*.

(*a*) First Person : vsen here (*hic*), 4844 (-yn CD).

(*b*) Second Person :

maken hertes, 2865 (-yn D).

(*c*) Third Person :

redressen hem, 2054 (-yn D).
demen hot, 2618 (-ë CD).
knowyn hym, 3162 CD (*pret.* AB).
reuèsten hem, 3195 (-yn CD).
suffren here, 3860 (-re B, -fere C, -fryn D †).
seruen here, 3978 (-yn C, -eth D †).[1]
bryngen hors, 4707 (-[en] D).
deliten hem, 6097 (-es B, -ë C, -ed D).
expounden hem, 7641 (-poungyn † C, -pounë D).

V. *-en, -n*. (*a*) Second Person :

seyn ye, 1558 (sey D †); cf. 1275 C, 2367 D.

(*b*) Third Person :

seyn, (i.) 708, 5632, 5659, 5668 f (seyne B) (: agayn : in certayn), 6035 (seyn(e) B, say D), 6115 (say D, seith B, sen † C), 6246 (say D; C †),[2] 6732 (seyn(t) A, seyn(e) D), 8002 (say D, seyn [that] C); cf. 1886 ‡ C. (ii.) 1833 (s. thour C), 5636, 7413 (sey D, sen † C);[3] seyn he, 7167 (sein(e) D; C †).

Note.—*Seyën* (dissyllabic) appears not to occur in the *Troilus* (cf. *seyn* ‡, 6735 C, 8002 (?) C).

speken in, 6068 (-yn CD).
procedën of, 6723 (-yn C, -e B; D †).
comen ayen, 7495 (-yn C).

Note.—Such cases as the last three are rare except as mere variants. Cf., for the 2nd person : knowyn ek, 3757 C, 5993 C; takyn it, 7969 C; knowen how, 7688 D.[4] For the 3rd person, cf. lyuen vnder, 1259 B (-yn C, -eth A; *sg.* ‡ D); louen a, 1819 A; auauntyn of, 3160 C; fighten and, 4707 B; takyn it, 6710 C: tellyn iwis, 6730 C; dremyn and, 6740 C; spekyn of, 7216 C; speken for, 6599 B (*sg.* ACD). cf. §§ 136, *e*, 139.

[1] Supply [*ne*] in C.
[2] Supply [*that*] in D.
[3] Dele (*the proude*) in D.
[4] Read *long*[*e*] in D.

VI. -e before consonants. (*a*) Second Person :
make me, 1200 (-en B, -yn C) ; -e this, 3714.
mende ye, 1414 (wyn[ne] ‡ D (?)).
wene ye, 1975, 7267 (C?).
slepe ȝe, 2180 CD.
recche lest, 2236 (-yn D).
like ‡ ye, 2281 D.
wite ‡ what, 2737 D.
trowe ye, 3441 (-[e] D),[1] 4215 (-[e] B ; D †), 6000 (-[e] B).
knowe ye, 4743 (-yn D).
thinke ‡ ye, 5511 D.
lyue ye, 5877.
speke not, 5988 (-[e] B, spake D).
(*b*) Third Person :
hunte faste, 748 (-ith D).[2]
wake whan, 914 (-en B ; D †).
know[e] folk, 4860 ‡ D (weten A, witen B, wetyn C).
gynne sprynge, 7020 (-en B, -yn D, begynne ‡ C).
bytrayse yow, 8146.

VII. -e in rhyme. (*a*) First Person :
pleyne, 711 f (pleyn D) (: peyne *n.* : to seyne).
rede, 1185 f (: dede *n.* : rede *inf.*).
drinke, 1869 ‡ f C (*inf.* ABD).
byseche, 2759 f (bisike B, beseche C) (: eke, ek C).
deuyse, 6191 ‡ f C (2 *pers.* ABD).
hye, 6852 f (: vilonye). (Perh. subjunc.)
(*b*) Second Person :
eschuwe, 344 f (-ewe BCD) (: mysconstrue *inf.*, -ewe BC, -ew D)
2340 f (-ewe BCD) (: saluwe *inf.*, -ewe D, salwe B, salue C).
endure, 682 f (: assure *imv. pl.*).
fare, 1194 f (: care *n.* : bare), 6601 f (: care *n.*).
mene, 1218 f (meue † CD) (: lene *adj. pred. sg.*, eue † C, leve † D).
auyse, 1361 f (: wise *n.*).
requere, 1558 f (: chere : dere).
swete, 2028 f (smete † C) (: y-bete *p.p.* : hete *n.*).
leue *creditis*, 2226 f (: repreue *n.*).
constreyne, 2317 f (: peyne *n.*).
chese, 4851 f (: lese *inf.*).
deuyse, 6191 f ( 1 *pl.* ‡ C) (: wyse *n.*).

[1] Supply [*now*] in C. [2] The first part of 748 D is corrupt.

deface, 7278 f (: pace *inf.* : face).
speke, 7325 f (: wreke *inf.*).
(*c*) Third Person :
endure, 34 f (: auenture *n.*).
write, 147 f (: Dite *nom. prop.*).
ryme, 532 f (: tyme).
plye, 732 f (pleye C, pley D) (: lytargie : melodye).
kepe, 763 f (-yn C) (: by-wepe *inf.* (-yn C)).
knowe, 1945 f (know D) (: bowe *noun* (bow D)).
resigne, 2867 f (: digne *adj. pred. pl.* : benigne *adj. pred. pl.*).
make, 4203 f (: take *inf.*).
lye *mentiuntur*, 4222 f (: folye), 4682 f (: vilonye),[1] 7844 f (: enuye n. : dye *inf.*).
ake, 4403 f (: wake *inf.*).
erre, 4616 f (: werre *n.*). (Subjunctive?)
quelle, 4708 f (: felle (fele A) *adj. pl.* : telle *inf.*).
procede, 4809 f (*inf.* ‡ D) (: nede *n.*).
dwelle, 5347 f (: telle *inf.*).
bynde, 5525 f (: kynde *n.* : fynde *inf.*).
preue, 5631 f (: leue *inf.*).
falle, 5711 f (: alle *pl.*).
preye, 6046 f (prey CD) (: seye *inf.* : tweye).
rede, 6306 f (: drede *n.*).
mene, 6727 f (: bene *n.*). (Indirect question.)
carye, 7105 f (-ie D, *om* † C) (: letuarye).
declare, 7162 f (: square *adj. pl.*).
cape, 7496 f (gape CD) (: iape *inf.*).
reyne, 7699 f (: pleyne *inf.*).
Cf. also the following cases of -e (3 *pl.*) in rhyme : 705, 788, 1092, 2153, 2452, 3131, 3143, 3432, 4063, 4229, 4271, 5508, 6046, 6382, 7153, 7640, 7826, 7896.

VIII. *-e* elided before vowels. (*a*) Second Person :
lyue, 330 (loue ‡ C).
knowe, 340 (know BD, -yn C);[2] cf. 1107, 2873, 3757, 5993.
mene, 1311. [Indirect question.]
speke, 6217 (spek B, -ë ‡ awoy C).
hate, 6508 (-ë ‡ be D).[3]
take, 7969 (-yn C).

[1] Perhaps subjunctive. [2] Read *al[le]* in D. [3] Subjunctive?

(*b*) Third Person :

graue, 1132 (somë graue D).
iangle of, 1885 (iangele C, ianglyn (?) D).
deuyne, 2830 (dèuyne ‡ C).
fele, 2853 B (feld † A, fele *inf.* † D).
yelpe, 3149 (ȝelp C, yelp D).
maunte, 3160 (-ë ‡ wommen B, -yn of C).
take, 4252 ‡ C (toke *pret.* ABE), 6710 (-yn it (?) ‡ C).
twynne, 4553 (twyn CD).
fyghte, 4707 (-en B, fight D).
trete, 6008
telle, 6730 (-yn C).
dreme, 6740 (-yn C).
speke 72,16 (-yn C).
clepe, 7262.
write, 7992.

IX. *-e* elided before *h*. Second Person :

yeue hym, 2861 (ȝaf ‡ *pret.* D).
suffre hym, 3705 (suffere C),[1] 3723 (suffeye C).[2]

Note 1.—*knowe hem*, 3 pl., 4240 B (-yn C), should be preterite (*knewe* A, *knew* D).

Note 2.—Elided *-e* is occasionally omitted in writing.—Thus,—2nd pers., *know how*, 7688 (*-e* BC. -en D)[3]; 3rd pers., *com and*, 5761 (-en (?) D, -yth *sg.* (?) C), *lat hem*, 1820 A (lat hym = hem B). Cf. also the variants under VIII., above.

X. Cases of apocope of *-e* are rare. (*a*) Second Person :

sette lite, 1517 (settë C, set[të] D).
browe ye, 6231 (trow B, -ë C; D (?)).[4]
yeue ye, 6598 (ȝeuyth † ȝow 3 *sg.* C, frome † your D).
sey right, 1275 (-e B, seyn C, sey D †).
sey me, 2367 (say BC, seyn ful D).

Cf. also know wel, 3757 ‡ D, 5993 ‡ D.

(*b*) Third Person :

say may, 1707 (seyn(e) B, seyn C, sey D).
begynne ‡ to, 7020 C.

Note 1.—In the case of *sey*, *say*, 2, 3 *pl.*, the correct reading may be *seyn* (see V., above, and observe the variants there cited).

Note 2.—For the omission of *-e* at the end of the verse where the rhyme requires *-e*, see variants in the places cited under VII., above (*no cases in A*); cf. also *turment* ‡, 5003 ‡ D. An *-e* necessary to the metre is occasionally omitted in the interior of the verse (*not in A*): see variants under VI., above (in particular, *trow[e] ye*, 2 pl., 4215 B).

[1] Subjunctive? Supply [*that*] in C.
[2] Subjunctive?
[3] Read *long[e]* in D.
[4] Dele (*ak*) in A.

XI. The A.S. verbs *flēon*, *sēon*, *slēan*, *wrēon*, show in the *Troilus* the following monosyllabic contracted forms in the plural of the present indicative :

2nd person : sen that, 6007 (seen B, see D †, se ‡ ek (?) C) ; sen hym, 2995 (sen(e) D) ; se, see, cf. 1424 f (1 *pl.* ‡ D), 3508 f, 7247 f, 7765 f ; se ye (?), 995 A.

sle me, 6267.

3rd person : seen, sen,— s. swete, 2618 (se D) ; s. alday, 3905 (sen(e) D) ; s. in, 5342 (see D, seyn C) ; s. here, 6707 (sen(e) D) ; s. hem, 6709 (sen(e) D).

wrien with, 1624 (wren B, wryen D). (Monosyllable.)

flen (= flyen, see ten Brink, § 158) from, 6018 (fleen B, flien, D ; C †).

## § 97. The Plural of the Present Indicative ends occasionally in *-eth* (*-ith*, *-yth*), *-th*.

The following list is meant to be exhaustive for the four MSS. Old-style figures indicate that the subject is *men*. An asterisk indicates that the verb precedes its subject.

(*a*) Second Person :

knoweth what, 2737 A (-en B, wite D, knowith *imv. pl.* ‡ C).

causeth al, 4408 D (-es A, -ed B, can syre † $C^c$).

loueth most, 5259 AB (-yn C, -eth *sg.* D).

grauntyth that, 7307 C (-e *inf.* AB, -e *subj.* 2 *pl.* D).

doth(e) me, 8063 B (do A, don C, don(e) D).

(*b*) Third Person :

redith not, 241 D (-en A, -yn C, -en [not] B).

hath ben, 242 BC (han A, have with D) ; hath this, * 4299 B (han AC, haue D) ; hath go, 4547 D (han ABC) ; cf. 2467 D (?).

demeth, 644 f (-yn † C, -ith D) (: semeth *sg.*).[1]

seyth wo, 694 (seyeth C)[2] ; s. eche, 1127 (seyn BD) ; s. men, * 1809 (*om.* † D) ; s. impression[e]s, 2323 (sey C, seyn D) ; seith that, 6115 B (seyn A, sen C, say D).[3]

maketh of[t], 740 B (-yth C, -yn D ; -eth *sg.* A).

huntith fast, 748 D (-e ABC).[4]

lyueth vnder, 1259 A (-en B, -yn C ; -ith *sg.* D).

to suche as hym thenketh able, 1292 (thynketh B, thynkyth C, thinkith ‡ D).

[1] Subject : *the wyse*. Supply [*and*] in D.
[2] Subject : *thise wyse A*, *the wise BCD*. Perhaps singular.
[3] Supply [*the*] in D.
[4] D has *ffor thy with* for *fro thyng which*.

bereth lyf, 1920 (-ith CD).[1]
gydeth yow, 2189 (-ith C ; *sg.* D).[2]
doth these, * 2391 A (dos(e) B, don(e) D, don ȝe 2 *pl.* C).
longeth yn, 2431 (-ith C, -yn D).[3]
furthereth most, 2453 (forthreth B, fer-rerith † C, furthrith D).[4]
hakketh ofte, 2466 AB (-ë C$^c$, -yn D).
curith folk, 2665 D (-en AB, -e C).
adorneth al, 2844 (-ith D).
bryngeth folk, 4046 D (-en AB, -yn C).
drinketh ofte, 4058 D (-en AB, -yn C).
holdith a, 4596 E (-en AB, hold in C).[5]
lieth, 5496 f ABD (me hey † C) (: occupieth *sg.*).
goth plesaunce[s] (?), * 5761 C (gon plesaunces AB, gon(e) plesauns[es] (?) D).
clepeth an, 6674 (callyn ‡ [an] C, clepë ‡ an D) ; clepeth wode, 7576 B (-yn C, -e D, clepeth the A).
cometh swich, * 6737 AB (-yth C, -e D) ; cf. * 5761 C (?).
treüs lestith al, 6764 C (trewes lasten ABD).
weneth best, 7630 (-yn C, -e D).[6]
sleth my, 7706 ABC (sleeth D).
astreyneth me (?), 8146 D (commeueth *sg.* AB).

Note 1.—In 1887 f C, *semyth* was doubtless meant for a singular by the scribe.

Note 2.—In 217 C *faylyt* seems meant for a plural : *faylyt thyngys.*

The notes to the foregoing lists, together with the various diacritical marks, show that many of the examples are cases of the indefinite subject *men*, that others may be sing., and that still others may be accounted for in various ways (as perhaps by a confusion of constructions).

## § 98. The Northern Plural in *-es* occurs very rarely in the *Troilus* MSS.

Second Person :

causes al, 4408 A (-ed B, -eth D ; C †).
compleynes euere, 4685 A (-en B, -yn D).

[1] Perhaps singular : "al that bereth lyf."
[2] "What maner wyndes gydeth yow (wynd D)."
[3] "And dide also hise other obseruaunces That to a louere longeth yn this cas."
[4] "It is oon of the thynges that furthereth most." In this succession of words there is often a confusion of numbers in modern speech.
[5] In E (Harl. 1239), read *bond* for *boute*, and *duryng* for *doyng*.
[6] Supply [*to*] in D.

Third Person :

bigiles, 7640 f B (-e ACD) (: while).
falles thikke, 1541 A (-en B, -e C, -yn D).
delites hem, 6097 B (-en A, -ë C, -ed D).
dos(e) this, 2391 B (doth A, don(e) D, don ȝe 2 *pl.* C).

§ 99. The following Indicative Preterites (first and third person) of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the First Weak Conjugation occur in the *Troilus* (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, §§ 162, 165, 168-70).

(*a*) Stems originally short,—*lette, leyde, sette, shette*; (*b*) stems originally long,—*agylte, alighte, ayled, bente, bledde, blente* (A.S. *blende*), *blente* (A.S. *blencte*), *bredde, bytydde, demede, dyghte, dreynte, fedde, felte, ferde, grette, hente, herde, kepte, knette, kydde, kyste* (*keste, cussed*), *ladde* (*ledde*), *laste, lefte* (*lafte*), *lente, lyste* (*leste*), *mente, mette* (A.S. *métte*), *mette* (A.S. *mǽtte*), *myssed, nedede, radde, rente, reste, reynede, semed, sente, shente, spedde, spradde, stente* (*stynte*), *thraste, wende, wente*; (*c*) irregular verbs,—*boughte, broughte, dwelled, raughte, roughte, soughte, taughte, thoughte* (A.S. *þóhte*), *thoughte* (A.S. *þúhte*), *tolde, wroughte*. For *hitte* (O.N. *hitta*), *thriste* (O.N. *þrýsta*), *trusted* (cf. O.N. *treysta*), see § 100.

Of these *ayled, demede, myssed, nedede, reynede, semed*,[1] are unsyncopated preterites formed on the analogy of the second weak conjugation (A.S. *-ode*) and replacing the proper Anglo-Saxon forms *egl(e)de, démde, miste, nédde* (but cf. *néadian, -ode*), *rínde, sémde*. For *cussed* (*kyssed*), a similar formation, see *kyste*. In these *-ed, -ede* preterites final -e is not sounded except in *nedede* (q.v.) and is often not even written.

*Dwelled* corresponds to A.S. *dwelede* (*-ode*), inf. *dwelian* (Siev., § 407, Anm. 1); *dwelte* (A.S. *dwealde*, inf. *dwellan*) does not occur in the *Troilus*.

In *bente, blente* (A.S. *blende*, inf. *blendan*), *felte, lefte* (*lafte*), *lente, mente, rente, sente* (but also *sende*), *shente, wente*, A.S. *-de* is replaced by *-te* (cf. ten Brink, § 170 *ε*, *ζ*). *Brennen* (O.N. *brenna*, cf. A.S. *bærnan*) has both *brende* (: *amende* inf., etc.) and *brente* (: *sente* ind. 3 sg.) : see § 100.[2]

Several preterites of weak verbs belonging properly to the second conjugation show syncopated forms after the analogy of the first. These

[1] Ten Brink (§ 165) notices *demed, semed*.
[2] Ten Brink (§ 170 *ζ*) appears to recognize only *brente*.

are,—*answèrde* (*-swerede*), *caste* (O.N.), *made*, *pleyde*, *putte*, *rafte*, *shapte* (O.N.), *twyghte* : see § 101.[1]

Syncopated perfects, after the analogy of the first weak conjugation, are shown by several verbs strong in Anglo-Saxon : *breyde*, *dredde*, *fledde*, *lepte* (var. *lep*), *loste*, *syghte* (*sighed*, *siked*), *slepte* (but also *slep*), *smerte*, [*swelte*,] *wepte* (but also *wep*) : see § 103. So also *deyde* (O.N. *dœyja*, pret. *dó*). For *highte*, see § 103. For *shapte*, see § 101.

For other syncopated preterites from verbs of Germanic origin see *glente*, *plighte*, *swapte*, *twyste* (§ 100). For syncopated preterites from Romance verbs, see *aspyde*, *caughte*, *cryde*, *hurte*, *paste*, *preyde* (§ 104).

For *rong* (A.S. *hringde*), see § 103, note 2.

In the following lists (§§ 99-104) the cases cited are in the third person unless the contrary is indicated. In the infinitives given no attempt is made at exhaustiveness of reference, and elision is not indicated.

agylte (A.S. ágyltan, -gylte), 1st pers., *-e* hym, 3682 (-t CD).

alighte (A.S. álihtan, -lihte), 7380 f (-t D, -lyȝte C) (: yf she myghte : bryghte *adv.*) ; she *a*lighte, 6552 f (shalighte B, sche alyȝt C †, she light D) (: myghte *pret.* 3 *sg.*).

ayled (A.S. egl(i)an, egl(e)de, see Cosijn, Altws. Gr., II, 163, § 120), ayled the, 4993 B (ailid D, eyleth A, aylyth C).

bente (A.S. bendan, bende), *-e* his, 725 C (bent D, lente AB).

bithoughte, see *thoughte*.

bledde (A.S. blédan, blédde), 2035 f (bled D) (: vnto bedde : he spedde *ind.*), 7563 f (: fledde *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*, is fleddo ‡ A). [Inf. blede, cf. 4674 f, 7410 f.]

blente (A.S. blendan, blende), 7558 f (-t CD) (: wente *ind.* 3 *sg.* : wente *n.*). [Inf. blende, 2581 f, 5310 f (blynde BCD), 6889 f (blynde C) ; blynde, 3049 f (blende BCD).[2]]

blente (A.S. blenċan, blencte), 4188 (blynte BC, blent[e] E).[3]

bought[e] (A.S. bycgan, bohte), bought vs, 4007 AB (wrowte C, wrouȝt D).[4] [Inf. beye, 8206 f.]

bredde (A.S. brédan, brédde), 465 f (bred CD) (: weren fled, weren fledde B). [Inf. brede, 4388 f.]

brende, see § 100.

broughte (A.S. bringan, bróhte), 3524 f (-t BCD), 5332 f (-t *pl.* ‡ D), 7143 f (-t D) ; -[ë] there, 3428 (-e C, -t ‡ D)[5] ; brought in, 3584 broute C, broght D) ; brought ‖ whan, 4521 (-[ë] C, -[ë] (l) D). [Var. C brouȝte ; CD brouȝt ; D broght.] [Inf. brynge, -en, cf. 623, 3087, 3356, 5937, etc.]

Rhyme words.—hym oughte *ind.* (3524), roughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (5332), bysoughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (5332), he thoughte *ind.* (7143).

bysette, see *sette*.

[1] Cf. ten Brink, §§ 173, 176.
[2] The rhymes show the correct form to be *blende*.
[3] Supply [*ne*] in C or read *nenëre*, *his*. In E (Harl. 1239), read *neuer*.
[4] Supply [*that*] in C.
[5] Perhaps subjunctive.

bytydde (A.S. tídan, tídde), 1140 f (-tyd D) (: the thridde); bytidde, 8004 (bited B, betyd C †, betide D); be-tidde ‡ ful, 6708 D (bytyt *pres.* 3 *sg.* A, biuit C, betydyth D).[1] [Inf. bytyden, betyde, cf. 1708, 3486 f.]

demede (A.S. déman, démde), demede as, 4569 (-ed B, -yd CD). [Inf. deme, -e[n], cf. 799, 1457, etc.]

dreynte (A.S. drencan, drencte), 543 f (drenkte C) (: compleynte : pleynte). [Inf. drenche, -en, cf. 4603, 5172 f.]

dwelled (A.S. dwellan, dwealde; but also, later, dwelian, dwelede, -ode, Siev. § 407, Anm. 1), whil [that] she dwelled yn, 129 (-yd D, was dwellynge BCCp.); she duellid ay, 7074 ‡ D. [Inf. dwelle, -en, cf. 144 f, 2699 f, 3489, 6369.]

dyghte (A.S. dihtan, dihte, from Lat. dictare), 2033 f (-t BD, dizt C) (: they myghte *ind.*).

fedde (A.S. fédan, fédde), -e hem, 2655 (fed[dë] ‡ hem D), 6802 (fed BD). [Inf. fede, 5001 f.]

felte (A.S. félan, félde), 3187 f (-t D) (: swelte *inf.* : to-melte *inf.*), 3833 (-[e] D) (1st. pers.), 4118 (-[e] D), 4285 f (: melte *inf.*), 5027 f (-t C) (: melte *inf.*), 6354; -[e], 306 B (sholde A †, shold[e] D †), 5560 (-eth B, -ith CD); -e, 3192 (-t D); -e his, 2389 (-t BD); -e he, 3321 (-t D, wiste ‡ C); felt (*before vowels*), 1143, 2361 (ffeltę the † thorn C, felt the iryn (?) D),[2] 7531 (-e CD) (1st pers.); felt his, 502 AB (-e D), 4513 (-e C, -t ‡ in D); felt this, 498 (-e Troilus D, fel to C[3]); felt † that, 1146 A (fil B, fil ‡ hym D). feltë ‡ here (*eam*), 4043 A (-e BC, -t D). [Inf. fele, -en, cf. 4539, 5128, 7671, etc.]

ferde (A.S. féran, férde), 739 f (-d D)[4], 1238 f (-d D)[4], 4371 f (-d D), 4633 f (feerde B); ferd (*before vowels*), 225 (-e C), 491 (-e BC),[5] 2092 (-e C).[6]

Rhyme words.—answèrede *ind.* 3 *sg.* (739, 4371), herde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (4633), yerde *n.* (739, 1238).

grette (A.S. grétan, grétte), 3797 f (-t D) (: sette *ind.* 3 *sg.*), 4430 f (: sette *ind.* 3 *sg.*), 6656 f (grete B, gret D) (: sette *inf.*). [Inf. grete, 4398 f.]

hente (A.S. hentan, hente; cf. gehendan), 2009 f (-t CD), 2863 f (-t D), 4029 f (-t CD), 6453 f (hynte B, hent CD); -[e] faste, 1038 AD (-e B); hent here (*eam*), 2239 -e C, hynte B), cf. 4388 ‡ D.

[1] In B supply [*it*].
[2] In D read [*be*]*gan*.
[3] In B read *than*[*ne*].
[4] Indirect question.
[5] Indirect discourse. Dele (*al*) in C.
[6] Indirect discourse. First Person.

Rhyme words.—entente *n.* (2009, 4029), sente *ind.* 2 *pl.* (2863), mente *ind.* 3 *pl.* (4029), wente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (6453).

herde (A.S. híeran, etc., híerde, hýrde, ge-hérde), 1731 (-[e] B, -ę the C, -d the D), 1984 f, 2185 f (-d D), 3641 f (-d D), 3907 f (-d D), 4458 f, 4634 f, 4838 f, 6541 f, 8086 f; -[e], 544 (-e C, -ę D), 1301 (-e C); -*e*, 106 (-d BD), 1536 (-d BD), 2675 (-d D, -ë ‡ alwoy C); herd (*before vowels*), 1602 (-*e* BC),[1] 1643 (-*e* BC; D (?)), 4501 (-*e* BC, herd ‡ ferst (?) D); -*e* his, 2920 (-d D, -ę ‡ preye C[c]); herd hym, 549 (-*e* B, -ë ‡ hym D, herdde C)[2], 1471 (-*e* C). [Inf. here, -en, cf. 30, 279 f, 398 (hire A), 2662, 3521, 3598, etc.; yhere, 5975 f (yheere B, [y]here C).]

Rhyme words.—yerde *n.* (3907), answèrede, -swèrde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (1984, 2185, 3641, 4458, 4838, 6541, 8086), ferde *ind. or subj.* 3 *sg.* (4634).

kepte (A.S. cépan, cépte), 5013 f (: wepte *ind.* 3 *sg.*); kept hire (*poss. sg.*), 130 AC (-*e* B). [Inf. kepe, -en, cf. 1553 f, 3136, 3261 f, 7411 B, etc.]

keste, see *kyste.*

knette (A.S. cnyttan, cnytte), yn knette, 3930 f (inknitt D) (: shette *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

kydde (A.S. cýðan, cýðde, cýdde), kyd anoon, 208 A (kydde B, ked C).

kyste, keste, cussed (A.S. cyssan, cyste); kyste, 812 f (-t CD), 3971 f (kyssed B, kist D), 4094 f (kist D), 4117 f (kiste CD), 4192 f (-t C), 5823 f (kiste D); keste, 1335 f (kiste B, kyst C, kust D)[3], 4361 f (kyste B, kyst C, kist D), 4417 f (kyste B, kyst C, kist D); kyste, 3067 (-t D, kist C), 3814 (kist C, kyssid D), 6440[4]; cussed tho, 2175 (kiste B, kyssid D, kystę the C). [Inf. kysse, cf. 3024 f, 6914 f.]

Rhyme words.—reste *n.* (3971, 4361), wyste *ind.* 3 *sg.* (812, 4094), *subj.* 1 *sg.* (4117), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (5823), nyste *ind.* 3 *sg.* (4192), lyste *prcs. subj.* 3 *sg.* (liste B, lyst C, lust D) (1335), lyste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (leste B, lest C, list D) (3971), truste *prcs. ind.* 1 *sg.* (-t CD, triste B) (1335), thriste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (threst C, thrist D) (4417).

ladde, ledde (A.S. lǽdan, lǽdde); ladde, 4556 (ledde B, led C, byd † D); ladde hem, 184 (-d CD, led B); ladde here (*eam*), 6455 (-d C, ledde BD); ladde here (*poss. sg.*), 7077 (ledde B); lad here (*eam*), 2901 (ledde BC, led D); ledde, 7581 f (: fledde *ind.* 3 *sg.*); led here (*poss. sg.*), 1967 (let BC); ledde, 8027 ‡ C (*l.* leyde). [Inf. lede, -yn, cf. 2534, 4559 f, etc.]

laste (A.S. lǽstan, lǽste), 315 f (-t D) (: caste *ind.* 3 *sg.*). [Inf. laste, -en, cf. 2606, 5339 f, 8187 f.]

[1] First Person. Supply [*that*] in D.
[2] Supply [*in*] in B.
[3] "Rather late hand."—Furnivall.
[4] *Antenorë* (*Antenor he*) C.

lefte, lafte (A.S. lǽfan, lǽfde); lefte, 5813 B (lost[e] A, loste CD); lefte, 7947 (-t B, lafte D, leftę ‡ not C); lefte his, 1645 (-t D); lafte allas, 4754 A (lefte B, left D) (1st pers.); luft ‖ for, 3364 (left BD, lest † C). [Inf. leuen, cf. 5997.]

lente (A.S. lǽnan, lǽnde), -e his, 725 (bente C, bent D).

lette (A.S. lettan, lette), 2174 f (: sette : shette, *both pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*), 3315 f (let CD) (: bysette : mette *A.S. métte, both pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*). [Inf. lette, -en, cf. 150 f, 1817, 5191, 5963.]

leyde (A.S. lecgan, legde, léde), 2633 f (-d *p.p.* ‡ D),[1] 3897 f (-d D), 3970 f, 4797 f, 4842 f, 4886 f, 5825 f, 7236 f,[2] 7397 f, 7508 f, 7802 f; -*e*, 5813, 7140 (-ę ‡ C), 8027 (ledde ‡ C); -*e* hym, 1600 (-d CD). [Inf. leye, cf. 2756 f, 2914 f, 3501 f, 4447 f, etc.]

Rhyme words.—Criseyde (2633, 3897, 4797, 5825, 7236, 7397, 7508, 7802), seyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (3897, 3970, 4842, 4886, 7236, 7397, 7508, 7802), prayde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (4797). [Var. B layde; D leide, laide.]

lyste, liste, leste (A.S. lystan, lyste). Pret. 3 sg. Ind. and Subj. (no attempt is made to register the moods separately in this case. (*a*) Forms at end of verse,—A *leste, lyste, liste;* B *leste, liste;* C *lest, lyst, leste, list;* D *lest, list, leste, lyst:* 189 f, 357 f, 1169 f, 1694 f, 1998 f, 3065 f, 3294 f, 3974 f, 4521 f, 4608 f, 4833 f, 6880 f, 7203 f (caste † D), 7469 f, 8099 f. (*b*) Before consonants,—lyste, 977 [3], 4155 (liste B, lust to D, they luste C), 8051 (list[e] B, leste C, listę (?) D), cf. 1785 C; lyst[e], 1423 (liste B, ȝe liste C, ȝe lyst[e] D), 3908 (list[e] B, liste C, lest[e] D); lystę, 3985 (list B (?), lestę C, list D); lestę, 4243 ‡ C; lyst not, 3345 (listę B, list C, lest D) is very likely present. (*c*) Before vowels,—liste, 1302 (luste C, lyst D); lyst, lest (B leste, liste; C lust, liste; D list), cf. 2034 (-*e* B), 4612 (-*e* B), 6414 (-*e* BC). (*d*) Before *h* (in *he, his, hym, here* dat., *hem*),—lyste, 2863 (list B, ȝe list D),[4] 5785 (liste BD); lyst, lest (B liste, lest; C list, lust, lyst; D lest, liste), cf. 2666 (-*e* B), 3365, 6548 (-*e* BD).[5]

Rhyme words.—reste *n.* (189, 1998, 3065, 3974, 4521, 6880, 7469, 8099), gest[e] *n.* (1169), in geste (3294), the beste (3294, 4833, 7203), wyste, nyste *ind.* 3 *sg.* (357, 4608), kyste *ind.* 3 *sg.* (3974), twiste *prcs. or pret. subj.* 3 *sg.*[6] (4608), to-breste *inf.* (1694).

mente (A.S. mǽnan, mǽnde), 320 f (-t CD), 1449 f (-t D) (1st pers.), 1677 (-t D †) (1st pers.), 2306 f (-t CD), 2646 f (-t CD), 2968 f (-t CD), 4027 f (-t CD), 5095 f (-t CD), 6080 f (-t CD), 7231 f (-t

[1] Possibly subjunctive. [2] First person. In D read *hand* for *haue.*
[3] Supply [*though*] in C. D has *lest and,* but is quite unmetrical.
[4] In B supply [*whom*]. [5] In D supply [*here*].
[6] A has *it wyste* for *twyste.*

C † D); *-e*, 3274 (-t CD), 7210 (-t C)[1]; mente harm (?), 1523 (-t (?) B, -ë C, -t D) (1st person). [Inf. mene, cf. 3006, 3098 f CD.]

Rhyme words.—deȝcente (320), entente (1449, 2306, 2646, 2968, 4027, 6080 (entent ABCD), 7231), wente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (320, 5095, 6080), hente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (4027).

mette (A.S. métan, métte), 3316 f (-t CD), 4393 f; mettę that, 1068 A (met with D, mette a B). [Inf. mete, -en, cf. 4512 f, 6347, 8066.]

Rhyme words.—bysette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3316, 4393), or she lettę (3316), shette *inf.* (4393).

mettė (A.S. mætan, mætte), 362 f (-t D), 1175 f (1st pers.), 2010 f (-t D); *-e* he, 6612 ‡ C (mete *inf.* AB, dreme ‡ *inf.* D), 7601 (mett D); mett[e] ‡ that, 6614 D (*inf.* ABC). [Inf. mete, -en, cf. 4401 f, 6612, 6614.]

Rhyme words.—lette *n.* (362), sette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (362, 1175, 2010).

myssed (A.S. missan, miste), m. han, 3287 (mys(e)sid C, myssid havę D). [Inf. mysse, 4466 f.]

nedede (A.S. nīedan, nȳdan, nédan, -dde), nedëdë no, 7089 (neded[ë] BD, nedit (?) C).

radde (A.S. rædan, rædde (so always in W.S.), but also réd), *-e*, 2170 AB. [Inf. rede, -en, cf. 83 f, 668, 1188 f, 1214, 2261 f, 2407 f, etc.]

raughte (A.S. récan, ræhte), 1532 f (rauȝte C, raght D); ouer raughte, 7381 f (-t D, rauȝte C); rauȝt ful, 6423 C (right A, rit(e) B, ritt(e) D).[3]

Rhyme words.—caughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (1532), taughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7381).

rente (A.S. rendan, rende), 6362 f (-t D) (: wente *ind.* 3 *sg.*); *-e*, 2013 (-t BD), 3941, 5399.[4]

reste (A.S. restan, reste), *-e* here (*eam*), 7399 (ref B, reuyth C, rafte (?) D). [Inf. reste, 2411 f.]

reynede (A.S. rignan, rínan, ríndo), reynede it, 4399 (-ed B, -yd C, -ęd ‡ D). But also a strong pret. (A.S. *rán*), ron, 3482 (ron(e) D, reyne ‡ *inf.* C), 3519 f (rone D) (: anoon : gon *inf.*). [Inf. reyne, 3393 f, 4961 f.]

roughte (A.S. récan, reccan, róhte), 496 f (roght D),[5] 5329 f (-t D), 6813 f (-t D); rowhte, 5610 f (roughte B, roughthe C$^{c}$, rought D); rought[e] not, 5093 (rouȝte C, route ‡ he (?) D).[6] [Inf. recche, cf. 797 f, 1423 f, 1519 f, 2558 f, 6109 f, 6250 f.]

[1] First Person.

[2] All the cases of *mente* cited (except 1449 2306, 4027, 4699) are in indirect questions: some of them may well be subjunctive.

[3] The correct reading is *rit* = *rideth*.

[4] Supply [*her*] in D.

[5] Hardly subjunctive.

[6] Supply [*that*] in A.

Rhyme words.—thoughte *ind. and subj.* (*t*) 3 *sg.* (496, 6813), soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (5610, 6813), by-soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (5329), broughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (5329). [Var. C rouȝte.]

semed (A.S. ge-séman, -sémde), s. she, 103 (-ede C, -yd D); s. that, 6086 (-yd CD)[1]; s. not, 7231 (-ede C †, -yd D); semed (*before vowels*), 496 (-yd D),[2] 2906 (-yd D); -ed he, 1721 (-ede C, -yd D); -ed here (*dat.*), 3307 (-ede C, -yd D). [Inf. seme, cf. 703, 747.]

sente, sende (A.S. sendan, sende); (*a*) sente, 1421 f (-t CD), 1916 f (-t CD †), 2421 f (-de C, -t D), 4801 f (-t CD), 5516 f (-t CD), 6650 f (-t CD), 7474 f (-t CD), 7813 f (-t D), 7840 f (-t CD); *-e*, 4427 (-t D); (*b*) sende, 2819 f (: amende *subj.* 3 *sg.* : defende *ind.* 1 *sg.*).[3] [Inf. sende[n], cf. 6047.]

Rhyme words.—entente *n.* (1916, 5516, 7474), to rente (1916), assente *inf.* (1421), brente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2421), wente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (6650, 7474), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (4801), stente *inf.* (7840), stente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (7813).

sette (A.S. settan, sette), 359 f (-t D), 1176 f, 2012 f (-t D), 2172 f, 3078 f (-t D), 3542 f (-t D), 3795 f (-t D), 4431 f, 4896 f (sett BD), 7212 f (sett D); bysette, 3313 f (-set D, beset C), 4394 f (be- C); sette, 4673 (-t D); sett at, 444 (*-e* C, set D); sette hym, 2548 (sat C, sate D); *-e* here (*eam*), 1685 (-t B, sate there D †), 2303 (sat C, sat(e) D), 2313 (-t D); *-e* here (*poss. sg.*), 7083 (sett D);[4] set hym, 2149 (sette B, sat C, sete D). [Inf. sette[n], -en, cf. 3742, 5152, 5443.]

Rhyme words.—lette *n.* (359, 3078, 3542, 7212), mette *A.S. mǽtte pret. ind.* 1 *and* 3 *sg.* (359, 1176, 2012), mette *A.S. métte pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3313, 3542, 4394), er he lette, or she lette (2172, 3313), shette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2172, 4896), shette *inf.* (4394), y-shette *p.p. pred. pl.* (3078), grette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3795, 4431), fette *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (7212).

shente (A.S. scendan, scende), 7586 f (-t CD) (: wente *ind.* 3 *sg.* : potente *n.*).

shette (A.S. scyttan, scytte), 2175 f (-t D, schette *p.p.* C), 3568 f (-t D), 3591 f (-t D), 3928 f (swelt † D), 4894 f (shett D); *-e*, 2311 (-t D, schette C).[5] [Inf. shette, 4391 f, etc.]

Rhyme words.—lette *n.* (3591), sette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2175, 4894), fette *pret. ind.* 2 *sg.* (3568), yn knette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3928), er he lette (2175), thow ne lette (3568).

soughte (A.S. sécan, sóhte), 388 f (-t D), 5361 f (-t D, sout C), 5608 f (-t D, southe C), 6815 f (-t D), 7600 f (-t D), 8120 f (-t D); bi-, bysoughte, 3422 f (-t D, besoute C), 5331 f (be- C, besowte D);

[1] Supply [*him*] in D.

[2] "Ne semed it that she of hym roughte." I cannot scan this line.

[3] On (of John's) his by-halue (half BDG John's, halue C, halfe Cp.) which (-e G, with B, *om.* C John's) that (*om.* D) vs alle sowle (soule vs alle CGCp. John's, same vs al B, vs soule hath D) sende.—The correct reading is doubtless: On his halue which that soule vs alle sende.

[4] Supply [*wo*] in A.

[5] In D read *gan* for *to*.

soughte, 7935 (-t B, thouȝt ‡ D); bi-, bysoughte, 2439 (-t D, besoute C), 7816 (-t B, besouȝte C, besouȝt D). [Inf. seche, -en, seke, -en, be- (by-) seche (-seke),[1] cf. 704 f, 707, 763, 886 f, 2919 f, 3424 f, 4349 f, 4630 f, 4793 f, 5605, 6472 f, 7160 f, 7220 f, 7495 f, 7901 f, 8081 f, 8211 f.]

Rhyme words.—thoughte *A.S. þóhte* (388, 5361, 6815), *A.S. þúhte* (7600), wroughte (7600), roughte (5331, 5608, 6815), broughte (5331), oughte (3422), —*all ind.* 3 *sg.*; aboughte, *ind.* 3 *pl.* (8120). [Var. C souȝte, besouȝte; D soght, besouȝt, bysoght.]

spedde (A.S. ge-spédan, ge-spédde), 482 f (-d D), 2034 f (-d D), 2388 f (-d D), 4365 f (spede C); spede hym, 4882 (spedde BD); speddë he, 1771 (-[dë] D). [Inf. spede, 4737 f.]

Rhyme words.—vnto bedde (2034), abedde (2388), bleddë *ind.* (?) 3 *sg.* (2034), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (4365), cledde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (4365), dredde *ind.* 3 *pl.* (482).

spradde (A.S. sprǽdan, sprǽdde), ouer-spradde here (*poss. sg.*), 1854 (-d CD); ouęr-sprad ‡ the sonne, 1852 D (ouer-sprat *pres.* 3 *sg.* ABC). [Inf. sprede, 1139 f.]

stente, stynte (A.S. for-styntan, ge-stentan, *-stynte, *-stente); stente, 273 f (-t D), 736 f (stynt D),[2] 1683 f (-t D), 7815 f, 7848 f; stent, 2716 ‡ f D (*l.* wente); stente, 1492 (stynte B, stint CD); stynte, 1554 (-[e] D, stinte C), 1961 f (-t D, stente BC), 4080 f (stint D, stente B); stynte, 2941 (-t D), 7291. [Inf. stynte, -en, cf. 2446, 4732, etc.]

Rhyme words.—entente (736, 1961, 4080), wente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (273, 1683, 7848), sente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7815).

taughte (A.S. tǽcan, tǽhte), 7379 f (-t D, tauȝte C) (: ouer raughte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*). [Inf. teche, -en, cf. 2666 f, 4234, 6137 f.]

thoughte (A.S. þencan, þóhte), 386 f (-t BD), 497 f (-t BD), 1063 f (-t D), 2000 f (-t CD), 3307 f (-t BCD), 4640 f (-t D), 5385 f (fele ‡ C), 6816 f (-t D), 7141 f (-t D); -e somwhat, 1784 (-[e] BD, thoute C); -e she, 3825 (-[e] D, thought[e] [s]he B); -e thus, 1541 (-[e] BD), 1695 (-[e] BD, seyde ‡ C); -e this, 6868 (-[e] D; B †); -[e] now, 1364 (-e C, -[e] not[3] D thougth[e] not[1] B) (1st pers.); -[e] best, 2667 (-e BC)[4]; -[e] wel, 1786 (-[e] ferst D, -*e* C); -*e*, 361 (-t D, -ę so C), 2381 (-t BD), 3483 (-t BD), 7535 (-t BD); thought (*before vowels*), 1472 (-*e* B, now ‡ C), 1749 (-*e* C, -t (?) D), 2839 (-[ë] ‡ a D, seydë ‡ o C), cf. 7935 ‡ D; bithought on, 545 (-t (hym) of D, thouȝte C †); thoughte he, 276 (-t D), 380 (-t BD, seyde ‡ C), 1352 (-t BD), 2263 (-t D, thoute C), 3918 (-t B, -t ‡ it D), 7548

[1] *Seke, seche, by-seche, by-seke,* are all vouched for by the rhyme words, which include *speche, eke, meke,* etc.

[2] In C read *with* for *why*.

[3] Read *now*.

[4] Supply [*I*] in D.

(-t ‡ amys D, seydë ‡ he C); -t he, 3539 (-*e* C), 5026 ‡ D.—thoughtę ‖ that, 3310 (tought B, thoght ‡ althogh D); thouhtę ‖ ther, 5614 (-ghtę B, -ȝtę CD); thought ‖ whan, 3418 (-[e] B, -e C). thoughtë his, 2035 (-[ë] B, -*e* C, -t ‡ that (?) D).[1]—thoughte ‖ how, 3282 (-t BD). (Cf. also the variants under *thoughte* = *þúhte*.) [Inf. thynke (: drynke), thenke (: synke, swynke), by-thynke, by-thenke ( : inke), forthynke ( : I thenke, *var.* thynke), thenken (not in rhyme), athynken (not in rhyme), cf. 405 f, 975, 1859, 1868 f, 2340, 2499 f, 4536 f, 6154 f, 6636 f, 7241.]

Rhyme words.—roughte *subj.* (?) 3 *sg.* (497), *ind.* 3 *sg.* (6816), wroughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (1063, 4640), *pl.* (3307, 5385), broughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7141), *pl.* (2000), soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (386, 6816), besoughte *ind.* 3 *pl.* (5385), oughte *ind.* 3 *pl.* (2000). [Var. BCD thouȝt; CD thouȝte; D thoght.]

thoughte (A.S. þyncan, þúhte), 3105 f (-t CD), 7223 f (-t BCD)[3], 7597 f (he thought D); -e felen, 4539 (-[e] B, -t ‡ thei D; C †); thowghte by, 3237 (thoughte B, -ȝt[e] C, thoght[e] D); thought[e] tho, 3986 (-e C); -*e*, 6337 (-t BD), 7997 (-t BD), cf. 2683 ‡ D; -*e* he, 2411 (-t B, -*e pers' l.* C, -t *pers' l.* D); -*e* hym, 3909 (-t BD)[4]; -*e* his, 6893 (-t BD), 7563 (-t BD); -t he, 502 (-*e* ‡ his (?) *pers' l.* C); -t hym, 294 (-*e* BC; D †), 5026 (-*e* BC, thought he *pers' l.* D); -t here (*poss. sg.*), 2193 (-*e* B, -*e pers' l.* C; D †); thoughtę † that, 306 (-*e* he B, -t † he D, -e for C). [Inf. thynke, 405 f.]

Rhyme words.—wroughte *ind.* 1 *sg.* (3105), *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7597), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (7223), soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7597), the oughte *pres. sense* (3105). [Var. CD thouȝt; C thouȝte; D thoght.]

thraste (A.S. þréstan, þréste), 2240 f (-t C, cast ‡ D) (: faste *adv.*). cf. thriste, threste, § 100, p. 241 and note.

tolde (A.S. tellan, tealde), 261 f (-d BD) (1st pers.), 312 f, 2019 f (-d D) (1st pers.), 2051 f (-d D), 2275 f (-d D), 5889 f, 6920 f (-d B), 7012 f, 7569 f (1st pers.), 7616 f, 7875 f; -[e] tales, 3456 (-e C, -d ‡ the tale D); -[e] she, 7854 (-e D); -*e*, 613 B (C (?), -d D, telle ‡ A); -d ek, 7848 (-*e* D, -*e* C †), 7855 (-*e* CD); -*e* here (*dat.*), 7815 (-d B); -d hym, 2580, 3650 (-*e* BC), 4081 (-*e* D, tok ‡ C); toldë ‖ who (*or* toldę who), 1656 (-[ë] *or* -d BCD)[5]; who told ‡ yow, 3684 (-*e* hym B, -d him C, D (?). [Inf. telle, -en, cf. 142 f, 260, 794, 3155, etc.]

Rhyme words.—colde *adj. pl.* (261), olde *adj. pl.* (6920, 7012, 7569, 7875), holde *inf.* (261, 312, 2051, 7569), byholde *inf.* (312, 2275, 5889, 6920), holde *subj.* 1 *pl.* (2019), byholde *p.p.* (7616), folde *inf.* (5889).

[1] Supply [*But*] in C. [2] Perhaps -ë (-[ë]).
[3] Perhaps subjunctive: "To asken here yf that here straunge thoughte. Strictly, the verb is plural here. [4] Supply [*a*] in A.
[5] "Or he me *tolde* (told BCD) who *myght* (-e BC) ben his leche."

wende (A.S. wénan, wénde), 447 f, 1497 f (-d D)[1], 2254 (went[e] D), 3644 (-[e] D)[1], 4182 CE (-en *pl.* AB), 4382 f, 7056 f[1], 7974 f (-d D)[1], 8011; -*e*, 7627 (-d D)[1], 8048 (C †)[1]; -d it, 3918 (-*e* BC, went D). [Inf. wene, -ę, cf. 3333 A, 6775.]

Rhyme words.—brende *ind.* 3 *sg.* (447, 4382), defende *inf.* (1497), amende *inf.* (7056, 7974).

wente (A.S. wendan, wende), 272 f (C †), 317 f, 1147 f, 1681 f (went ‡ *p.p.* D), 1898 f (-t C), 2625 f (-t C), 2716 f (-t C), 2810 f (-t C), 3394 f, 3627 f (-t C)[1], 4423 f (-t C), 4749 f[1], 5012 f (-t D †), 5096 f (-t C), 5516 f (-t C), 5882 f (-t C), 6363 f, 6454 f (-t C), 6649 f (-t C), 6966 f (-t C), 7384 f (-t C), 7471 f (-t C), 7555 f (-t C), 7583 f, 7666 f (-t C), 7850 f (-t C). In all the above, except 2716, 6454, 7850, D has *went*; cf. also 3329 ‡ D. Before consonants,—wente, 2487 ‡ C (for *went he*), 2576 ‡ C, 2622 (-[e] C, -t ‡ to (?) D), 6988 (-[e] D), 8189; -[e], 163 (-e BC, went ‡ euery D). Before vowels, —ABC have regularly *wente*, D has regularly *went* : cf. 1285, 2301, 2576, 2726, 3068; but,—went, 1684 A, 2301 C. Before *h* (in *he, his, here*),— -*e*, 2487 (-t D, -ë tho C), 7937 (-t D); went, 267 (-*e* BC), 1055, 1897 (om. † B, -ë for C)[2], 2264 (-*e*. BC). [Inf. wende, cf. 2578 f, 3458 f, etc.]

Rhyme words.—descente (317), wente, went[e] *n.* (1147, 1898, 3627, 6966, 7555), tente *n.* (7384), potente *n.* (7583), entente, -[e] (2810, 3394, 4423, 5516, 5882, 7471, 7666), rente *n.* (4749), stente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (272, 1681, 7850), mente *pret. ind.* (and *subj.* ?) 3 *sg.* (317, 5012, 5096), rente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (6363), hente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (6454), sente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (6649, 7471), blente *caccavit* (7555), shente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (7583), glente *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (5882), assente *inf.* (2625, 2716).

wroughte (A.S. wyrcan, worhte), 1064 f (-t D), 3103 f (-t CD, I-wroughte ‡ B) (1st pers.), 4641 f (-t CD), 7356 f (-t D), 7599 f (-t D); wrowte, 4007 C (-t D, bought AB). [Inf. werke, -en, -yn, cf. 380, 2486, 4067, 4480 (werchyn C), 4836, 4899, 7356.]

Rhyme words.—thoughte *A. S.* *þóhte ind.* 3 *sg.* (1064, 4641), thoughte *A.S.* *þúhte ind.* 3 *sg.* (3103, 7599), soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7599), oughte 3 *sg. pres. sense* (3103, 7356). [Var. B wroghte; CD wrouȝt; C wrouȝte; D wroght.]

§ 100. A few Indicative Preterites (first and third persons) of Old Norse verbs of the First Weak Conjugation occur in the *Troilus*. With these may be associated several other verbs that form their preterites in *-te*, but are not found in Anglo-Saxon or Old Norse.

[1] First Person.
[2] But in 1897 AD *went* appears to be *pres.* 3 *sg.*

(*a*) O.N. first conjugation,—*brende* (*brente*), *cledde* (*cladde*), *hitte*, *sterte* (?), *thriste* (cf. *threste*, *thraste*), *trusted* (from the noun, cf. O.N. *treysta*); (*b*) *glente*, *plighte*, *swapte*, *twyste*.

The preterites in this list are all syncopated (*-de*, *-te*), except *trusted*.

Note.—For *caste*, *shapte*, see § 101. For *deyde*, see § 103.

asterte, see *sterte*.

brende, brente (O.N. brenna, brende; cf. A.S. bærnan, and see ten Brink, § 141), 448 f, 490 f, 3267 f (-d D)[1], 4381 f (D †), 5366 f; *-e*, 4388 (hent ‡ D); brend hym, 440 (brinde B, brende C, brent (?) D).—brente, 2422 f (-de C, -t D). [Inf. brenne, cf. 5907 f, 6666.]

Rhyme words.—wende *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (448, 4381), 3 *pl.* (5366), *subj.* 3 *pl.* (490), amende *inf.* (3267), entende *inf.* (3267), spende *inf.* (5366).—sente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (-de C, -t D) (2422).

Note.—Ten Brink (§ 170 ζ) seems to recognize only *brente*, not *brende*, though he registers *brend* (p.p.) among the corrections, etc., at the end of his book (p. 225).

cledde, cladde (O.N. klæða, klædda; cf. A.S. clǽðian, -ode), cledde, 4363 f (clede C) (: spedde *ind.* 3 *sg.* : bledde *subj.* 3 *sg.*); cladde, 6352 f (: hadde *ind.* 3 *pl.*). [Inf. clothen = A.S. clǽðian, cf. 7781.]

Note.—*Clothed* does not occur in the Troilus. Ten Brink (§ 173) notices *cladde*, but overlooks *cledde*, though he registers *cled*, p.p., B. Duch. 252.

glente (cf. Swed. gläuta), 5885 f BD (*pl.* A, glent *pl.* C) (: entente *n.* : wente *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

hitte (O.N. hitta, hitta), hit hym, 209 A (hitte B); cf. 1284 C.

plighte (pret. of plicchen, quasi A.S. * plyccan), 2205 f (-t D, pliȝte C) (: myghte *ind.* 3 *sg.*). [Inf. plukke (A.S. pluccian), cf. 6065.]

sterte (cf. O.N. sterta, sterta), 2179 f, 4755 f (-t D) (1st pers.), 6073 f (sterede † C[c]), 6563 f (i-stert ‡ *p.p.* C), 7899 f; *-e*, 1532 (-t D, stirte C); vp stirte, 4845 (vp sterte C, stert ‡ vp D)[2]; asterte, 2939 f (ásferte † B, ouersterte C, astert D), 3912 f (-t D), 7855 f (-t C); me *a*sterte, 1043 f (me stert D, may † sterte B). [Inf. sterte, 2719 f, 3791 f.]

Rhyme words.—herte *n.* (2179, 2939, 3912, 4755, 6073, 6563, 7855, 7899), sherte *n.* (4755), smerte *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (2179), *inf.* (1043), smerte *adj. pl.* (6563), conuerte *inf.* (6073).

swapte (cf. Eng. swoop, sweep), *-e* him, 4907 (swappid (?) D, schop C).[3]

thriste, thraste, threste (O.N. þrýsta, -ta); thriste, 4416 f (thryste B, threst C, thrist D) (: keste *ind.* 3 *sg.*, kyste B, kyst C, kist D); threste, 4916 f (thryst C) (: to reste *inf.* : breste *inf.*); thraste, 2240 f (-t C, cast ‡ D) (: faste *adv.*).

[1] Line out of order in ABC, but easily emended.
[2] "The noyse of peple vp stirte thanne at onys."
[3] Read *him selven* for *him self* in AD. Then read *swappid* in D.

Note.—*Thriste*, 4416 f, and *thraste*, 2240 f, have the meaning of *thrust*; *threste* that of the A.S. *þrástan*. Forms from O.N. *þrýsta* and forms from A.S. *þrástan* appear to have become confounded.

trusted (from the noun; cf. O.N. treysta, treysta), -ed most, 7611 (trostedę C) (1st pers.). [Inf. tryste, triste, cf. 692 f, 3100 f, 3758 f, 4069 f, 8029 f; vntriste, cf. 3681 f; trust[e], cf. 1576; trusten, mystrusten, cf. 688, 690, 6132, etc.]

twyste (cf. A.S. -twist, *sbst.*, and M.L.G. twisten), *-e* 4916 (twiste BD).

§ 101. The following Indicative Preterites (first and third persons) of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Second Weak Conjugation occur in the *Troilus* (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, §§ 172-3).

*answèrędę* (*-swerde*, *-swèred*), *asked*, *brydled*, *called*, *cursed*, *flekęred*, *folwede*, *gladede* (*-ed*), *herkęned*, *hied*, *huntede*, *liked*, *loked* (*-ęd*), *louędę* (*-ęd*), *made* (cf. pl. *makkeden*), *opęned*, *pleyde*, *putte*, *refte* (*rafte*), *shewed*, *thonked*, *twyghte*, *welcòmed*. In the following alphabetical list are included also (*a*) from the Old Norse second declension,—*caste*, *gayned*, *shapte*, *wanted*, (*b*) four words of Germanic origin, not found in Anglo-Saxon, that form preterites after the analogy of the second declension,—*bekked* (see the word), *houede*, *lakked*, *poked* (?).

Syncopated preterites in *-de*, *-te*, after the analogy of the first conjugation, are *answèrędę* (*-swerde*), *caste* (O.N.), *made*, *pleyde*, *putte*, *refte* (*rafte*), *shapte* (O.N.), *twyghte*. The other preterites of this declension end in *-ed*, *-edę*, *-ede* : no case of *-edë* occurs.

Several verbs of the first declension form unsyncopated preterites on the analogy of the second. For these, see *ayled*, *demede*, *cussed* (s.v. *kyste*), *myssed*, *nededë* (*!*), *reynede*, *semed* (§ 99). Cf. also *trusted* (from the noun, cf. O.N. *treysta*, pret. *-ta*) (§ 100).

Note 1.—For *cledde*, *cladde*, see § 100.

Note 2.—For the weak preterite *walkedę* from the strong verb *walken* (A.S. *wealcan*), see § 103. For *quaked*, *quok* (A.S. *cwacian*, *-ode*), see § 103, note 2.

answèrędę, answèrde, answèred, (A.S. andswarode); answèrędę, 737 f (-rde B, -ryd C, -rd D), 1982 f (-rde CD, -r[d]e B), 2187 f (-rde BC, -rd D), 3643 f (-rde BC, -rd D), 4369 f (-rde BC, -rd D), 4840 f (-rde BC, -rd D), 8088 f (-swarde B, -swerd D); answèrde, 4459 f, 6539 f (-d D); answèred, 1030 f (-rde BC, -rd D). *Before consonants*,—answèrędę, 5244 (-rde B, -rd[e] D), 6315 (-rde B, -rd[e] D, -rde ‡ C), 7523 (-rde B, -rd[e] D); -swèrde, 5876 (-[e] D, [he]

answerdë ‡ herte C), cf. 5202 CD (*below*); -swèred, 4005 (-swarde B, -sweręd him C, -swerịde him D), 4051 (-rde BC, -rịde D), 4334 (-rde B, -rid D, -rịde ‡ and C), 5302 (-rde C, -rde hym B, -rd him D), 6847 (-rde B, -rd[e] D, -rede C †). *Before vowels*,—answèręde, 4498 (-rde B, -ręd C, -rd D), 5042 (-rde BCD), 5783 (-rde BC, -rd D), 5897 (-swarde B, -swerde C, -swerd D), 7638 (-rde BC, -rd D); answèrde, 2507 (-ręd C, -rd D †), 2703 B (-r[d]e A, rr[d]e C$^{c}$, -rd D), 6686; answèręd, 2530 (-rde B, -ręde C, -rd D), 3767 (-ręde BC, -rd D), 4019 (-rde B, -ręde C, -rịde D), 6190 (-rde B, -ręde C, -rd D), 6777 (-swarde B, -swerde C †, -swerd D), 7491 (-swarde B, -swerde CD), 7533 (-rd BD, -rde C); he *a*nswèręd and, 5097 (-rde B, he *a*nswerde C, he *a*nswerd D). *Before* h,—answèręde hym, 5202 (-rde B, -rdë Troylus C, -rd[e] T. D); -swèręd hym, 2030 (-rde B, -rd[e] do CD), 3974 (-rde BC, -ride ‡ as D), 7230 (-rde B, -swèrëdë ‡ C, -rịd D). answèrëd ‖ yf, 829 AB (-swerd[ë] D, -swerdë ȝyf C), 2136 (-swerdë B, -swerid if D, -swerde Pandarus C). [Inf. answère, 2070.]

Rhyme words.—yerde *n.* (737), ferde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (737, 4369), herde *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (1982, 2187, 3643, 4459, 4840, 6539, 8088), *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* (1030).

asked (A.S. áscian, áxian, -ode), (i.) 3593 (axen † B, seydë ho C, seid[ë] ho D), 6471 (aixed B, axedę C, axed D); (ii.) asked him, 3411 (axed B, axęd ‡ C, axid D), 5888 (axede C (?)); axed hym, 7587 BD (asketh A, axë C).[1] [Inf. aske, -en, axe, -en, cf. 1232, 1979, 3700, 5217, 5334, etc.]

bekked (cf. A.S. bíecnan, bę̆cnan, I., later béacnian, -ode, II.), b. on, 2345 (-ede C, -yd D).[2]

brydled (A.S. ge-brídlian, -ode), b. youre, 6340 A (bridęled BD).

called (A.S. ceallian, -ode, from O.N. kalla, kallaðа), c. euęre, 541 (clepid ‡ D, callyd in C). [Inf. calle, 902 f, etc.]

caste (O.N. kasta, -aðа), 314 f (-t D), 1227 f (-t D), 1284 f (-t BC † D), 1733 (-t adoun CD)[3], 2344 f (-t D), 2442 f (-t ‡ *inf.* D), 3939 f (-t CD), 5184 f (-t C), 8183 f AB[4]; cast ‡, 2240 f D (thraste AB, thrast C); *-e*, 75 (-t BD), 1492 (-t CD), 4696 (-t BD); cast (*before vowels*), 1159 (*-e* B), 7290 (*-e* BCD); *-e* he, 726 (-t BD); *-e* his, 1064 (-t *inf.* D †), 7292 ‡ D (threw AB, throwe *inf.* C); *-e* hym, 4672 (-t BD); -t here (*poss. sg.*), 7368 (*-e* B, kiste D)[5]; cast ‖ how,

[1] In D read *wher*[*of*].
[2] Supply [*he*] in A.
[3] AB read *castë doun*.
[4] Supply [*was*] in B.
[5] Supply [*al*] in A, and read *cy*[*en*].

4823 (-*e* B, -*e* he C, -t he D).[1] [Inf. caste, -en, cf. 1338 f, 1598, etc.]

Rhyme words.—faste *adv.* (1227, 1284, 2240, 2442, 3939, 5184), at the laste (1227, 3939, 5184, 8183), laste *ind.* 3 *sg.* (314), paste *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2344).

clepid (A.S. cleopian, -ode). See *called*.

curssed (A.S. cursian, -ode), (i.) 6570 (-eth B, -edę C, -ed D), 6571 (-eth B, -edę C, -ęd (?) D). [Inf. cursen, cf. 3738.]

flekered (A.S. flicerian, -ode), flekęred ay, 5883 (fliked B, flekęrede C, f[l]ykęred D).

folwede (A.S. folgian, -ode), fol(e)wede, 7379 (folwed B, folwede C, folǫwed D). [Inf. folwe, -en, cf. 614, 3903, 5838, etc.]

gayned (O.N. gagna, -aðа), 352 f (-yd D) (: feyned *ind.* 3 *sg.*: destrayned *ind.* 3 *pl.*).

gladed, -*e* (A.S. gladian, -ode), -ede, 173 (-yd D, gladde[d] B); gladed her (*eam*), 116 (-ede C, -id D, gladded B); gladed hym, 7547 (-ede C, -eth D, gladded B). [Inf. glade, -en, cf. 734, 2064, 2630 f, 2659 f, etc.]

herkened (A.S. hércnian, -ode), herkęned she, 2008 (herkned B, -ęnyd D). [Inf. herkęnen, cf. 164; herken, cf. 1180.]

hied (A.S. hígian, -ode), h. not, 2999 (hyed B, hyęd her D; C †). [Inf. hye, cf. 3463 f.]

houede (cf. M.L.G. hoven), -*e* here (*eam*), 6396 (-ed BD). [Inf. houe, 4269 f.]

huntede (A.S. huntian, -ode), -ede hem, 1282 (-ed B, -yd D). [Inf. hunten, cf. 4622.]

lakked (cf. M. Dutch laken), l. routhe, 2365 (lak of *n.* CD); l. alwey, 7108 (-id C); -ede here (=her), 7187 (-ed BD). [Inf. lakke, -en, cf. 189, 5607, 6185.]

liked, lyked (A.S. lícian, -ode), (i.) likęd wel, 2129 (-ędę C, -yd D); (ii.) -ëd, 2351 (-yd D, they likëdë ‡ in C), 6994 (-id C); -ëd hire (*dat.*), 1996 (-yd D, -ede C). [Inf. like, lyke, lyken, cf. 431, 1130, 2655 f, 3455, 6496, etc.]

loked (A.S. lócian, -ode), -edę forth, 7507 C (-ed D (?), -eth AB); -ed, (ii.) 1071 (-yd ‡ D (?)), 1359 (-yd CD), 7073 (-ede C), 7092 (-ede C; B †); -ed he, 2833 (-ede C, -yd D); -ęd in to, 2312 (-ędę C, -yd D). [Inf. loke, -en, cf. 206, 629, 1350.]

louede (A.S. lufian, -ode), -edę Troylus, 1753 (-yd D, -es B); -edę neuer, 6520 (-ed BD) (1st pers.); -edę so, 7838 (-ed BD); -ed

[1] In AB it is possible to read *castë* (-[ë] A), whether we allow the "extra syllable before the cæsura" or not.

so, 2489 (-yd C, -id D); louęde ‖ that, 1071 (-ęd B, -id D (?)); -ęd ‡ the, 8109 D (-ęth AB); -ęde hym, 2928 (-ęd BC, -id D)[1]; -ęde ek, 4991 (-ęd BC, -yd D) (1st pers.). [Inf. loue, -en, cf. 798, 1944, 2854, 3639, etc.; vnlouen, cf. 8061.]

made (A.S. macian, -ode), 312[2], 1137 f, 1585 f (mode † B), 1963 (-ę B), 2627 f, 2660 f, 3455 f, 6333, 6440 (-e D), 7415, 7792 (?); -[e], 5898 (-o BCD); -*e*, cf. 1148, 2160, 3220, 6341, 8203; made his, etc., cf. 479, 1145 (D †), 1153, 1637, 2007, 2253 (-ë ‡ her D), 3189, 4070 (-ę ‡ D), 6862 (mad(yn) hym C), 6968, 7406; -ę ‡ suche, 4070 D; -ę this, 5324 (mad C); -ę the, 7878; -ë ‡ and (?), 2170 CD. *Maked* seems not to occur, but cf. pl. *makkeden*, 4783 B. [Inf. make, -en, cf. 4177, 6825, etc.]

Rhyme words.—glade *adj. pl.* (1137, 1585, 3455), glade *inf.* (2627, 2660), lade *inf.* (2627).

opened (A.S. openian, -ode), opęned here herte, 4081 (opned B, opęnid C).

pleyde (A.S. plegian, -ode, North. also plægde), 1067 (pleyed D), 6872 ‡ f D (seyde ABC), 7537 f (pleyede C); pleyde he, 3456 (-ęde C, pleyd D). [Inf. pleye, -en, cf. 671 f, 1206 f, 1902, 2599 f, 5122, etc.]

Rhyme words.—seyde (6872 D, 7537), Cresseide (6872 D).

poked (cf. M.L.G. poken), p. euere, 2958 (-ede C, puked † B, procurid † D).

putte (A.S. potian, -ode), -*e*, 2264 (put D); put al, 4027 (putte BD). (Cf. 1985 D †.) [Inf. putten, puttę, cf. 6170, 6174 (putęn B).]

refte, rafte (A.S. réafian, -ode), refte hym, 484 AC (-t B); rafte hir (*eam*), 7399 D (reste A, ref[t] B, reuyth C). [Inf. reue, -en, cf. 188, 2744 f.]

shapt[e] (O.N. skapa, skapaðа; skepja, skapði; cf. A.S. scieppan, scęppan, scóp, O.N. skapa, skóp), shapt herę (*eam*), 2642 (-*e* B, schop C, schop(e) D (?)). For *shop*, cf. 207, 1146, 3393, 5617. [Inf. shape, cf. 3038.]

shewed (A.S. scéawian, -ode), (i.) 286 (-edę C, -yd D),[3] 7383 (-eth B, -edę C); (ii.) 487 (semede ‡ C). [Inf. shewe, -en, cf. 5943 f, 5953, 6052, 6994 f, 8057.]

thonked (A.S. þancian, -ode), (i.) 124 (thankked B, thankedę C, thonkyd ‡ oft D), 3316 (-id D, thanked B, thankedę C), 6546

[1] Supply [*and*] in D.

[2] "He neither chere (schyr C, cher G) ne (*om.* BCDG) made ne word (-e BG) tolde." No note in Austin. Are we to read "He neither cherë madę ne word ne (*or* he ?) tolde"?

[3] 9-syl., except in D, which has an ungrammatical *she* before the verb.

(thankedę C, thanked D); (ii.) -ed hym, 2306 (-yd D, thankes B, thankede C); -ed here (*dat.*), 2318 (-yd D, thanked B, thankede C), 2576 (-id D, thanked B, thankede C), 3972 (thankede C, thanked D). [Inf. thanke, -en, thonken, cf. 1933, 4045, 4436.]

twyghte (A.S. twiccian, -*ode), 5847 f (twyȝt C, twight D) (: myghte 3 *sg.* : dyghte *inf.*).

wanted (O.N. vanta, -aðа), ne wanted neuerę, 6230 D ([ne] wantedę C, ne wanteth A, ne wanthe (?) B).

welcòmed (A.S. wilcumian, -ode), w. hym, 7212 (-ede C, -[ed] B).

§ 102. The following Indicative Preterites (first and second persons) of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Third Weak Conjugation occur in the *Troilus*,—*hadde, leuede, seyde* (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, § 162).

hadde (A.S. habban, hæfde), 92 (had[de] BD), 477 f (-d D), 2435 f (-d CD), 3517 (-d ‡ not D), 3712 A (B †; -e I C, -d y D),[1] 4231 ABC, 6567 f, 7008 (hadę ‡ C, had[de] D), 7389 (-[de] D); cf. 2634 ‡ C, 4424 ‡ D; hadde, 1649 (-d B; D (?))[1], 3557 (-d D)[1], 4937, 7745[1], etc.; had (*before vowels*), 6989 (hadde BCD)[2], 8017 (-de CD, haddë ‡ rent B); hade, 1718 C (hadde AB, had [a] D), 4635 ‡ C (had ‡ D, held AB); hadde (*before* he, his, hym, here (*poss. sg.*), here-vp-on), cf. 89, 188, 304, 663, 1992, 2783 (hade A), 3377, 4069, 5335, 7316, 7467; had hym, 2634 (-dë ‡ preiȝęd C), 6834 (-dë ‡ hym BD, -dë ‡ sent C)[3]; hadde herd, 5007 (adde B); had herd, 750 (-de BC), 1002 (-de C), 5329 (-de BC); but,—haddë horn, 1727 (-dë hed C; D †); cf. hadë ‡ it, 5888 C; haddë ay, 7074 (-[dë] B, -e C, *om.* D); -ë ‡ hym, 4069 A (?),[4] 6834 ‡ B; -ë ‡ his, 6927 C; hauęde ‡ in (?), 5155 C.—haddę, 500 (hadę C; D †), 1687 (-d BD), 2355 (-dë BC, -[dë] D),[5] 4835 (had BD); cf. 132 ‡ A, 2229 ‡ C, 7317 ‡ C; hadę, 89 ‡ C, 1992 ‡ C; had (*before consonants*), 7102 (-dę C)[6]; cf. 663 ‡ (?) D, 6927 ‡ D, 7229 ‡ D. [Inf. haue, hauen, han, cf. 13, 120 f, 122, 4305 f, etc., etc.]

Rhyme words.—gladde *adj. pl.* (2435), madde *adj. pl.* (6567), madde *inf.* (477).

leuede (A.S. libban, lifgan, lifde, L.W.S. lifede, liofode), -ędе yn, 5155 (-ęd D, lyuędе B, hauędе ‡ C)[7]; lyuęd in, 5142 B (-ęd D (?), leue

[1] First Person. [2] Supply [*scyc*] in D. [3] 9-syl. in C.
[4] Read *iust*[*e*] *cause* and *hadde hym*. [5] Or (?) *ne haddë she* AB.
[6] First person.
[7] First Person. 9-syl., if read as suggested: "I that leuędе yn lust and in plesaunce."

*inf.* A, lyuyn C). [Inf. lyue, -en, leue, -en, cf. 427, 520, 1635, 1663 f, 2066 f, 2212, 3626, 5142, 5430, 5852, 6660, 7444.]

seyde (A.S. secgan, sægde, sǽde), cf. 457 f, 722 f, 1005 f, 1184 f, 1964 f, 2159 f (seyęde C), 2318 f, 2429 f[1], 2500 f, 3894 f, 3972 f, 4016 f[2], 4263 f, 4313 f, 4814 f, 4841 f, 4885 f, 5007 f, 5039 f, 5489 f, 5536 f, 5622 f, 5810 f, 5915 f, 6315 f, 6580 f, 6869 f, 6872 f, 6885 f, 7052 f, 7097 f, 7233 f, 7295 f (seide A), 7309 f, 7337 f, 7396 f, 7484 f, 7534 f, 7536 f, 7607 f, 7787 f, 7803 f, 8039 f, 8076 f, 8093 f; seyde, 752 (-[e] D),[3] 1361 (-[e] D, sayd[e] B),[4] 2037 (-[e] D), cf. 117, 330, 822, 870, 877, 1039, 1103, 1336, 1340, 1587, 1591, 1695 ‡ C, 1970, 2057 CD, 2060, 2176, 2181 ‡ C, 2215, 2228, 2248, 2250, 2267, 2284, 2338, 2362, 2378, 2395, 2404, 2444, 2509, 2686 (seide A), 2690, 2692, 2713, 2959, 3202, 3413, 3418, 3490[2], 3510[2], 4490, 5042, 5097 BCD, 6418[2], 6686; seyde (before *th*), cf. 1174, 1548, 1998, 2025, 2130, 2205 C, 3065, 3420, 3471, 4498, 5036, 7318; seyde, cf. 397, 507, 583, 873, 1052, 1294, 1412, 1494, 1912 AB, 2057 AB, 2162, 4641, 5097 A, 6421, 7146, 7549, 8087; -[e], 5188 (-e CD); *-e* he, 491 (-d BD)[5], cf. 380 C, 561, 1164, 1294 C, 1599, 2130 C, 4429, 7594; *-e* hym, 7790, cf. 195 C, 1230; *-e* here (*dat.*), 2241 (-ë B, -ë caste C, -[ë] cast D)[6], 3596 (-d D); seyd here (*dat.*), 2205 (-ë thus C, -[e] thus D), cf. 2713 D; *-e* how, 5419 (-d B, *om.* ‡ C), 5831. (In almost all the cases so far cited D omits final -e.)

seydę ‖ who, 1736 (-ę ho C, -d ho D)[7]; seydę ‖ lord, 2028 (-d D, -ë C)[8]; seydę farwel, 4367 (seidë CD); -ę ‡ furst, 5349 D (quod ABC); -ę ‡ to fore, 6418 C (1st pers.); -ę ‖ nought, 7146 B (*-e* AD; C †); -ę ‡ to, 7315 C; seid ‡ than, 2710 D; seid ‡ wol, 2713 D; seid ‡ god, 2798 D. The construction of *seyd* in *seyd welawey*, 3146 (sayd C) is very curious.

seydë (*hiatus*),—seydë he, 421 (-[ë] D)[9], cf. 7548 ‡ C; seydë ‖ em, 2244 (*-e* hym B, -d hym D); seydë ‡ hirę (*dat.*), 2241 B. [Inf. seye, seyę, sey, seyn, cf. 492 f, 512, 574 f, 672 f, 3095, 3280, 7740, etc., etc.; see § 119, XIII.

Rhyme words.—Criseyde (457, 1005, 1964, 2318, 2500, 3894, 4016, 4263, 4313, 4814, 4841, 5007, 5039, 5489, 5536, 5622, 5810, 5915, 6315, 6580, 6868, 6872, 6885, 7052, 7097, 7233, 7295, 7309, 7396, 7484, 7607, 7787, 7803, 8040, 8076, 8093), mayde *n.* (1964), refreyde *inf.* (2429), breyde,

[1] Hardly subjunctive. [2] First Person. [3] Supply [*that*] in C.
[4] Supply [*faste*] in A. [5] Dele (*al*) in C.
[6] But supply [*il*] in B, and read *seyde*.
[7] In A read *self* for *selwen*. Cf. *seydë ho*, 3593 C. [8] In C read *swete* for *smete*.
[9] "And to the god of *loue* thus *seydë he*," or *louë* and *seyde he*.

abreyde *inf.* (5007, 6885), vpbreyde *inf.* (8076), deyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (1184, 4814, 7337), -de, -ede *subj.* 1, 3 *sg.* (457, 4016), pleyde *ind. and subj.* (?) 3 *sg.* (1005, 7534, 7536), preyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2159), leyde *ind.* 1, 3 *sg.* (3894, 3972, 4841, 4885, 7233, 7396, 7803), seyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (6868, 6872, 7534, 7536), breyde, abreyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (722, 7607). [Var. CD seide; D seid.]

## § 103. Several verbs that are strong in Anglo-Saxon show weak preterites in the *Troilus* (cf. Child, § 54, a; ten Brink, § 167).

(*a*) Syncopated preterites in *-de, -te*: *breyde, fledde, highte, lepte, loste, sighte* (*sighed siked*), *slepte, smerte, wepte* (to which add *dredde*, sometimes weak in A.S., and *deyde*, O.N.); (*b*) unsyncopated preterites in *-ed*: *lyed* (q. v.), *walked* (q. v.).

Note 1.—For *shapte*, see § 101. For *radde*, see § 99. *Swelt*, 3928 f D, is an error for *shette*.

Note 2.—*Quake* (inf. *quake*, cf. 2406 f, 3384 f, 4042 f, 6619 f), A.S. *cwacian, -ode*, shows a strong preterite *quok*, 6399 (-oo-B, quok(e) D), 7289 f (-(e) D, quook(e) B), *quook*(e), 2935 (quook B, quok C, quok(*e*) D)[1], cf. ten Brink, § 152; but the weak preterite *quaked* does not occur in the *Troilus*. *Rynge* (inf. *ringe*, cf. 4079 f), A.S. *hringan, hringde*, has pret. *rong*, cf. 2700[2], 4567.

abreyde, see *breyde*.

breyde (A.S. bregdan, brægd, brǽd), 7606 f; abreyde, 724 f (vpbrayd D); she *a*breyde, 5874 f (she brayde B, sche brayd C).[3] (For strong pret. *abrayd*, see *B. Duch.* 192, *Ho. F.* 110, and cf. ten Brink, § 140.) [Inf. breyde, cf. 4892 f, 5010 f; abreyde, cf. 3955 f, 6883 f.]

Rhyme words.—Criseyde (5874, 7606), seyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (724, 7606).

deyde (O.N. deyja, dó, late deyða), 56 f (deyed B), 875 f (-d D, deyede BC), 1186 f (-ed B, -ede C, -d D), 4013 f (-ede B, deiede C, dredeǂ D), 4813 f (dyede B, deyede C, deide D), 5094 f (dyed B, deyede C, deyed D), 7339 f (deyede C, deyd D, seydeǂ B), 8197 f (deyed B). [Inf. deye, dye, cf. 573 f, 728 f, 758 f, 1027 f, 1257 f, 1524 f, 1526 f[4], 2160 f, etc., etc.; deyen, dyen, cf. 306 f, 1412 f, 8127, etc.]

Rhyme words.—Criseyde (56, 875, 4013, 4813, 8197), seyde *ind.* 1, 3 *sg.* (1186, 4013, 4813, 7339), *subj.* (?) 3 *sg.* (5094), deyde *subj.* (?) 3 *sg.* (5094).

dredde, dradde (A.S. on-drǽdan, on-dréd, sometimes -drǽdde), dredde, 1959 (dredëǂ I C, dred D),[5] 4489 (dred BD)[6]; *-e* hire (*acc.*), 2165 (dradde BC, drad D); dradde ay, 7933 (drede *inf.* BCD): *-e* hire (*acc.*), 1540 (dreddęd B, dredde C, drede *inf.* (?) D). [Inf. drede, -en, cf. 84 f, 252, 6748.]

fledde (A.S. flēon, flēah), 7561 f BCD (fledde *p.p.* A) (: bledde *ind.*

[1] Supply [*ck*] in D.
[2] Supply [*hem*] in CD.
[3] *I breyde*, 7625 f, is apparently present.
[4] Noteworthy is the occurrence of *dye* in 1524 f (: *crye* ind. 1 sg. : *vilonye*) followed by *deye* (: *seye* ind. 1 sg.) in 1526 f.
[5] After *al* (= although).
[6] In an indirect question.

*or subj.* 3 *sg.*), 7580 f (: ledde *ind.* 3 *sg.*); fledde he, 3192 (thei ‡ fled *pl.* D). (Is *fley* ‡, 5264 C, meant for a pret.?) [Inf. fle, flen, cf. 747 f, 1279 f, 1795 f, 4105, etc.]

highte, byhight[e] (A.S. hátan, heht, hét; cf. ten Brink, § 135); highte *promisit*, 7999 f (hyȝt C, hight D); byhight, byhyght *promisit*, 6873 f (be- D, bihighte B, behyȝte C), 7567 f (-highte B, behyȝt C, behight D).—highte *vocatus est*, 69 D (hyghte B, high[te] A), 2701 (-[e] D, hiȝte C †); so, with ellipsis of the relative,—thei hadde a relik *hight* (*heet* B, *hyȝt* C) Palladion, 153. Cf. hight Elỳsos, *vocatur*, 5452 AD (height B), and,—highte vòlturis, *vocantur*, 788 (-en B, -yn D, hyȝte C). *Hatte* (A.S. hátte, used both as pres. and as pret.) also occurs: The owle ek which that *hatte* Escaphilo, 6682 (hette B, hiȝte C, hete D); How that ye louęn sholde on that *hatte* Horaste, 3639 (hat D (?)). For *heet*, vocatus est, see 153 B (above).

Rhyme words.—myghte, -[e] 3 *sg.* (6873, 7567, 7999), he sighte *ind.* (7999).

lepte (A.S. hléapan, hléop), *-e*, 2722 (lep C, lep(*e*) D). [Inf. lepe, 2040 f.]

loste (A.S. for-léosan, -léas), -[e] speche, 5813 (-e CD, lefte B); *-e* his, 441 (-t BD). [Inf. lese, -en, cf. 4850 f, 7161.]

lyed (A.S. léogan, léah), lyëd ‡ loude, 2162 D (ley ful AC, leigh ful B).[2] [Inf. lye, lyen, cf. 4775 f, 7887 f, 7890.]

sighte, sighed, siked (A.S. sícan, sác); sighte, syghte, 3922 f (-t CD), 5376 f D, 5879 f (-t D, seyȝt C), 7996 f (-t CD, sigchte B); sight[e] sore, 5783 (-e B, sighed D, seyde † C); sight and, 4313 (*-e* B, seyȝt C, siȝęd D), 6421 (*-e* B, syhędę C, sighęd B).—sighed lest, 279 (sykyd CD); -ed sore, 3898 (-id D, sight[e] B, sikedę C), 5559 (sighte B, -t[e] D; C †).—siked sore, 3814 (-yd C, syghid D);[3] syked sore, 5378 (syȝedę C, syhed D)[4]; syked for, 7078 (sighte B, sihęd ekę D). [Inf. syke, cf. 596 f, 751, 827 f, 1513 f, 1969 f,[5] 2658 f, 2900 f, 3654 f, 4012 f, 4202 f.]

slepte (A.S. slǽpan, slép, North. slépte, W.S. sometimes onslépte), slepte, 7602 (slep C); cf. *pl.* slepten al, 3588 (-yn C, slepyn[6] D). But,—slep, (i.) 7803 (slep(e) B (?), sleptë (?) D, no ‡ word C); (ii.) 2010 (-(e) BD). [Inf. slepe, -en, cf. 1998, 2183, 3262 f, 3499, 3509, 4378.]

smerte (A.S. smeortan, *smeart), 2015 f (-t D, sinerte † C) (: herte *n.*). [Inf. smerte, cf. 1042 f, 2373 f, 4024 f, 6110 f, 6280 f.]

[1] Indirect discourse. [2] In D supply [*that*]. [3] After *al-though*.
[4] Indirect discourse, 9-syl. verse. [5] Rhymes with *endite*, inf., and *the white*.
[6] Perhaps intended by the scribe for a present.

walkedę (A.S. walcan, wéolc), -edę ‡, 7585 C (-ęd D, -eth AB); -ede ‡, 1908 C (-eth AB, -ith D). But,—welk, (i.) 7598 (welk(e) B, walkędę C, walkęd D)[1]; (ii.) I welk allone, 1602 (-*e* B, walkyd D).[2] [Inf. walke, cf. 7029 f.]

Note.—Ten Brink (§ 134) remarks that *walken* is "ausschliesslich schwach flectiert."

wepte (A.S. wépan, wéop), 5015 f (: kepte *ind.* 3. *sg.*); wepte sore, 1647 (-[e] D)[3]; -*e*, 5383 (-e for C †, -e for D); weptę || bothe, 7088 (wepid C); -ę she, 7409 (wep C).—But,—weep nought, 5800 (wep(ę) B, wepyn † C, -ith ‡ D); wep || ful, 7945 (weptę BCD); wep || as, 2957 (-(*e*) D, wepte C). [Inf. wepe, -en, cf. 5591, 6445, 7598 f, etc.]

§ 104. A few Romance verbs show syncopated preterites in *-de, -te*, after the analogy of the First Weak Conjugation (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, § 180, 182).

aspỳde, 2337 f (-piede BC) (: ryde *inf.*); aspide, 6902 f (espied B, asspiede C, espide D) (: ryde *inf.*).—aspïędę wel, 2927 (-pïęd B, -pỳęd D). [Inf. espye, espie, aspye, aspie, aspien, espyen, cf. 1734 f, 2592 f, 3415 f, 3677 f, 3977, 4815 f, 5886 f, 6544 f, 7177 f, etc.]

caughte (O. Fr. cachier), 1533 f (kaughte B, cauhte C[c], caught D) (: he raughte *pret. ind.*); -*e*, 280 (cauȝte C, caght D); caught his, 7917 (-*e* B, -t D, cauȝte? C ‡).—kaught[ë] first, 6930 (caught[e] BD, cauȝte C). [Inf. kecche, 4217 f A.]

cride, 5875 f (cried D, cryede BC), 6568 f (cried BD, creyde C); cryde loude, 7868 (cried BD, cryędę C).—cride, 729 (criędę B, cryędę C, criędę D), 6579 (criędę BD, cryędę C), 7607 (criędę BC, criędę D); cride his, 8036 (criędę BD, cryędę C); criędę a, 5415 (cryędę BD, cryëde ‡ C). [Inf. crie, crye, cryen, cf. 806, 1485, 3864 f, 5887 f, etc.]

Rhyme words.—glide *inf.* (5875), Cupide (5875, 6568), Cipryde (6568).

hurte -*e*, 1284 (-t D, hitte C †).—hurt || a, 6713 (hirt C, hurt || [a] tymë D).

paste, 1483 f (at last † D), 2345 f (passede C : caste C, past D).—passed nought, 456 (-edę C, -yd D); -edę forth, 1639 (-ed BC, -id D). [Inf. passe, pace, passen, cf. 41 f, 371 f, 847, 1165 f, 2931 f, 3062 f, 4114 f, etc.; trespace, cf. 4017.]

Rhyme words.—at the laste (1483), caste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2345).

[1] Indirect discourse. [2] In D supply [*that*]. [3] Indirect discourse.

preyde, 2687 f (preyede C, prayd D)[1], 4799 f (preyede C), 6100 f (preyede C, preid D); preyede, prayede, 2157 f (preyde B, preyed C, prayd D), 4876 f (preyde B, praide D)[1]; preyede hem, 2786 (-ed B, preied C, prayed D).[2]—preydë herę (*acc.*), 6480 (preÿëdë ‖ sche C ‡, preide she (?) D).—praidę ‡ god, 5400 D (bad ABC).[3] [Inf. preye, preyen, preyę, -ęn, prey, cf. 48, 2521 (?), 2841 f, 2920 f, 2926, 6678, etc.]

Rhyme words.—Criseyde (2687, 4799, 4876, 6100), leyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (4799), seyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2157), withseyde *prct. subj.* (?) 3 *sg.* (4876).

§ 105. Most verbs of Romance derivation make their preterites singular in *-ed, -edę, -edę*, without syncopation (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, § 179).

acceptid it, 6549 C (-eth AB, acceptë ‡ hit D).
acused, 2166 f (ascused C, accusid D) (: excused *p.p.*).
alterëd his, 4620 (-yd? C, -id D).
argumented he, 377 (-tede B, -tid C, -tyd D).[4]
assentyd, 1002 (-ed B) (: vntormentid *p.p.*).
avisid her, 2999 ‡ D.
causede, 7938 (-ed CD).
chaunged al, 2555 (-id D, chonged C).
compleyned ek, 2661 (-ede C, -id D).
comytted to, 6367 A (committed D, -eth B).
coueited ‡ so, 6001 D (*pres.* ABC).
cǒuęred she, 2412 (-id D). [Perh. subj.]
dampned al, 8186 AB.
declamed this, 2332 A (*pl.* BC, declarid *pl.* D).
departed hem, 4508 (-yd C, -id D).[5]
descendedę Tydeus 7843 (-ed BD, dessendedę C);[6] -ed ‡ doun, 7874 D (*pres.* ABC), cf. 7222 D †.
desiredę worthinesse, 567 (-ed BD); -ed she, 1229 (-id D); -yred but, 1417 B (*pres.* ACD).
deynedę sparen, 435 (-ed B, -yd D, -ęd to C).[7]
dressede hym, 2913 (-ed B, -id D).
entended bet, 6832 B (-it C †, -eth A, -eth D †).
falsedę Troylus, 7416 (-ed BD, -ëdë ‡ C).
feyned, 354 f (fayned B, -id C, feynid D) (: gayned *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* :

[1] First Person. [2] B has *hym* for *hem* (as often). [3] Supply [*ful*] in C.
[4] Read (*by*)*gynnyng* in D. [5] Supply [*the*] in C.
[6] 9-syl. in A only. [7] In D read *in* for *if*.

destrayned *ind.* 3 *pl.*); -ed herę (*acc.*), 494 (-ede C, -yd D †) [1]; -ed hym, 7209 (fynęde ‡ C).
formede, 2138 (-ed B, fourmyd D).[2]
graunted the, 3181 (-id D); -ed hym, 3422 (-yd D, -id it C)[3]; -ed on, 7312 (-yd C).[4]—grauntede || anoon, 2636 (-ed B, C †; -id he D †).
ymagyned he, 6980.
impressid in, 4385 D.
iaped thus, 6872 (-et B, -edę C, -ed ‡ he D).
obeyed as, 3423 (-ede C).
percede and, 272 B (procede † A, perceyvid ‡ D, perseydyn ‡ *pl.* C).
peyned hym, 2659 (-id D, p(l)eyned C); -ede hym, 6438 (-ed BD, -yde C).[5]
pleynyd and, 6594 C.
plitedę she, 1782 (plyted B, pleytedę C, plytid D).
purposed [pes], 6012 D (-en *pres. pl.* ABC).
pùrueyęd ‡ thyng, 5728 A ? (-ueięth B, -ueyth D).
receyued ‡ vnto, 6944 D. [Hardly to be scanned.]
rehersęde ‡, 2767 C (*inf.* ABD).
remembred mę, 7109 (-id C).
scorned hem, 303 (-ede C, -yd D).
sorted hym, 8190 AB.
souned into, 6338. [9-syl.]
streynędę ‡ him, 3913 C.
tariëd ‡ so, 7225 D (*pres.* ABC).
tasted, 639 (-id C, -yd D).
torned herę (*acc.*), 5517 (turnede C, turned D); -ed hym, 7509 (turnede C, -ed D); tornede on, 3286 (-ed B, turned C, -id D); tornęd he, 6448 (turned BD,[6] -ede hym † C).
vaylydë ‡ this, 6812 C.
venged ‡ hir (*acc.*), 7831 D (wrak AB, wrok C).
waytede on, 3376 (-ed B, -id CD).

## § 106. The Indicative Second Person Singular of Weak Preterites ends in *-est* (Child, § 53, c; ten Brink, § 194).

iapedest, 508 (-yst C, -ist D), 917 (-ist C, iaped[est] B, ympedist † D).

[1] In C read [*s*]*he*.
[2] A is a bad 9-syl. verse.
[3] Supply [*that*] in D.
[4] 9-syl.
[5] Supply [*al*] in B.
[6] Supply [*that*] in D.

seydest, 909 (-ist CD), 5143 (-ist C); seydestow, seidestow, 912 (-ist thou CD), 917 (-ist thou CD), 918 (-ist thou CD).[1]
preyędest, 910 (-ist C, praydist D, preydest B).[2]
deydest, 3105 (-ist D, dydest B, deyędist C).
louędest, 3562 (-ist CD).
bysoughtest, 8097 (be- D).
dedest, 3205 (-ist CD, didest B); dedyst, 6960 C.
koudest, 622 (-yst C, -ist D).
woldest, 5103 (-yst C).[3]
myghtestow, 4924 AB.

But,—thow fette, 3565 f (fet D) (: thow . . . lette *imv. subj. sg.* : shette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

myght, 619 AB, seems meant by the scribe for *pret. ind.* 2 *sg.*, but C has *mayȝt*, D *mayst*.

The indicative preterite form in *-est* is often used in constructions properly subjunctive, as in late Anglo-Saxon (cf. Sievers, § 365, Anm. 2; ten Brink, § 195). Thus,—

I nolde that thou . . . wendest, 1024 (-yst C, -ist D).
ne haddestow, 4938 (-yst thou C, -ist thou D).
wististow, 4486 C. AB (*wistow*) and D (*wist thow*) are unmetrical. Read, perhaps, *wistë thow*, and cf. wyste *pret. subj.* 2 *sg.*, 3211 f (wiste B, wost C †, wyst D) (: triste *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* : lyste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.*).
dorstestow, 767 (durstyst thou C, trist ‡ thow D).[4]
woldest, 4944 (-ist C, wilt ‡ C); cf. 4487, 5103.
nodestow, 4106 (noldestow B, noldist thou CD).
sholdest, 774 (schuldyst C, sholdist D); cf. 6714, 7651.
myghtest, 7890 (myȝtist C, mightest D †).
Cf. oughtest, 8069; oughtestow, 6908 (auȝtist thow C, oughtest thou D).

## § 107. Second Person Singular of the Indicative Preterite of Strong Verbs (cf. Child, § 54 b; ten Brink, § 193).

thow foundë me, 3204 (fond[e] B, fondist C).
thow me bere on, 5425 AB (bare D).
were, 4160 f (you were E) (: there : fere *timor*); *-e*, 510 (wer ‡ wont(*e*)

[1] Supply [*that*] in A.
[2] Dele (*to*) in C.
[3] Perh. for subjunctive. Supply [*thus*] in C.
[4] Supply [*hire*] in B; 9-syl. in D.

D), 3559[1], 5424 ABD; werę wonęd, 901 (werë wont(ę) B, werë ‡ wonę C, werę wont D)[2]. But,—was thow, 4996 (art(ę) ‡ thou D).

§ 108. In the First and Third Persons Singular of the Indicative Preterite of Strong Verbs no MS. is free from occasional forms in -e, which, however, is of course never pronounced (cf. Child, § 54). Thus,—

stod(ę) she, 172 (stood(ę) B, stod C, stood D).

tok(*e*) hede, 820 (took B, tok C)[3]; -(*e*) hire (*poss. sg.*), 126 (tok C), 3053 (tok C), 3067 (tok C); -(*e*) his, 2387 (tok C), 2545 (tok C), 3436 (took(*e*) B, tok C); -(*e*) he, 379 (tok C), 6565 (took B, tok C); tok(*e*) and, 3024 (took B, tok C); -(*e*) it, 3811 (tok C).[4]—tok(ę), 1646 (tok C).

com(ę), 1640 (cam C), 2024, 2682 (com B)[5]; bycom(ę), 1072[6]; com(*e*), 1629, 1647,[7] 2647 (com B),[8] 3592, 7515 A; -(*e*) here (*dat.*), 1687 (cam to D); -(*e*) hire (*acc.*), 2572 (com B; com(*e*) C (?)).

wrot(ę), 2299 (wrot C); wrot(*e*), 7787 (wrot C).

wax(*e*), 2341 (wex BC, wax D).

quook(*e*), 2935 (quook B, quok C, quok(*e*) D)[9]; see § 103, note 2.

fill(ę), 4243 (fel B, lestę C, fillę ‡ *pl.* E).

shop(ę), 4914 (schop C).

Other examples are: (1) in B, -(*e*), before vowels or *h*,—1360, 1641, 1724, 1774, 2275, 3593, 3821, 3921, 4419, 6392, 6609, 6890, 7441, etc., etc.; -(ę), 826, 1640, 1690, 1787, 2645, 2789, 3207, 3437, 3836, 4725, 6838, 7093, 7534, 7565, 7579, 7803, etc.; (2) in C, -(*e*), as before, 549, 1677, 2547, 3070, 4563, 6925, etc.; -(ę), 141, 2645, 2902, 3612, 7208, 7506, etc..; (3) in D, -(*e*) and -(ę), *passim*. The phenomenon is commonest in D, and B comes next. For examples of this -(e) in rhyme, cf. 2265 BD, 2410 B, 2413 B, 2689 B, 2691 B, 3519 D, 3803 B, 4677 BD, 6652 B, 7289 BD.

For weak preterites from strong verbs, see § 103. For *quok* and *rong* from verbs weak in Anglo-Saxon, see § 103, note 2.

[1] Protasis. Read *were* [*in*] in A.
[2] But supply [*whi*] in B, and read *werę*.
[3] 9-syl. in AB. Read *heal*[*e*] in CD.
[4] Perhaps subjunctive.
[5] Supply [*for*] in D.
[6] Read *frendlyest*[*e*] in BD.
[7] Read *wept*[*e*] in D.
[8] Read *Criseid*[*ë*] ‖ *innocent* in D, or supply [*al*].
[9] Supply [*ek*] in D.

## § 109. The Plural of the Preterite Indicative of both Strong and Weak Verbs ends in *-en*, *-e*, for all persons (Child, § 55; ten Brink, § 194).

In the following list the *persons* are not distinguished. The examples given are arranged as follows (cf. § 96): I. -en before consonants; II. -en in rhyme; III. -en before vowels; IV. -en before *h*; V. syncope: -ẹn, -n; VI. -e before consonants; VII. -e in rhyme; VIII. -*e* elided before vowels; IX. -*e* elided before *h*; X. apocope of -e.

The examples comprise the following preterites: (*a*) A.S. First Weak Conjugation (cf. § 99),—*alighte* (VII.), *bente* (VI., X.), *boughte* (I., VII.), *broughte* (VI., VII., VIII., IX.), *felte* (I., III.), *fette* (VII.), *herde* (III.), *kyste* (VII.), *lafte* (VIII.), *-ledde* (II.), *mente* (VII.), *mette* (A.S. métton) (VII.), *redde* (*radde*) (IV., VIII., X.), *-rente* (VII.), *sente* (VII.), *sette* (I., VII., IX.), *shette* (II.), *soughte* (*bysoughte*) (VII., IX. n.), *spedde* (IV. VIII., IX. and n.), *stente* (III., VII.), *thoughte* (A.S. þóhton) (VII.), *thoughte* (A.S. þúhton) (VI., VII.), *tolde* (VII., VIII.), *wende* (II., IV., VI., VII.), *wente* (III., VII., VIII., IX. n.), *wroughte* (III., VI., VII., VIII.); cf. *yede* (II.); (*b*) *glente* (cf. § 100) (VII.); (*c*) Second Weak Conjugation, A.S. and other verbs of Germanic origin (cf. § 101), *caste* (I.), *folwede* (V.), *lyked* (VIII., IX. n.), *made* (I., III., VI., VII., IX.), *pleyde* (VII., VIII.), *rafte* (VIII.), *shewed* (VIII., IX.), *strenede* (III.); (*d*) A.S. Third Weak Conjugation (cf. § 102),—*hadde* (I., III., VI., VII., VIII., IX.), *seyde* (I., III., IV., VI., VII., VIII., X.); (*e*) Weak preterites from Strong Verbs (cf. § 103), *dredde* (I., VII.), *fledde* (II.), *highte* (*byhighte*) (II., IV., VI., IX.), *slepte* (III.), *wepte* (I.); (*f*) Romance verbs with syncopated preterites (cf. § 104),—*caughte* (IX.), *cryede* (VIII., IX.), *paste* (VII.), *preyde* (VII.), *quytte* (IX.); (*g*) Romance verbs with unsyncopated preterites (cf. § 105),—*apoynteden* (I.), *assegeden* (I.), *assembled* (VIII.), *biseged* (VIII.), *caused* (VIII.), *comeneden* (III.), *commendeden* (III.), *declamed* (X.), *destrayned* (X.), *entrechaungeden* (IV.), *ioyneden* (III.), *turnede* (VIII.); (*h*) Strong Verbs,—*braste* (VIII.), *come* (V., VIII., IX.), *drowe* (VIII.), *ete* (VII.), *felle* (*fille*) (I., II., III., VII., VIII., X.), *founde* (I., VIII.), *gonne* (*gan*) (*bygonne*) (I., III., IV., VI., VIII., IX. and n., X.), *hange* (III), *bihelde* (III.), *knewe* (VII., VIII., IX.), *laye* (III., VIII.), *lete* (I.), *quod* (X.), *ride* (II.), *ronne* (I.), *aryse* (IX. n.), *sete* (III. VIII.), *seygh* (*say*, *sey*) (IX., X.), *spake* (*spoke*, *speke*) (II., III., VI., VIII., IX., X.), *sponne* (VII.), *stode* (I., VII., X.), *sye* (II.), *toke* (VIII., IX.), *were* (I. III., VI., VII., VIII., IX., X.), *wesshe* (I.), *yaf* (IX.).

I. -en before consonants:

assègëdèn neigh, 60 (-ȝe- C, assegid wel D †); bysègëdèn the, 7859 (be- B, besègedè C, besegèd[ë] D).

casten to, 88 AB (-yn C); -en what, 2570 (-yn CD).

boughten they, 136 (-ȝte C, boght[e] D); cf. 8164.

founden no, 137 (-yn ‡ the (?) D).

weren to, 283 (wherë C, weryn D); cf. 463, 3531, 4744 (A †), 7892, 7942.[1]

[1] Subjunctive?

hadden prys, 1109 (-yn D).
gonnen, 1184 (gunne C, gun[ne] D); gunnen, 1235 (gon- B, gonë C, gun[ne] D); cf. 2668, 2704, 3452, 4541, 4720, 6891.
wesshen they, 2269 (wesche C, wysshyn D).
fillen forth, 2276 (-yn D, fellyn C); cf. 1583.
apoynteden ful, 3296 (-yn D; C †).
felten sith, 4064 (-yn C).
wenden ben, 4182 AB.
setten tyme, 4554 (-e C, -yn D).
dredden to, 4718 (-yn D, dreden B).
makkëden the, 4783 B (made A †, madyn alle CD); maden dye, 8165.
ronnen doun, 4792 (-e C, ran[nen] D).
leten falle, 5797 (-yn CD).
seyden, 6803 (C ?), 6854 (-e C, -e D (?)), 7712 (-e CD).
stoden for, 7477 (-ę C, stood[ë] B).
wepten for, 8185 AB; cf. 4909 C.

II. -en in rhyme :

fellen, 3 f (: tellen *inf.*).
shetten, 148 f (C †; *line om.* † D) (: letten *inf.*). [After *though.*]
wenden, 217 f (-yn C; D †) (: descenden *inf.*).
riden, 473 f (-yn D) (: diden 3 *pl. ind.* : abyden *p.p.*).
spaken, 565 f (-yn C, -e D) (: maken *inf.* : awaken *inf.*).
yeden, 2021 f (ȝeden B, ȝedyn D, ridyn C) (: ryden *p.p.* : abyden *p.p.*).
hyghten, 2708 f (-yn D, hiȝtyn C) (: myghten 3 *pl.*).
mysledden, 4710 f (-yn D, -leden B) (: fledden, -yn D, 3 *pl.*, 4711).
syen, 7179 f (seyen C) (: espyen *inf.* : (e)yen).

III. -en before vowels :

Cf. wroughten, 63; fellen, 134; bihelden, 177; herden, 1168; stenten, 1188; seten, 2277; comèueden, 2859; spaken, 3056, 6879, cf. 6795; commendeden, 3059; slepten, 3588; weren, 4632, 5798, cf. 2279 ‡ A; madyn, 4783 CD; stremeden, 4909; wenten, 5392; hangen, 5479; hadden, 5912; gonnen, 6578; ioyneden, 7176; seyden, 7479. (Variants not registered.)

In some of these cases hiatus occurs in one or another MS. (not A) : as, wentë alle, 5392 B; spekë in, 3056 D; ffeltë in, 4158 C; cf. leyë at, 3587 C (lay[en] A, layen B, lyen D). See also IX. note.

IV. -en before *h* (in *hym*, *here* acc., *hem*, *here* pl.) :—

Cf. redden, 2791; èntrechaùngëdèn, 4210; wenden, 5345, 5363, 5386; gonnen, 5384; lùhighten, 6859; spedden, 6864. (Vari-

, aunts not registered.) Hiatus,—speddë hem, 6864 D (cf. also IX., note). Thus *seyden* here and howne, 4872 (-e BC, saidë D).

V. -ẹn (syncope) :

folẹwëdẹn yn, 1904 (folwëdẹn B, folwëde C, folọwdyn D).

comẹn vpwàrd, 3047 (-yn C, come D).

(Cf. 3470 ‡ C, and the references under VIII., IX.)

VI. -e before consonants :

were wrothe, 140 (-ẹ B, -yn D); were neuere, 1671 (-[e] D); were they, 1997 (-en B, -in C †); were faste, 3075; were bothe, 5894 (-en B, were we C; D †); were sene, 6637 (waren B, wer ysen D).

broute me, 424 ‡ C.

highte volturis, 788 (-en B, -yn D, -ȝte C) (in pres. sense).

gonne fro, 1279 (gunne C, ded[e] ‡ D); cf. 4238, 5371 C (D ?), 5790.[1]—bygonne we, 1597 (B † C †; bygun ‡ we D).

made louẹ, 1762 (-ẹ D); m. many, 1900 (-yn CD); m. ‡ swich, 3468 C (-yn D).

bente neuẹre, 1946 (-en B, -yn C, -t ‡ D).

spoke no, 2204 A.

wroughte me, 4196 (-[e] B, -en E, -ȝtyn C).

hadde worthynesse, 4631 (-yn CD); hadde ye, 8055 (-yn C); cf. hadde neuerẹ 3712 ‡ B.

wende that, 5378 (-en B).[2]

seyde softe, 6982 (-yn C).[3]

thoughte (=seemed) tho, 7023 (-[e] B, -ȝte C, ȝt[e] *sg.* D †).

VII. -e in rhyme :

stente, 60 f (stynt D) (: went *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -e B : entente), 5002 f (-t C) (: wente *ind.* 3 *pl.* : to-rente *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.*).

tolde, 131 f (: holde *inf.* : olde *pl.*), 7328 f (: holde *p.p.*).

felle, 145 f (: telle *inf.* : dwelle *inf.*).

dredde, 483 f (-d D) (: spedde *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

paste, 1743 f (-t C, þast † D) (: faste *inf.*).

broughte, 1999 f (-ȝt C, broght D) (: oughte 3 *pl.* : thoughte *þóhte ind.* 3 *sg.*).

ete, 2269 f (*inf.* ‡ D) (: strete *n.*).

made, 2859 f (: glade *adj. pl.*).

sente, 2862 f (-t D) (: hente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

wroughte, 3305 f (-t B, -ȝt C, wróght D), 3604 f (-ȝt C, wroghtyn D), 5388 f (-ȝt C, wrought D), 7224 f (-ȝt CD).

[1] *gan* C (l. *gunne*), *ganne* D. [2] 9-syl. [3] Subjunctive ?

Rhyme words.—thoughte *þóhte ind.* 3 *sg.* (5388), 3 *sg. indir. quest.* (3305), *þóhton ind.* 3 *pl.* (3604), *þúhton* 3 *pl. indir. quest.* (7224), bysoughte *ind.* 3 *pl.* (5388).

were, 3427 f, 3467 f, 3535 f (ware B), 3931 f, 4237 f, 6584 f (wer D), 7541 f (wer D).

Rhyme words.—fere, feere *fear n.* (3427, 3467, 3931, 4237), there (3427, 3467, 7541), where (3535, 4237, 6584), tere *n.* (3931, 7541), eyen clere (6584).

sette, 3450 f (set D) (: fette *inf.*).

sponne, 3576 f (spunne C) (: bygonne *p.p.*).

thoughte (A.S. þóhton), 3605 f (-ȝt C, thoghtyn D) (: wroughte 3 *pl. ind.*).

stode, 3765 f (stood D) (: for gode).

wende, 4528 f (-d D) (: complende *inf.* A, comprehende BC, comprehend D), 5367 f (: spende *inf.* : brende *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

knewe, 4538 f (knowe † B) (: hewe *n.* : newe *adv.*), 6083 f (knowe † B) (: trewe *pred. adj. sg.*), 6486 f (: newe *adj.* : trewe *adj.*).

mente, 4699 f (-t D) (: wente *ind.* 3 *pl.* : bente *p.p. pl.*), 4834 f (-t D), (: wente *subj.* 3 *sg.* : entente), 8056 f (-t C †, D) (: entente).

wente, 4701 f (-t D), 4802 f (-t CD), 5000 f (-t C), 6797 f (-t D); went[e], 58 f (-e B), 2751 f (-e B ; C †).

Rhyme words.—entente, -[e] *n.* (58, 2751), sente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (4802), mente *ind.* 3 *pl.* (4701), stente *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (58,5000), to-rente *ind. prct.* 3 *pl.* (5000), assente *inf.* (6797), bente *p.p. pl.* (4701).

mette (A.S. métton), 4704 f (met D) (: lette *n.*), 8121 f (: whette *p.p. pred. pl.*).

preyde, 4858 f (preyede C) (: Criseyde).

stente, 5002 f (stent C) (cf. next word).

to-rente, 5003 f (-t C, turment ‡ D) (: wente *ind.* 3 *pl.* : stente *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.*).

bysoughte, 5387 f AB (besouȝte D) (: thoughte *þóhte ind.* 3 *sg.* : wroughte *ind.* 3 *pl.*).

kyste, 5793 f (: twyste *inf.* : nyste *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

glente, 5885 f (-t C, glente *sg.* BD) (: entente : wente *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

hadde, 6336 f (: into badde), 6350 f (: cladde *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

fette, 7215 f (fett D) (: sette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* : lette *n.*).

thoughte (= seemed), 7223 f (-t B, -ȝt CD) (: wroughte *ind.* 3 *pl.*). [Ind. question.]

pleyde, 7475 f (pleyede C) (: Criseyde).

seyde, 7628 f (*sg.* ‡ C) (: breyde *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* : Criseyde).

aboughte, 8119 f (aboute D) (: soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

Final -e is to be supplied in *alight*[*e*][1], 6876 f (-e B, alyȝt? C, light D) (: nyghte *inf.* : brighte *def. adj.*).

VIII. -e elided before vowels.

Cf. bisegede, 149; hadde, 153, 909, 1302, 4528, 5381; seyde, 176, 5348; fille, felle, 470, 3407, 3894, 5413; wente, 473; toke, 911, 4252; were, 916, 3073, 3265, 4247, 5909, 6875; tolde, 1165; pleyede, 1235; cryede, 1697; founde, 2023; sete, 2336; turnede, 2432; gonne, 2684, 5364; knowe, 2750; spake, 3305, 6096, cf. 4208; laye, 3591; rafte, 4911; wroughte, 5789; radde, 7100; come, 7237; lafte, 7689. (Variants not registered.)

In all these instances A has -*e* (elided). In several, D omits -e; as,—had, 153, 909, 4528; fil, 470; told, 1165; cried, 1697; gun, 2684; wer, 5909; etc. So sometimes B: as,—beseged, 149; had, 153; went, 473; took, 911; cried, 1697; torned, 2432; fel, 3407; com, 7237; left, 7689; cf. caused, 4408;—and C: as,—tok, 911; lay, 3591. -*yn* (syncopated) is found in C 153, 916, 1302, 1697, 2750, 3073, 3894, and in D 2023, 2432; -*ÿn* in C 5909, D 176; -*e* in D 3265.—*Drowe* pret. ind. 3 pl., 3516 D (drew C), should be *p.p.* (as in AB).—For the omission of elided -*e* in A, see,—shewed, 159 (-ede C, -yd D); sped, 1111 (spedde B, did ‡ D); brast, 1411 (brustc B, brostyn C, brest D); lyked, 2351 (-ëdë ‡ in C, -yd ‡ *sg.* D); assembled, 2652 (-bledin in C, -blid D, assemlede B); gon, 2793 (gonnë ‡ it B, gan on C, gun on D); wrought, 4555 (-ȝte C, wroght D); tok, 5793 (tooke B, hent C, toke D); went, 7690 (-*e* BC), cf. 1995; cf. ye caused al, 4408 B.

IX. -*e* elided before *h* (in *he, his, hym, here* acc., *here* pl., *here* adv., *hem*).

Cf. made, 472, 6097; come, 1704; cryede, 1728; sette, 2269, 5348; were, 2436, 3523, 7564; hadde, 3706; knewe, 4240; gonne, bygonne, 4919, 7590, 7830; toke, 6863; spedde, 6881. (Variants not registered.)

In all these instances A has -*e*. Cf. were, 6829 B (wer D, werë ‡ here C, were ‡ there A). D omits -*e* in 1728, 3706, 4240, 5348, 6097, 7564, 7590; B, in 4919, 5348, 6863; C, in 1728, 7590, 7830. C has -*yn* in 472, 3706, 4240, 6881 †, 7564. For the omission of elided -*e* in A, see—spak hem, 1110 (-*e* B); brought hym, 2023 (-*e* B, -ȝte C, broghtyn ‡ at D); gan hym, 2629; byhight hem, 3161 (biheighte B, behyȝt C, behight D); shewed his, 4206 (-id is C, sweyd † E); yaf hym, 4795 (ȝaf C; B † D †), cf. 2861 D; quyt hym, 4867 (-tt D, quite B); seygh here (*acc.*), 5382 (seigh B, saw C, say her [so] D); tok here (*poss. sg.*), 5392 (took B; toke C, D (?)); caught here (*pl.*), 6965 (-ȝt C †).[2]

Note.—A few cases of hiatus occur in one or another MS., but these are easily corrected. Thus,—wentë arm, 2201 (-en B, -yn C, *om.* † D); arysë euerychon, 2683 (-en B, -yn C, risyn D); gonnë ‡ it, 2793 B; likëdë ‡ in, 2351 C; sought[ë] hym, 2022 (-ȝtë C, soughten B, soghtyn D); speddë hem, 2032 (spede B, sped[ë] from D); werë ‡ here (*hic*), 6829 C. See also III., IV., above.

X. Apocope. A few genuine cases occur:

[1] Perhaps present tense.

[2] Supply [*the*] in D.

werę born, 4064 (-ë BC), 5913 (wer D); werę woned, 4553 (be D); war caught(e), 2267 B.[1]

say (*vidistis*) the, 656 (say CD); sey ye, 1362 (sey[e] ‡ ȝe D).

gan to, 3957.

quod they, 4856 ABC (D ?).

declamed this, 2332 B (-edę C, declarid D, declamed ‡ *sg.* A).

destrayned, 355 f (-yd D) (: gayned : feyned, *both pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*). [Indir. discourse.]

Cf. bygun ‡ we, 1597 D; gunnę ‡ to, 1994 C (gan ‡ to D); gun ‡ they, 3452 D; gunnę † the, 5791 C (gan the peynęs ‡ A); gan ‡ to, 6891 D; had ‡ that, 1302 D; haddę ‡ ye, 3711 A; bent ‡ neuęre his, 1946 D; reddę ‡ me, 7100 C; seidę ‡ that, 7479 D; stodę ‡ they, 7482 C; werę ‡ wrothe, 140 B; werę ‡ clerkes, 5634 D; werę ‡ there, 6829 A; werę ‡ wont(e), 7023 D.

## § 110. The Singular of the Present Subjunctive of both strong and weak verbs ends in *-e* in all persons (Child, § 56; ten Brink, §§ 184, 188).

I. First Person.

(*a*) Before consonants:

er that I parte, 5 (or [that] I p. D).

lest thow deme I trust[e] not, 601 (tryste B, truste C).

thow I desir[e], 650 (-e BD, desese † C).

as euęre I thriue, 1205 (as euere thryue I BC).[2]

if that I breke, 2980.

er that I departe, 6297.[3]

(*b*) In rhyme:

whil I leue, 931 f (lyue BD) (: foryeue *subj.* 2 *sg.*, *inf.* D).

er that I sterue, 1007 f (er than C) (: deserue *inf.*).

now is tymë (is it tyme CD) I wende, 1305 f (: to an ende).

yf I . . . endite, 1352 f (B †) (: lyte, litel † A).

wene I lye, 1385 f (ly D) (: eye).

counseylest me . . . that . . . I me feyne, 2613 f (: peyne *n.* : pleyne *inf.*).

though I . . . preye, 3127 f (prey D) (: seye *ind.* 1 *sg.* : wreye *subj.* 2 *sg.*).

til I sterue, 3556 f (sterwe C) (: serue *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

[1] In ACD supply [*that*] and read *were*.
[2] Supply [*this*] in AD.
[3] Supply [*that*] in C.

though I . . . compleyne, 3847 f (pleyn † D) (: to seyn[e] AD, to seyne BC : peyne *n.*).
but I retorne, 4325 f (-tourne B, -turne CD) (: soiourne *inf.*).
yf I . . . twynne, 5420 f (: inne : synne *n.*).
til I . . . vnshethe, 5438 f (C †) (: to dethe).
yf so be that I . . . passe, 7059 f (pace BD, pase C) (: grace *n.*).
yf . . . I falle, 7068 f (falt D) (: byfalle *subj.* 3 *sg.* : of alle).

(*c*) Elision :

though I praunce, 221 (how ‡ y p. D).
though I speke, 1104 (yf I ‡ spak D).
yf I lye, 3216.
so thriue I, 3552.[1]
though that I tarye *a* yer, 4037.
or I soo werche, 5013 D (do ABC).[2]
al soy I nought, 3098 A (-*e* B).
yf that I me put in, 7064 (putte C).

II. Second Person.

(*a*) Before consonants :

but thow it fynde, 831 (fynde ‡ it C, but if thow fynd it D).
se that thow . . . requere, 895.
and thow . . . holde, 2610 (-[e] CD).
if thow remembre the, 3203 D (if it r. the B, if it remembrid ‡ be C, if it remembreth the A).
that . . . thow deme, 3236.
though thou sitte, 4472 (sit[te] D).
that thow retorne, 6215 (C †).
that thow . . . sende, 6958 (C ?).

(*b*) In rhyme :

that thou dwelle, 789 f (: helle *n.* : telle *ind.* 3 *pl.*).
(I) . . . pray . . . thow foryeue, 930 f (-ʒiue B, -ʒeue C ; *inf.* D) (: leue *subj.* 1 *sg.*).
that thou me recomaunde, 1049 f (: comaunde *inf.*).
that thow . . . wreye, 3126 f (wrey D) (: seye *ind.* 1 *sg.* : preye *subj.* 1 *sg.*).
whider so thow wende, 3233 f (wynde C) (: ende *n.*).
how thow pleye, 3663 f (pley CD) (: tweye : seye *inf.*).
that . . . thow wynde, 4282 f (wende B) (: kynde *n.* : byndo *subj.* 3 *sg.*).
or thou olde †, 5079 f C.

[1] In C read *this* for *wis*. [2] Supply [*thus*] in C.

what so thow seye, 5104 f (sey D) (: deye *subj.* 1 *sg.*).
That prey I the thow take (tak B) and it conserue, 6673 f (: serue *ind.* 1 *sg.* : sterue *ind.* 1 *sg.*).
I the beseche . . . that thow foryeue, 6750 f (-yiue B, -ȝif C) (: dreue *p.p.* : leue *vivere*).
that thow . . . write, 7656 f (: lete : endite *inf.*).

(*c*) Elision :

if thou wene, 575.
lest thow deme, 601 (C †).
if thow . . . deye, 800 (dy D).
yf thow late hym, 1408 (lat B, late C, lete D, *all three plural*).
yf thow write, 2113.
that thow knowe, 3249 (know D).
that thow . . . . cause, 4466 (causë ‡ it D).
yf thow deye, 5285 (dey D).
my conseyl is . . . thow . . . . go and make, 5777 (mak BC).
if that thow trowe, 6694 (C †).
if thow . . . . ligge, 6774 (leve C, lyę thus D).[1]
whe[the]r yet thou thenke, 7098 A.
if thow werk yn, 952 (wyrke B, were † C, work on D).

III. Third Person.

(*a*) Before consonants :

touche ‡ loue, 744 C (*l.* toucheth).
god forbede, 1198 ; cf. 2775, 3603.
cesse cause ay cesseth maladye, 1568 B (-eth . . . -eth A, sese . . . seseth the C, cesyd *p.p.* . . . cecith D) ; cf. cesse wynde it wold aryse, 2473 (sese C$^{c}$, cesid (?) D).
though a man forbede, 1801 (D †).
god sende, 2359 (-[e] BD), 8065 ; god . . . so sende, 8151 ; cf. 3163 (-ë hele), 3185, 6871.
though she bende, 2463 (-[e] D).[2]
wher it be bet she byde, 2736 (sche *a*bide C, to ‡ bydë *inf.* (?) D).
if that she vouche saf, 2776 (-eth B, -ith D, thou ‡ vouchę C).
I pose a womman graunte me, 3152 (-edę C, -ith D).
if it remembre the, 3203 B (cf. II., above) ; er deth delyuęre me, 7763 (-uęreth D ; C$^{c}$ (?)) ; mysmetre for, 8159 A (-metęre B, missę-metre D).
god . . . brynge, 3808 (bryng ‡ at D).
god . . . so quenche, 4298 (D †).

[1] In later hand in C. Supply [*or*] in D. [2] Supply [*she*] in D.

so . . . that it cause, 4347 (is † cause CD).
god vs graunte, 4368 (C (?); graunt D †).
yif that it lyke yow, 4763 (if it like B, if it likith D); cf. 1527 ‡ C, 4144 ‡ A.
God leue that, 4987 (len[e] D, leue ‡ ay C).
if Criseyde . . . now loue the, 5274 (-eth BD, -yth C).
but yf . . . remorde yow, 6153 (-moue C †).
god . . . as wysly glade so, 6519.
though he wepe and make, 6779.
er Calkas sende, 6871.
bytyde what bityde, 7113 f (: syde).
although she come, 7504.
though . . . commeue, 7749 (re- C, remorde D).
that noon myswryte the, 8158 (miss(e)-write D)[1].

(*b*) In rhyme:

god me blysse, 436 f (blys C, blesse D) (: prowesse : distresse *n.*);
god vs blesse, 7575 (blisse BD, blys C) (: heuynesse).
thowh . . . breste, 599 f (-t C, or (that) ‡ . . . to-brest D) (: my beste : reste *n.*).
yf the lyke, 829 f (: syke *inf.*); cf. 3653 f.
but if . . . shende, 965 f (-d D) (: ende *n.*).
so god you saue, 1199 f (: ye raue : caue *n.*).
lest . . . slake, 1376 f (: take *inf.* : make *inf.*).
if . . . assente, 1420 f (-t (?) D, -e *inf.* AC) (: sente *ind.* 3 *sg.*).
or [that] . . . deuoure, 1480 f (or that BC) (: houre).
so she . . . saue, 1823 f (: haue *inf.*); cf. 2944 f, 4220 f, 4343 f.
so god me spede, 1829 f (: drede *n.* : hede *n.*).
who-so it rewe, 1874 f (rew D) (: vntrewe *pl.* : an newe).
god so wys me saue, 2063 f (: haue *ind.* 1 *sg.* : yaue *subj.* 3 *sg.*).[2]
til that . . . departe, 2075 f (: Marte).
although it . . . smerte, 2182 f (-t D †, -e ‡ *inf.* C) (: sterte *ind.* 3 *sg.* : herte).[3]
recche . . . wher he bycome, 2236 f (: some *pl.*).
whether that he lyue or elles sterue, 2237 f (leue . . . sterue C, dye † . . sterue D) (: serue *inf.* : deserue *inf.*).
whan that so he bygynne, 2569 f (whan so that he bygyn D, whan so euere ‡ he gynne (?) C) (: wynne *inf.*).
god hym amende, 2816 f (: defende *ind.* 1 *sg.* : sende *subj.* 3 *sg.*).

[1] Dele (*to*) in BD, or read *myswryte*.
[2] In C, read *eche* for *sche*.
[3] In A read *so*[*re*].

god hym brynge, 2891 f (bring D) (: heriynge).
yf this . . . displese, 2949 f (-plees B) (: ese *n.* : apese *inf.*).
how sore that me smerte, 2988 f (-t CD) (: herte *n.*); cf. 3748 f, 3842 f, 6495 f, 7587 f.
god forbede, 3387 f (: nede *n.*), 4819 f (: drede *n.*), 6218 f (: nede *n.* : hede *n.*).
til the sonne shyne, 3610 f (: deuyne *inf.* : myne *inf.*).
er that . . . breke, 3750 f (to-breke ‡ D) (: wreke : speke *infs.*).
til . . . sende, 3773 f (: ende *n.*); cf. 6865 f.
Ioue . . . hym race, 3857 f (arace BC) (: place *n.*).
(god) . . . auaunce, 4228 f (avance E) (: myschaunce *n.*).
god . . . bynde, 4281 f (: kynde *n.* : wynde *subj. pres.* 2 *sg.*).
til that fayle, 4935 f (: bywayle *inf.*).
though the body sterue, 4984 f (: serue *inf.*).
rather than my felawę deye, 5186 f (dey D) (: seye *inf.*).
that . . . wepe, 5253 f (: depe *adv.*).
the deuel spedë hym (spede hym BD, hauë hym C)[1] that recche, 5292 f (: wrecche *n.*).
god . . . gyde, 5355 f (guide D) (: side *n.*).
til deth me mete, 5444 f (: swete *adj.* : in quiète).
that he . . . fynde, 5578 f (i-fynde C) (: out of his mynde).
yf . . . compleyne, 5917 f (: peyne *n.* : tweyne).[2]
yf so be that . . . take, 6224 f (: make *inf.*).
yf that . . . me assayle, 6257 f (messaile B, me asayle C; D †) (: fayle *n.*).
though . . . smerte, 6425 f (-t C) (: herte *n.*); cf. 6495 f, 7587 f.
that . . . he dryue, 7028 f (: on lyue).
yf that it byfalle, 7065 f (so falle C) (: of alle : falle *subj.* 1 *sg.*).
bytyde what bityde, 7113 f (: syde *n.*).
yf . . . masterte, 7706 f (me asterte C, me astert D) (: herte *n.*).
god encresse, 7722 f (-cresc CD) (: cesse *subj.* 3 *sg.*).
so that it neuerę cesse, 7724 f (sease D, sere † C).
god . . . auaunce, 7798 f (-ns D) (: myschaunce *n.*); cf. 4228 f.
though hym greue, 8001 f (: leue *inf. léfan*).
er that he dye, 8150 f (: thow nenuye).
liste, lyste, lyst (1843), leste A (liste, lyste, leste B; liste, lyste, leste, lest, lyst, lest C; liste, leste, list, lyst, lest, lust D), 679 f (as thou lyste C), 693 f (yf thow lyste AC), 1022 f (as thou lest C), 1334 f, 1843 f, 2030 f (ȝe lest C), 2195 f, 2268 f (ye

[1] In D read *Adieu* for *And dey*.
[2] Supply [*ȝif*] in C.

list D), 2534 f, 3101 f, 3210 f (thou lest C), 3430 f (ye lyst D), 3513 f (ye lyst D), 3688 f (ye lest D), 3759 f (ye lyst D), 3807 f, 3889 f (ye lest D), 4172 f, 6209 f (thow leste AC, ye leste D), 7629 f (sche luste C), 8074 f (thow lyst A), 8140 f.

Rhyme words.—wyste *pret. subj.* 1, 2 *sg.* (679, 3210), er ye wiste (2268), tryste, triste *inf.* (693, 3101, 3759, 7629, 8074), truste, triste *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* (1334, 3210, 3430), geste *n.* (2195), Alceste (8140), beste *def. adj. sg.* (1022, 2534, 3513, 3688, 3889, 4172), the worthieste, (1843), *at, to, for reste* (1843, 2030, 3807, 3889), keste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (1334), brest[e] (-e B) *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* (2195).

(*c*) Elision.

For examples of elision before a vowel, cf. 31, 44, 597, 1034, 1114, 1472 B, 1673, 1941, 2104, 2237, 2297, 2721, 2798, 3217, 3637, 3768, 3782, 4066, 4360, 4735 (remembre 1), 6223, 6779, 6787, 7321 (deliuere it), 7500, 7724, 7797, 8113. For examples of elision before pronouns beginning with *h*, cf. 45, 558, 695, 1248, 2898, 3387, 4227, 5124, 6703, 7490; happe how happë may, 7159 (happen how happyn may D).

Note 1.—In cases of elision *-e* is sometimes omitted in writing. Thus,—(a) before vowels,—sey, 1004‡ C (seyth A, syth B, seith D); com, 2519 (*-e* C, *-e* D (?)); prey, 3388 (*-e* BC, prayeth‡ *imv.* D); set, 3674 (sette B, set (not) D); lat, 4088 (B†, let C); worth, 5409 (wurth D, wurthe‡ C); dryf, 5572 (-ue BD); glad, 6317 (*-e* CD); tak, 7452 (*-e* CD);—(b) before *hym*,—war, 1953 (*-e* D); lat, 2692 (let C, lete D); bryng, 2693 (*-e* B). There are no good cases of hiatus: *who-so axë‡ hym*, 7587 C (-eth A, -ed B, -ed him wher[of] D), and *the dreel spedë hym*, 5292 A (hauë C, spede B; D†) should be corrected; *so god me sendë helt*, 3163, is regular.

Note 2.—Before a vowel or *h* it is not always possible to determine whether *lyst* (ind.) or *lyste* (subj.) should be read: cf. *e.g.*, 119, 398, 857, 1379, 2860, 4018, 4589, 8133, where A has *lyst*, *list*, with 3528, 4134, 5291, 6062, 6685, 8133, where A has *lyste*.

IV. Contracted forms (all persons).

Monosyllabic (contracted) forms are seen in *se*, *see*, and *sle*. Thus,—1st Pers., se ich neue[r] Ioues face, 5999, cf. 3652 f, 7748; 2nd Pers., I wol now that thow se, 990 f, cf. 6769; 3rd Pers., god yow seë, 1170 f (se CD); though he se a man, 1457 (9-syl. in A); yf this man sle here hym self, 1544 (sla B, here sle hym D). Cf. § 111, III, note 2.

## § 111. Exceptions to § 110.

I. First Person.

But if that I consentę that it so be, 413 (consentë that it be BC, if [that] I consent that hit so be D).

II. Second Person.

the best is that thow tellę me, 830 (tèlle CD).

whether thow thy[n]kę ȝet vpon, 7098 B (thynkę ȝit [vp]on C, thinkist yet vppon D, whe[the]r yet thou thenke vpon A).

III. Third Person.

helpe me (in *God helpe me so, as helpe me god*, and similar phrases), 1449 (-p BC), 1675 (-p D), 2089 (-p D), 2211 (-p D) 2298 (-p CD), 2315 (-p BC[c] D), 2367 (-p BD), 2397 (-p BCD), 4408 (C †), 5275 (-p B), 6194 (-p BC), 6256 (-p B)[1], 6726 (-p BC), 6849 (-p B), 7340 (-p B), 7362.[2]

help me (in *God help me so*, etc.), 1218 (-e B, help ‡ y D), 1267 (-e me C ‡), 3706 (-e C), 4463 (-e CD), 6516 (-e BCD), 6755 (-e D).[3]

help god, 3900 (-e B, *om.* † D).

God yelde the, 1048 (ȝeld D).

sende yow, 1489 (-d D; C (?)).

yf the lyke than, 2101 (leste B, lyste C, if thou list D); cf. 3227 ‡ D.

Ioues . . . yeue me sorwe, 2694 (gif C); Ioues yeue the sorwe, 7888; god yeue youre, 4407 (ȝif C, ȝeue ȝow ‡ D); I bidde god so yeue yow, 4312 ([so] C)[4]; preye I god so yeue yow, 7437 (ȝeue ȝou C, to ‡ yeue you *inf.* D)[5], 7774 (ȝeue ȝow C); cf. 33 ‡ D.

yf it come to, 4067 (-eth B).[6]

leue . . . bynd this acord, 4592 (*line om.* E).

ne trust no wyghte, 5053 (-e B; C †).

wo worth that day, 5425 AB (-e D); cf. 1429-32 (*four cases*); cf. 5409 ‡ C.

Venus lat me, 6323 (let CD).

yf she write thow, 7662 (writë D, ȝif ‡ that sche write C).[7]

Note 1.—*Red* seems to be imperative in "Hese worthi dedes who-so list hem here *Red* Dares," 8133-4 (rede D).—In several passages it is impossible to determine with certainty whether *leste* (*lyste*), subjunctive, or *lest* (*lyst*), indicative, is to be read: cf. for example, 686, 1407, 1820, 2245, 2865, 2978, 3215, 3888, 4104, 5245, 6020, 6295, 7360, 7751, 7780; see § 95, p. 221.

Note 2.—In *If harm*(e) *agree me*, 409 (agre CD), *agree* has of course but two syllables.

§ 112. The Plural of the present Subjunctive of both strong and weak verbs ends in *-en*, *-e* for all persons (Child, § 56, *c*; ten Brink, §§ 184, 188). Thus,—

I. First Person:

though we comen in, 6184 (-yn C) (pret. ?).

[1] D ridiculously reads *Ioue heuen quene.* [2] In A insert [*here*].
[3] Supply [*the*] in C. [4] *so* later hand in D.
[5] In B supply [*I*]; in C, [*riȝt*]. [6] B has *of* † for *if*. [7] Read *soo*[*ne*] in D.

whil we dwellen there, 6186 (-e CD, dwelten A).
though that we . . . apeyre, 1414 f (if that B; C (?)) (: faire *adv.*).
we our tales holde, 2017 f (-d D) (: tolde *ind.* 1 *sg.*).
turne we, 2794 (torne B); torne we, 3061 (turne CD)[1], 4425 (turne CD).
lest we . . . reue, 2807 (byreue BD, be- C) (: leue *n.*).
it is tyme that we wende, 3050 f (: ende *n.* : blynde, blonde *cæcare*).
yf we . . . hye, 6852 f (: vilonye).
er that we . . . wende, 7254 f (wynde C) (: shende *inf.* : ende *n.*); cf. 2961 ‡ f D.
but that we shape vs, 5935 (D †).

II. Second Person:

though . . . by-hete, 539 f (be- CD) (: swete *voc.*).
but . . . telle what, 1216 (*-e* vs BC; D (?)).
though that ye sterue, 1572.[2]
so ye endite, 2247 f (: write *inf.*).
that ye . . . honge, 2327 f (-g D) (: longe *adv.*).
he wole . . . that ye brynge, 2728 f (bring CD) (: rekenynge : taryinge).
er that ye wende, 2961 f (winde C, wende ‡ 1 *pl.* D) (: ende *n.*); yf that ye wende, 6157 f (: rende *inf.* : shende *inf.*).
digne me, 2981 (deigne (?) B, digne (?) C, deigne D †).
whil that ye me serue, 3016 f (: deserue 2 *pl. subj. or ind.*). [Ind. ?]
so that . . . greue, 3846 f (: at preue).
what so ye me comaunde, 5956 f (: demaunde *n.*).
yf that ye drecche, 6108 f (: wrecche *n.* : recche *inf.*).
er that . . . cause, 6110 (-yn D; *n.* ‡ C).
er ye . . . fynde, 6313 f (: vnkynde *pred. adj.*).[3]
tyme is that ye ryse, 6349 (C †) (: suffice *inf.*).
yf ye vouche sauf, 7285 (*line om.* C).
lest [that] ye . . . breke, 7395 f (*om.* † B; C †; lest that, etc., D) (: speke *inf.*).
that . . . ye not holde, 7702 f (-d B, vnfolde C[c] †) (: byholde *inf.* : colde *adj. pl.*).
graunte it that ye . . . rewe, 7727 f (: trewe *pred. adj. sg.*).
that . . . ye . . . recomforte, 7758 f (-con- C) (: comporte *inf.* : desporte *inf.*).
that ye ne take, 7988 f (B †) (: make *inf.*).

[1] Supply [*to*] in B.
[2] Supply [*that*] in CD.
[3] C has *ȝif* † for *er*.

yf . . . seche, 8218 f (: speche *n.*).

For instances of *-e*, elided before a vowel, cf. 1385, 1405, 1472 C[c], 1476, 3771, 3942, 4760, 4987, 5460, 6103, 6608. For *-e*, elided before *hym*, see *make hym*, 1445 (mak B); *lat hym*, 1408 B (*-e* C, lete D, late ‡ *sg.* A); *suffre hym* (-fere C), 3723 (cf. 3705). But *-e* is of course preserved in,—loke that ye *thonkë humbely*, 2804 (-en, B, -[ë] D, thankë C).

III. Third person:

though wrecches on it crien, 1950 f (cryȝen C) (: eyen *n. pl.* : dryen *inf.*).

though wommen dreden with, 3164 B (-in C, -e AD).[1]

how-so it be that . . . delite, 1341 f (: a lyte : endite *inf.*).

though . . . to-rende, 1875 f (vnrende ‡ D) (: ende *n.*).

lest more folk aryse, 4032 f (: wyse *pred. adj. pl.*).

who wot . . . what they signifie, 6734 f (: glotonye).

er that thei fynde, 7496 (ffynden D).

but men lye, 7891 f (: iupartie : dye *inf.*).

although they holde hem, 4235 AC (hold B).

that they ne fynde in, 4861 (-yn C).

IV. Contracted forms:

fle we, 2649 (flee B, fle [we] D).

whan ye . . . se, 7765 f (see D).

V. Apocope of *-e*:

And coyë (*inf.*) (koy D) hem they (that they D) *sey* noon harm of me, 1886 (seyę B, seyn † *ind.* 3 *pl.* C).

Cf. letę ‡ we *her*, 2017 D (*imv.* ABC); letę ‡ we, 3060 D (*imv.* ABC); ne stond ‡ we, 3405 f D (*imv.* ABC).

§ 113. The Preterite Subjunctive Singular of Strong Verbs ends in *-e* for all persons. The Preterite Subjunctive Singular of Weak Verbs shows in the first and third persons the endings *-de, -te, -edę, -ed* (cf. Child, § 56; ten Brink, § 195). For the indicative form *-est* in subjunctive constructions in the second person singular of weak preterites, see § 106, above.

I. Strong Verbs.

(*a*) First Person:

[1] A erroneously reads *womman* for *wommen*.

yf that I so withstode, 5214 f (: for the townes goode).

were, 4053, 4991 f (wer D) (: there); *-e*, 526, 529, etc.; *-e* here (*poss. pl.*), 51 (-ę ‡ their D); nere I, 1494 (ner D).

(*b*) Second Person:

er thow me slowe, 5168 (slewe B, slouȝ D, slow ‡ 3 *sg.* C).

wolde neuerę god but thow were, 936; cf. 521.

(*c*) Third Person:

were, 226 f, 723 f (where C), 765 f, 2098 f, 3302 f, 3367 f, 3409 f (there ‡ D), 3413 f (there ‡ D), 3949 f, 3984 f, 4181 f, 5357 f (wer D), 6022 f (-ee- B, wer D), 7240 f (wer D), 7720 f (wer D), 7944 f (-ee- B), 7965 f; were (*before consonants*), 528 (*-e* BCD), 1027 (ware B, werę (?) D), 1749 ‡ D (were C, was a A, as † a B), 2715 (D †), 3379 (-ę CD), 3416 (B?), 4011 ‡ A (*-e* BCD), 4332, 4359 (-ę ‡ D), cf. 7847 BCD; *-e*, 608 (C †), 836 (-ę C), 860 (wer D)[1], 3359 (wer B)[2], 4353 (-ę ‡ C (?)), 6236 (-ę ‡ C), etc.; *-e* he, 2705 (*-e* it C)[3]: *-e* hym, 3433 (wer D, *-e* ‡ he C); *-e* here (*poss. sg.*), 1777 (-ë D)[4]; *-e* here (*hic*), 143 C (*-e* a D; A? B?); *-e* honour, 1790[5]; werë ‡ and, 5070 A (*-e* BCD).—nere, 4184 f (were BC; D †), 6011 (ner D †); *-e*, 2128 (were A), 2495, 2559 (ne *were* C, ner D), 6285 ner D); *-e* he, 2929 (ner B); *-e* his, 6437 (ner D).

Rhyme words.—a-fere (226), fere, feere *n. fear* (723, 765, 3302, 3413, 3984 4181, 6022, 7965), ere, eere (723, 765, 3302, 3409, 3949), gere *n.* (2098), tere *n.* (7240, 7944), nere *subj.* 3 *sg.* (4181), there (2098, 3367, 3413, 5357, 6022, 7240, 7720), where (5357), stere *inf.* (226, dere ‡ A).

me were leuere dye Than she . . . vnderstode, 1028 f (: sownen ynto gode); though that she stode, 1032 (stod C).[6]

it sat[e] me, 1202 (-e BD);[7] although . . . sat among, 5359 (*-e* BD).

who so that me yaue, 2062 f (: haue *ind.* 1 *sg.* : saue *subj.* 3 *sg.*).

spake, 2204 B (*ind. pl.* A, his wordis ‡ CD).

al-though he lay[e] softe, 3284 (?); as thow he leye, 6575 ‡ C[c]; as though . . . lay on, 772 (*-e* C); lay in (*apodosis*), 6222 (leye C, were ‡ D).

al come it, 3310 (-ë late D †).

lest . . . fille, 320 (fel C, fil D).[8]

yf she toke it, 3811 (that . . . toke B, that . . . tok C, ellis ‡ she toke D).

[1] 9-syl. verse in ABC (unless one reads *werē it*); *wer it* in D = *wer't*.
[2] In D read *were at* [*the*] *ful*. [3] In D read [*an*]*hangid*.
[4] But read *were her em*(*e*) *n*[*e w*]*old*[*e*] in D. [5] In C supply [*with*].
[6] Supply [*that*] in C. [7] Supply [*a*] in AB. [8] Supply [*self*] in D.

yf that loue . . . late his, 4604 (lete B, let C; D †).
er that . . . spak out, 3385 (-*e* B, speke ‡ *pres.* C, spakë ‡ out D).
or . . . slow I, 5168 ‡ C (2 *sg.* ABC).

(*d*) Exceptions:

First Person: nerę but (*apodosis*), 6313 (werę C, ner D).

Third Person: werę sent, 105 (war B, was D); werę wyst, 321, 615, 6222 (wer D); werę there, 1223 A (is BCD), 3411 (wer B, was C); werę leuere, leuest, 1274, 1437, 5227 (C (?), wer D)[1]; werę to, 1440, 3479 (-*e* ‡ C); werę ‡ worthi, 2784 C (was ABD); werę brought, 3149 (D †); werę my, me, 3217, 4943 (wer D); werę right, 3840 (C?); werę lost, 4606 (-*e* BCE); werę wel, 5099 (wer D); werę rathere, 5650 (wer D); werę fals, 5656; werę routhe, 6244; werę ‡ folye, 6626 C (was ABD).—nerę no, 5649 (ner B, wer D).

II. Weak Verbs.

(*a*) First Conjugation (cf. § 99):

as his herte bledde, 4366 f (blede C) (: cledde *vestivit* : spedde *ind.* 3 *sg.*).
whom he brought[e] there, 3428 (-e C, broght D).
bysought on, 1st pers., 769 (besouthe C).
al dredde I, 1959 (drede BC, dred D).[2]
as . . . dwelled here (*hic*), 3rd pers., 121 (-ede C, -yd[ë] al ‡ D); duelled ‡ ther, 3rd pers., 7242 D (-eth AB, -yn † C).
til that he herde, 2036 (-[e] D).[3]
though that she . . . herde, 1032 f (-d D) (: answered *ind.* 3 *sg.*, -swerde BC, -swerd D).[4]
lyste, see § 99.
yf that he mente, 1750 (-t ‡ but D, myȝte ‡ C); cf. 5011 f (?).
vs nededę for, 6006 (-ed BD, -ith ‡ not C).
I rought[e] not, 1032 (-e BC),[5] 2513 (-ȝte C, rogh[e] D); nought rought[ë] ‖ I, 4944 (-*e* C, -t D). Cf. § 145, III.
yf I . . . sente, 2532 f (-t CD) (: consente *inf.* : entente *n.*).
that . . . shente, 3rd pers., 1442 f (-t CD) (: assente *inf.*); yf herę whiel stynte, 848 (-t D, styntyn † C).
were it thyng that me thoughte vnsittynge, 1392 (-t B, -ë ‡ C, thinkith ‡ D).
if I it tolde, 1314 (-d D); cf. 767 BCD; who-so tales tolde,

[1] Dele (*be*) in D. [2] In C supply [*to*].
[3] In D supply [*that*]. [4] In C supply [*that*]. [5] In C supply [*thát*].

3644 f BC (-d D, tolle † A) (: colde *inf.* : holde *inf.*); she told here-self, 2716 (-*e* C, told ‡ hym D).

wolde I that he twyste, 4611 f (-t C) (: lyste *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* : wyste *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.*).[1]

yf that yeh . . . wende, 6312 f (: defende *subj.* 3 *sg.* : entende *ind.* 1 *sg.*); yf I wend[e], 5581 f (-e BCD) (: despende *inf.* : pretende *inf.*); though . . . wende, 3rd pers., 227 (-[e] *ind.* ‡ D).

er she wente, 2716 f (-t C, stent ‡ D) (: assente *inf.*); that . . . ne wente, 2739 (wend[e] D ‡); cf. 4832 f (-t D).

(*b*) Second Conjugation (cf. § 101):

al lakkede here, 522 (-ed B, -id D).

al . . . made it, 3rd pers., 2929.

although . . . pleyde, 3rd pers., 1006 f (-d D, -ede C) (: Criseyde : seyde *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

put out, 3rd pers., 3810 (putte BC).

(*c*) Third Conjugation (cf. § 102):

hadde, 1st and 3rd pers., 3770 (-[de] D, had for B; C †), 4998 BC (-[de] D, -de A), 7296 (-[de] D), 7900 (hadd ymade B, had ymade D)[2]; cf. 6590 ‡ D, 8047 ‡ C; hadde, 1628 (had D), 2594 (had D), cf. 3117, 5145, 5245, 6419, 6590, 6646 A, 7296, 8047, 8128 A; had I, 7101 (-de B, -dë ‡ I C); hadde his, 3496 (had ‡ myght D), 7548 (had D); had herd, 7086 (-de B, hade C (?)); haddë had, 227 (-[dë] had (?) BD, -de had C).—yf I ne *h*addë spoken, 5895 (nadde *h*-spoken B, ne *h*ad[dë] spoken D); I ne *h*addë trowed, 7099 (madde ytrowed B, that I ne *h*addë trowid C, I me *h*addë trowed D); I ne *h*adde y-brought, 4758 (ne *h*addë brought B, ne had ‡ her broght D); ne *h*adde I, 4052 (nad I CD), 4161 (nade I BE, naddi C).[3]

though I lyede, 6242 (-ed BD, leede C).

what wyght that it with-seyde, 4877 f (: Criseyde : preyede *ind. or subj.* 3 *sg.*); lest I seyde, 2133 (seyd D); yf he seyde, 3420 (-[e] D).[4]

(*d*) Strong verbs with weak preterites (cf. § 103):

er that I deyede, 460 f (dyede B, deyd D) (: seyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* : Criseyde); lest he . . . deyde, 5091 f (dyed B, died D, deyede

[1] A has *it wyste* † for *twyste*.

[2] Doubtful case. Impossible to decide between *haddë mad* and *hadde ymad*. Similar cases are 6646, 8128; cf. also 4758, 5895, 7099.

[3] In C supply [*my*].

[4] In A read *there*[*of*].

C) (: seyde *subj.* 3 *sg.* : deyde (dyed B, deyede C, deyed D) *ind.* 3 *sg.*); whanne he deyde, 5330 f (deyed BD, deyede C) (: Criseyde).

how sore that hym smerte, 5848 f (-t C) (: herte).

it semed as he wepte, 2906 (-t CD, vepte B).

(*e*) Romance verbs with syncopated preterites (cf. § 104):

al cost it, 6801 (-*e* CD).

(*f*) Other Romance verbs:

cessedę she (*apodosis*), 849 (cessed B, sesed C, sesid D †); cesid ‡ the, 3*rd pers.*, 2473 D.

lest any wight devynid ‡ or, 3300 D (*inf.* ABC).

I pose a woman grauntedę me, 3152 C (graunte AB, -ith D).

as though I labouręd me, 5671 AB (-boręd D).

but yf . . . passed oure, 3*rd pers.*, 4109 A (-id C, passe ‡ D).

(*g*) Exceptions:

and (= if) it haddę ben, 125 (had D).

though he . . . haddę poured, 299 (hadę C, had D); haddę nedę, 886 (had D).[1]

who-so haddę with hym ben, 1276 (had D).[2]

(yf that I) . . . had loued, 1501 (haddę BC).

(wolde . . . Ioue) . . . That I the haddę where, 4998 (haddë BC, -[dë] D); and (= if) ich haddę swych, 5727 (had D).

lest . . . seyde, 3*rd pers.*, 4829 ‡ B. Cf. nededę (*a*, above).

For *lystę*, see § 99.

§ 114. The Plural of the Preterite Subjunctive of both strong and weak verbs ends, like that of the present, in, *-en*, *-e* for all persons (cf. Child, § 56, *c*; ten Brink, § 195).

that ye dredden this, 1452 (-yn D; dreden B, drede C).

though we comen in, 6184 (-yn C) (pres. ?).

whilę we dwelten there, 6186 (dwellen B, dwelle C, duelle D).

lest . . . men wende, 489 f (: brende *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

though al the town behelde, 1463 f (-d D) (: selde *adv.*).

though alle herę foos it herde, 2513 f (-d D) (: with yerde).

(god forbede) . . . that ye . . . wroughte, 3604 f (-t C, -tyn D) (: thoughte *ind.* 3 *pl.*).

to aske . . . yf thaȝ they blythe were, 4524 f (: enquere *inf.* : fere

[1] Perhaps indicative.

[2] In C *haddë* or 9- syl.; but read *this day* for *yesterday* and *addę* is preserved.

*n.*); lest this tales . . . were, 5333 f (: fere *n.*); assayinge how here speres were whette, 8123 (-en B, -[e] D); Were hise nayles poynted neuere so sharpe, 2119.[1]

though ȝe . . . dreynte, 5592 f B (-t D, drenche † A, drenk † C) (: pleynte *n.* AB, pleynt CD).

he dorste not ye dwelte lengere, 7273 (-[e] B, duelle no C, dwelle ‡ there *inf.* C).

(if thei) . . . seyde hire (*poss. pl.*), 1126 (seying ‡ D).

if [that] thei ferd in, 1124 (-*e* B, fer ‡ with D).[2]

if . . . ye it toke, 1314 (told † B).

were hanged, 1 *pl.*, 1438; were (*before vowels*), 2 *pl.*, 4011 (-e bete C), 6309 (wer D).

hadde, 3 *pl.*, 4230,[3] 4232, 5638 (had D).[4]

wyst he that ye ferde, 5580. [Indic. ?]

though al this town criede, 5247 (cryed BCD).

that we tok oure leue, 6843 (-*e* BCD).

who that ther come, 7478.

Exceptions:

al seyde men soth, 3143 (seyd B, seid as D, seidyn as C).

Note.—In *lest it folk aspied*, 6050 f (espied D, aspie † A, aspiede † *sg.* C), we should read *aspyde* (: bytyde *prcs. subj.* 3 *sg.* : syde *n.*). In 1438 (see above), *were honged* may be regarded as a case either of apocope or of elision. In 4065 D *were* should be *be* (*so* AB, ben Ce); in 4358 ‡ C, *after ȝe were go* should be *after that ȝe go*.

§ 115. The Imperative second person Singular of Weak Verbs in the *Troilus* usually follows the Anglo-Saxon inflections: that is, it shows -*e* (A.S. -*a*) in the Second and Third Conjugations, and in the First Conjugation either ends in -*e* (A.S. -*e*) or has no ending, according as the stem-syllable was originally short or long (cf. Child, § 58; ten Brink, § 189).

In the following lists the examples given occur *before consonants* in the places cited, unless the contrary is indicated. An accompanying *thou*, *so*, or *as* is noted. As to the possibility that the construction with a preceding *thou* is subjunctive, see below, V, note, and § 117, II.

[1] Either *Were his* or 9-syl.

[2] Supply [*that*] in A, as indicated. BD have *that*. C is cut out here.

[3] Read a[*l*]s[*o*] in C.

[4] Read *swo*[*rn*] in A.

I. First Conjugation,—(*a*) verbs with stem originally short:

leye (A.S. lege), 2079 f (lay C, ley D) (: seye *inf.*), 2602 f (ley D) (: pleye *inf.* : to seye).

telle (A.S. tele), tel[le] which, 3254 (tel me CD)[1]; telle, 595. But,—telle, 681 (tel? D), 693 (tel BC, *om.* † D), 862 (tel C, tellë ‡ me D), 864 (tel C, teH D), 2479 (tel B, tellë ‡ D), 3210 (tel C, tellë ‡ if D); cf. 765, 1010, 2514, 5146, 6693[2]; tel me, 721, 5055 (telle C, teH[ë] ‡ D), 5301 (-H D); tel thi, 696; tel thou, 2696 CD (teH † yow A, tel † how B).

lette (A.S. lete), thow me nought ne lette, 3567 (that ‡ thou ne lette *subj.* D) (: fette *pret. ind.* 2 *sg.* : shette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

selle (A.S. sele), -*e*, 4304 (so ‡ selle C).

Note.—For the imperatives of *bidden*, *lyen*, see V. *Heue* (A. S. hefe) occurs only with elided -*e* (7522).

II. First Conjugation,—(*b*) verbs with stem originally long:

bryng (A.S. bring), 5744 (-(ę) BD).

hyd (A.S. hȳd), h. not, 595 (-(ę) BD); so hyd it, 613 (-(*e*) BCD). But,—Be diligent and trewe and ay wel *hide*, 950 f (: tyde *n.* : abyde *inf.*).

kep (A.S. cēp), 3174 (-(ę) BD); k. hire (*eam*), 3107 (-(*e*) BC, so ‡ help D); so kep alwey, 3108 C (saue ABD).[3]

kys (A.S. cȳs), 8154 (-(sę) BD).

kyth (A.S. cȳðð), 5200 (-(ę) CD, right ‡ B); kygh now, 5281 (right † B, kith D, kith (k)now(e) C).

lef, leef (A. S. lǣf); leef, 7881 (lef C, lef(ę) BD); lef al, 5514 (leef B, leu(*e*) C, leueth *pl.* D †).[4] But,—lev(ę), 5194 (lef C), 2585 ‡ D (lat AB, let C); leu(*e*), 2093.

lef (A.S. lȳf, lēf), 6741 (leu(ę) BCD). But,—bileu(*e*), 2587 (beleuë ‡ and C); so leu(*e*) it, 7322 (leu(*e*) ‡ B).

red (A.S. rēd), 8134 (-(ę) D).[5]

send (A.S. send), send(ę) me, 1614 (-d B, send[ë] me D).[6] But,—thow me grace sende, 3547 (synde C) (: ende *n.* : wende *inf.*).

thynk, thenk (A.S. þenc); thynk, 937 (-(ę) BC, thenk D); thenk, (i.) 1436 (thynk(ę) B, thynkyth ‡ C), 3130 (thynk B, think C),[7] 5128

[1] Tel (Telle G) which (-ę G) thou wylt of euerychone AB (the Cp. collation has no note on this line); Tel me, etc. CD. If we read *tel[lē]* in ABG and *tel* in CD, all five MSS. have 9-syl. verses. *Tel* is unmetrical in AB; *tel[lē]* in CD would make a full verse. [2] In 6693, *telle* might be taken for an infinitive.

[3] No *so* in AB. [4] In A read *we[r]k*.

[5] Might be construed as subjunctive. If imperative, the verb may be either singular or plural.

[6] But insert [*swich*] in D and read *send(ę)*. [7] Supply [*what*] in D.

(-(ę) D, thynk(ę) BC), cf. 2595, 3568, 4128, 5279, 5759, 7518 (thynkith ‡ C); thenk, (ii.) 890 (thynk B, thyng C), 1053, cf. 5079, 5262, 5270; thenk here (*hic*), 2465 (thynk(*e*) C).

werk (A.S. wyrc), (i.) 2078 (work D).[1]

trow (A.S. tréow), trow(ę) 6209 (-ę *pl.* B, -ęth *pl.* D).[2]

Note.—For *dred(ę)*, imperative of *dreden* (weak in Chaucer), see 3550 (dred C), 6719 (dred C).

III. Second Conjugation:

bridle (A.S. ge-brídla), bridle alwey, 4477 (brydęle C, bridęl D).

calle (A.S. cealla), *-e*, 3244 (cal CD);[3] *-e* hym, 3243 (cal CD, cal ‡ hem B).

glade (A.S. glada), 870 (-dde BC).

herkene, herke (A.S. heorcna, hercna); herkęne (*or* herkenę) for, 5691 (-ęnyth ‡ *pl.* D); herkęne it, 658 (-en B, herkęnyt it *pl.* C, herkęnith it *pl.* D); herkęne of, 5515 (-yn ‡ with D, werkęne † C). herke, 602 (-[e] D, herkęne *or* -enę C), 624 (-[e] D, -ęne *or* -enę C), 1023 (-[e] BD).

loke (A.S. lóca), 946 (-oo- B, lokę D †); *-e*, 862, 2405 (se ‡ thes D).

loue (A.S. lufa), *-e*, 807; *-e* hire (*eam*), 679, 5278; louę ‖ for, 1481; -ę me, 6935.

make (A.S. maca), 2102 (-ę thow B, thow makę D); so make vs, 8231 (mak B, or take ‡ D); makę the, 3545 (mak C); -ę no, 5112 (mak C); -ę redy thou, 5870 AD (mak B).[4]

pulle (A. S. pulla), *-e*, 958 (pul D, fellë ‡ it C).

Note.—For the imperative of *rewen* (a weak verb in Chaucer), see § 117, II.

IV. Third Conjugation:

fecche (A.S. feta, see Siev., § 416, *n.* 9), 6685 f (feche CD) (: wrecche *n.*).

folęwe (A.S. folga), -ęwe me, 3581 (-ęwe B, -ow D, folwe C); folwe alwey, 4969 (-ęw B, -ęwe D).

V. Exceptions:

To I. See under *telle*, above, and compare,—

byd (A.S. bide), byd for, 3184; but,—bidde hym, 5571 (bid BC).

ly (A.S. lige), ly stille, 2038 (li BC); but,—lyę right, 2604 (ly C, be † D).

set (A.S. sete), set the, 5284 (sett D); set a cas (=put case, suppose), 1814 (sette C, set y *inf.* D †).[5]

[1] In C read *for-thy* for *for thyn*; in D supply [*shal*].
[2] In AC change *þow* (*þou*) to *yow* and *trowę* becomes pl.
[3] Supply [*that*] in D.
[4] In D read *my her*[*e*] for *me her* † *ber*.
[5] In A read *y*[*wys*].

To II. See under *hyd, send, trow(ę)*, above, and compare,—

quenche (A.S. á-cwenc), thou . . . quenche, 5173 f (-ch D) (: drenche *inf.*).

so spede it, 2147 (-ë ‡ it C, -*e* D †).

wende (A. S. wend), thow wende, 5308 (: blende *cæcare* : sende *inf.*).

To III. See under *loue, make*, above, and compare,—

put (from A.S. potian?) not, 783; put thyn, 5781 (C †).

To IV. haue (A.S. hafa), 831, 1608[1], 3183, 3262, 5282 (D?); -*e* al, 3173 (-ë ‡ al D); -*e* here (*hic*), 1054 (D?), 1409 ‡ A, 2405, 3953 (?), 7521.

seye (A.S. saga), 925 (sey BCD); sey, 928 (-ę B), 2496, 2603 (-ę B), 2605 (-[ë] ‡ C). [Var. C say, sei.]

Note.—With regard to the exceptions above noticed, it should be observed that forms like *déme, hýre, telle, cwell* occur in Late West Saxon, and forms like *ner, sel*, etc., in Northumbrian (Sievers, § 410, *n.* 3). In phrases like *thou sende, thou wende*, one is tempted to regard the verb as subjunctive (cf. § 117, II). *Fellë it*, 958 C, is an error for *pulle it*.

VI. Verbs of Germanic origin, but not found in Anglo-Saxon:

beblotte, 2112.[2]

iompre ek, 2122 (iumpęre C).

trust (O.N. treysta, *imv.* treyst), ne trust no, 5053 (-(ę) B)[3]; thow trust to, 6773 (-ë me CD).[4]

vnneste, 4967 f (-t D, wonest † C) (: the wofulleste : breste *inf.*).

## § 116. The Imperative second person Singular of Verbs of Latin or Romance derivation ends in the *Troilus* in -*e* (cf. ten Brink, § 189).

In the following lists an accompanying *thou, so*, or *as* is noted (cf. § 118, p. 280).

I. Before consonants or in rhyme:

scorne, 576 (-ę me CD).

repreue, 669 (reprouę ‡ thow D).

assure, 680 f (-eure B; assure ‡ *ind.* 1 *sg.* D) (: endure *ind.* 2 *pl.*).

delite, 704 (A?).

suffre, 755 (-fęre C, lete † D), cf. 947.

thow hym gyde, 1162 f (: by syde).

thow . . . purueye, 1511 f (-vey D) (: deye *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

eschuwe, 2103 f (-ue B; that thou eschewe *subj.* CD) (: saluwe *inf.*).

[1] In A read [*vp*]*on*, thus avoiding hiatus. [2] Supply [*ek*] in C, [*thy*] in D.
[3] Perhaps 3 *sg. subj.* [4] No *thou* in BCD.

But,—eschewę thou, 634 (eshewę B, -chew D, excusę † C).
compleyne, 2584 f (: peyne *n.*).
thow me enspire, 3554 f (thou me en- D, thou me this nyȝt enspire C) (: desire *inf.* : in the fyre).
delyuęre, 5177 (-er D; C ?).
deuyne, 5251.
receyue, 5872.
thow dispone, 6663 f (: to done).
offre, 6669 (-fęre C).
thou nenuye, 8152 f (thou ‡ enuye D) (: dye *subj.* 3 *sg.* : poesye).

II. Before vowels :

persẽuęre in, 951.
plaunte, 957.
accepte, 1614 (D ?).
reherse, 2114.
saue, 3108 (so save D, so kep ‡ C).
departe, 3246 (-ẽ ‡ it D).[1]
parforme, 3259 (-forne BC, -fourme D).[2]
prey, 3560 (prey [al] C).
gide, 6685 (guide D, gyde ‡ *pl.* C).
defende, 8230.

III. Before *h* :

pray hym, 2543 (prey C, preye B).
distreyne herę (*poss. sg.*), 6959.
delỹuęre herę (*acc.*), 8106 (-ęr BD).

IV. Apocope :

prey || now, 2584 (-ę B, pray D, preye C); cf. II., III.

§ 117. The Imperative second person Singular of Strong Verbs has in the *Troĭlus*, as in Anglo-Saxon, no *-e* (Child, § 18, b; ten Brink, § 189).

An accompanyĭng *thou*, *so*, or *as* is noted (cf. § 118, p. 280).

I. Regular :

abyd, (i.) 2070 (-(e) D; quod ‡ C), 2075 (-(e) D, abit C), 2604 ‡ C.
(ii.) 2070 AB (-(ę) C, -(e) D) (Cf. *byd*(*e*), under II, below.)
beet, (i.) 925 (bet(e) CD).
com, (i.) 5164 (-(e) CD). But,—com(ę), 7501.
dryf, (ii.) 6722 (-u(e) BD).

[1] But supply [*so*] in D, and read *departe*.

[2] Read *most*[*ẽ*] *nede* in ABCD.

farwel,[1] 1053 (-(e) D); farẹwel, 1033, 2609 (far C), 3703 (far C), 4367 (*pl.* ?) (far BCD), 6916 (far C), cf. 6390, 7539; far(e) now wel, 5320 (far C); far(*e*), 878, 2084 (do ‡ A).

gnaw, (i.) 509 (-(e) B, gnow(e) D).

help, (i.) 10 (-(e) D), 2093 (-(e) B), 5252 (-(e) BD); so help ‡ her, 3107 D (kep A, kepe BC); thow help(e) me, 6 (thow help B); helpẹ me god, 2211 (*perh. subj.* 3 *sg.*) (help D, helpë god *subj.* C).

Note.—The imperative *help* has in some cases become almost a mere interjection (see 533, 1007, 3566, 3573, 5812); but lines like 1047, 3570, 3573, allow us to see the original construction (cf. helpe, *sbst.*, p. 17, note). In 3900 we perhaps have a *subj.* 3 *sg.*

hold, (i.) 2105 (D †), 4311 (-(e) D, -e ȝow(?) C), 5782 (-(e) D); so hold, 5117 (-(e) BD, held C). (ii.) 2124; hold here (*acc.*), 5194 (-(e) D). But,— hold(ẹ), 2619 (-d CD), 4474 (-d BC).

lat, (i.) 616 (-(e) D), 701, 760, 2038 (-(e) D, -(*e*) A), 2585 (levẹ ‡ D), 5199 (lett D), 5759 AB (let D)[2]; cf. 856, 1021, 2137, 2141, 2486, 2515, 2607, 5061, 5112, 5283, 5313, 7644. [Var. CD let; D let(e).] (ii.) 702 (let(e) D; C †); cf. 4968, 6752, 6756, 6844, 6845, 7492; lat here (*acc.*), 5193 (let(e) D)[3] (cf. 5249 C, 5500, 6722). But,— lat(ẹ), 3255 (lat B, let CD), 3582 (lat BC, let(ẹ) D); cf. 2038 A, 3262; lat(*e*) hym, 2562 (?) (lat B, let C, let(*e*) D).

Note.—How completely the adhortative first person plural and the periphrasis with *lat* had become synonymous may be seen from such passages as the following:

But *fle we* now prolixite best is
For loue of God and *lat vs* faste *go*. . .

And *late vs* of here saluynges pace, 2649-50, 2653, (lat . . . let C, let(e) . . . let D).

So *go we* seen the paleys of Criseyde
For syn we yet may haue nomore feste
So *lat vs seen* here paleys at the leste, 6886-88 (As go B, As goo D, Go C; Yett let(e) vs goo se D). Compare also,—

Now *late here slepe* and *we* oure tales holde, 2107 (lat BC; Now lete we her slepe & forth our talis hold D).

Now *late hem rede* and *turne we* a-noon, 2794 (lat B, let(e) D).

Now *late here wende* vn to here owne place
And *torne we* to Troylus a-yen, 3060-1 (lat B, let C, Now let(e) we her wend to, etc. D); cf. 1772-3.

In all these cases, as well as those in which Chaucer addresses his audience, we should probably regard the *lat* as imperative plural (see 1079, 4515).

ren, (i.) 7019 (ren(ne) BD).

ryd, (i.) 2098 (-(e) BD); rid(e), 2105 (ryd C, ride D †).

[1] The variations noted concern merely *far*; the second part of this quasi-compound is written *wel*, *well*, or *wele* (never dissyllabic). The accent is on *far* in 1033, 3703, 4367 CD, 6916, 6390 BD, 7539; on *wel* in 1053, 2609, 4367 AB, 6390 A.

[2] Supply [*thi*] in A.

[3] Supply [*of*] in B.

rys, (i.) 6756 (-(e) D), 6770 (r. ‡ vp C, ris(ę) D). (ii.) 5199 (-(e) BD); cf. 5255, 5307, 6751 A. But,— rys(ę), 6751 B (rys C, aris(ę) ‡ D).

se, (i.) 894, 1697 ABC (*perh. pl.*), 2405 ‡ D, 7659.

spek, (i.) 2542 (-(e) D), 2584 (-(e) BCD), 3954 (-(e) CD) (*perh. pl.*).

stond, (i.) 962 (-(e) B).

tak, (i.) 344 (-(e) BD, *om.* ‡ C). (ii.) tak it, 4463 (-(ę) B, -(*e*) D, tak now C); tak herte, 5279 (-(e) BD; C †). But,— tak(ę), 5514 (tak C, -eth D †), cf. 6668; tak(*e*), 8231 ‡ D; tak(e) hede, 5769 (tak C ?).

wassh, (i.) 5308 (wessh B, wasch C, waissh(e) D).

wep, (ii.) 7881 (-(*e*) B, -(ę) CD).

worth, (ii.) 2096 ( (-*e*) C, worth thow B, worth(e) thou D).

yef, (i.) 6671 (ȝef B, ȝif C, yif D); y. thow, 2148 (ȝif BC, ȝev(e) D).[1] But,—yeu(ę), 1035 (ȝif BC, yef D); so yeu(*e*), 6677 (ȝeu(*e*) BC).

II. Exceptions.

In a few cases forms in -e (sounded) occur. These cases are,—

thow breste, 6208 f (to-breste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* BCG Cp. John's, which is no doubt the correct reading) (: leste *subj. pres.* 2 *sg.* AC, 3 *sg.* B, 2 *pl.* D).

thow . . . rewe, 7070 f (: trewe *pred. adj. sg.*).

thow write, 2111 f (: endite *inf.* : a lyte).

In these instances it will be observed that *thow* precedes the verb, and we are perhaps justified in regarding the forms as jussive subjunctives (cf. § 115, V, note). *Thow helpę me*, 6 (thow help B) cannot well be used as an argument against this view, for apocope is frequent in the subjunctive mood (see § 111). The imperatives *rewe*, 5743 (rew C), 5838 (rew BD), and *writ*(e) *here* (dat.), 7671 (writ(*e*) (to) hire C), are indecisive, since they stand before a vowel or *h*. It should be remembered, however, that *rewen* is a weak verb in Chaucer. There are many other cases in which -e is written in the imperative singular of strong verbs, even in MS. A, but in none of these instances is the -e pronounced : see above (I.) under *com*, *far*, *help*, *hold*, *lat*, *ryd*, *rys*, *tak*, *yef*, and add,—

awak(ę), 729; awak(*e*) he, 751 (awak B, -ë ‡ he D).

ber(ę), 6212 (ber B).

byd(ę), 2604 (-d B, abyd ‡ C, tabide † *inf.* D); byd(*e*), 3582 (bid B, byd C).

ches(*e*), 2040 (sches C).[2]

writ(*e*) here (*dat.*), 7671 (-(*e*) (to) hire C).

[1] In C read *wit* for *wilt*.

[2] Supply [*And*] in A.

wyt(*e*), 2085.

Note.—For the imperatives of *bilden*, *lyen*, see § 115, V. For the imperative of *heuen*, see § 115, I, note. For the imperative of *dreden*, see § 115, II, note. *Flen* (cf. §§ 96, 103) has *fle* (4968).

§ 118. The Imperative second person Plural of verbs, strong or weak, native or naturalized, ends in the *Troilus* in *-eth*, *-eþ*, *-th*; but forms in *-e* and forms without any termination are very common (cf. Child, § 59; ten Brink, § 189).[1]

Commands in the second person plural are expressed in Anglo-Saxon in three ways: (1) by the regular imperative plural in *-að*, (2) by the regular subjunctive plural in *-en*, and (3) by a form in *-e*. This last form is used only when the subject *gé* immediately follows the verb and is especially common in prohibitions, but in no construction or situation is it employed to the exclusion of the forms in *-að* and *-en*. It was doubtless originally a subjunctive, but in West Saxon it became indistinguishable from the imperative and indeed it is sometimes co-ordinated with *-að* in the same sentence (as,— *nime gé . . . ond settað*, Cura Past., 345, 15; *ne fare gé né ne fyliað*, Luc. 17, 23)[2]. See Sievers, § 360, Anm.; Cosijn, *Altws Gr.*, II, §§ 75, 77; Mätzner, *Engl. Gr.*, II, i, p. 138, ed. 1864; Hennicke, *Der Conjunctiv im Altenglischen*, Göttingen, 1878, pp. 11, 12; Hotz, *On the Use of the Subjunctive Mood in Anglo-Saxon and its further History in Old English*, Zürich, 1882, pp. 13-15; Fleischhauer, *Ueber den Gebrauch des Conjunctivs in Alfred's altengl. Uebersetzung von Gregor's Cura Past.*, Erlangen, 1885, pp. 4, 5, 87; Wohlfahrt, *Die Syntax des Verbums in Ælfric's Uebersetzung des Heptateuch und des Buches Hiob*, München, 1885, pp. 2, 3; Prollius, *Ueber den syntact. Gebrauch des Conj. in den Cynewulfschen Dichtungen Elene, Juliana u. Crist*, Marburg, 1888, p. 5; P. T. Kühn, *Die Syntax des Verbums in Ælfrics Heiligenleben*, Leipzig-Reudnitz, 1889, p. 10.

In the *Troilus* the form in *-eth* and the form in *-e* are both common, and they are often joined in the same sentence. The form in *-e* is usually felt as an imperative; but when *ye* precedes (as in *ye me lere*, 1182) the construction may have retained some of its original subjunctive force (cf. in the singular, *thou quenche*, etc.; see §§ 115, V, and note, 116, 117, II). Forms in *-ę* (apocopated) or without ending also occur, and some of these may be due to an extension of the singular form to the plural or to the petrifaction of a singular in an idiomatic use. Cf. especially *lat* in the periphrasis *lat us* with inf. (*latteth* is altogether unknown to Chaucer).

In the examples that follow (I.—IV.) an accompanying *so* or *ye* is noted.

I. -eth (var. CD -ith, -yth)[3]:

preyeth, 29 (-[e]th), 32.
biddeth, 40 (-ith ‡ D), 43.
ye . . . dwelleth, 119 (-yt B; D †).
refuseth, 255 (-eth ‡ C, grucchith D), 2296 (refuse ‡ it C).
douteth, 683 (-eht B).
disblameth, 1102 (des- B).

[1] *Rewes*, 6163 A, is a scribe's error.

[2] So also the imperative and the subjunctive in *-n* may be co-ordinated in the same sentence. Thus,— *ne ondrádað éow né gé ne onforhtion*, Ælfric, Deuter. 31, 6.

[3] Before consonants unless the contrary is noted. Old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows.

sitteth, 1298 (sitheth B).
quaketh, 1387.[1]
herkẹneth, 1400[2] (cf. 52, 2195, 5958, 6034 (bef. *how*), 8148).
loketh, 2220.
lotteth, 2221 (-e[t]h B).
thanketh hym, 2293 (thonk[ith] D).
abydeth, 2800.
so techeth, 2883, 4135.
draweth, 3019 (-et B).
careth, 3512.
wyrcheth, 3785 (werk- B, werch-ith C, wurkith D).
liggeth, 3790 (lith C).
kneleth, 3807.
swowneth, 4032.
iuggeth ye, 4154.
helpeth, 4688.
so . . . shappeth, 5587; so s. how, 5596 (-ẹth ? D).
suffreth, 5866 (-ferȳth C).
taketh, 5955 (B ?), cf. 3790.
so reweth, 6163 BD (-ith C, rewes A).
thenketh, 6238 (thynk- B, thynk-yth C, thinketh D).
maketh, 6248.
leueth, 6278.
vp casteth, 8201 (D ?).
loueth hym, 8205.[3]

Compare also 232, 259 D (bef. *him*), 538, 687, 1388, 2511, 2737 C, 3790 (bef. *hym*), 4050, 4990, 6182, 6221 (bef. *hede*), 6252, 6525, 6668 C (bef. *hede*), 7250, 7266 (bef. *heed*), 7281, 7749, 7762, 8200 (bef. *hom*), 8203, and the examples cited under II.—IV.

Note.—Observe the variations of ending in B 119, B 683, and cf.,—takyt, 232 C; herkẹnyt, 658 C; trusteht, 2330 B; herknet, 8148 B; herkẹnet, 2195 B; douteht, 683 B.

II. Syncopated forms[4]:

refusẹth, 255 C (-eth not AB, grucchith not D).
arysẹth, 1306 (-*e* D, -eth lat B).
castṭh, 1307 D (cast ABC).
biddẹth, 1659 C (byd AB, bid D).
takyth hede, 1666 C (tak A, take BD), cf. 1376 D; -ẹth, 2801 C (takẹ AD, tak B); -yth, 3051 C (tak AB, -ẹ D).
tellịth, 2190 C (tel AB, tel D †).
bryngyth, 2217 C (bryng A, -ẹ B, bring D).
spekịth, 2372 D (spek AB, spekẹ C).
sleth, 2821 C (sle ABD).
comịth, 3511 D (-*e* ABC).
hauẹth, 3595 (-yth C, haue BD); -yth, 2218 C (hauẹ ABD); havịth here (*hic*), 3727 D (-*e* ABC).
seth, 3805 (se B, sey C, y-sey D).

[1] Supply [*not*] in B.
[2] In A cut out (*yow*).
[3] Supply [*that*] in B, [*the*] in D.
[4] Old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows.

seith, 4018 C (do AB, doth D).
so shapeth you, 5596 D (-eth how AB, -yth to C).
duellęth, 6111 D (dwellę ABC).
trowęth, 6209 D.
thynkith, 6249 C (thenk A, thynkę B, thinkę D); cf. 1436 C, 5979 C, 7518 C.
dryuęth, 6277 C (dryf A, dryfe B, dryue D).
faręth now wel, 6349 AD (B?), 7784 C (farę AD), 7994 (farth B, farith C); -ęth wel, 7775 AD (farwel C). But cf. 5869.
comaundith, 6495 C (-ëth me ABD).
meruellęth, 6525 D (wondreth AB, -dęrith C).

Note.—It will be observed that syncopated forms are not common in A.

III. Forms in -e :

ye me lere, 1182 (leere B, lere *inf.* D).
loke ye, 2733 (-eth B, -ith C, -ith [ye] D), 2737 (-ith CD, lakketh † B); loke that, 2804 (-ith D); loke thanne, 3158, 3718[1]; lookë ‖ alwey, 2194 B (lokë D, lokę that C, lok [that] A).
avise yow, 2815 (-eth BC, -ith D).
so help[e] to, 3577 (-eth B, now helpyth C, now helpith D).
styntë ‡ al, 3948 B (stynt *p.p.* ACD).
thenk[e] thowgh, 4128 (thynk that B, -eth thouȝ D; C †).
smytë of, 4415.
take not, 6498 (-eth B, -yth C)[2]; cf. 3704.
hèrkene it, 658 (-en B, herkęnyt C, herkęnith D).
telle it, 1181 (tel BD).
cache, 1376 (tache C, takith D).
late, 2029 (lat BC, lete D); cf. 4148 (?), 5905.
refuse, 2239 (refusę ȝe it = ȝe't D); cf., however, 2296.
aquyte hym, 2285 (aquit it C).
ye . . . inhelde, 2886 (in hielde B, inheld D).
rewe, 4766 (-ith D, rew? B).
so yeue hym, 4772 (ȝif B, grauntith ‡ me D); foryeue, 5948 (-ȝeue BC, -yeveth me D), 7707 (-ȝeue BC, -yef D).
receyue, 4983.
so loue here (*acc.*), 5278.

IV. Forms in -ę or without ending :

(*a*) Before consonants :

help me, 535 (-ę D).
yif me, 1378 (ȝif BC, yevę D); yeuę me, 6515 (ȝeuę C, ȝif C, yef D).

[1] Supply [*that*] in BD. [2] In 6498 A *take* might easily be construed as infinitive.

vnderstondę for, 1443 (-ë ‡ B, -d CD)[1]; stond not, 3405 (stant B, stond we *subj.* 1 *pl.* D).[2]
tel me, 1586, 1589 (B †); tellę me, 1395 (tel BC), 2363 (tel CD).[3]
lat youre, 1469 (C †, letę ? D); lat this, 1482 (letę D); so lat me, 1522 (letę D); lat be, 2229 (let C, letę D), 3405 (let CD)[4]; lat preue, 3890 (let CD); lat now, 3981 (letę D); lat sle, 4143 (let C); cf. 117, 1194, 1204, 1399, 1635, 3010, 3598, 3602, 4855, 5586 ‡ C.
awakę || ye slepen, 1630.
byd me, 1659 (biddęth C, bid ȝe D).
lokę that, 2194 C (lok [that] A, lookë || alwey B, lokë al wey D).
ne bryng me, 2217 (-ę B, -yth C).
yif me, 2289 (ȝif BC, ȝef D).
styntę that, 2327 (stynt D).
thenk which, 2822 (thynkę B, think C, thenk † one D); so thynk that, 4128 B (thenk[e] thowgh A, -eth thouȝ D; C †).
foryet this, 5458 (-ȝet BC, -yetę D).
so lef this, 5558 (leuyth C, leuę D), 5586 (leuę D, lat be C).
farewel, 5869 (far BC; D †)[5]; farę now wel, 7784 AD (-ęth C). But cf. 6349, 7775, 7994.
dwellę rathere, 6111 (duellęth D).
trowę me, 6209 B (-ęth D; -ę *sg.* AC).
hold forward, 6860 (-ę BD), cf. 6447.
makę good, 7276.

wre you, 1465 (werę † B, wri C, couęrę ‡ D).
y-se who, 2338 (I-see B, lo ‡ C); se ye, 995 (se now BC).[6]
o fle not, 2339.
sle nought, 2821 (sleth C).

(*b*) Before vowels or h :

rys, 1196 (-*e* BD),[7] 2029 (-*e* D); arys, 5577 (-*e* D).
tel, 1207 (-tell*e* B, -H D; C †).
tel, 2190 (-ith C; D †), 2280.
trist, 1391 (trustith ‡ me D).
com, 1395 (-*e* D), 2823 (-*e* CD, com [of] B), 2827 (-*e* C, -ë ‡ of D).
thenk, 1478 (thynk B, think C); thynk, 7749 C (-eth AD); so thenk, 6160 (thynk*e* BC, thinke D). Cf. 1459, 2824.

[1] In B we should supply [*yow*] and read -ę.
[2] In A supply [*ne*].
[3] Infinitive ?
[4] In A supply [*ne*].
[5] Dele (*now*) in A; insert [*my*] in B.
[6] Probably the correction *ye* to *now* should be made and *se* regarded as singular.
[7] Supply [*and*] in D.

tak hede, 1666 (*-e* BD, *-yth* C); tak it, 1337 (*-e* CD).

ber, 2226 (*-e* CD).

cast, 2241 (*-e* C, *-e* [it] B), cf. 1700.

se how, 3804 [1], 6594 ABD.

sey, 3948 (sei C, seie D).

lat, 4346 (let C); cf. 5906, 5963, 5964, 6263, 6858, 6860; lat hem, 4164 (let D).

Further examples of the imperative plural in -e or without an ending may be seen in,—

But *lat* be this and *telle* me how ye fare
*Do* wey youre barbe and *shewe* youre face bare
*Do* wey youre book *rys* vp and *late* vs daunce
And *lat* vs don to may som obseruaunce, 1194-7 (tel . . . swow † . . . . ryse . . . lat . . . lat B; tel . . . schew . . . lat . . . lat C, let . . . shew . . . risë vp . . . let . . . lete D).

*Lat* be [to me][2] youre frendly[3] manere speche
And *sey* to me, etc., 1333-4 (lat . . . say B, let . . . sey CD).

. . . em I preye
Swych answere as yow lyst yow self *purueye*, 2244-5 (D †).

*Lat* be youre nice shame and youre folye
And *spek* with hym in esyng of his herte
*Lat* nicete not do yow bothe smerte, 2371-3 (let . . . speke . . . let C, lete . . . spekith . . . lete D).

For loue of god *make* of this thyng an ende
Or *sle* vs bothe, 2960-1 (mak . . . slo C; D †).

*Loke* al be wel and *do* now as yow lyste, 3430 (look . . . [and] do B, loke . . . y do *ind.* D).

*Lat* Troye an Troian fro youre herte pace
*Dryf* out that bittre hope and *make* good chere
And *clepe* ayen the beaute of youre face, 7275-7 (late . . . dryue . . . make . . . clepe B; let . . . dryue . . . make . . . clepe D).

The freedom with which imperatives in *-eth* are co-ordinated with these truncated forms is shown by the following passages,—

*remembre* yow . . . and *thenketh*, 24-26 A (-breth . . . thenketh B, remembre . . . thynke D †).

. . . *aryseth* and *lat* vs daunce
And *cast* youre wydwes habit to myschaunce, 1306-7 (ariseth lat . . . cast B, arise and lete . . . castith D).

*Sey* on *lat* me not yn this fere dwelle
So wol I don now *herkeneth* I shal yow (*om.* BCD) telle, 1399-1400 (let . . . herkenyth C, let . . . herkenith D).

*Auiseth* you on it whan ye han space
And of som goodly answere yow *purchace*, 2209-10 (avise ȝow . . . purchase C, avisith . . . purchace D); cf. 2815.

[1] Supply [*can*] in B.
[2] *to me* om. in A, but found in BCD.
[3] frende B, frendely C, frend[e] D. Read *fremde*.

Nay nece quod Pandare *sey* not so
Yet at the leste *thanketh* hym I preye
Of his good wil and *doth* hym not to deye
Now for the loue of me my nece dere
*Refuseth* not at this tymę my preyere, 2292-6 (thonketh B, thankith . . . refuse ‡ it C, thonk[ë] . . . refusith D).

Now *stynte* that ye . . . . . .

. . . . . .

But *hasteth* yow to don hym ioye haue
For *trusteth* wel to longe don hardnesse, etc., 2327-9-30 (trusteht B, hastyth . . . trosteth C, stynt . . . hastith . . . trustith D).

*Rys takę* with yow yowrę nece Antigone

. . . . . .

The lasse pres the bet *comę* forth with me
And *lokë* that ye thonkë humbely
Hem alle thre and whan ye may goodly
Yourę tyme y-se *taketh* of hem youre leue, 2801-3-4-5-6 (ris tak . . . cǫm . . . loke . . . taketh B, rys takęth . . . comę . . . loke . . . takyth C, rys takę . . . com . . . lokith . . . takith D).

*Stynteth* right here and softely yow *pleye*, 2814 (stynteth . . . *om.* † B, styntith . . . ȝe pleye C, styntith . . . soft[e]ly ȝow play D) (: I preye *ind.*).

*Com* of therfore and *bryngeth* hym to hele, 2835 (bryngë C, come . . . bring ȝe hym D).

Now *beth* al hol no lengere ye ne *pleyne*, 3010 (peyne C, no longer that ȝe pleyn D) (: feyne *inf.*, feyn D).

And *eseth* thorę youre hertes right y-nough
And *lat* se which, etc., 3039-40 (ese † . . . lat C, esith . . . let D).

*Tak* nece myn yourę leue at alle thre
And *late* hem speke and *cometh* forth with me, 3051-2 (lat B, takyth . . . comyth C, takę . . . let . . . comith D).

And yf ye lyggen wel to nyght *come* ofte
And *careth* not what weder is on lofte, 3511-12 (carith C, comith . . . carith D).

Ne *wondreth* not ne *haueth* of it no fere

. . . . . .

*Lat* no wight rysen, 3595-8 (-dęreth . . . haue . . . lat B, -dęryth . . . hauyth . . . let hem C, -drith . . . have . . . let no (?) D).

*Haue* here and *bereth* hym this blewe rynge

. . . . . .

And *sey* my, etc., 3727-30 (haue . . . berë . . . sey C, havith . . . berith . . . sey [my] D).

For *trusteth* wel . . . So (To† A) *spekę* yourę self, 3748-51 (spek B, trostyth . . . spekę C, trustith . . . spekę D).

. . . *se* how this lord kan knele
Now for yourę trouthe *seth* this gentil man

. . . . . .

And seyde *kneleth* now, 3804-5-7 (se . . . se . . . kneleth B, how wel . . . sey ȝone . . . knelith C, how wel . . . y sey (=y-se ?) . . . knelith D).

And euerę more on this nyght yow *recorde*
And *beth* wel war. . .

. . . . . .

*Foryeue* it me, etc., 4021-2-5 (ffor-ȝif C, ȝe ‡ recorde D) (: mysericorde *n.*).

*Beth* glad forthi and *lyue* in sykernesse, 4355 (leuyth C, be . . . lyuęth D).

And *shappeth* yow his sorwe for to a-bregge
And nought encresse leue nece swete
*Buth* rather to hym [cause] of flat than egge
And with som wysdom *ye* his sorwes *bete*, 5587-90 (shapeth . . beth. . . . beete B, schapyth . . . be . . . bete C, shapeth . . . beth . . . bete D).

So *shappeth* how distourbe this goynge
. . . . . .
And *lat* sen now, etc., 5596-9 (shapeth B, schapyth to . . . let C, shapęth you . . . lett D).

. . . *beth* glad now yf ye konne
[1] And *thynk* right thus, 5978-9 (thynk B, thynkith C, thenkë D).[2]
So *rewes* on myn aspre peynes smerte
And *doth* somwhat. . .
And *lat* vs stele away by-twext vs tweye
And *thenk* that folye is, etc., 6163-6 (reweth . . . thynkę B, rewith . . . thyng C, reweth . . . letc . . . thinkę D).

And forthi *sle* with reson al this hete
. . . . . .
Thus *maketh* vertue of necessite
*By* pacient and *thenk* that lord is he, 6245-8-9 (by paciens . . . thynkę B, this makyth . . . beth pacient . . . thynkith C, be pacient . . . thinkę D).

And *thenketh* wel. . .
. . . . . .
*Dryf* out the fantasies yow with-inne
And *trusteth* me and *leueth* ek youre sorwe
Or *her* my trouthe I wol not lyuę til morwe, 6273-7-8-9 (thynketh . . . dryfe . . . herę C, thynkyth . . . dryueth . . . trostyth . . . leuyth . . . herę D, me thinketh ‡ *ind.* . . . dryue D).

Now *hold* yowre day and *doth* me not to deye, 6447 (do B, help ‡ this day and do C, holdęth . . . letë ‡ D).

Now *writeth* swete and *lat* me thus not pleyne, 7762 (-yth . . . let C, -eth . . . letę D).

## § 119. The Infinitive ends in the *Troilus* in *-en, -ęn, -e, -ę* (cf. Child, § 60; ten Brink, § 190). In *to seyne, to sene, to done*, the *-ne* of the A.S. gerund or dative-infinitive is preserved.

Variants in *-yn, -in* are found; *-yn* is particularly common in C.

The spelling *-ene* in *for to trostenę*, 690 C, *to chaungen . . . and . . . ȝeuenę*, 4721-2 B, is rather a scribe's eccentricity than a reminiscence of the gerundial ending.

Note.—The prefix *y-* (very common with the *p. p.*, see §§ 121-2 *passim*) is occasionally found with the infinitive: *y-se*, see § 119, XII.; *y-the*, 1755 f (the ACD); *i-the*, 5101 f B (the A, be ‡ C, thee D) (cf. § 119, XI.); *y-here*, 5975 f (yheere B, [y]here C, here D). But in 1439, 5500 (*y-se*), the *-e* of the preceding word may have been carried over, and in 1755, 5101, we may choose between *neuër the* and *neuęr y-the*.

[1] Here begins a new stanza, but the construction continues. [2] D omits *And*.

The examples are arranged as follows,—I. -en before consonants; II. -en in rhyme; III. -en before vowels; IV. -en before *h*; V. syncope, -ẹn; VI. -e before consonants; VII. -e in rhyme; VIII. -*e* (elided) before vowels; IX. -*e* (elided) before *h*; X. apocope of -e; XI. hiatus; XII. contracted forms,—*fle, sle, the, wre*; XIII. gerundial infinitives,—*to seyne, to sene, to done* (with the other infinitive forms of these three verbs).

I. -en before consonants (of all kinds, except *h*):

seken bote, 763 (sychen C, seche D).
suffren loues, 971 (souęren B, soffęre (?) C, suffre D).
helpen sely, 1768 (-e C, -[e] D).
wexen dymme, 1993 (-e dunne CD).
gladen lo, 2064 (-yn D; C †).
lyuen for, 2212 (leuyn C, lyvyn D).
helen the, 2400 (-e CD).
auaylen now, 2515 (-e C; D †).
dishesen for, 2735 (-esen D, -esin C, -sese D).
axen red, 2783 (-in D).
wrathen yow, 3016 (-e C ‡ ?, -yn D, wreth[e] B).
cursen slouthe, 3738 (-yn CD, corsen B).
maken chere (clere † A), 4506 (-e C, -yn D).
Cf. also 139, 252, 380, 435, 838, 1529, 1598, 2480, 2640, 4248, 4539, 4622, 5288, 5607, 5694, 6445, 6870, 7161, 7916, etc., etc.

Note.—The spelling *-yn* is rare in A: see *she may ledyn Paris*, 2534 (-en B, -e C).[1]

II. -en in rhyme:

tellen, 1 (: fellen *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.*).
wayten, 190 (-e D): beyten *inf.*, 192 (-yn C, -e D, baten B).
descenden, 216 (-yn CD) (: wenden *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.*).
quyken, 295 (queken C, qwykyn D): stiken *inf.*, 297 (-yn D, quekyn C); quyken, 5293 (-yn CD): pryken *inf.*, 5295 (-yn C).
dyen, 306 (deyen BC) (: dryen *patiuntur*: eyen *n. pl.*); dyen, 1412 (-ey- BC): lye *inf.*, 1409 (lyen CD) (: eyen); deyen, 1621 (dyen BD): bywryen *inf.*, 1622 ([be]- B) (: eyen); dyen, 3027 (deyȝen C) (: eyen). (See *eyen*, n. pl., § 4, p. 8.)
maken, 562 (-e CD): awaken *inf.*, 564 (-yn C, wake D) (: spaken *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -yn C, -e D); maken, 3734 (-yn CD) (: shaken *p.p.*, -e C, -yn D).
weylen, † 1369 (weyuen B, weyue CD): receyuen *inf.*, 1367 (-e CD) (: deseyuen *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -e C; D †).

[1] In D supply [*For*].

lyuen, 1663 f (-yn D, leuyn C) (: dreuen, -yn C, dryuen B, -yn D : schryuen, -yn D, screuyn B, schreuyn C, *both p.p.*); lyuen, 2066 (-in D, leuyn C) (: (y)dreuen *p.p.*, dryuen B, dreuyn C, -in D).

cryen, 1731 : aspien *inf.*, 1734 (-yen BCD) (: eyen *n. pl.*). Cf. 3977, etc., below.

dryen *pati*, 1951 (: eyen *n. pl.* : crien 3 *pl.*).

wàryen, 2704 (-ye C, -ien D) : vàryen *inf.*, 2706 (-ie C, tarien † D) : tàryen *inf.*, 2707 (-ien D, *l. om.* C).

comen, 3097 (-yn CD) (: becomen *p.p.*, -yn CD).

excusen, 3867 (-yn C, -e D) (: vsen *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -yn CD).

espyen, 3977 (aspien BD) (: eyen *n. pl.*, iȝen D); espyen, 7177 (asspyen C) (: syen *viderunt*, seyen C : eyen *n. pl.*, yen BD). Cf. 1731, above, 4296, below.

escapen, 4084 (as- D, eschape C) (: shapen *p.p.*, -e C).

honouren, 4104 (-yn C, *to honouryn* D) : socouren *inf.*, 4106 (-on B, -yn CD) (: labouren *ind.* 3 *pl.*; -on B, -yn CD[e]).

spyen, 4296 (tò ‡ espỳen C, tò ‡ aspìen D) (: ywryen *p.p.* : eyen *n. pl.*, eyȝyn C, yen D). Cf. 3977, above.

flowen, 4600 (-yn CE, flewen B) (: growen *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -yn C, grevyn † D).

byholden, 5023 (-yn D) : colde *inf.*, 5024 (-en B, -yn CD) (: folden *p.p.*, -yn CD).

comforten, 5384 (-yn C, -e D) : disporten *inf.*, 5386 (-yn C, -e D).

wryten, 8128 f (-e BD) : endite *inf.*, 8130.

Note.—The commoner infinitive ending in rhyme is *-e* (see VII., below). The ending *-en* is often used to give variety to stanzas which also contain the infinitive in *-e* at the end of one or more verses. Thus the rhymes in 5293 ff. are,—*quyken* inf., assente 1 *sg.*, *pryken* inf., *tormente* inf., entente, sholde, wolde (cf. also 1 ff., 190 ff., 295 ff., 561 ff., 1408 ff., 1730 ff., 3095 ff., 4082 ff., 4600 ff., 5293 ff.).

III. -en before vowels:

drawen, 1347 (-ë‡ C, -[ë] D).

lyuen, 1635 (-ë D, leuin C).

taryen (*dissyl.*), 2104 (-ye C).

quenchen, 3900 (-in C, -yn D †).

fynden, 5053 (-yn C, -ë D).

asken, 5334 (axen BC, askë ‡ hem D).

distorben, 5765 (-in C, -yn D).

bryngen, 5937 (-yn C, -[ë] ‡ D).

causen, 5971 (-yn C, -ë D).

congeỳen, 6842 (cùngë ‡ vs C, cunueien ‡ D).

bifallen, 7325 (-ë D, -yn that C).

Cf. also 194, 620, 836, 1029, 1595, 2242, 2476, 2724, 5191, 5768, 7444, etc., etc.

Note.—The ending *-yn* is rare in A: see *werkyn in*, 4899 (-en B, wirkë D).

IV. -en before h:

fynden here (*hic*), 399 (-ë BC, -yn D)

byholden here (*eam*), 1350 (-yn D, -heldyn C).

dissimulen he, 3276 (-yn CD).

esen hem, 4632 (-yn D).

distorben hym, 6065 (-ë CD).

beren hym, 6066 (-yn C, -[ë] D).

rennen hom, 6848 (-ë CD).

Cf. also 370, 388, 1238, 2377, 2926, 4609, 5100, 6052, 6551, 7677, 8069, etc.

V. Syncope,— -en.

Note.—In most of the cases cited under A, and in some of those under B and C, the cæsura falls immediately after the infinitive.

A. Before vowels:

speken, 387 (-*e* BD, spek C).

seruen, 817 (-*e* BD, -yn C †) cf. 2986.

heren, 1013 (-*e* BD, -yn C).

casten, 1744 (-*e* B, -yn C, cast D).

louen, 1843 (-yn C, -*e* BD).[1]

axen, 1981 (-*e*? D, -ith C, -en fendes B).

tellen, 2578 (-*e* BC, tel D).

rysen, 3598 (-*e* B, -yn? C, arise? D).

loken, 3822 (-*e* CD, -*e* vp[on] B).

to amenden, 6501 (-*e* D, tamende B, to amendyn C)

syngen, 7000 (-*e* BC, syng D).[2]

stelen, 7115 (-*e* B, -ę D; C †).[3]

laughen, 7144 (-*e* B, laugh D, lauȝhe ne? C).

holden, 7554 (-*e* BD, -ë al C).

trowen, 7626 (-*e* BC, truste ‡ D).

B. Before h:

plesen hym, 1562 (-*e* CD).

helen hym, 4794 (-*e* BC, help ‡ D); cf. 7412.

clawen hym, 5390 (-*e* CD, clowen B).

preyen here (*eam*), 6678 (prey CD).[4]

[1] Supply [*if*] in D.
[2] Dele (*to*) in A. In C read *gan* for *may*.
[3] C reads *ostel* for *ost stele*.
[4] Dele (*to*) in A.

Tò rauysshẹn herẹ syn thow hast not beṅ there, 5305 (-asche C, -issh D); cf. the same phrase in 5299, and see 7258 BC.

lyuẹn haue (1 *sg.*), 7305 (lyue BD; C †).

Note.—In many cases in which the proper reading is no doubt elided *-e* (preserved, for the most part, in A) one or more of the other MSS. show the syncopated ending *-ẹn* or *-ẏn*. Examples are: I. Before vowels, 189 C, 192 C, 370 C, 714 C, 922 C, 966 B, 1742 C, 1744 C, 1797 C, 1828 C, 1871 C, 1979 C, 2002 CD, 2041 C, 2538 C, 2679 C, 2720 C, 2721 C, 2732 C, 2779 C, 2794 C, 2918 C, 2933 C, 3008 C, 3176 C, 3206 C, 3607 C, 3615 C, 3636 C, 3700 BC, 3910 C, 4258 C, 4506 D, 4785 C, 5065 B, 5100 B, 5142 C, 5380 B, 5925 C, 5938 C, 6017 C, 6055 C, 6118 C, 6125 C, 6227 C, 6501 C, 6588 C, 6720 C, 6972 C, 7258 B (?), 7348 C, 7468 C, 7493 C, 7516 C, 7658 C, 7664 C, 7829 C, 8028 C, 8044 D. II. Before h (in *his, hym, hem, hire* (poss. sg., acc.), *here* (hic), 1515 C, 2121 C, 2379 C, 2743 C, 3328 C, 3386 C, 3476 C; see also 1460 C, 4494 C, 4551 C, 4613 C, 5261 BC, 5880 C, 6653 C, 7047 C, 7412 B; *comyn hastelíche*, 5980 C.

C. Before consonants:

hopẹn the, 865 AB (-ẹ D, -ë rathere C).

louẹn sholde, 3639 (-ẹn ‖ oon? B, -yn ‖ on C, shold love ‖ on D).

trowẹn that, 7661 A (B †, -ë sche C, -ẹ that D).

Cf. also 1453 AC, 1563 C, 2606 C, 2950 C, 3817 D, 5520 C, 6174 B, 6858 B, 7700 C.

VI. -ë before consonants (of all kinds except *h*):

mùltiplïë that, 486.

hide fro, 587 (-en B, -yn C).

lokẹ wyde, 629 (-en B).

seme lesse, 703.

loue such, 798.

fare wel, 1177 (-en B).

synge clere, 1910 (-en B, -in C, -yn D).

thanke but, 1933 (-en B, -[e] D).

slepe neuere, 2183.[1]

iape faste, 2249 (C ?).

desire fresshly, 2985 (-en B, -yn CD).[2]

make resistence, 3832 (-en B, -in C).

deye mot, 4083 (-en B, dien D).

fele noon, 5128.

handle for, 5434 (-dle(e) B, -delyn C, -dill D).

come by, 5628 (-en BD).

fynde bote, 5921.

oblige me, 6076.

stele pryuely, 6263 (-yn C).

cleyme kyngdom, 7850 (-en B, -yn C).

[1] Supply [*not*] in D.

[2] Dele (*to*) in C.

Cf. also 734, 747, 1339, 1773, 2204, 3356, 4337, 4378, 5574, 6369, 8131, etc., etc.

VII. -e in rhyme:

endite, 6 (: write *ind.* 1 *sg.*).
pleyne, 11 (: peyne *n.* : to seyne).
sterue, 17 (: serue *ind.* 1 *sg.*).
auayle, 20 (: trauayle *n.*).
falle, 290 (: with-alle).
wyte (= blame), 825 (: lyte); cf. 1470 f, 7698 f.
neuene, 876 (nemene C) (: yn heuene).
keuere, 910 (: feuere).
comaunde, 1050 (: recomaunde *subj.* 2 *sg.*).
wade, 1235 (: wordes glade).
salùwe, 2101 (salue BC, -ewe D) (: eschuwe *imv. sg.*, -ue B, -ewe CD).
here, 2199 (: yfere *adv.*).
vnfettre, 2301 (onfetere C) (: lettre : bettre *adv.*).
bygynne, 2459 (be- CD) (: wynne *inf.* : with-inne).
denye, 2574 (-y CD) (: curtasye : companye).
declare, 2765 (: Pandare).
forbede, 3309 (: hede *heed n.* : nede *n.*).
paee, 3312 (pase C, passe D) (: grace).
wende, 3458 (wynde C) (: ende *n.*).
delyuere, 3854 (-er D, del[y]uere B) (: wyuere *n.* : slyuere *n.*).
adawe, 3962 ([a]- B, to dawe C) (: drawe *inf.*).
fonde, 3997 (: on honde).
fysshe, 4004 (: rysche *n.*).
syke, 4014 (sike C, sijke D) (: syke *adj. pl.*).
houe, 4269 (: Ioue).
melte, 4287 (mette † B) (: felte *ind.* 3 *sg.*).
selle, 4303 (: helle : dwelle *inf.*).
rewe, 4612 (: trewe *adj. pl.*).
trete, 4720 (: grete *adj. pl.* : strete).
werne, 4773 (: yerne *adv.*).
lythe, 5416 (: swythe *adv.* : a thousand sithe).
to abregge, 5587 (tabrigge B) (: egge *n.*); cf. 3137 f.
leue (*credere*), 5629 (: preue *ind.* 3 *pl.*).
sorwe, 5971 (: morwe).
glose, 6072 (: suppose *ind.* 1 *sg.*).
fere, 6145 (: there).
gnawe, 6399 (: sawe *n.*).

glaze, 6832 (-se CD) (: maze *n.*).
borwe, 7089 (: sorwe *n.* : morwe).
wreke, 7323 (: speke *ind. pres.* 2 *pl.*).
loue, 7365 (: aboue).
seche, 7495 (: byseche *ind.* 1 *sg.* : speche *n.*).
honge, 7562 (: stronge *adj. pl.* : longe *adv.*).
vnbòdye, 7913 (on- C, vnbodie D) (: paròdye *n.*).
ryue, 7923 (: of lyue).
restore, 8036 (: more).
laste, 8187 (: faste *adv.* : caste *inf.*). Etc., etc., etc.

Note.—For forms without *-e* in rhyme, see below, X., note 2.

VIII. *-e* (elided) before vowels (variants not registered).

Cf. 49 (lyue), 123 (enquere), 194 (smyle), 224 (endure), 347 (deme), 392 (loue), 616 (sterue), 699 (walwe and wepe), 806 (wepe and crie), 1203 (bydde and rede), 1204 (daunce), 1256 (mene), 1456 (deme), 1868 (wepe and sitte), 2256 (dyne), 2284 (humme), 2406 (glade), 2840 (dye), 4091 (stroke), 4541 (dispise), 4956 (suffre), 4962 (ende), 5426 (lyue), 5844 (dresse), 7154 (wowe), 7577 (crepe), 7820 (smyle), etc., etc.

Note.—The elided *-e* of the infinitive is sometimes omitted in writing. Thus, in A see 204 (cast), 560 (bryng), 818 (thenk), 1493 (brest), 1857 (put), 2215 (chaung), 2554 (bryng), 2734 (bryng), 4899 (brest), 6588 (com), 6794 (pley), 6818 (glad), 6948 (mak). See also 33 B, 192 BC, 275 D, 370 D, 387 C, 460 B, 476 D, 522 B, 714 D, 833 D, 1040 BD, 1057 D, 1079 D, 1184 B, 1203 D, 1347 D, 1427 B, 1540 B, 1732 D, 1744 D, 1772 D, 1797 BD, 1812 B, 1817 B, 1979 D, 2040 D, 2156 D, 2289 BD, etc., etc.

IX. *-e* (elided) before *h* :

bygonne he, 6610 (by-gynne B, be-gynne C, begynnë ‡ for D); mete he, 6612 (dreme D; mette he *pret. ind.* ‡ C).
lete his, 192 (let C); kepe his, 627; loue his, 817 (C †); saue his, 1660. Cf. 1468 (stynte), 2121 (here), 2167 (telle), 3328 (ese), 3957 (wete), 5726 (cause), 6624 (here), 7047 (make).
dresse hym, 1156 (-yn D); make h., 1407 (mak B; *imv.*? D); lyke h., 1760; graunte h., 1789 (-t B); drawe h., 2271 (-w D); bidde h., 3309 (bid BCD); telle h., 4488, 7221. Cf. 1460 (gouèrne), 2379 (loue), 2380 (guèrdone), 3428 (auyse), 3743 (feffe), 3759 (feeche), 3913 (streyne), 4396 (make), 6065 (plukke), etc.
reherce here (*gen. sg.*), 2741. Cf. 289 (lyke), 1150 (make), 2743 (take).
loue here (*acc. sg.*), 4494 (-yn C). Cf. 2300 (auyse), 7460 (excuse), 7462 (excuse), 7489 (make), 8096 (hate).
lese here (*gen. pl.*), 6744; vp frete here, 7833. Cf. 151 (honoùre), 907 (mucche).

come here (*adv.*), 1462, 5582 (com BD, -ÿn C); dwelle here, 3476 (-yn C, dweH D).

lyue haue (1 *sg.*), 7305 BD (lyuęn A). But,—comë hath, 6717 (-en B, -ë? C, -*e* ayen ‡ D).

constreüe how, 2875 A (-strüe BD); caste how, 6752 (-t BC, [us] caste D); trowe how, 7265 (-w B). But,—rehercë how, 4239 (-en B, -yn C, -on E).

take hede, 7120 (tak B). But,—takë hede, 8069 D (-en AB).

com hom, 4871 (-*e* in C). But,—bryngë hom, 4800 B (-[ë] hem A, -yn hem C, -[ë] home D).

come hastely, 5980 (-[ë] B, -yn C).

Note.—For hiatus before *h*, see XI., below.

X. Apocope of -e (before consonants).

There are several genuine instances of apocope. Old-style figures indicate that a cæsura follows the infinitive ending, so that the -e may be pronounced if one cares to admit the "extra syllable before a pause."

loue for, 16 (*prob. noun*); l. be, 46 (*prob. noun*) (D *is different*); l. swych, 369; l. yow, 537 (D †); l. til, 686; l. the, 2043. But,—louë, 798, 2854.

hopę the, 865 D (hopęn AB, hopë ratherę C).[1]

lat Criseÿdë, 5119 (letę C, let D).

tellę yow, 2198 AB (tellë CD).[2]

spekę for, 2511 ABG (of this CD). (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

berę the, 2583.

comę soupen, 3402 (cum C)[3]; -ę but, 5661; c. therfore, 5662; c. sholde, 5726; c. for, 6023 (com C); c. that, 7021; c. ye, 7791; com speke, 5316 (-ę CD). Cf. 5717 (?).

makę desseueraunce, 4266 (C †); makę the, 7515 CD (-ën peple ABG) (no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

lyuę to, 4759; l. til, 6279 (leuę to C; D †).

puttę that, 6174 (-ęn B, put D).

wenę that, 5730, 6775 AB (seyn C, sey D).

holdę forth, 6858 A (-ęn B, -*e* ourę CD).[4]

[1] No note in Mr. Austin's collation. G reads: Thanne wolde I hopen rather for to spede.

[2] For which (whiche G) I am come (I come BGCp., come I C, come y D) to (*om.* B Cp.) telle yow newe (new B, *om.* CDG) tidynges. No variants are noted for John's MS.

[3] In C it is possible to read *cum[c] suppe*; in D, *comë soupe*; but the line would then be intolerably harsh.

[4] CD and John's give a 9-syl. line: Lat vs holde ourę purpos fermëly (frendely † C). AB read *forth* after *holde*. Cp. also has *forth*, but reads *holdęn*. G has: Lette vs holde forthe purpos fermely.

trowę thiat, 7661 D (-ęn A, -ë sche C; B †).

preyę for, 48 (pray D); prey yow, 2521 (-ę? B, -*e* C, pray as D, prey as G).[1]

seyę, see XII., below.

Note 1.—For *welę*, *dorrę*, see § 123; for *hauę*, see § 124.

In many cases the apocope disappears on comparison of MSS. Thus,—

worschepę preuyly, 380 C (*l.* werken).
tellę the, 580 A (l. telle it).
tellę ȝow, 7134 C, 7308 C (cf. 7309 C).
bring me, 623 D.
cogh bygan, 1339 C.
dyę there, 1418 C.
lovę no, 1563 D.
plinę no, 1581 C.
bynd with, 1813 D.
bathę begyn, 1934 C.
endurę to, 1949 D.
trust to, 2041 D.
spekę sumwhat, 2106 D.
spekę therof, 2688 C.
drechę to, 2349 C.
tellę ȝow, 2626 D.
wend to, 3060 D (?).
kepę wele, 3136 D.
yevę no, 3607 D.
makę chere, 4396 D.
tornę to, 4781 B (?) (turnę tyl C ?).
helpę to, 5190 C (?).
mervailę wheder, 5309 D.
failę certeyne, 5607 D.
tell you, 5925 D.
schortę myn, 6459 C (shortę your † D).
writę ȝit, 6635 C$^c$.
wrytę to, 7754 C.
stelę by, 7115 D.
letę no, 7273 C.
cloth shal, 7781 D.
shewę me, 8057 D.

Note 2.—In 3817 the readings of ABCEGCp. John's are: Now doth (do G) hym sitte (syttyn D, sitten John's) now (*om.* BCCp. John's) gode (good BD) nece dere. The weight of MS. authority seems to be in favour of omitting the second *now* and reading *sittë*.—In 1226 B, we may perhaps read *wondren more* for *wonder more* (wonderyn C, wondryn D, iapë ‡ A); cf. 1453 D, 5309 C (wondęre; wondren AB, mervailę D).—In 6118 the question is really between *at-rennę but not at-rede* and *at-renne and not at-rede*; cf. *C. T.* 2451 T.

Note 3.—Occasionally -e in the infinitive is not written at the end of the line, but the rhyme always[2] indicates that it should be restored. Instances are rare in A and B, but in C and D they abound. For A, see 462 (rew), 4260 (throw), 4975 (lyght); for B, see 313 (hold), 392 (repent), 1338 (cast), 2956 (row), 4017 (trespàs), 4402 (wak), 6994 (shew), 8021 (bihold); for C, see 73, 193, 389, 492, 750, 908, 1420, 1441, 1524, 1775, 1958, 1986, 2078, 2252, 2529, 2556, 2558, 2574, 2624, 2639, 2715, 2757-8, 2795, 2841-2, 2919, 2997, 3100, 3200, 3384, 3500, 3681, 3758, 3924, 4069, 4339, 4418, 4447, 4500, 4530, 4919, 5029, 5154, 5459-60, 5519, 5543-4, 5769, 5833, 5850, 5858-9, 5952, 6043, 6076, 6188, 6243, 6274, 6280, 6446-7, 6720, 6752-3, 6822, 6867, 6878, 6914, 6932, 6934, 6997, 7029, 7349, 7574, 7590, 7593, 7595, 7667, 7771, 7839, 7931, 7983. In 4973 f, C needs correction. For D, see 256, 665, 2599, 2639, 3043, 3699, 4276, 4536, 5272, 8133, and *passim*.

[1] No note in Mr. Austin's collation.

[2] *I. e.* when not another inf.

XI. Hiatus:

deyë in, 674 (dyen B, deyen CD).

demë other, 799 (-en B, -yn CD).[1]

folwë if, 1134 (-en B, -yn C).

stoppë euery, 1889 (-en B).

fyndë in, 4140 (-en B); fyndë at, 6866 (-en B); fynd[ë] || out, 7452 (-en B, -ë CD).

endurë al, 4333 (-en B, -yn C).[2]

bryngë vs, 5354 (-yn C); bryngë it, 7657 (-en B, -yn C).

compleynë in, 7086 (B †).

writë yf, 8140 (-ë yif D).

Cf. also 360, 979, 1184, 1350, 2120, 2793, 2898, 2923, 3079, 3154, 3304, 3742, 3946, 4166, 4238, 4504, 5314, 5420, 6047, 7049, 7122,[3] 7178[4], 7503, 7629.

Note.—In all the cases cited above A has -ë (with hiatus), but in all of them the hiatus may be removed by reading *-en*, except in 360, 1184, 5314, 5420; in these four lines a word has dropped out of A, the restoration of which reduces the -e to *-e* (elided).[5] None of the four MSS. is free from hiatus in the infinitive form, but it is rarest in B.[6] Other examples (not in A) may be seen in the variants under III. (above); cf. also 796 D, 1843 D, 2886 D, 3317 D, 3822 B, 4524 D, 4835 C, 6233 D, 7538 CD, 7554 C, etc.

hidë his, 381 (-en B, -yn C, *-e* his? D).[7]

endurë he, 2730 (-en BC, *-e* he D).

suffrë hym, 2996 B (-en A, sufferyn C, suffryn D).[8]

likë here (*dat.*), 3455 (-en B, -yn C; D †).

dwellë here (*hir*), 3483 (-yn D); cf. dwellen here, 3489 (-yn D, -ë C).

bryng[ë] hem, 4800 (-yn C, -ë hom B, -[ë] home D).

Cf. also 292 C, 481 C, 504 C, 542 D, 1885 C, 4038 D, 5149 D, 5334 D, 6052 D, 6065 C, 6136 D, 6534 D, 6987 C, 7121 C, 7201 D, 7480 D, 7816 D.

tellë how, 2091 (-en B, *-e* her D); cf. 7869 D.

rehercë how, 4239 (-en B, -yn C, -on E). But,—constreùe how, 2875 A (-strùe BD); caste how, 6752 (-t BC, [us] caste D); trowe how, 7265 (-w B).

comë hath, 6717 (-en B, -e? C, *-e* ayen ‡ D).

takë hede, 8069 D (-en AB). But,—take hede, 7120 (tak B).

tellë half, 3186 (-en B, -yn C, -e? D).

[1] In C read *other* for *ouȝt*.
[2] Dele (*the*) in D.
[3] Supply [*Ne*] in A (?).
[4] Furnivall prints *speke*[*n*] in A.
[5] In 5420, it is possible to explain the hiatus in A on the ground of the cæsura (*I-wis* || *yf*), but BCDECp. John's have *if* (*ȝif, yif*) *that*, which makes the verse regular.
[6] In the majority of the lines just cited Cp. has the form in *-en*.
[7] 9-syl., except in D.
[8] Dele (*to*) before *serue* in C.

bryngë hom, 4800 B (-[ë] hem A, -yn hem C, -[ë] home D); com hom, 4871 (*-e* in C).

XII. *Fle, sle, the, wre*:

fle, (i.) 747 f (flee B, sle † D) (: secre : be *sit*), 1795 f (flee B) (: he), 3386 f (: be *inf.* : tre), 3670 f (: he : be *inf.*), 4105 (flen C, flie *monosyl.* D), 5422 ‡ D (sleen A, slen B, sle C). (ii.) 4648 (*before caesura*).—flen, 1279 f (fleen B, flen(e) D) (: ben *p. p.* : ben *sbst. pl.*).

sle, (i.) 747 † f D (fle AC, flee B), 4143 (sla B), 7834 (slee D), 8049 (slee D). (ii.) 6108 (sla B, sle ȝif C, sle yif D), 7635 ‡ C.—slen, sleen, (i.) 1750 (slan(e) B, sle CD), 5422 (slen B, sle C, fle ‡ D), 5929 (sle D), 6409 (sle CD). (ii.) 2443 (sle D), 3850 (sle D); slen hym, 815 (sleen B, sle D), 823 (sle D)[1]; slen how, 5848 (slan(e) B, sle D).

the, 341 f (: be *sit* : ye), 1755 f (ythe B) (: be *inf.* : parde), 5101 f (ithe B, be ‡ C, thee D) (: to be : me), 7523 f (: me : se *inf.*).

wre; Hymself to wre at hem he(r) gan to smyle, 329 (wrie *monosyl.* B, wrythe ‡ C, were ‡ D); byhoueth . . . vnwre his wounde, 858 (onwrye *monosyl.* C, vnwry D).

XIII. *Seyn, to seyne; sen, to sene; don, to done.*

The Anglo-Saxon Gerundial (or Dative) Infinitive is preserved in the *Troilus* in *to seyne, to sene,* and *to done.* The only sure case of final *-e* pronounced in the interior of the verse is in 7487 (*to done,* see below).

to seyne, 12 f, 591 f,[2] 712 f,[3] 1605 f, 1706 f, 2071 f, 2211 f, 2441 f, 2644 f, 3272 f, 3390 f, 3835 f, 3959 f, 3998 f, 4372 f (seine D), 5165 f (seyn C), 7398 f (seyn C), 7712 f. All these are cases of *soth for to seyne* and similar phrases. In 7531 f, *soth to seyne* (: I durste leyne = wager) is the reading of C, *soth(e) to seyne* (: durste I leyne) that of D; G has *soth(e) to saye* (: durste I lay); AB read *dar I seye* (: dorste I leye, laye); Mr. Austin's collation has no note on these two lines. In 3845 f, *what al this is to seyn* (seyne BC), *to seyne* is the correct reading, as is shown by the rhymes, *compleyne* (ind. 1 sg.) and *peyne* (noun).

Rhyme words.—peyne *n.* (12, 591, 712, 1605, 2071, 2211, 2441, 3835, 3959, 4372, 5165, 7398), cheyne *n.* (1706), Eleyne (2644), tweyne (1706, 3390, 3959, 7712), pleyne *inf.* (12, 1605, 2441), 1 *pl. ind.* (712), feyne *inf.* (2644, 3998), restreyne *inf.* (3272), reyne *inf.* (3390), destreyne *inf.* (4372), compleyne *inf.* (7712).

But *seyn, seye, seyę,* and *sey,* are found in the gerundial construction with *to,* as well as *seyne.*

[1] In C read *hym[self]*.

[2] Supply [*soth*] in D.

[3] Old-style figures indicate that D has *seyn*.

seyn,[1] (i.) soth to seyn, 1769 (say C, sey[ë] D ‡); platly for to seyn, 3628 f (seyne C) (: reyn *n.* : certeyn *adv.*); vsen . . . to seyn, 3866[2]; that (this) is to seyn, 4020 (say C, seię D), 6037 (seyne C), 7261 (seyne C); now is this abusion to seyn, 5722 f (seyne B) (: certeyn *adv.*); the sothe for to seyn, 7375 f (seyne BD) (: ayen AD, ayein B, ayen C : fayn *pred. adj. sg.* AC, fayne BD); what al this is to seyn, 3845 f (seyne BC), *should be* seyne, *as the rhymes* (compleyne *pres.* 1 *sg.*, peyne *n.*) *show.* (ii.) this is to seyn, 3280; soth to seyn he, 4635.

seye, (i.) ther is no more to seye, 574 f[2]; soth (for) to seye, 2601 f, 3197 f; sothly for to seye, 5459 f (sey C, certeinly to sey D); shortly al the sothe for to seye, 5615 f (seyne † B); shortly for to seye, 7372 f (seyne † B, seyen C); what is this to seye, 2916 f (saye C); shame it is to seye, 3091 f; I it forbar to seye, 3207 f; were impossible . . . to seye, 4153 f (say E); which chargeth nought to seye, 4418 f (sey C, seie D); no litel thyng of for to seye, 4530 f (sey C); he nyst[e] what to seye, 5018 f; seyd(e) that was to seye, 5833 f (sey C); haue I for to seye, 7771 f (sey C); I began yow for to seye, 8163 f.

Rhyme words.—in the weye (3091), aweye (5018), dreye *adj. pl.* (3197), dreye *adj. pl.* (hardly *adv.*) (5833), tweye (2916, 4153), deye *inf.* (574, 5459, 5615, 7771, 8163), pleye *inf.* (2601, 3091, 3197, 4153), leye *inf.* (2916), *imv. sg.* (2601), bywreye *inf.* (3207), obeye *inf.* (4530), preye *inf.* (5833, 7372).

seyę, that is to seyę ‖ for, 3095 (seynę C, sey D); that is to seyę ‖ that, 3126 (seyn B, seinę C, sęy ? D).

sey, to sey a soth, 2222 (seyne B, seyn C †).

seyn, seyen, seye, seyę, sey, are also used in infinitive constructions without *to*. Thus,—

seyn,[3] (i.) 514,[4] 1839 (sey C), 2539 (sey B),[5] 2825 (seynę B), 3707 (sey ? D), 3809, 4464 (seynę B, seię D), 4829 (seydę ‡ B), 5520 (seynę B, sendyn ‡ C)[6], 5699 (seynę B), 5862, 5982 f (seyne BD) (: ayen AD, ayein B, ageyn C : we ben so fayn AC, feyne BD), 6050 (C †), 6141, 6775 C, 6850 f (: ayen AD, ayein B, ayen C : fayn *adj. sg.* AC, feyn B, fayne D), 7239 (sen C), 7642, 7659 f (seeyn C) (: ayen, ayein, ayen, ageyn). (ii.) 396 (sayn A, say C), 398 (sayn C), 512, 804 (say C), 1011, 2532 (seyne D), 5515 (seyne B),

[1] In 1769, 3280, 4020, 4635, 6037, 7261, *seyn* comes before the cæsura.
[2] Old-style figures indicate that D has *sey* or *say*.
[3] In all cases cited except 512, 1839(?), 2539, 4829(?), 5520, 6626(?) *seyn* comes before the cæsura (when not in rhyme).
[4] Old-style figures indicate that D has *sey* or *say*.
[5] Dele (*That he*) in B. [6] Supply [*herte*] in A.

6071 (C †), 6414 (say C), 7428[1], 8095; seyn he, 3923 (seie D), 7157.

seyën sholde, 6989 A (seynë B, sey[ë]n C, *om.* † D).

seye, (i.) 492 f (sey C), 672 f, 924 f, 1044 f, 1258 f, 1396 f, 1406 f, 1546 f, 2078 f (say C, y sey *dico* † D), 2219 f, 2291 f, 2741 f, 2842 f (say C), 2922 f, 2953 f, 2963 f (seye *pres. subj.* 1 *sg.* BC, sey *pres. subj.* 1 *sg.* D), 3398 f, 3503 f, 3666 f (seyen B)[2], 3892 f (seyne B), 4033 f (seie D), 4450 f (saye B, say C, seye D), 4501 f (say C), 4818 f, 4911 f, 5033 f (seye D), 5187 f, 5431 f, 5543 f (sey C), 5769 f (say C), 5872 f (sey C), 5952 f (say C), 6043 f (say C), 6164 f, 6446 f (sey C), 6458 f, 6934 f (say C), 7349 f (say C), 7531 f (to seyne CD),[3] 7669 f (sey C), 8092 f, 8106 f, 8208 f. (ii.) seye,[4] 2084 (seyne B, seyn C),[5] 6233 (seyn C). [In all these instances D has *sey*, unless the contrary is noted.]

Rhyme words.—weye *n.* (492, 4818, 5952, 6458), aweye (6458), awey (aweye) (5543 : to dey C), tweye (492, 1258, 2741, 3666, 4033, 4818, 4911, 5033, 5769, 6043, 6164, 7669, 8092), pleye *inf.* (672, 1546, 3398, 6934, 7349), *subj.* 2 *sg.* (3666), deye *inf.* (924, 1258, 1406, 2291, 2963, 3892, 4911, 5431, 5872, 6446), *subj.* 1 *sg.* (2953, 4550), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (5187), leye *ind.* 1 *sg.* (1044), *imv. sg.* (2078), *inf.* (3503, 4450, 4501, 7531, 7669, 8208), preye *ind.* 1 *sg.* (1396, 2219, 2291, 5952, 6164, 6934, 8106), *inf.* (2741, 2842, 2922, 2963), *prcs. ind.* 3 *pl.* (6043), beye *inf.* (8208).

seye,[6] 451 (sey C), 1337 (say B, seyn C), 3120 (seyn BC), 4108 (seyn BC, seie D), 4139 (seyn CE), 4777 (seyn C), 5493 (sey ? D). [D has *sey*, unless the contrary is noted].

sey, (i.) sey yis (*l.* this *with* C ?), 4222 (seyn BC)[7]; sey yow, 7740. (ii.) 1316 (seye B, seyn C); sey hym, 195 (seye B, seyde ‡ C).

*seyne* in the form *seine* occurs in 6626 without *to*,—sholde . . . seine it was folye (sey CD),— cf. also variants under some of the forms above registered,— but it will be observed that the full gerundial form is found only in rhyme.

to sene,—fairest (-er) was to sene, 454 f (: Polixene); fairest was to sene, 5817 f (: grene *adj. pl.*); it ioye was to sene, 4070 f (to seene B) (: tene *n.*).

But *to sen* and *to se* also occur : *to se*, indeed, is by far the commonest form.

to sen, to seen, (i.) so lyk a man of armes . . . He was to sen, 1717

[1] Dele (*ne*) in D. [2] In B, rhymes with *pleye* and *tweyen*.
[3] In CD the rhyme is *leyne inf.* (=wager); in AB the rhyme is *leye* (*laye*), which is clearly right.
[4] In 2084, 6233, *seyë* may be read (with hiatus) if one admits the "extra syllable before the cæsura." [5] In B supply [*I*].
[6] In 3120(?), 4139, 4777, it is possible to read *seyë* if one admits the "extra syllable before the cæsura." [7] Supply [*that*] in BD.

(senę ‖ D); first to sen (*purpose*), 3384 (se CD); it thought hym no strokes To here or sen Criseyde . . . wepe, 3910 (se his D); youre desport Was al to seen Criseydes eyen, 4972 (sen BC, se D); it hardere is To sen that sorwe, 5568 (to sen him C, to se the sorwe D); It was his sorwe vpon hem for to sen, 6821 f (sene D) (: ben *sunt* bene D). (ii.) shę was right swych to sen, 5524 (seen B, se CD); to seen here (*gen. sg.*), *purpose*, 446 (sene B, sen C, se D); to sen here (*acc.*), *purpose*, 7941 (see D); cf. 5568 C.

to se, (i.) hath gided the to se my, 569 (sen B); ye ben fairę to se, 1669 f; It was an heuęnę vpon hym for to se, 1722 f; he hath to se me swych delit, 1794; it ioye was to se, 1902 f; sobrely and frendly for to se, 3201 f; This was no litel sorwe for to se, 3935 f; ycomen hym to se, 5028 f (see D); it a deth was for to se, 5518 f (see D); Which that I drede neuerę mo to se, 5521 f (see D); I nolde leuen for to se, 5997 f (see D); coueyteth . . . to se me, 6001; the pure spirit wepeth To se yow wepen, 6283 (see D); comen Troylus to se, 6645 f (see BD); to longen herę to se, 6960 f (see B); thei stoden for to se, 7477 f; ther com this bor to se, 7835 f (see D). (ii.) to se ‡ his, 3910 D.

sen, seen, *inf.*, without *to*, (i.) 293 (seth † D), 1386 (se CD), 6886 (senę B, see D)[1]; cf. 5599, 6133, 6147, 6258, 6299, 7112, 7238, 7446, 7573. (ii.) 2242 (seyne B, se CD), 4961 (D †), 7264 (syn B, se D); cf. 6512, 6691, 6972, 7371, 7476; sen here (*acc.*), 6391 (se BD), 7144 (sene D, se lauȝhe ? C); seen here (*gen. sg.*), 6888 (sen C, se D); sen how, 5599 BC.

se, see, *inf.*, without *to*, (i.) 1659 BD (sen C, do A), 1673 (sen C; B †), 1700 (sen C, senę D), 4124 (sen BC), 8074 (sen B, see D); cf. 245 f, 1365 f, 1530 f, 1879 f, 2067 f, 2177 f, 2398 f, 2416 f, 2515 f, 2972 f, 3442 f, 4056 f, 4187 f, 4321 f, 4446 f, 4853 f, 5350 f, 5947 f, 6700 f, 7030 f, 7522 f, 7662 f, 7751 f, 8003 f, 8139 f. (ii.) 644 (sen C; D †), se here (*acc.*), 6979 (seen B, sen C).

y-se, *inf.*, without *to*, (i.) alle y-se, 1439 f (allë se C; D †); tyme y-se, 2806 (is[e] D, tymë se BC); wrecche y-se, 5500 f (wrechë se C, wrecchë see D); wel y-se, 5710 f, 7110 f ([y]se C, [y]see D). [Var. B y-see; D i-see.]

to done,—that thow hast to done, 1019 f; I haue to done, 1298 f; hadde nought to done, 3517 f; his erand was to done, 1157 f; were it nought to done, 1788 f; theron was to heuen and to done, 2374 f; what was best to done, 2570 f; now is there (but) litel more for to

[1] Supply [*As*] in C.

done, 3389 f; how yow was best to done, 4746 f; what thenkestow to done, 5750 f (doon B); it was ek to done, 6433 f; as the semeth best is for to done, 6664 f; it is nought to done, 6741 f; the beste is thus to done, 6755 f (doon B); it is for to done, 7266 f; yet was there more to done, 7455 f; there is no more to done, 7672 f (doon B); as he was woned to done, 4378 f (doon B) (*similarly* 4553 f (don D), 4729 f, 5788 f (doon B)); it wonted is to done, 6640 f; as was his wone to done, 7010 f. [Var. BD doone.] feyned hym with Calkas han to doon[e], 7209 f (done CD) (: soone *adv.*). She hath ynow (-e G) to donë hardyly, 7487 ACG (to don[ë] B, to do[në] D).[1] to bidde hym ought to done, 3309 (don BC, do ne D); to haue ynowh to done, 6407 (don C, doone D); what to done he nyste, 356 (don B, do D).

to done,—what to done || best were, 1781 (to do D, what to donë best ‡ and C); what to done || for ioye vnnethe he wyste, 4095 (don B, do D).

Rhyme words.—mone, moone, *n.* (1019, 1157, 3389, 6640, 6741), bone *n.* (1019), sone, soone *adv.* (1157, 1298, 2374, 3517, 4378, 4553, 4729, 5788, 6433, 6640, 6755, 7010, 7209, 7266, 7455, 7672), persone (1788, 2570, 4746), tronë *n.* (5750), thow dispone *imv.-subj.* (6664).

to don,—(i.) a thyng to don yow pleye, 1206 (do D); a body and a myght To don that thyng, 1719 (do D); is he . . . aboute me to drecche And don me wrong, 2557 (do D); I may ben he . . . to don yow my seruyse, 2975 (do D); prey [I] yow To don myn herte . . . an ese, 3475 (do D); bad a boone . . . to don that reuerence, 4731 B (do D, to don hym ‡ that reuerence A); the enspire This womman thus to shilde and don vs lese Daun Antenor, 4850 (doun C, done D); be suffred me to erre . . . ne don so gret vnright, 5212 (do (me) D); what frendes ich haue . . . to don the wrathe pace Of Priamus and don hym stonde in grace, 6054-5 (doo . . . make D); make hym . . . to conuerte And don my red, 6074-5 (doo D). (ii.) what for to doon, 887 (don BC, done D); what to don is, 2737 (doon B, done CD); comytted to don execucion, 6367 (done D); comaundeth me . . . To don al, 6496 (doo D); she wolde fayn(e) to don his herte an ese (*syntax ambiguous*), 2310 (do D; C †); hasteth yow to don hym ioyë haue, 2329 (do D); gon to don his sacrifice, 3381 (done D); al prest to don hire byde, 4824 (do D); to don his sorwe to falle He rought[e] not what vnthryf[t] [that] he seyde, 5092 (to make his CD); glad to don hym that seruice, 5471 (doo D); to the . . . goddes . . . He preyde . . .

[1] No note in the Cp. collation.

To don hym, 5613 (doon B, doone D); That he nolde don his peyne and al his myght To don it for to don here herte an ese, 6478-9 (done . . . to done it for to doo D).

to do,—what is me best to do, 828 f (: wo : so); a kynges sone yn armes wel to do, 1250 f (: two : therto); for to do wel is his wone, 1403 (don BC, [for] to do D); youre beste is to do so, 1467 (don C); to wys is he to do so gret a nyse, 1810 (don BC); vouche saf for to do so, 2776 (don C, [for] to do D); ryse To knele and do yow honour, 2912 (don C); to wys to do so gret folye, 3709 (don BC); grace for to do so, 3770 (hadde to don so C †); what thenkestow to do, 5511 f (doo BD) (: for-do *inf.*, -doo D, 5513 : to *prep.*).

don, *inf.* without *to*, (i.) 19 (done B, do D), 852 (do D), 1496 f (done D) (: anoon : agon *p. p.*); do yow don by force, 6137 (don . . . don C, doo . . . doone D); cf. 120, 600, 1197, 1400, 1553, 1560, 1842, 2330, 2951, 4320, 4973, 5957, 6327, 6413, 6762, 7200, 7203, 7631, etc. (ii.) 2591 (do CD); cf. 1474, 3725 (done D), 4952, 4957, 5245, 5456, 5602, 5604, 6150, 6295, 6475, 6604, 8071, 8097, etc.; doon, 824 (don C, done D); for forms before *he, his, hym, here, hem, how* (*don* is usual in ABC; D has *doon, doone, done, do, doo*), cf. 563, 2066, 2459, 3008, 3400, 4550, 5365, 6478, 7284, 7503, 7828; don hardnesse, 2330 (but it is perhaps better to take *don* as *p. p.*, as the reading of B, *ydon*, indicates). In 2734 AB, *don harm* should be *don him harm*, as in C (do hym harme D). In 7349 A, *done* should be *don* (don B, don can C, doo can D).

do, *inf.*, without *to*, (i.) 795 (don BC), 1848 (don C), 6345 f (: for-do *inf.*, -doo D, 6343 f); cf. 692, 1232, 1659, 2042, 2373, 2699, 3022, 3690, 3708, 3769, 3969, 4320, 4912, 5121, 5439, 6588, etc.; for-do, 238 (-don B, vndo D), 5513 f (-doo D) (: to do : to *prep.*). (ii.) 2503 (don BC, done D), 2557 (don B), 3892 (don BC, done D), 5419 (doon B, doo D, don ‡ what C); vndo, 3583 (vndon B, ondo C, vndo ‡ the D).

## § 120. The Present Participle ends in the *Troilus* in *-ynge, -yng*. (Cf. Child, § 64; ten Brink, § 191.)

The form *-ynge* is regular in rhyme (see, however, II., last example), but the *-e* is never sounded in the interior of the verse (except for syntactic reasons, see II., note 2). D almost always has *-yng*, both in and out of rhyme, but I have not taken the superfluous trouble to register this lack of *-e* in that MS. Minute variations in spelling are also sometimes disregarded in the following lists.

The participle in *-ende* occurs only twice,—*ryndende*, 2334 C (corrupt), 2338 f $C^{c}$ (where it spoils the rhyme).

Note.—I have registered "gerunds" with nouns in *-ynge* (§ 10) in preference to confusing them with participles.

I. The following list includes such present participles as rhyme with an infinitive in the *Troilus*. All the rhyme-words are recorded in each case.

lyuynge, 1320 f (leuenge C) (: rynge *inf.* : wytynge *n.*).
vnsittynge, 1392 f (: brynge).
sterynge, 4078 f (: synge : rynge).
durynge, 4596 f (-g C (?), doyng † D) (: concordynge *ptc.*, -yng CD : brynge).
makynge, 5517 f (: brynge).
portrayynge, 7079 f (-treyynge B, portering † D) (: recordynge *ptc.*, according † D : sprynge).
arguynge, 7135 f (: taryinge *n.* : brynge).

II. Here follow all other cases of the present participle (or participial adjective) in rhyme. An asterisk indicates that the rhyme-word is a noun (or "gerund") in *-ynge* (see § 10).

wepynge, 111 f (: excusynge *ptc.*).
pleynge, 267 f (pleyinge BC, pleying D) (: lokynge *ptc.*).
answerynge,* 282 f.
konnynge, * 302 f (kun- C, cunnyng D).
comynge,* 378 f, * 1644 f, * 5649 f (D †), * 5676 f.
sittynge, 2099 f (: lokynge *ptc.*).
ymagynynge, 6817 f (-g C, -gening D) (: festenynge *n.*, thing ‡ D).
excusynge,* 7937 f.
But,—comynge, 5737 f (-yng D) : thing *n.* : byfallyng *n.*

III. Present participles before consonants. (D has almost always -yng.)

touchyng, 265 (-ę BC); towchyng, 2108 (-ę BC; D †), 3274 (-ę BC).
pleynge, 280 (pley(n)- C).
lykynge, 309 (lokynge † C).
ymagynynge, 372 (-ing (?) D, -enynge (?) C).
bewalllyng, 547 ‡ D.
keruyng, 632 (-ę B).[1]
rydyng, 2334 (-ę B †, ryndende † C).
fallyng,—the happy fallyng strok, 2467 (-ę BC; D †).
helpyng, 2635 (-ę BC).

[1] Supply [*yet*] in D.

làngwysshỳng, 3083 (-syngę B, -syng C).
herỳngę, 3188.[1]
thònkyngę 4394 (D †).
wèpyngę, 5237 (-ing *sbst.* † D).
dispùtyngę, 5746.
schaùngyngę ‡, 6918 C (changed *p. p.* ABD).

Note 1.—In 309 the accent is perhaps on the first syllable; in 2108, perhaps on the second.

Note 2.—In *this fòrknowyng[ë] wyse*, 79 A (-e BC), the sounding of *-e* is due to the definite construction (see § 59). This is the only case in the *Troilus* in which *-e* is sounded in the present participle in the interior of the verse (cf. 7804 ‡ C, 7951 ‡ A, 8098 (read *hauyngę [vn]to*; G, Cp., and Harl. 2392 have *vnto*). Cf. IV, V, notes, below.

V. Before vowels.

For *-ỳngę*, cf. 1705,[2] 4691, 4747, 4755, 5404, 5502, 5951, 7075, 7804, 7975.

For *-ỳng*, cf. 65, 908,[3] 1055, 4542, 4750, 5099, 5116.

For *-yngę*, with the accent on the preceding syllable (as, flètyngę), cf. 1138, 1640, 2789, 3534, 3982, 4210, 4624, 4967, 5491, 5913, 6387, 6430,[4] 6758, 7188,[4] 7502, 7571, 7697, 8033, 8135, 8173, 8175 (hèrkęnyngę).

For *-ỳng*, with the accent on the preceding syllable (as, byhòldyng), cf. 9, 101, 186, 547, 631, 2024, 3348, 4395, 4693, 7386, 7604, 7719, 8020.

Note.—In 7333, *and* (after *konnyng*) restores the metre: ACDG omit *and*, BCp John's have it. 7804 C is to be corrected by the insertion of *ay*.

V. Before h (in *his*, *hym*, *here* (acc., poss. sg., poss. pl.), *how*, *hound*).

For *-ỳngę*, cf. 2900,[5] 4381, 5819, 6066, 6836, 7048.

For *-ỳng*, cf. 3359, 4789, 4905, 5025, 5764.

For *-yngę*, with the accent on preceding syllable, cf. 318, 1157, 1738, 2893, 5374 C, 5377, 8123.

For *-yng*, with the accent on preceding syllable, cf. 384, 3004, 3606.

Note.—In 5951 C, *makyngë here* (hic) should be corrected.

## § 121. The Perfect Participle of Weak Verbs ends in the *Troilus* in *-ed*, *-ęd*, *-d*, *-t*. (Cf. Child, § 62; ten Brink, §§ 163, 166-9, 176, 180-3.)

Instead of *-ed*, C and D often have *-id* or *-yd*, and so occasionally B, For *-id*, *-yd* in A, see, for example, 182, 308, 1004, 6894. B has

[1] In A read *theffect* for *the feyth*.
[2] Old-style figures indicate that the accent may stand on the preceding syllable.
[3] In A, supply [*make*] before *hem*.
[4] 9-syl. verse.
[5] Old-style figures indicate that the accent may stand on the preceding syllable.

*woundud* in 1618 f. C sometimes shows *-it* : as, *gydit*, 569 (cf. 558, 987, 1438, 1707, 2705, 4075, 6707 f, 6709 f, 7548); cf. *woundet*, 1618 f C. For *-ede*, *-de*, *-te*, see notes 1, 2, below.

Perfect participles rhyme usually with each other or with words that have no *-e*. Very rarely a perfect participle is found rhyming with the preterite of a verb : the only examples in the *Troilus* are,—

excused *p. p.*, 2164 f, *rh.* acused *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*

vntormentid, 1004 f, *rh.* assentyd *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (or possibly *p. p.* ?).

y-shette *p. p.*, 3075 f, *rh.* lette *n.*, *rh.* sette *ind.* 3 *sg.*

bente *p. p.*, 4702 f, *rh.* mente 3 *pl.*, *rh.* wente 3 *pl.*

spradde *p. p.*, 6084 f, *rh.* he hadde.

whette *p. p.*, 8123 f, *rh.* mette 3 *pl.*

In the last four cases the participles are in the plural (see §§ 67. e, 68). In 1123 B, 2175 C, 7561 A, the reading should be corrected (see notes 1, 2 below).

Note 1.—C, which is especially fond of the ending *-ede* in the preterite, not infrequently extends this termination erroneously to the participle : cf., for examples,—*-ed(e)* in C 1509, 1907, 2119, 3467, 3931, 4111, 5407, 5878, 5900, 5945, 6528, 8062 ; *-id(e)*, 4237 C ; *-ed*(e), C 299, 1907, 6894 ; *-ed(e)*, C 648 f, 3285 f ; *-id(e)*, 316 f C. Cf. also *rowed*(e), 962 f B ; *discsed(e)*, 3285 f B. Even A is not free from this spurious -e : thus,—*pronunced(e)*, 4875 A ; *formed*(e), 7180 A ; falsed(*e*), 7419 A ; cf. 1906 A, 7458 A. In all cases this *-e* is of course purely a scribe's caprice and never pronounced. Similarly *-de* is occasionally written for *-ed* (as, *arayde*, 1285 B, l. *arayëd* ; cf. 646 B, 3383 B, 4062 B, 4289 D, 7612 f B), or for *-d* (as, *adradde*, 1200 f, l. *adrad* ; *ferde*, 1209 B, l. *ferd*, etc.). In a few cases, however, the plural of a monosyllabic participle in *-d* ends in *-ddë* (see §§ 67, e, 68). *Fledde*, 7561 f A (: bledde *ind.* 3 *sg.*) should be preterite indicative.

Note 2.—The ending *-te* instead of *t* is found again and again in one MS. or another, as a comparison of MSS. in the places cited below (I.-VIII.) will show (see, *e. g.*, 1237, 1670, 6051, 6909). Even A is not free from this spurious -e : thus,—*hath sent*(e) *after*, 6643 AB (-t CD). In all cases, however, the -e is clearly a scribe's fashion or whim, except in a few instances where it is used to denote the plural of a monosyllabic participle (see the cases under §§ 67. e, 68, above). Bad readings are,—*shente* p.p. (: *wente* pret. 3 sg.), 1123 B (should be *shent* : *went* pres. 3 sg.), and *schette* p.p. (: *sette* pret. 3 sg. : *lette* pret. 3 sg.), 2175 C (should be *pret.* 3 *sg.*).

## Examples.

In the following lists (I.-X.) variants are seldom registered; and, except in a few instances, no record is made of the initial letter of the word that follows the participle.

I. Anglo-Saxon verbs of the First Conjugation (cf. § 99).

afered, 967 f, 3324 f (aferd D); -[e]d, 1691 (-[e]d(e) B, -ed ? C, aferd D); afèrid, 1209 ‡ C (ferd A, ferd(e) B ; D †).

agast, 715, 1396, 3579 (agarst A), 3938, 6306, 7256. (Inf. agaste, 1986 f.)

agilt, 4299 f, 4923 f; agylt, 8047.
beleued,—cf. mysbeleued, *adj.*, 3680 AB.
bente, *pl.*, 4702 f AB (-t D) (: mente 3 *pl.* : wente 3 *pl.*).
blent, 2828.
bought, 4953 f, 7328 (bout(e) D); ybought, 810 f, 4161 f (bought D).
brought, 424, 915, 1303, 3088, 3149, 3611, 3980 f, 4465, 4954 f, 7924; brough[t], 7279 (-t BCD); ybrough[t], 6466 f (-t B, brought D; C †); ybrought, 4441, 6374.
yburyed (*trisyl.*), 2396.
dight, 4615 f.
dreynt, 7866.
dwelt, 7074 (dwellyd C, duellid ‡ *ind.* D).
eched, 4171.
felt, 25, 27, 2851, 2884, 4125; feled, 5646 AB (-id D).
ferd (*fared*), 5756, 7721.
ferd, see *afered, forfered.*
for-fèrëd. This may be the right reading in 6073 (*so* Cp.; for fered A, for ferdë ‖ out B, for fer C †, for dredë ‖ out D). [§ 135, III. 1, n 1.]
fulfild, 1717; fulfilled, 5853 (-filld B, -fyld C).
heled, 1082, 4054, 5098.
hent, 509.
herd, 197, 750, 754, 969, 1002, 1186, 2051, 2537, 2632, 2953, 3340, 3395, 5007 (hard(e) B), 5329, 6113, 6809, 6931, 6992, 7086, 7343, 7974.
hèriëd,[1] 4098; heryed (*dissyl.*), 4599 (y-herid(e) D), 4655; yhered, 2058 (yheried BD, i-heried C); iheried, 2849; yheryed, 4646.
hid, 618, 5158, 5972 (hidd(e) B, hëd C, hiddë † in D).
yknet, 4576 f.
kyst,—vnkyst, 809.
lad, 872, 6757; led, 1638.
laft, 4180 f (left(e) E, last † C), 4943 f (left C, laffte D), 6123 f (left C, laft(e) D); ylaft, 4889 f (ileffte D, ilaste † C).
lered, 3248 f (lernyd † C); ylered, 969 f.
let, 1179 f, 3559, 7665 (lettid C).
leyd, 2048, 2630, 3529 f, 5845 (berid † D).
met, 1237, 4523 f; imet, 1671 f.
myssed, 3379.
plyght, 3624 f, 6272; plight, 5107 ‡ f D.
queynt, 4975, 6092, 6906.

[1] *Heryed* is dissyllabic in all the examples except the first.

red, 8160; yred, 5461.
yrent, 8017.
reyned,—byreyned, 5834 f (be-reigned D).
sent, 105, 2399, 2783, 3329 f, 6051, 7785; ysent, 6834.
set, 643, 1670 f, 2878, 3182, 3328, 4213, 4330 (i-set B, schet C), 4788, 4986, 5837, 6040, 6103; yset, 4573 f, 4846, 5336. beset, 521, 879, 1919 f (y-sette D); byset, 4255; biset, 898. But,—sette, *pl.*, 1166 A (sete B, sate *pret.* 3 *pl.* D).
shent, 1123 f (y- D), 4301 A, 4741 ‡ D.
shet, 2000 ‡ D (hust ABC), 6897 (shitt D); schett(e), 2175 f C; schitt, 3936 D (hust ABC); byshet, 3444 (beshit D). But,—y-shette, *pred. pl.*, 3075 f (y-chette B, schette C, y-shet D) (: lette *n.*: sette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).
ysought, 4159 f (isout C). vnsought, 809 f.
sped[de], *pl.*, 2039 (spedde BC; D ?).
spilt, 4925 f.
spradde, *pl.*, 6084 f (: he hadde).
stynt, 3948.
taried (*dissyl.*), 2824, 7499, 7712.
thought, 5204, 5216. bithought, 1310.
told, 197 ‡ A, 1381, 1760, 1780 f, 2370, 3350, 3638, 3846, 4039, 4592, 6159, 6687, 7806; told(e), 913 f AB (-d CD), 1220 A (-d BCD), cf. 7463. ytold, 4803.
tyd, 900, 1309, 1549.
wend, 5046 (went C), 8045.
went, 1681 ‡ f D, 5597 f, 6909, 7100 A, 8171 f A (-e B); ywent, 6807 f (wente B, went CD); myswent, 633 f.
whette, *pl.*, 8123 f AB (whett D) (: mette 3 *pl.*).
wrought, 578 f (y-wrogth B), 1662 f, 1757 f, 4132, 4345 f, 5758, 7530 f.

II. Old Norse verbs of the First Declension (cf. § 100).

brent, 7873 (brend C); ybrend, 4739 (brent D †, brent(e) B), 6672 (brent CD).
fletted, 7907 f (kyttid † C [1], flitted D).
hit, 867 (hurt ‡ C).
reysed, 7834 f.
hright, 6683 (schriht C).
trusted, 1499 (tristed B, trustid C, trustyd D); mystrusted, cf. 1516.

[1] *flittid* in the next line in C.

III. Anglo-Saxon and Old Norse verbs of the Second Conjugation (cf. § 101).

ànsweręd, 4807 (-swerd(e) B, -swerid C, -swerd D);[1] answèrëd, 3383 (-id CD, -swerde † B).

ybathed, 5477.

ybedded, 6709 f.

blyssyd, 308 (blissed B, blessed C, blessid D).

vnbrydled, 3271 (-dęled B, -dęlid CD).

called, 394, 548, 874, 1093, 2502, 3775, 7814.

cast, 2474 f, 2938, 8059; outcast, 6978; forn-cast, 3363.

cleped, 66, 5424; -id, 548 ‡ D; ycleped, 5166.

clothed, 156.

cursed, 4996; acursed, 4913, 4294.

fetęred, 4768 AB (fetrid D).

fysshed, 1413 (fichid C).

gladed, 987.

hamęled, 2049 (-id C, lessid ‡ D).

[h]alwed, 3110 (halęwed B, halwid C, halęwid D).

hanged, 1438; an-honged, 2705.

lernyd †, 3248 f C (*l.* leryd).

loked, 4002.

lost, see V., below.

loued, 500, 1501; ilouęd, 594 (-id D, louëd? C); belouęd, 131 (-id C, -yd D).

ilyssed, 1082.

maked, (i.) 1193 (-yd C, made D). (ii.) ymaked ‡, 4576 (ymasked BCp., -id CD); in 2567, And shortly *made* eche of hem his fo (makes B, mad C), we should clearly read *maked* (with Cp. and John's).

mad, maad, (i.) 251, 553, 904, 3100, 3681, 7926; mad(ę), 3145 (mad C), 3377 (mad his C †, mad(*e*) his D). mad, (ii.) 2956 (maad B), 5139, 5540 (mad the C); mad(*e*), 7900 (y-mad(*e*) BD, mad C);[2] mad(*e*) haluendel, 6698. In most of the cases cited B and D read *mad*(*e*).

opned, 3311 (opęnyd CD).

played, 2325 (pleyęd C, pleyd D).

put, 1698, 1851, 2191, 3363.

raft, 7621 (reft(*e*) D); reft, 7623 (raft C, raft(ę) D). byraft, 4182 f

[1] In D, read *ben* for *hem*.

[2] In B *ymadë leche* = *ymad a leche*.

(-reft(e) D), 4887 f, 4890, 4945 f (bereft C, berafft(e) D), 6122 f (beraft(e) D).

shadwed, 1906 (-wed(e) [wel] A).

shamed, 8090; ashamed, 2132.

shewed, 4690, 7810; -ęd, 7812 (-ịd D, -ïd C); yshewed, 7614.

sorwed, 5545.

spared, 6567.

sperid, 6894 (-ed BD, -ed(*e*) C).

thonked, 1935, 4451; -ęd, 517 (-ëd B, -yd C, -ịd D); ythonked, 4664.

trowed, 5045, 8041.

twyght, 5234 f.

warned, 4511.

wedded, 6707 f, 7338.

wondred, 1277 (-id D, -derd C).

wont, wonęd, wonted. (*a*) wont, (i.) 183, 2605 (C(?)), 4975 (*om.* † B; C(?)), 5443 (wonęd C), 5788, 6909, 7023, 7025; men was wont, 5528 (werę wonę C). (ii.) 510 (-yd C), 6982, 8073; wont here (*poss. sg.*), 5416 (-yt ‡ was C).—(*b*) wonęd, (i.) 901 (wonę (?) C), 1485, 4378, 4553, 4697, 4729. (ii.) 3397 (-t BCD).—(*c*) as it wontëd is to done, 6640 (wonte ? B, wone ? C, wonte ? D). For *woned* = dwelt, see 276 f (-yd CD) (: astoned *p.p.*).—In most of the cases above cited (*a*—*b*) C has *wone* (monosyllabic), B *wont*(*e*), and D *wont*(*e*) or *wont*.

wounded, 1618 f, 1711.

IV. Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Third Conjugation (cf. § 102).

had, 1503, 1504, 2943, 5057 f, 5153, 6493, 7119, 7691.

lyued, 5755; ilyued, 7296.

seyd, 611, 740, 905, 935, 969, 1129, 1131, 1467, 1475, 1509, 1687, 1955, 2768, 3173, 3531 f, 3778, 3788, 4054, 4459, 4656, 5573, 6078, 7102, 7639, 8132; seyd(e), 5833.

V. Verbs originally strong (cf. § 103).

adrad, 1200 f (adradde C) (: be ye mad); ydrad, 4617.

fled, 87, 3933, 5530; yfled, 5323. In 463 *fled*[*de*], pl., rhymes with *bredde*, pret.; *fledde*, 7561 A, should be preterite.

hight, 1577, 5107 f (be- C, plight D), 6289 f; yhight, 6904 f; byhight, -hyght, 6717 f (hight D), 7467 f.

lost (cf. A.S. gelosod), (i.) 462 (D †),[1] 809, 3140 (C †), 3937, 4108 (lorę C), 4268, 4606, 4949, 5068 (-t(e) D), 5230 (-t(e) D), 6129 (-t(e) D), 6783, 8008 (-t(e) D); ylost, 5945 (-t(e) BD); fȯrlost,

[1] Supply [*wol*] in C.

5418 (soore ‡ lorn(e) D). (ii.) lost, 2824, 5040 (-t(e) B),[1] 6244, 7069; forlòst, 3122 (-t(e) B, fordon(e) ‡ D)[2]; lost haue, 7001 (-t(e) D), 7766 (-t(e) D); lost held, 4635 (lorn hade C, lorn had D).

lorn, (i.) 373 f (-n(e) B, borne † D); cf. 3918 f, 3943 f, 4065 f, 4483 f, 6141 f, 7808 f; ylorn, 5912 f (ilorne D, bore † D). (ii.) 5621 (-n(e) B), cf. 6275; lorn hade, 4635 C (lorn had D, lost held AB). He wend it *lost* he thoughte he nas but *lorn*, 3918 (lost . . . lorn(e) BD, lost . . . forlorn(e) C). He seyde (seid D) he nas but lor[e]n (lorne G) waylawey, 5619 ABD Cp. (not in C; He seide I am but lorn so weylaway John's).

lorę, 4108 C (lost ABD); forlore, 6386 f (fore † B).

Rhyme words.—born *p.p.* (373, 3918, 3943, 4065, 5912), sworn *p.p.* (6141), torn *p.p.* (6141), byforn (373, 3918, 4065, 5912, 7808), toforn (4483), thorn (3943), more *n. A.S. morc,-u* (6386), byfore (6386).

rewed, 5803.

rowed, 962 f.

siked, 7101.

VI. Verbs of Germanic origin not found in Anglo-Saxon.

awhaped, 316 f.

bystowed, 960 f.

bywared, 636 f.

gert, 7408 C (hurt A, hirt(e) B, hurt(e) D); thourgh girt, 5289 (thurgh gird(e) D).

grounded, 6334.

hust, 2000 (shet D), 3936 (schitt D).

smytted, 7908 f.

stokked, 3222.

twynned, 5138, 5450, 7042.

vntỳd, 1837 (-teyd B, onteyęd C).

VII. Romance and Latin verbs with participle in -t (cf. § 104).

abayst, 2936 (abassęd C, abasshid D), 3964 (baist(e) B, abaschid D).

Cf. abaysshed, 4075 (abaysed B, abasschit C; D †).

caught, 214 (caut C), 557, 2027, 2267, 2357, 7066; kaught, 4049, 4768; ycaught, 1668 (caght D, lauȝt C),[3] cf. 534.

hurt, 1080, 7408 (gert C).

quyt, 334, 529, 1327 f, 3861, 4068.

combèst, 3559 (-bust B, cumbrid ‡ CD).

enhàbyt, 5105 (-it B, enabit(id) C, an habit(e) D).[4]

[1] Supply [*how*] in D.
[2] Read [*y*]*wonne* in A.
[3] Supply [*y-*] in CD.
[4] Read *her*[*te*] in A.

èxecùt, 3464.

vncircumscript, 8228 (-t(e) D).

VIII. Romance and Latin verbs with participle in -ed (cf. § 105).

recouęred, 37; couęred, 2873 A (-id D, couerd B).

apeyred, 38 f.

plesed, 247 f.

by-iaped, 531; cf. 318 f.

astonyed (*trisyl.*), astoned, 1512, 1688, 3931, 8091.

disposed, 1767.

considęred, 2375, 3765, 3827, 5933 (-sidred D), 7711.

delyuęred, 3065.

delibęred, 4873 B (-uęryd C, -uęrid D; A †).

medęlid, 5001 C (medled B, medlid D; A †); cf. ymedled, 3657.

suffred, 5211 (-fęrid C).

eschewed, 5740.

assembled, 5920 (-bęlyd C).

ypreysed, 7836 f.

depeynted, 7962 f.

Cf. also 85 f, 87 f, 249, 274 f, 1274, 1447, 1690, 1710, 1765 f, 1872, 1924 f, 1925 f, 2164 f, 2166 f, 2262, 2272, 2467, 2477, 2588, 2811, 3170 f, 3171 f, 3247 f, 3263 f, 3265 f, 3287 f, 3288 f, 3366, 3622, 3875, 4026 f, 4028 f, 4376, 4653, 4700, 4730, 4892, 4929, 4937, 4955 f, 4956 f, 5215, 5221 f, 5222 f, 5301 f, 5303 f, 5304 f, 5455, 5470, 5487, 5637, 5670, 5715, 5766, 5832 f, 5924, 5959, 6186, 6310, 6514, 6540, 7076, 7123, 7191, 7270, 7347, 7482, 7610 f, 7612 f, 7698, 7702, 7741, 7877, 7905 f, 7960 f, 8046, 8073, 8084 f, 8085 f, 8143, 8179, etc., etc.

Note.—*Passen*, pret. *paste*, *passed* (§ 102), has p.p. *passed*, *ypassed*; see 24, 2180, 4241, 4249, 4470, 6838, 7044, 7109.

IX. Roman participles in *-ęd* (syncopated).

turnęd, 4242 C (tornęd B, tournëd AE).

crięd, 5249 (cryęd B, cryëd C).

purueỳęd, 5668 (-uyęd D); pùrueyęd (*or* purueỳęd ?), cf. 5717.

But,—purueỳ[ë]d, 5718 (-ed B); purueỳëd, 5670, 5714 (-[e]d D).

enlùmynęd, 6911 (-yd C, -ëd BD).

Cf. also 992 C, 997 C, 2082 C, 2634 C, 6952 D, 7673 C, etc.

X. Adjectives in -ed.

Of adjectives formed from nouns by means of the participial termination *-ed*, the following will serve as examples:—

feythed, 1000 (fichid ‡ C).

sucred, 1469.

helmed, 1678.

rayled, 1905.

benched, 1907.

sonded, 1907.

fethęred, 2011.

Cf. also §§ 57. b, 71.

Note 1.—It is of course impossible to draw a hard and fast line between such adjectives and genuine participles: *ytressed*, 7173; *ypleynted*, 7960 f.

Note 2.—The prefix *y-*, *i-* (A.S. *ge-*) is common in the perfect participles of both native and borrowed verbs: see the lists above (I.—X.) and cf. *yclosed*, 2053; *yplesed*, 3288; *idarted*, 4902; *yformed*, 4977; *ypleyned*, 6350; *yscrued*, *iscrued*, 6800, 8084 f; etc., etc. In cases like *wyse ylered*, 969 f (wyse lered BCp., old[e] lerid D; C †), where the word preceding the participle ends in -e, it is not always easy to determine whether the scribe has carried over the -e to the participle, or whether the *y-* is Chaucer's own (cf. 1260, 5945, 6637 (adj. *sene*), 7109, etc.).

## § 122. The Perfect Participle of Strong Verbs ends in the *Troilus* in *-en*, *-ẹn*, *-n*, *-e*, *-ẹ* (cf. Child, § 61; ten Brink, § 196).

Instead of *-en* C usually has *-yn*: so often D, and occasionally B. *-in* is also now and then found. Variants of this kind are commonly disregarded in lists I.-IV., below. Examples are,—*ybetyn*, 741 f D; *holdyn*, 1326 D, 4516 CD, 8043 C; *brostyn*, 2061 CD; *comyn*, 2528 CD, 2904 D, 3599 CD, 4397 BC; *foldyn*, 5021 f CD; *brokyn*, 5809 BCD, 7567 C; cf. 86 f CD, 205 f CD, 1151 D, 1661 f D, 1680 CD, 2020 f CD, 2068 f C, 2177 CD, 2938 CD, 3095 f CD, 3292 CD, 3298 C, 3533 CD, 3576 CD, 3732 f D, 4060 C, 4739 D, 4777 D, 5375 C, 5606 C, 5918 C, 6032 C, 6077 CD, 7234 C, etc. For *-in*, see *dryvin*, 2068 D; *holpin*, 2404 C, 2526 C, 4112 C. *Writon* occurs once, 7666 B.

Note.—Instead of *-n*, *-n(e)* occurs now and then (see especially V., below), but this is very rarely the case in A.

The examples are arranged as follows,—I. -en before consonants; II. -en in rhyme; III. -en before vowels; IV. -en before *h*; V. syncope, -ẹn or -n; VI. -e before consonants; VII. -e in rhyme; VIII. *-e* (elided) before vowels; IX. *-e* (elided) before *h*; X. apocope of -e; XI. hiatus; XII. the perfect participles of *sleen*; XIII. the perfect participles of *seen* (including the adjectives *sene*, *ysene*).

I. -en before consonants:

holden trewely, 1326 (holde C)[1]; h. was, 4516; h. me, 8043.

foryeuen be, 1680 (-ȝouyn C)[2].

brosten ben, 2061[3].

holpen what, 2526 (-[e] D)[4]; h. there, 4112 (-ẹn † hem D); h. for, 5918 (helpyn C, helped D).

comen was, 2528[5], 4397; c. to, 2904 (-e C); c. benẹdicite, 3599; c. Troylus, 6645 (-e CD); icomen was, 4510 (comyn D †).

yolden chere, 2938 (i-ȝolden B).

boden go, 3533 (bedyn C).

[1] In B supply [*no*].
[2] In AB read *wel* for *wole* (*wol*) *I.*
[3] In D supply [*am*].
[4] D is 9-syl.
[5] In C read *which* for *with*.

shapen was, 3576 ; forshapen was, 1151.
founden by, 4777 (-e B, -*e* C) ; f. salue, 5606 ; f. were, 7965 (-e D, fonde C).[1]
fallen was, 5375 D (-yn C) (stanza not in AB).
broken (*adj.*) voys, 5809 ; b. that, 7567.
wreten wel, 6077 (writen B, writyn C) ; ywriten nor, 7422 (wretyn ‡ C, ywretyn D).
faren syn, 6829 (-e C, farne *l.* -en B).
woxen lesse, 6981 (waxen B, waxe CD)[2] ; w. was, 7190 (waxen C, waxe D) ; w. wellys, 7737 (waxen C, wexen D) ; ywoxen was, 6638 (ywaxen D, wexen ‡ *inf.* C), 7071 (iwaxen C, waxen D).
wopen for, 7087 (wepid C, wepte † D) ; bywopen thus, 5578 (-wepen B, -wepyn CD).[3]
knowen were, 7944 (-e C).
ytaken for, 8128 (taken B, had[de] taken D).

II. -en in rhyme :

spoken, 86 f (C †), 205 f.
wroken, 88 f, 207 f (ywrokyn D).
broken, 89 f (-e C), 208 f (ybrokyn D).
ybeten, 741 f (beten $A_1$ ibete C).
dreuen, 1661 f (dryuen B, dryvyn D) ; dryuen, 2068 f B (dreuyn C, dryvin D, (y)dreuen A).
schryuen, 1664 f (screuyn B).
ryden, 2018 f (redyn C).
abyden, 2020 f.
becomen, 3095 f.
shaken, 3732 f (-e C).
shapen, 4082 f (y- BD, [i]schape C).
ywryen, 4293 f.
folden, 5021 f.
ycomen, 6875 f (come C).
nomen, 6877 f (-e C).

Rhyme words.—Other participles in *-en*, and I. Infinitives : lyuen (1661, 1664, 2068), comen (3095), maken (3732), escapen (4082), byholden (5021), colde[n] (5021), spyen (4293) ; II. treten *ind.* 3 *pl.* (741), yeden *ind.* 3 *pl.* (2018, 2020) ; III. eyen *n. pl.* (4293). Observe the rhyme *yeden* : *ryden* : *abyden*.

III. -ën before vowels :

clomben, 215 (clumbyn D).

[1] Supply [*that*] in AC, [*why*] in D ; otherwise the line is a disagreeable 9-syl. verse.
[2] In BCD perhaps infinitive.
[3] In D read *ne* for *you*.

thurgh shoten, 325.[1]
yolden, 801 (ȝuldyn C); [2] cf. 5455 ‡ C.
founden, 1325 (-ë C, -[ën] D), 1374 (-[ë] C, -[ën] D), 2596 (fonden C, found[e] ‡ me ? D), 4060 (fonden B), 6032.
shapen, 2177, 4272.
comen, cf. 2255, 7286.
holpen, 2404 (-[en] D).
wreten, 3292 (writen C, writyn D) [3]; cf. 4198.
spoken, 3298 (-ë D).
taken, 4712 (D †), 7234.
Cf. also 3683, 3853 (cropen), 4734, 5074, 5280, 5616, 6431, 7268, 7377, etc.

IV. -ën before *h* :

taken hede, 501.[4]
dronken hadde, 4232 (drenken A).
holden haue, 4762 (-d ‡ my D).
ycomen hym, 5028 (comyn C, icommyn D).
yeuen here (l. *hire* A.S. hȳr, with B), 5168 (yoven D).
yknowen here (*acc.*), 5381 (knowyn C, knowen D).
vnbroyden hangen, 5479.[5]
a swollen herte, 6564 (sorwęful ‡ C).
comen heder, 6847 (C †).
songen hadde, 7008 (sungen had[de] D, songë ‡ also C).
wonnen han, 7353 (-en ‡ the D).
wreten here (*dat.*), 7666 (-on B, -ę to C, -yn ‡ to D).
woxen helle, 7739 (waxen C, waxë D).
shapen hadde, 7914 (-ë C, -en ? D).

V. Syncope :

shorn, 222 f (-ne B, yshorn D) (: corn *n.* : byforn).
born, (i.) 375 f (*in* vp born) (-ne BD), 897 f (-ne B), 1228 f (bor D), 1653 f (-ne BC); cf. 2354 f, 3146 f, 3915 f, 3945 f, 4064 f, 4438, 4994, 4996, 5913 f, 7053, 7063 (-yn C), 8062; born(e), 6518 f ABD (born C). (ii.) cf. 4265, 4960, 5407, 7074 (-yn C), 7320; born haue, 7639 (-n(e) D).—yborn, 1383 f (-ne B, ibore C); yborn al, 382 (-n(e) B, iborn C, [y]born D).

Rhyme words.—lorn, ylorn *p.p.* (375, 3915, 3945, 4064, 5913), sworn, isworn, sworn(e) *p.p.* (897, 1383, 1653), byforn (375, 1228, 2354, 3146, 3915, 4064, 5913, 6518), toforn (1383), thorn *n.* (2354, 3945).

sworn, (i.) 899 f (-ne B), 3154, 6143 f (-ne B, isworn C, isworne D);

[1] In D supply [*thurgh*].
[2] In C read *that for* for *therfore*.
[3] In B read *while* for *whiche*.
[4] In D supply [*neuer*].
[5] In D supply [*al*].

sworn(e), 1384 f AB (swore C, sworn D); swo[rn], 5638 f (sworne B, sworn D); isworn, 1655 f (sworne B, isworne C, sworn D), 6646 f (sworne BD, sworyn C).

Rhyme words.—born, yborn *p.p.* (899, 1384, 1655), lorn *p.p.* (6143), torn *p.p.* (6143), by-, toforn (1384, 5638, 6646).

torn, 6144 f (-ne D) (: lorn *p.p.* : sworn *p.p.*); to-torn, 5020 f (-ne CD) (: byforn).

fallẹn yn, 555 (falle BC).
growẹn vnder, 1488 (grow B, wox ‡ D).
foundẹn àlwey, 3837 (found D).
yoldẹn ywys, 4053 (ȝolde BC, ȝoldẹn D).
yeuẹn vs, 5633 (yeue D).
spokẹn as, 5895 (i- B, speke C).
comẹn and, 6867 (-yn C); cf. 6560 C (?).
vnknowẹn of, 7942 (-knowe C); cf. 6910 † D.

Note 1.—C is fond of *-yn* when ABC have *-e* (elided) : see VIII., below.

Note 2.—For *lorn*, *ylorn*, see § 121, V.; for *slayn*, see XII., below; for *scyn*, see XIII., below.

VI. -e before consonants (not *h*):

come was, 155 (-en B, -yn CD).
to-hewe was, 1723 (-en B, -yn CD).
knowe be, 1877 A (yknowen B).
smet[e] be, 2230 (-e C, smyten B, smytyn D).[1]
holde fully, 2383 (-en B, -[e] D).
vnbore dar, 3111 A (*-e* BD).
ywrete ben, 4535 (wryten B, wretyn C, writyn D).
bete doun, 4739 (betten B, drawyn ‡ D).
vnderstonde god, 8161 (-ẹ B, -en D †).

VII. -e in rhyme:

ybete, 2025 f ([i]bette B, i-betyn C), 2314 f (-tte B), 4011 f (-bette B, bete C).
blowe, 4829 f (i- BC, yblow D); yblowe, 384 f (-w D).
bonde, 255 f (-d D), 2308 f; bounde, 859 f (-d D); vp bounde, 3359 f (-d D).
bore, 2497 f. (Cf. also VI., above).
i-, ycome, 3446 f (come BCD), 6434 f; ouercome, 243 f (ouęr- C), 5731 f (-com D, ouęrecome B). For *welcome*, see § 2.
idrawe, 3695 f (ydrowe B); out drawe, 5888 f (drawe ‡ CD); withdrawe, 5548 f (-drare † C).

[1] A has *be smet* for *smet[e]* be.

dreue, 6752 f (dryue B, dryf *inf.* ‡ D).
bygete, 970 f (be- C).
be-, bygonne, 1133 f, 1864 f, 2045 f, 2319 f, 2669 f, 3577 f; bygon[n]e, 3121 f (-nne B). [Var. CD -gunne; C -gune; D -gun.]
falle, 3701 f (yfaH D), 4933 f (-H D), 6615 f, 6912 f (-H D).
yfare, 3419 f, 5831 f (fare C).
folde, 5909 f (-yn CD), 6351 f, 7603 f.
founde, 3360 f (-d D), 5290 f, 6327 f, 7197 f (y- B); y-founde, 5256 f (stound ‡ *n.* D).
graue, 2945 f, 4341 f.
ygrounde, 4705 f (-d D).
holde, 4101 f (y- D ‡), 5079 f (-en B; C †), 6937 f, 7329 f (D †); byholde, 7615 f (be- CD).
knowe, 638 f (-w D), 5145 f (y- B, i- CD); vnknowe, 4830 f (-w D).
nome, 3448 f, 6553 f (y- B, i- D); ynome, 242 f (nome C).
ronge, 7425 f (runge D); runge(n), 1890 f (ronge B, (i)runge C, yrung D).
ronne, 2549 f; yronne, 1992 f, 2926 f ( [y]- C$^{c}$, yrun D).
ishape, 3253 f (schape C).
yshore, 5658 f (yshoor D).
shoue, 3868 f (sowe † D).
songe, 8160 f (sunge D); y-, isonge, 5461 f, 7422 f (ysong B).
sowe, 385 f (-w D, sawe B).
ystonde, 7975 f (istounde C); withstonde, 253 f (-d D), 5960 f (-stande D); vnderstonde, 5958 f (-stande *inf.* ‡ D), 6067 f, 7977 f.
itake, 4040 f.
ythrowe, 4668 f (-w D), 5144 f; ouerthrowe, 5047 f (-w B), 7823 f.
wonne, 777 f (won D), 2047 f, 2583 f, 2828 f (won D); ywonne, 2321 f, 3122 f ([y]- A, ywunne D), 5977 f (Antenorë wonne = Antenor i-wonne C).
wrie, 3462 f (i- C, ywrye D); ywrye, 6316 f (-wrey D).
y-yeue, 4453 f (iȝeue BC, [i]ȝeue D).

Rhyme words.—Other perfect participles in *-en*, and the following,—I. *nouns:* to the grounde, to grounde (859, 4705), wounde (859, 5256, 5290), hete (970, 2025), sonne (1864, 1992, 2319, 2321, 2669), tunge(n), tonge (1890, 5461, 7422, 7425, 8160), in, on honde (2308, 6067, 7975, 7977), strete (2314), iape (3253), frape (3253), hawe (3695), loue (3868), halle (3701), mowe (4668), throwe (5047, 7823), sto[u]nde (5290), eye (6316), cf. welcome (6434, 6553); II. *adjectives:* bare *indef. sg.* (5831), secounde *indef. sg.* (7197), the grete (2314), the olde (5079), donne *pl.* (1992), hye *pl.* (3462), colde *pl.* (4101, 6351), some *pl.* (242, 243, 3446, 3448, 5731), alle *pl.* (3701, 4933, 6615, 6912); III. *adverbs:* fawe (5548), to-fore, to-forn (2497), byfore (5658), wherfore (2497), therfore (5658), aboue (3868); IV. *infinitives:* 970, 2308, 2926, 3419, 3462, 4011, 4040, 4933, 5079,

5731, 5909, 6067, 6327, 6351, 6752, 6937, 7603, 7823; V. *other verb-forms: prcs. ind.* 1 *sg.*,—trowe (638), haue (2945), leue *vivo* (4453); 1 *pl.* konne (1864); 2 *pl.* konne (777), swete (2025); 3 *pl.* konne (2669); *prcs. subj.* 1 *sg.* konne (1133), dye (6316); 2 *sg.* konne (2549, 2583), foryeue (6752); 3 *sg.* saue (2945, 4341); 2 *pl.* yf ye konne (2828, 5977); *prct. ind.* 3 *sg.* tolde (7615); 2 *pl.* tolde (7329), sponne (3577).

VIII. *-e* (elided) before vowels (variants not registered).

Cf. 474 (founde), 530 (iblowe), 616 (vnknowe), 809 (vnknowe), 1163 (come), 1260 (yknowe), 1367 (shape), 2917 (come), 3092 (bigonne; -ę A), 3111 BD (vnbore), 3630 (come), 3634 (come), 3844 (founde), 3948 (foryeue), 4293 (stole), 4642 (come), 4719 (yeue), 5207 (yeue), 6321 (founde), 6373 (molte), 6952 (ywroke), 7254 (take)[1], 7394 (come).

Note.—In some of these cases syncopated forms occur in B, C, or D: as,—*ȝeuęn*, 5207 B; *forȝeuęn*, 3948 B; *comęn*, 2917 B (*-yn* C); *comyn*, 3630 C, 3634 C; *founden*, 6321 D; *moltęn*, 6373 D; etc. Sometimes, too, the ending is omitted altogether: thus,—*com*, 1163 B, 3630 B, 7394 B; *found*, 3844 D; *vnknow*, 616 BD, 809 BD; etc. (cf. *grow*, 1488 B; *wox*, 1488 D). Even A occasionally omits the ending before a vowel: thus,—*wrony*, 5833 ACD (-e B); *hold*, 7066 AB (-e C, *-ęn* D).[2]

IX. *-e* (elided) before *h*:

wonne hym, 28 (D †).
founde his, 3378 (-d D, fonde B, fond C).
come he, 3396.
take here (*dat.*), 3986.
y-yeue hym, 4218 (i-ȝeue BC, yeue D ‡).

X. Apocopę of -e (before consonants):

Genuine cases are rare. Such are perhaps,—
fond no, 2263 (-ę B).
comę this, 6560 (-yn C, -ęn D).

Apparent cases occur now and then, but usually disappear on comparison of MSS. Examples are,—

comę to, 2198 A.
spokę with, 2565 D.
bygonnę to, 3092 A.
hold my, 4762 D.
wretę to, 7666 C.
yborę was, 8013 A.
vnderstondę god, 8161 B.

XI. Hiatus.

Hiatus very rarely occurs, and is of course always easily corrected by adding -n. Examples are,—

boundë in, 663 A (-en B, -yn CD).[3]
spokë in, 3298 D (-en AB, -yn C).
iboundë in, 4891 A (-yn CD, ybounden B).
brokë alday, 5280 C (-en ABD).

[1] In A read *hen*[*ne*]*s*. [2] In A supply [*I*]. [3] Supply [*hym*] in C.

songë also, 7008 C (-en hadde AB, sungen had[de] D).

XII. Perfect-participle of *sleen.*

The perfect participle of *sleen* has various forms. The usual form before vowels and consonants is *slayn* (var. D sleyn, slayn(ę); BD slayn(*e*); B sleyn(*e*); C slain) : cf. 608, 1420, 4301 BCD, 4940, 5860, 6144, 6417, 7299, 7864, 7867 C, 7868, 8170, 8183. For *slay* (p. p.) *yourę self*, 5896 A, read *slayn* (so BC, slayn(e) anon D).

In rhyme we find,—*slayn*, 5855 f (slayne D) (: desdayn *n.*), and *sleyn*, 6590 f (-ne B, slayn CD) (: ayen AD, ąȝen B, ąȝen C); but also *slawe*, 3563 f (-w D) (: shawe *n.*), 5546 f (: withdrawe *p.p.*), 5890 f (: drawe *p.p.*). In 5903 either *slay*[*e*]*n* (cf. ten Brink, § 196 : "wohl niemals *slayen*") or *slawe* must be read in the interior of the verse, —My (Myn C) selue (self B, seluyn C, silf D, selfe G) I wolde (wolde I C) haue (han B, a C) *slayn* (*slawe* C, *slayne* DG) quod she tho (too D). Mr. Austin's collation of Cp. and the John's MS. has no note on this line.

XIII. Perfect-participle of *seen.*

seyn, (i.) 174 (seyęn C)[1], 3063 f (: ayen : fayn), 7962 (sen C, seyn [with] B). (ii.) 3902 (sen C)[2], 5624[3].—yseyn with, 6811 (sen C, senę D); beseyn that, 2347 (by- BD).

seighęn byfore, 5639 A (seyn BD); seyghęn byfore, 5660 A (seyn(e) B, seyn D).

yseye, 1253 (yseyn B, seyn CD).

sen at, 6804 C (wyst A, wist(e) BD).

sene, 3713 f (seene B) (: I wene *ind.*), 6637 f (-ee- B, ysen D) (: shene *adj. postpos.*), 7259 f (-ee- B) (: queene), 8078 f (-ee- B) (: tene *n.*); sene his, 8117 (seen B, sen D †); senę, 3731 (-ee- B, seyn D), 6394 (sen D).

yseene, 700 f ([y]sene C, ysene D) (: queene); isene, 6269 f (i-seene B, [i]sene D) (: tene *n.* : shene *adj. def.*).

Note.—The forms in *-ne* represent the A.S. adjectives *gesėne* (*gesỹne*): cf. ten Brink, § 148.

## § 123. Præterito-present verbs.

(i.) *wot, not, oughte;* (ii.) *kan, dar, thar;* (iii.) *shal;* (iv.) *may;* (v.) *mot.*

### I. *wot.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. wot, woot, (i.) 670 (-(e) BD)[4], 2087 (-(e) BD)[5], 2109 (-(e) D †; C †), etc.; (ii.) 1829 (-(e) BD), 2525 (-(e) D)[6],

[1] In B read ȝit for þat. [2] In A supply [a]. [3] In D dele (*for*).
[4] Supply [*for*] in D. [5] Supply [*wel*] in A. Cf. 1621. [6] Supply [*wel*] in D

2785 (not(e) D, wot [I] C; B †), 5044 (what D, wote *pl.* C), etc.; wot(*e*), 1960 ABD (wot C)[1].

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. wost, (i.) (ii.) 633 (wyst C)[2], 717 (-(ę) B), 721 f (-e B, wyst C), 882 (wyst C), 2451 f (-e B)[3], 2493 f (wist C), 2514 (wolt ‡ C; D (?)), 2908 f, 3088 f, 3098, 3141 f, 3181, 4930 (wotist D), 5262 f (-e D, wooste B), 5742 (-(*e*) D), 6281 f (wooste B, wist C, woste D), 6705 (-(ę) D, wist C), etc. [Var. BD woost; B (633) whost.]—wostow, 588, 775, 781, 851 (wastow B, wyst thou C, wost thow D), 901, 3091. [Var. CD wost thou; D wost thow.]

Rhyme words.—most *adv.* (721, 2451, 2493, 5262, 6281), almost (2908, 3141), bost *n.* (3088, 3141), ost *n.* (5262, 6281).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. wot, woot, (i.) (ii.) 1975 f (wote C) (: hoot *pred. adj. sg.*); cf. 826 (A †), 2080, 2711, etc. B shows less liking for *wot*(*e*) and more for *woot* than in the 1 pers.; C has *wot*(e) in 807.—for-wȯt, 5733 A (fȯr-woot B, fȯrȩwitt D).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. we wote alle, 5044 C ‡ (*should be singular*).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. wetë wel, 1323 AC (-en B, wite D); witë ‡ what, 2737 D.—wotȩ ye, 3686 (-oo- B, wot C †); wot ye, 3501 (-oo- B, what C, wytȩ D), 3739 (-ȩ D, whoot B), 5916 (-oo- B, wotȩ CD); wot your, 3621 (-ȩ D, wetȩ C); wot that, 1665 (*-oo- B, wetyn C,* wytȩ D), 5974[4]; wot the, 2731 (*-ȩ D, wetȩ C*), 5576 (*wootȩ B*); wot, 2281 f (woote B, he wrote ‡ D) (: not *nescio*), 5923 f (*woote B,* wote D) (: hot *pred. adj. sg.*).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. weten folk, 4860 (*witen B, wetyn C, know[e] D*); wotyn ‡ that, 7179 C (writen ABD); wot no, 1978 (-ȩ B; D ‡).

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. wyste, 3682 f (wist CD) (: vntriste)[6]; wyst I, 1644 (*-e* B, wiste C, wist D)[6], 2968 (wiste B, woste C), 3210 (wiste B, wost C, wist D).[7]

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. wistist thou, 4486 C (but see under *subj.* 2 *sg.*).

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. wiste, wyste, 811 f (-t D; C †), 3112 (-[e] ‡ D)[8], 4071 f (-t C), 4095 f, 8028 f (wistt D); -[e] what, 7231 (-e B, *om.* † C); -[e] wel, 8087 (-e D); *-e*, 565 (-t he D, woste he C)[9], 4634 (-t D); -t he, 76 (west B, woste C), 301 (*-e* B, wostë he C)[10], 3367

[1] BD regularly add -e, which is never sounded, however, though false readings sometimes force one either to pronounce it or to emend the verse by a comparison of MSS. (thus, 670 D).

[2] *Wyst* might be called *pret. subj.* in this line.

[3] Protasis.

[4] Supply [*that*] in C; [*a*] in D.

[5] "Whi hastow mad Troylus to me vntriste That neuere yet agylte hym that I wyste."

[6] Supply [*as*] in D.

[7] Read *tellę* [*me*] in D.

[8] Supply [*that*] in A.

[9] Supply [*as*] in D.

[10] But supply [*how*] in C, and read *woste he.*

(*-e* B, -t D);[1] *-e* he, 3321 ‡ C; wostë ‡ alle, 3538 C (wist[e] ‡ that D); wist ‡ non, 2646 D.

Rhyme words.—kyste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (811, 4095), tryste, triste *inf.* (4071, 8028), twyste *n.* (4071).

Pret. Ind. 2 Pl. wysten of, 1586 (westen B, wistyn C, wist[en] D) (*indirect question*).

Pret. Ind. 3 Pl. wyste, 5824 f (wiste BCD) (: kyste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*); wyst[e] neuęre, 6383 (wiste B); wyst what, 2646 (wistę B, woste al C, wist ‡ non *sg.* D).

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing. wiste, wyste, 678 f (wist D), 4119 f (woste C), 4350 (-[e] D, woste C); -[e], 765 (-e BC), 6285 (-e BD, nyste C); -ë how, 3944 (-[ë] D); wist I, 8104 (*-e* B, wist † hou D); wist[ë] outrely, 4328 (-ë B, woste C, wist D).

Rhyme words.—liste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (678), kyste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (4119).

Pret. Subj. 2 Sing. Sith I so loth was that thi selfe it wyste, 3211 f (wiste B, wost C †, wyst D) (: triste *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* : lyste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.*).

Note.—In 4486 C *wistist thou* is used in a subjunctive construction (=if thou didst know). Cp. and John's have *wystistow*; *wistow* ABG, *wist thow* D, which make a disagreeable 9-syl. line and are not grammatical, should be emended (see § 107).

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. wiste, wyste, 3307 (-[e] D, weste[e] B, woste C), 4610 f (-t C)[2] (: liste *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* : twyste *same*[3]), 7269 (woste C); *-e*, 6005 (-t D); wist he, 5580 (*-e* BCD); wystë of, 1830 (woste C, wist D).[4]

Pret. Subj. 2 Pl. wyste, 2267 f (wiste BC, wyst D) (: lyste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.*); *-e*, 1224 (wiste C, wist BD); wiste how, 6280 (wist D).

Inf. wyte, wite, 1397 (wetyn C, wytÿn ‡ D), 3991 (wete C); wetę, 6468 (wit as B, wete as D).

Perf. Part. wist, wyst, (i.) 513 (-(e) B), 615 (- (e) B), 3116 (wost C), 3246 f (-e B) (: lyst *pres. ind.* 3 *sg.* : tryst *n.*), etc., etc. For *vnwist*, *vnwyst*, *wnwist*, (i.) (ii.) cf. 2594, 3445, 3612, etc.

## II. *not.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. not, (i.) (ii.) 410 (wot(e) ‡ D), 1626, 2282 f (note D) (: wot *pres. ind.* 2 *pl.*), 3851, 4320, 5463 (nott D), 6500 (knowe † D), 7530 (knowe ‡ D); cf. 426, 1120, 2291, 2451, 2551, 2963, 4495, 4698, 4842, 6589. [Var. B noot; D not(e).]

[1] Supply [*wel*] in D. [2] 3 *pl.* in E ‡. [3] *il wyste* † A.
[4] Al (As D) wolde (wold CD) I that noon (*so* ABG, no man CD) wyste (woste C, wist DG) of this thought (-e B). No note in Mr. Austin's collation.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. nost, (i.) 5304 (wost C, knowęst D)[1], 5763 (wost C ‡[2], knowęst D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. not, 800 (noot B, not(e) D).[3]

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. nyste, 356 f (-t CD), 4193 f (-t C), 5011, 5341,[4] 5794 f ( (I) nyste D); nyst[e], 6381 (-e B), 7566 (-e B, nist ‡ what D; C †); nyste how, 7145 (-t B †).[5]

Rhyme words.—lyste *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* (356), kyste *ind.* 3 *sg.* (4193), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (5794), twyste *inf.* (5794).

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing. nyste, 6285 C (wist[e] A, wiste BD).

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. nyst[e], 7791 (-ę ‡ C, nist[e] D); nyste, 494 (*om.* † D).[6]

Note.—The forms *nyst thou* in 4269 C and *nyst(e) thou* in 4965 D are blunders for *nylt thou*.

### III. *oughte*.

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. ought[e] konne, 647 (ouȝte C, me oghte to? D)[7]; ought[e] be, 7710 (auȝte C); I ne ought[e] not[8], 1805 (ne aught[e] B, ne auȝte C, I oght[e] not D); oughte I, 7002 (auȝte C, ought D); ought half, 5927 (auȝtę C).[9]

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. oughtest, 8069; oughtestow, 6908 (auȝtist thow C, oughtest thou D); oghtist, 649 D. (But see § 107.)

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. oughte, 649 (*om.* † C, oghtist D), 3106 f (-t D; ȝe ouȝt *pl.* C),[10] 3325 (-[e] B, auȝtę ‡ to C, ogh t ‡ be D), 3423 f (-t D), 3522 f (-t CD), 5805 (-[e] D, hem owęn † to B, auȝtę ‡ to C), 7357 f (-t D, nouȝt *adv.* ‡ C), 7919 (-[e] B, auȝte C †, aught[e] D), 8006 (-[e] D, auȝtę ‡ to C)[11]; cf. 5971. [Var. B aughte; C ouȝte, ouȝt; D ogh t.]—ought[e], 710 (auȝtę ‡ C, ogh t[e] D), 744 (ougthte B, auȝtę ‡ C, ogh t ‡ to D); aught[e], 423 (auȝght[e] B, auȝte C, ogh t ‡ euere D).—oughte, 2683 (thouȝte ‡ C, ogh t ‡ thei D), 3832 (-t BD), 5058 (-t BD), 5233 (-t D; aught 3 *pl.* B).[12] [Var. B aughte, aught; C auȝte, ouȝte; D ogh t.]—oughte he, 2322 (-t B, auȝte C, ogh t ‡ ȝe 2 *pl.* D).—ought (*bef. vocal*), 1691 (aught B, auȝte C, ogh t D).[13]—oughtę, 3871 ‡ A (-[e] B, auȝtę ‡ C, ogh t[e] D); ought ‡ the, 5971 (aught[e] lasse B, auȝte lasse C, ought ‡ the D).—out,[14] 7459 (ought BD, auȝte C).

[1] Dele the second (*nat*) in D. [2] 9-syl. in C.
[3] "If thow thus *deye* and she *not* whi it is." The distinction in sense between the subjunctive *deye* and the indicative *not* in this verse is marked.
[4] Supply [*So*] in A. [5] Supply [*for*] in C. B needs [*herte*] for the metre.
[6] Read [*s*]*he* in C. [7] Read *conne* for *come* in C.
[8] So, rather than *I ne ought nȯt*. [9] Supply [*to*] in D.
[10] Supply [*do*] in D. [11] Impersonal. Supply [*that*] in D.
[12] In C dele (*Haddc*). [13] C is too long. [14] "It out i-now suffise."

Note.—In 1691, 2683, 5805, 8006, *oughte* is past in sense; in the rest of the cases above cited it is present in sense. In 649, 2683, 3106, 3423, 3522, 5805, 8006, the construction is impersonal with the dative (*the, hym, here, hem oughte*); cf. 647 D (*me ogh̄t to?*).

Rhyme words.—wroughte *ind.* 1 *sg.* (3106, 7357), me thoughte *ind.* (3106), bisoughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (3423), broughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (3522).

Pret. Ind. 2 pl. ogh̄t ‡ ȝe, 2322 D; ȝe ‡ ouȝt, 3106 f C. (See under *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*). (In sense of present tense.)

Pret. Ind. 3 Pl. oughte, 1997 f A (aughte B) (: broughte *ind.* 3 *pl.* : thoughte *ind.* 3 *sg.*), 4275 (aughten B, auȝten C, ouȝten D)[1]; oughte, 4637 (-t B, ouȝt C, ogh̄t D); aught of, 5233 B ‡; ogh̄t ‡ thei, 2683 D.

Note.—In 1997 and 2683 *oughte* is past in sense; in the rest of the cases above cited it is present in sense.

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. oughte, 7708 (auȝte C, ought D).

## IV. *kan.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. kan, (i.) (ii.) 11, 459, 492, 718, 1044, 2243, 2530, 2590, 7731; cf. 1635 f, 7304 f, 8132 f. [Var. CD can; B kann(e); D cann(e).]

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. kanst, (i.) (ii.) 511 (can C), 2607,[2] 2697, 3141, 5154 (ka[n]st B), 7644; cf. 1045 D, 5759 C. [Var. CD canst; D canst(e).]—canstow, 757 (kanstow B, c. thou CD)[3]; kanstow, 5122 (canstu C, canst(e) thou D).—thow kan wel endite, 7655 (kanst B, canst C, canst(e) D).[4]

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. kan, can, (i.) (ii.) 147, 203, 234 f, 259 (may ‡ D), 3002 (gan † B, ȝe can C), 5774, 6120, 6134, 7136 f, 7573; cf. 1291 f, 1459 f, 6357 f. [Var. D cann(e).]— kan(ę), 4666 A (kan B, can D).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. konne, 1867 f (cunne C, kun D †) (: bygonne *p.p.* : sonne); kon haue, 6481 (kan B, can CD).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. konne, 776 f (cunne C, conne D) (: wonne *p.p.*), 2551 f (cunne C, conne D)[5] (: rönne *p.p.*), 2827 f (kanne B, cunne C, kun D) (: wonne *p.p.*); konne, 985 (kun D, cunne ‡ conseyl C), 1374[6] (kanne B, cunne C, kun D); can ‡ now, 3002 C; can ‡ don, 5856 C; kan ye, 4405 (can C, kunnę? D); kan recorde, 6180 (can C †, cannę D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. konne, 1260 f (cunne C) (: sonne), 1971 (donnen † B, cunne C, kun[ne] D), 1974 (kunne C, kun[ne] D), 2672 f (cunne C, kun D) (: bygonne *p.p.* : sonne); konne, 838 (cunne C, kun D),

[1] Supply [*pleyne*] in B, [*the*] in C.
[2] Supply [*wel*] in C.
[3] Supply [*non*] in D.
[4] Supply [*this*] in C.
[5] Indirect question.
[6] Conditional; perhaps subjunctive.

1001 (kun D, cunnyn an C); cunne how, 1921 C (*pret. subj.*? ABD); konne telle, 1980 (kan B, can CD); kan leye, 559 (cunne C, can D); kan not, 1357 (can CD), 2875 (may ‡ D); kan sen, 7476 (can D, c. ouȝt *sg.* C)[1]; kan a, 6712 (can CD).

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. koude, kowde, coude, 629 (-[e] D), 798 BC (-[e] D, wolde A), 2163 f (-d D) (: loude *adv.*), 2263 (-[e] D), 2758 (couthe D, koude she BCp.), 3276 f (: cloude), 3454 (couthe D), 3521 f (-d D) (: loude *adv.*), 3800 (B † D †), 3802 (couthe D), 4110 (couthe C), 4564 (myght[e] D), 5237 (C ‡ (?)), 6452 (couthe B), 6651, 7139; koude, kowde, 193 (coute C, couth D), 367 (kouth B, coude C, couth wel D),[2] 660 (coude B, curere † C$^{c}$, couth D), 3054 (coude C, couthe D), 3480 (*om.* † B; coude CD),[3] 3536 (coude C, cowd ‡ wel D), 7110 (coude CD),[4] 7991 (couthë ‡ wel C; D †); koude he, 1144 (cowd D; A †),[5] 3317 (coude C, couthe D), 4638 (coude C, couthe D), 8092 (coude D, koude ‡ not B); koude his, 665 B (coude C$^{c}$, cowd D, koude (al) his A); koude here (*gen. sg.*), 5337 (myghte B, myȝte C, myght D); koudë he, 4207 (coudë he C, cowdë he D; B †).

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. koudest neuere, 622 (coudest B, coudyst C, coudist D).

Pret. Ind. 2, 3 Pl. koude, 7480 (coude CD); -ë ye, 4200 (coude C; cowde? D); kowde how, 1921 (koude B, couthe D, cunne C) (subj.?).

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. if I konne, 1134 f (kun D) (: begonne *p.p.*).

Pres. Subj. 2 Sing. if that thow konne, 2582 f (cunne C, kunne D) (: wonne *p.p.*).

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. I not whether ye . . . konne, 2551 f (cunne C, conne D) (: ronne *p.p.*); yf ye konne, 5978 f (cunne C) (: ywonne *p.p.*).[6]

Pres. Subj. 3 Pl. if they kan sen, 7476 (can D, can ‡ ouȝt *sg.* C).[6]

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing. koude, kowde, 3342 (couthe D, thow I coude † C), 4344 (coude C †, couthe D); koude, kowde, 1206 (coude C, cowd? D), 2667 (cow(e)de A, coude C, cowd [I] D), 3138 (coude C, couthe D).

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. who koude telle, 6630 (coude D, wil C ‡).

Pret. Subj. 2 Pl. koude, 7335 (couthe C, coude D); koude han, 8046 (coude haue D, wolde ‡ a C).

[1] Perhaps subjunctive. Supply [*of*] in A.
[2] Read *wel couth* in D.
[3] Read *mich*[*e*] in D.
[4] Read *ys*[*e*] in CD.
[5] In this line *koude he* is concessive (= *though he could*).
[6] Perhaps indicative. In 7476 A supply [*of*].

Pret. Subj. 3 Pl. koude, 7700 (couthe ‡ pleyne C, coude ‡ p. D); kowde how, 1921 (koude B, couthe D, cunne *ind.* ‡ C) (ind.?).

Note.—Of the above cited subjunctives, the following are in apodosis, and therefore perhaps doubtful : 1206, 1921, 2667, 3138, 3342, 4344, 6630, 7335, 8046. The rest are in protasis, except as indicated in the citation.

Inf. konne, 2925 f (cunne C, kun D) (: y-ronne *p.p.*), 3219 f (cunne C, kun D) (: sonne), 7767 (cunne C, kanne D); konne, 647 (come † C; know[ë] ‡ D (?)).

Perf. Part. kouth in, 4723 A (B † D †); vnkouth, (i.) 1236 (-(ę) AD), 4639 (-(ę) BD, vnkow A).

## V. *dar*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. dar, (i.) (ii.) 396, 451, 1258, 1622,[1] 2834, 2946, 3180 (dare? CD),[2] 3503, 4108, 5272, 5434, 7659, 7990 (D †), etc. [Var. CD dar(e).]

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. darst not, 768 (C?); dar not, 6776 (darst BC, darst(e) D)[3]; dastow, 7642 (darstow B, durstist ‡ thow C, darst(e) thou D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. dar, 5863 (-(e) CD),[4] 6130 (-(e) CD),[5] 6566 (durst(e) D).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. dar ye, 2832 (-(e) C, dore ‡ D (?)).

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. dorste, 1859 (durste C, durst D).

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. dorstestow, 767 (durstyst thou C, trist ‡ thow D).[6] (Perhaps subjunctive, see § 106.)

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. dorste, 1287 (durste C, durst[e] D), 7273 (-[e] B, durstę ‡ ȝow C, durste D); dorst[e] yow, 27 (-e B, durst[e] D);[7] dorste, 3294 (-t B, durste C, durst D) (cf. 5334, 7073); dorste hire (*acc.*), 7091 (-t B, durste C, durst ‡ compleine D)[8]; dorst he, 503 (durste C, durst D); dorst hir (*acc.*), 98 B (durste C, durstë mone D, dorst (make) hire A).

Pret. Ind. 3 Pl. So as they *dorste* (dorsten G, dorst B, durste C, durst D) how (hough G, so as C, how ferre D) they wolden (wolde C Cp., wold D) procede, 3297.

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing. dorste, 7667 (-[e] B); dorste, 3219 (-t BD), 7532 (-e leyne † C)[9]; dorst I, 924 (-[e] seye BD, -e seye C), 3212 (-*e* C), 6720 (-*e* CD), 6915 (-*e* CD); dorst haue, 899 (durst a C †); dorstę,

[1] Supply [*be-*] in B.
[2] CD should be emended by means of AB.
[3] Read (*a*)*rise* in D.
[4] Supply [*fere*] in B.
[5] C is defective.
[6] Supply [*hire*] in B. 9-syl. line in D.
[7] Possibly subjunctive.
[8] Read *pleyne* for *compleyne* in C.
[9] Supply [*that*] in D.

2521 (-t B, -e C, -[e] D)[1]. [CD have *-u-* in all these cases, AB *-o-*.]

Pret. Subj. 2 Sing. See Pret. Ind. 2 Sing.

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. desiryng . . . to haue here herte dere In swych a plyt she *dorst*[*e*] make hym chere, 4396 (durste C, that sche durst ‡ him make D).

Note.—Of these instances of the subjunctive preterite (1, 3. person), the following, being in protasis, may be regarded as certain : 2521, 3219, 6915, 7708. The following are in apodosis (as, *I dorste leye* i. e. wager) : 899, 924, 6720, 7532, 7667 ; cf. *how dorst I*, 3212.

Pret. Subj. 2 Pl. And yf so be that pes her-after take . . . Why lord the sorwe and wo ye wolden make That ye ne *dorste* come ayen for shame, 6227 (dorst[e] B, durstyn C, durste D) (= because you would not, or did not, dare).

Infin. to dorrę don, 7203 (durrę (to) ꝺo B, to dore den C$^{c}$ †, to doo † D).

## VI. *thar.*

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. he thar nought, 2746 (hym thar BCp. John's, him thar G, him dar C, hym oght[e] D).

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. *thorste*, 3414, in which the correct reading seems to be : *Yow thorste* neuere han the more fere. The variants are curious : Yow dorste (*so* A, Thow thruste B, He thourrste C, Yow durst D, ȝou thurst G, ȝow thruste Cp., Ye thorste John's, Yow thurste Harl. 2392) haue neuere (*so* AD John's, neuere han BCG Cp.).

## VII. *shal.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. shal, (i.) 398 (sal B), 922 f (shalle B)[2], 1047 f, 1912 f, 2094 CD (wil A, wol B), 3633 (ȯw ‡ D)[3], 4168 f, 4806 f, 7210, 7680 f, etc. [Var. C schal ; D shaH.]

Rhyme words.—general (922, 4806), special (1047), fynal (4806), al (922, 1047, 1912, 4168, 7680).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. shalt, (i.) (ii.) 349 (schal thow B, that ‡ C), 808, 2041 (shal trow[e] B, schal trostyn C), 2598 (schat C)[4], 3546 (xat C)[5], 5206 (schat C)[6], 5266 (schat C, shalt(ę) D), 5315 (shaH this D), 6767 (shalt(ę) D), 7657 (schat C, shalt(ę) D), 7662 (shal B, schat C, shalt(ę) D)[7], 7671 (shal B, schat C), 7825 (-(ę) D), etc. [Var. C schalt.]—shaltow, 803 (schuldyst ‡ thou C, thou shalt ‡ havę D), 5271 (shaltow(e) B ; *pret.* C ‡ ; D †), 6391 (shaH thou D).

[1] Scansion doubtful. [2] "Now may I iape of the if that I shal."
[3] "And by that feith I shal (=owe) Pryam of Troye." [4] 9-syl. in D.
[5] Supply [*For*] in A, [*in*] in D. [6] Supply [*this*] in A. [7] Read *soo*[*uë*] in D.

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. shal, (i.) 236, 651, 1131 f (schalle B †) (: al : wal), 2358, 3640 (shalt † A, wol D), 5255, etc. [Var. BC schal; D shall, shaH, shal.]

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. shal, shul, (i.) 2106, 3502 (shullen not B)[1], 5068, 5452, 5983 (schal ‡ ȝe C), 6178, 6761 (cf. 804 ‡ D, 5456 D, 6185 ‡ C); (ii.) shul here (*adv.*), 6841[2]. —shulle, 3794 (shul BD, schuln C), 5984 (shal B, shaH D, schal ‡ eueremore C); we schul[le]n twynne, 5932 C (*pret.* ABD). [Var. C schal, schul; D shaH, shal.]

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. shal, shul, (i.) 1177, 6151, 7217, etc., etc.; (ii.) shal ek, 6133; shul ek, 6147; shul han, 122. [Var. BC schal; C schul; D shaH.]—shullen dar, 3503 (schul[le]n C, sholdyn neither D).—Ye shul (schal C, shal GCp. John's) nomore haue (han BC Cp. John's) soueraynte (-eynte BDG, -eignete Cp. John's, -anitee E, seurete of me C), 3013.

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. shal, shul, (i.) 5449, 7256, 7257, etc. etc. (ii.) shal it, 1365; shal han, 122. [Var. BC schal; C schul; D shaH.]

Pret.[3] 1 Sing. sholde, 923 (-[e] D)[4], 1025 f (D †) (: nolde 1 *sg.*), 1257 (-[e] D), 1438 (-[e] BD), 3219 (-[e] D), 3239 (-[e] BD), 3335 f (-d D) (: wolde 3 *sg.*), 5118, 5298 f (-d B) (: wolde 3 *sg.*), 6241 (-[e] B); shold[e] don, 1474 (-e C; A †). [Var. B scholde; C schulde; D shulde.]—sholde to, 2291 (-d B, -[ë] hym D, schuldë him C); cf. 5271 D †, 6850 ‡ C.—sholde, 17 (-e sterve ‡ D), 1410, 2349, 3435, 6023, etc., etc. [Var. B shold, schold; C schulde; D shold, should, shulde.]—shuld I, 8095 (shold B, shulde D).—sholde han, 5213 (shulde haue D, schulde also C); sholdë haue, 5228 (-[ë] B, schuldë C, shuldë D).

Pret. 2 Sing. sholdest, 774 (schuldyst C, sholdist D); sholdestow, 6714 (schuldist thow C, shuldest thou D); shuldestow, 7651 (sholdestow B, schuldist thow C, shuldest thou D). Cf. 803 ‡ C, 3124 ‡ D, 5271 ‡ C.

Note.—Of these 774, 6714, 7651, may perhaps be regarded as subjunctives see § 107).

Pret. 3 Sing. sholde, shulde, 76 f (-d D), 521 f, 728, 2120 (B †), 3374 f (-d D), 3603, 4511 f, 4878 f, 5852 f, 6185 (we ‡ shul[le] C),[5] 6474 f, 6610 (-e ‡ D), 6621 (-e ? C), 6825 (solde B), 7269 f, 7364 (D ?), 8127 f, etc., etc. [Var. BD shold[e]; C scholde, schulde.]—sholde,

[1] In C read *ly[gge]n*. [2] "Intendestow that we shul here bleue" (var. be-leue).
[3] In the case of *sholde, -en, wolde, -en*, and *nolde, -en* no attempt is made to distinguish between the indicative and the subjunctive.
[4] In C supply [*that*].
[5] "Vs sholde neyther lakke gold(e) ne gere" (*impersonal*).

shold, 1498, 3826 (D ?), 7913. [Var. C schulde; D shulde.] Before *he, his, hym, here* (acc.), *han* (inf.), *haue* (inf.),—sholde, shulde, shold, shuld, 228, 813, (-[ë] ‡ he D), 1638, 2841, 3399, 3856, 3924, 6417, 7636 ABD. [Var. B schold, scholde; CD schulde.].—sholdë holde, 4726 (-[ë] BD).—sholdę destroyed, 68 (shulde ‡ be D); sholdę cause, 5726 (shuldę D); cf. sholdę, shold, schuldę, shuldę, 306 † A, 2381 CD, 7427 CD, 7767 ‡ C.

Rhyme words.—Only *wolde* and *nolde*.

Pret. 1 Pl. sholden, (i.) 5932 (schul[le]n C, shulde D); shuld[en] al, 8188 A (sholden B); schulde, 5288 ‡ C.

Pret. 2 Pl. I. sholden, (i.) 4737 (-[e] B, -yn D)[1], 6027 (-ë CD), 6219 (-e BD, -yn C); sholdyn, 3503 ‡ D. II. sholde, 2993 (-en B, -[e] D), 3626 f (-d D) (: nolde *pl.*), 6171 (-on B, -en D, -yn C †), 7243 (-en B)[2].—shulde, 6488 (shold B, schulde C, shuldęn D).—scholdę, 3719 ‡ C; shuldę ‡ ye, 4973 C$^{c}$.—lòuęn sholde òn, 3639 (shòldęn louęn oòn B, schuldę louyn on C, shòld love òn D). [Var. to I., C schulde, schuldyn; D shulde. Var. to II., C scholde; D shulde, shulden.]

Pret. 3 Pl. sholden, (i.) 73 (-e C, -[e] D), 3386 (-[e] B, xulde C, shold ‡ fle D),[3] 3799 (-e B, -d anon *sg.* ‡ D; *line om.* † C), 4798 (-e C, -[e] D); cf. schuldyn, 6171 C †. [Var. C schulde.]—sholde, 2923 (-[e] B, -en D, schulden C), 6989 f (schold B, schulde C, shulde D †) (: wolde *ind.* 3 *sg.*); shulde, 1496 (schulde C, sholden B, shold[e] D); shulde, 4681 (sholde B, shold ‡ cause D); sholde han (*inf.*), 872 (schulde C, shold D),[4] 3273 (shold D, schulde a C); sholde his, 4815 (-d D, schulde C) —sholdë hire (*gen. pl.*), 4848 (-en B, -yn D, schuldë C).

Pres. Subj. 1 Pl. shulle, 5288 (shul B, shaH D, schulde ‡ C).[5]

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. shul putte, 3719 (scholdę ‡ C, shal † he *ind.* D).

Note.—5288 is after *though* (hypothetical future case); 3719 is in protasis.

## VIII. *may*.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. may, (i.) (ii.) 922[6], 1008 (mowę B, mow D), 1563 f (3 *sg.* CD), 2183[7], 7435 f, 7772 f, 7984 f, 8059 f.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. (i.) (ii.) In A,—mayst, 600, 806, 1045, 2070, 2450, etc., etc.; maist, 5699. In B,—mayst, 600, 806, 1045, 5244; maist, 2070, 2450, and usually. In C,—mayst, 2450, 3027,

[1] Supply [*that*] in D. [2] 9-syl. [3] Dele (*the*) in C.
[4] Insert [*led*] in C; [*in*] in D. [5] 9-syl. in C; but supply [*a*].
[6] Supply [*I*] in B. [7] Supply [*not*] in D.

etc.; may3t, 619, 806, 2070, etc.; may3 thyn, 6633; mayt, 600, 7795. In D,—mayst, 619, 806, 1045[1], etc., etc.; maist, 5208, 5244, etc.; maist(e), 5295; may, 600.

maystow, 623 (mayst thou CD),[2] 673 (mayt thou C, mayst thow D), 2101 (mayst thou CD), 3738 (mayst thou C, may thow D), 4927 (mayst thou C, maist thou D), 7522 (mayst thu C, maist(e) thou D), 8074 (maist(e) thou D); cf. 5208 B, 7493 B. [Var. B maistow.]

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. may, (i.) 147,[3] 253, 3831 f, 3901 f, 4428 f, 5826 f, 6512 f, 7354 f, etc.

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. may, (i.) 987, 1663, 6176, 6179 ‡ C, 6191, 6752 C,[4] 6753,[4] 6792 (That we may). (ii.) 2416, 6179 ABC; may haue, 6887 (D ?).—mowe, 6168 (mow B, now † C, may D (?)).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. may (i.) 54 (shall D), 1490[5], 3688[6], 4124 ‡ D, 4843 ‡ D, 4956, 5519, 5555 (C † D †)[7], 5856 (can C), 5990 (D †)[8], 6013, 6299[9], 6320, 7360, 7698, 7744. (ii.) 30, 4843 ABC, 7987; may his, 3752; may here (*acc.*), 3528 (C †); may here (*gen. sg.*), 8139 (B †); may here (*inf.*), 5747 BC (A ? D ?), 7000 (A †), 7315 (mow B, schul C), 7679 (schul C), 7952.—mowen ellys, 5992 (-ë B, moun *dissyl.* C, mow[ë] D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. may, (i.) 120, 644[10], 756 (moun *monosyl.* C), 2242 (may it ? C)[11], 2732, 4124 (may ‡ ȝe 2 *pl.* D), 4307 (C †, mowen D †), 4853, 4932,[12] 5710[13], 6118, 6706, 7495 (mough D). (ii.) 839 (C ?), 4056, 8116 (*om.* B † (?)), 8213.—mowe not, 5740 ABD (*the passage is not in* C). [In several of the instances cited the subject is *men.*]

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. may, (i.) 863, 1530, 2486 f, 3561,[14] 6324, 6785 f, 6979, 7551 f, 8080 f.[15]

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. may, (i.) 1017 BCD (wole A),[16] 1616, 1949, 2875, 5941 (schal C), 6262 f, 7159 f. (ii.) 3819 (may ‡ the C).[17]—mowe neuere, 959 A (may BCD).

Pret. Ind. and Subj. 1 Sing. myghte, 4120 (-[e] B, my3te C, mi3te D); mygh[te], 1797 (myght[e] BD, my3te C); myghte, 3230 (my3te C, might D); myght[18] (*bef. vowels*), 19 ‡ D, 1651, 3473, 3892, 7460; myght hym, 3744 (my3te C); -*e* here (*acc.*), 6972 (-t B,

[1] Supply [*But*] in D.
[2] Read *de*[*ue*]*l* in C.
[3] 9-syl. in CD.
[4] Indirect question.
[5] 9-syl. Perhaps subjunctive.
[6] Supply [*that*] in D.
[7] Dele (*as*) in A.
[8] 9-syl.
[9] Subjunctive ? Supply [*ye*] in A.
[10] Supply [*and*] in D.
[11] Purpose-clause.
[12] C reads: what may me now the calle. Supply [*now*] in D.
[13] 9-syl. But read *mowen* or *which*[*e*] ? D has *whiche.*
[14] Read (*re*)*turne* in D.
[15] Several of these are hardly to be distinguished from indicatives.
[16] Supply [*that*] in D.
[17] Some of these are hardly to be distinguished from indicatives.
[18] Var. C *my3te* (in all), D *might.*

myȝt C, might D).[1]—myght best, 2515 (myȝte ‡ 3 *sg.* C, might[e] (?) ‡ D).—myght[ë] ‖ I, 5121 (-ë B, myȝt*e* C, myght D); -[ë] I, 7652 (myȝtë C, myȝt[ë] D, myght[ë I] B).[2]

Pret. 2 Sing. myghtest, 7890 (myȝtist C, mightest D †); myghtestow, 4924 AB.

Note.—7890 is perhaps subjunctive (see § 107).—In 619, readings vary: Paraunter thow myght (*so* ABG, mayȝt C, mayst D) after swych on longe. (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

Pret. Ind. and Subj. 3 Sing. myghte, 373 (myȝt[e] B), 1075 AB, 2204 f, 2379 f (-t C), 2655[3], 2838 (-t ‡ the D), 3186, 3925 f (-t B, myȝt C, miȝt D),[4] 4697 f (-t B), 4822 (-[e] B),[5] 4823 (-[e] B), 5647 (-[e] B), 5849 f (myȝt C), 5880 f (myȝt C), 6551 f (myȝt C), 6874 f, 6995 f (myȝt C), 7155 (-[e] B), 7157 (-[e] B), 7192 f (-t B, myȝt C), 7382 f, 7998 f. [Var. D *might*[*e*] or *myght*[*e*] in most of the verses above-cited; C myȝte.]—myght[e], 1029 (-e C), 1536 (-e C), 2064 (-e BC)[6], 2499 (-e C, mygth[*e*] B), 2525 (-e C)[7], 3282, 3734 (myhte? A)[8], 4351 (-e BC, miȝt ‡ not D), 4445 (-e CD), 5792 (-e C, -ë ‡ other B), 6535 (-e C), 7171 (-e C), 7566 f (-e B), 7583 B (miȝt[e] D, see below), 8100; cf. 1656, 4564 D. [Var. BD might[e]; C myȝte, myȝt[e]; D miȝte.]—myghte, 2660 (mygth B; D(?)), 2941, 3362,[9] 5485, 6923 (myȝt C); cf. 1539, 5033. [Var. B myght (*in all except* 2660); C myȝte; D myght, might (*in all*).]—myght (*bef. vowels*), 638 (-*e* C), 2135 (myȝtë ‡ no C, might ‡ no D), 3442, 4002 (-*e* C), 7788 (-*e* C); cf. 2922, 4033. [Var. C myȝte, myȝt; D miȝt.]—myghte his, 2411 (-t BD); myghte him, 562 (-t BD); myght he, 370 (-e C), 3923 (-*e* C); -t haue (*inf.*), 1277 (-*e* han B, miȝtë ‡ han C, might[ë] haue D), 1796 (-t han C), 7102 (-t han B, -*e* a C); might he, 1519 (myght B, miȝt C); cf. 823, 2956, 3728, 3955, 4911, 6645, 7583. [Var. BC myȝt; C myȝte; D might, miȝt.]—myght holden, 5260 (may C); myght neuere, 5644 AB (might D; *not in* C); myght to, 8151 AB (miȝt D); myȝt non, 7317 C (might D, may A, may it B); cf. 1539 ‡ D, 2135 ‡ D, 3264 ‡ D, 4351 ‡ D, 5033 ‡ D; myȝte, 1739 ‡ C, 5370 ‡ C (myght D?).—myghtë here (*inf.*), 3586 (-[ë] BD, myȝtë C); myghtë ‡ other, 5792 B; myghtë ‡ here (*acc.*), 1056 A (myȝte B, might D).

[1] Supply [*to*] in A.
[2] How myght (myȝte C, myȝt D) I (*om.* B) than (thanne C) do (don BC Cp. John's, doo D) quod Troylus.
[3] Supply [*wel*] in D.
[4] Supply [*that*] in C
[5] CD are too short, even if -ë be read.
[6] Supply [*me*] in C.
[7] Supply [*wel*] in D.
[8] For *myhte a dedë man* in A, read *myhtë dedë men*.
[9] Read *here*[*to*] in A.

Rhyme words.—with sighte (2379), from sighte (6995), in highte (7192), bryghte *adj. pl. or adv.* (7382), plighte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2204), sighte, syghte, *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3925, 5880, 7998), twyghte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (5849), alighte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (6551, 7382), highte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (7998), byhygt[e] *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (byhighte B, behyȝt[e] C, behight[e] D) (7566), byhight[e] *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* (bihighte B, behyȝte C, behight[e] D) (6374), lyghte *inf.* (3925, 6995), fighte *inf.* (4697), dyghte *inf.* (5849).

Pret. 1 Pl. myghte, 1596 (-en B, -yn D, myȝtyn C †); myghten, (i.) 6850 (-e B, myȝtyn C, might[e] D).

Pret. 2 Pl. myghte, 6172 (-en B, myȝtyn C, myght[e] D).

Pret. 3 Pl. myghten, (i.) 1815 (myȝte C, myght[e] D), 2524 (-[e] B, myȝtyn in C, might[en] in D), 2709 f (myȝtin C, mightyn D).—myghte, 614 (-[e] BD, myȝtyn C), 1726 (-[e] BD), 1751 (-[e] D)[1], 2031 f (myȝt C, myght D), 2734 (-en B, -[e] D, myȝte ‡ C)[2], 3609 (myȝtyn C, myght ‡ this D),[3] 6612 (-[e] B).[4] [Var. C myȝte; D mighte, -[e].)—myght[e], 3351 (-e B, myȝte C †; D ?), 3605 (-e B, myȝte C, might[e] D).—myghte, 1439 (*om.* † B, -t D †), 2702 (-t D),[5] 7324 (-t BD). [Var. C myȝte; D miȝt, might.]—myght (*bef. vowels*), 286 (myȝtyn in C)[6], 3264 (-*e* B, might ‡ not D), 3318 (-*e* C), 6948 (-*e* C; D †). [Var. C myȝt, -*e*; D miȝt.]—myghte hym, 279 (-t *BD*); -*e* hire (*poss. sg.*), 5337 (-t D, koude A); myght hym,[7] 3415 (-*e* C). [Var. C myȝte.]

Note.—Of those examples of the *pret.* 3 *pl.*, *men* is the subject in 279, 286, 1439, 1726, 1815, 2702, 3415, 3609, 6948; *al the world* is the subject in 3264, 3318, 5337.

Rhyme words.—hyghten *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (2709), dyghte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2031).

Infin. mowen,—To mowen (*so* ABG Cp. John's, moun C, wyn D) swych a knyght don (*so* BC Cp., *om.* A, doon G, to D John's) lyue (leuyn C) or dye (deiȝe C), 2679.—to mowe ‡ dwelle, 7213 C (maken AB, make D).

## IX. *mot.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. (i.) (ii.) mot, moot, 224 (-(e) BD, is ‡ ffor C[e]), 573 (-(e) BCD), 1621 (-(e) B, must D, me muste C), 4037 f (-e BCD) (: in his fote; foot B, foote D : sot *sbst.* (= *soot*), soot B, sote CD), 4129 (-(e) BD), 5408, 6284 (-(e) C); cf. 2889, 3429 C, 4676, 6681, 6784, 7692.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. most, (i.) (ii.) 520 (must(e) C, must D), 5129

[1] Or singular : Now myghte som enuyous iangle thus.
[2] Supply [*hym*] in AB. ACD may be singular. [3] Supply [*for*] in B.
[4] Dele (*as*) in A. C is out of order.
[5] "So heynous that men myghte on it spete" (*hèÿnoùs* or *myghtë on*).
[6] "Shewed wel that men myght yn here gesse" (9-syl., but D supplies *She* †).
[7] A has *hem* †.

(moost B, must(e) C, muste D †), 5310 (mayst ‡ C, must(e) D), 7822 (must D, *om.* † C).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. mot, (i.) 2456 (moot B, mot(e) D); cf. 1524, 1701, 3406, 3636, etc., etc.—mot(ę), 6247 A (moot B, mot(ę) (?) C; D †). (Cf. *pret.* 3 *sg.*)

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. mot*e*, 2754 C (most*e* A, most B, must D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. moten ouer, 846 (-yn CD)[1]; mote hire (*poss. sg.*), 847 (-yn C); motę spenden, 6038 (moot B, mot C †, must D).[2]

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. mot*e* I, 1220, 7270 (mot B); mot I, 341 (-*e* BD)[3], 1210 (-*e* BCD), 2230 (-*e* BCD)[4], 4048 (-*e* C), 7347 (-*e* CD), 7523 (moot B, mot*e* C; D ?). (All these in wishes: as, *so mote I gon, as mot I the.*) I bidde god I neuere mot haue ioye, 3717 A (-*e* BG, I preye to god neuere*more* haue I ioye C, I pray to god y neuer more have ioy D; no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. to good[e][5] mot it turne, 1175 (-*e* BCD); so mot he neuerę the, 1755 (-*e* BC); sory mot he ben, 2141 (-*e* BCD); longe mot youre lyf iu ioye endure, 4988 (-ę BD, motë ‡ ȝe 2 *pl.* C).

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. mot ye lyue, 1487 (-ę BCD); motë ‡ ȝe, 4988 C (3 *sg.* ABD).

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. most (*bef. vowels*), 3429 (mot C, must D), 4676 B (must D, mot A)[6]; most*e* here (*poss. sg.*), 5232 (-t B, must D; C †); y must ‡ nedis, 1621 D; I must[e] nedis, 6681 D † (mot AB, mot C †). (In all these cases with the force of the present tense and with the meaning of modern *must.*)

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. moste, 74 (-[e] BD), 3401 (-[e] BD), 3465 (-[e] B; D ?)[7], 4000 (-[e] BD), 4878 (-[e] BD), 5373 C (-[e] D), 8025 (-[e] B). [Var. C muste; D must[e], muste.][8]—most[e], 4551 B (muste C, must[e] D).[9]—most*e*, 2385 (-t BD), 3999 (-t B), 4004 (-t BD, mot ‡ C), 6368 (-t B), 6433 (-t D).[10] [Var. C muste; D must, -*e*].—most at, 3382 (-*e* B, muste C, moost D).—moste his, 6441 (-t BD); -*e* hem, 4551. [Var. C muste; D must.]

Note 1.—In all these cases of the *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* the verb has its proper preterite function. The modern sense (in which *must* is equivalent to a present tense) is seen in *mostę*, 216 A (schall B, mot B, must D). C shows four instances of this latter use: *mustë* ‡ *ben*, 6261 C (mustę D, mot AB); *mustę* ‡ *for*, 6422 C (mot AB, mot(e) D); *me* ‡ *mustę nedis*, 1621 C, 7715 C. D several times substitutes *must* (in a present sense) for *mot* (etc.) of

[1] Read *ioyc*[*s*] in C. [2] In 6038 the subject is *men.*
[3] Supply [*that*] in C. [4] In A read *to deth*[*e*] and *smet*[*e*]. [5] goode BC.
[6] Supply [*I*] in B. [7] Dele (*At*) in AB (?). In D read *must*[*e*] *b*(*y*)*leue.*
[8] In 4000 D has *most*[*e*]; the usual vowel in this word, however, is *u* for CD, *o* for AB.
[9] In D supply [*day*]. [10] Read (*re*)*lorne he* in D.

the other MSS., cf. 1701, 2586, 3406, 3670 : in these four cases a consonant follows, but in none of them (except perhaps in 2586, which is otherwise unsatisfactory) are we to read *must[ë]*. Cf. also 4266 ‡ E.

Note 2.—*Must* is used impersonally in *me muste nedis deyen* (pres. sense), 1621 C (I mot A, I moot(e) B, y must D)[1] ; *hym most obeye* (pret. sense), 3999 B (he moste A, he muste CD) ; *mustë* ‡ *hem bleue*, 7543 C (they moste b[l]euen A, they most[e] bleuen B, thei muste b(e)leue D), which is probably subjunctive. In none of these lines is the impersonal construction apparently the genuine reading. (See Child, § 67, and cf. *Englische Studien*, XIV, 391.)

Pret. Ind. 2 Pl. moste, 2754 (-t B, mot(e) C, must D), 3758 (-t B, muste C, must D). (Both in present sense.)[2]

Pret. Ind. 3 Pl. men moste, 4056 (-[e] B, mustyn C, must[e] D) ; men mostë axe, 1979 (miste ? C, must[e] D)[3] ; men mose, 6016 (most B, moste nedis C †, musten † entercomen D) ; men . . . must spenden, 6038 D (motę A, moot B, mot C). (All in present sense.)

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing. most I, 1884 (I muste be C, y must[e] be ? D) ; I moste come, 6023 (-[e] B, muste C, must[e] D). (In both cases = *I should have to.*[4])

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. moste, 74 (-[e] BD), 3401 (-[e] BD). [Var. C muste ; D must[e].]—most[e], 5226 (moost[e] B, mot † C, must[e] D).—moste, 3758 (-t B, muste C, must D) ; *-e* he, 2160 (moost B, muste C, must D) ; *-e* han, 3733 (-t B, muste C, must D). (In all these cases = *would have to.*) Cf. *mustë* ‡ *hem*, impersonal, 7543 C.

Pret. Subj. 3 Pl. mosten folk, 2592 (mustyn CD) ; they most[e] b[l]euen, 7543 (muste b(e)leue D, mustë ‡ hem *impers. sg.* C). (In these = *would have to.*)

## § 124. Other irregular verbs.

This list includes *be, wol, nyl, do, go,* and *haue.*

### I. *to be.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. am, (i.) (ii.) 10, 223, 6160 (nam BD, may ‡ C), 6782 (nam B), 7069 (nam BD).—nam, 7609 (am C, nam(ę) D).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. art, (i.) (ii.) 277, 555 (ert(e) D), 648, 1045 (D † ?), 5163 (-(e) D), etc. [Var. B ert (*usually*).]—artow, 509 (art thou C, art(e) thou D), 731 (art thou C, art(e) thow D) ; art thow, 507 (artow B, art thou C, art(e) thou D), 3579 (art tow B ; C (?)).

[1] Supply [*that*] in B.
[2] 3758 may be construed as subjunctive.
[3] If *moste* be read, the verse becomes 9-syl.
[4] But in 1884 perhaps rather in a present (future) sense "How bysy if I loue ek most I be."

Note.—In "Al wrong by god what seystow man wher arte," 7524 f (arte ABCG, arte D; no note in Mr. Austin's collation) (: carte *n.*), *arte* is plainly a colloquial form of *artow*: perhaps it represents the ordinary pronunciation of that contraction. Cf. *fro ye* (: Troye), 5, in which *ye* may be regarded as a similarly weakened form of *yow*.

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. is, 3622 f (: this), and passim; helle ys, 7739 f (is C) (: wellys *pl.* : ellys); his, 1943 C, 7150 B; ysse, 1013 f A (is BCD) (: thisse : iwysse).[1]—nys, 203 AC (is B)[2], 574 C (is ABD), 684 (ne is C, nis D), 697 (nis B, is D),[3] 2824 f (is CD) (: is), 4570 (ne is C, ther is ‡ (=ther's) D), 7085, etc.; nyis *monosyl.*, 7451 C (is ABD).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. (i.) be, 3937 (ben C, beeth D), 7346 (ben B, ben(e) D; C †); be we, 5920, 6847 (C †), 7042 (cf. 5138); ben now, 5986 (ben(e) B, be D); been so, 6511 (ben BC, be D); ben ‡ we, 4049 C. (ii.) ben, 5930 (be D)[4]; be, 5921 (ben BC).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. (i.) be, 1320 (ben BC), 3881, 3980 (ben BCD), 7721 (ben CD)[5]; be ye, 202 ABC, 2191, 2552[6], 3599, 4049 (ben C); ben, 1201 (be D), 1669 (be D), 3709 (ben(e) D), 4407, etc.; beth bothe, 984 (ben BC, be D). (ii.) ben, 1433 (be BD), 2825 (ben(e) D), etc.; be ywonne, 2321 (ben BC, be ȝe D)[7]; ben he, 1332 (be D); ben his, 3718 (D †)[8]; ben here (*adv.*), 2836 (ben(e) D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. (i.) Before consonants *ben* and *be* are both found in A, but *ben* (the regular form in BC) is the commoner. D usually has *be* or *ben(e)*, but *ben* occurs in D (*e.g.*, 3134). Cf. 1137, 3134, 3696, 4887, etc. Cf. been, 4205 E; byn, 4595 E. In rhyme,—be, 48 f, 2039 f, 2858 f, 2879 f, 5709 f, 5718 f 7033 f (bee B), 8143 f; ben, 6819 f (bene D) (: to sen). Other forms are,—they *beth* with, 6020 C †, and *arn* (*arę*) : arn thei, 999 A (arę BC, they arę the D); arn clerkes, 5634 A (ern B, werę D)[9]; arn woxen, 7737 A (aryn C, arę D)[10]; arn, 996 C (are D), *is an error for* erren ABG; no note in Mr. Austin's collation). (ii.) Before vowels *ben* is the usual form, except in D, which commonly (though not always) has *ben(e)*: thus,—1000 (be D), 1973 (ben(e) D), 4180 (been E), etc. Before *h*,—ben his, 2560 (ben(e) D); ben here (*gen. sg.*), 6582 (D †); ben here (*adv.*), 2815 (be D)[11]; ben hertes, 2959 (ben(e) D).

[1] This monstrous form serves at least to emphasize the fact that the *s* is unvoiced.
[2] Dele (*that*) in C.
[3] Dele (*yn*) in A.
[4] Supply [*that*] in D.
[5] Dele or slur (*that*) in D.
[6] Supply [*ye*] in AB.
[7] Read [*y*]*wonne* in D.
[8] Supply [*that*] in B.
[9] Not in C.
[10] Leaf cut out of B.
[11] Read *her*[*with*]*yn* in D.

Rhyme words.—charite (48), aduersite (2858), benignite (2879), necessite (5718), subtilitee (8143), me (2039, 5709, 8143), the (2039, 2879), ye (2858), fre (7033), se, y-se *inf.* (5709, 7033).—to sen (sene D) (6819).

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. be, (i.) (ii.) 832, 859, 2945, 3240 f, 4128 f, 6213 f, etc.

Pres. Subj. 2 Sing. be, (i.) (ii.) 3663, 4473, etc.

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. be, (i.) 23 f, 308, 349, 1036, 2418 f, 5994 f, etc.

Pres. Subj. 1 Pl. (i.) be, 5450 (ben *ind.* C †)[1], 6144. (ii.) ben, 6276.

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. (i.) be, 1365 (ben C; B †), 1385 (ben C), 1422 f (: se *ind.* 2 *pl.*), 1426 (ben C), 1935 (*sg.* CD)[2], 2491 f (: me), 5597 (ben CD); And be ye wys as ye ben faire, 1669 (be . . . be D); ye heryed ben for, 4655 AB (be D). (ii.) be, 3012 (ben C), 6102 (ben C, be *sit* ‡ D); whannę ye ben his, 1672 (be D).

Pres. Subj. 3 Pl. (i.) ben, 1488 (be BD, hem ‡ C); be, 2243 (ben C), 3158[3], 4769 f ‡ B (*sg.* A; D (?)). (ii.) be his, 4599 (*sg.* B †).

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. was, (i.) 2497[4], 4733 f (y-wis † D) (: Calkas); cf. 4733 f, 4756 f, 7338 f.—nas, (i.) 2498 BCD (na[s] A).[5]

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. were, 4160 f (you were E) (: there : fere *timor*); were, 510 (wer ‡ wont D), 3559[6], 5424 ABD; werę woned, 901 (were B, were wonę C (?))[7].—was thow, 4996 (art(e) ‡ thou D).

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. was, (i.) 2, 64 f (: Calkas), 4397 f, 5895 f, etc. In 4438, D has the ridiculous form *wesse* (: blesse *inf.*).—nas, (i.) 101 (was BCD), 208 (was D), 1281 (was B), 1769[8]; cf. 281, 6477, 6809, 6831, 6985, 7142, 7177, 8006, 8029. (ii.) nas houre, 6826 (nas oure C, *om.* † D).

Pret. Ind. 1, 2, 3 Pl. were. See § 109.

Pret. Subj. Sing. were. See § 113.

Pret. Subj. Pl. were. See § 114.

Imv. 2 Sing. be, 950, 951 (fe † C), 4472, etc. Once in rhyme,—thow ne be, 6962 f.

Imv. 2 Pl. beth, 431, 1679[9], 2755 (both B, be C), 3010, 3019 betht B), 4355, 6508[10], 6522, 7977 (be C), 8148 (be B), etc.; buth, 3938 (beth B, be C, beeth D), 5589 (beth BD, be C)[11]. [Cf. 6249.]

Infinitive. A shows: *ben*, before vowels, 2642, 3323, 3794, and usually; *ben*, before *h*, 1823, 2973, and usually; *ben*, before consonants, 1921, 5446, etc.; *be*, before vowels, 938, 981, 1536, 4322,

[1] Dele (*with*) in D. [2] "thonked be ye."
[3] In C read *be nouȝt* for *ben ouȝt*; in D read *be* [*n*]*oght*.
[4] In C read *for sith* for *forsothe*. [5] Supply [*more*] in D.
[6] Protasis. Read *were* [*in*] in A. [7] But supply [*whi*] in B, and read *werę*.
[8] Supply [*al*] in D. [9] Old-style figures indicate that D has *be* (pl.).
[10] Supply [*as*] in D. [11] Supply [*cause*] in A; [*of*] in C.

5197; *be*, before *h*, 468, 1438, 2383, 2526, 7023; *be*, before consonants, 255, 760, etc., etc.

B shows: *ben*, before vowels, 938, 981, and usually; *ben*, before *h*, 1438, and usually; *ben*, before consonants, 758, 1921, 4739, etc.; *be*, before vowels, 350, 609, 1536, 5759; *be*, before *h*, 7023, 7066; *be*, before consonants, 4414, 6178, etc., etc.

C shows: *ben*, before vowels, 938, 2642, and usually; *ben*, before *h*, 468, and usually; *ben*, before consonants, 373, 7491, etc.; *be*, before vowels, 1536, 5461, etc.; *be*, before *h*, 7023, 7066; *be*, before consonants, 74, 7644, etc.

D shows: *ben*, before vowels, 649, 5740, etc. (*ben*, before *h*, seems not to occur); *ben*, before consonants, 3507, 5621, etc.; *ben*(*e*), before vowels, 2986, 3142, 3794, etc.; *be*, before vowels, 938, and very commonly; *be*, before *h*, 1438, and always; *be*, before consonants, 255, 1921, and commonly.

At the end of the verse all four MSS. have regularly *be* (see 37 f, 849 f, 1482 f, etc., etc.); *ben*, inf., does not occur in rhyme in the *Troilus*.

Perfect Part. A shows: *ben*, before vowels, 585, 2488, etc., etc.; *ben*, before *h*, 125, 2356, 7680; *ben*, before consonants, 247, 249, 1609, 2081, etc.; *be*, before vowels, 4469, 6505; *be*, before consonants, 242, 638, 1878, 5900, 6590.

B shows: *ben*, before vowels, 585, etc., etc.; *ben*, before *h*, 125, 2356, 7680; *ben*, before consonants, 242, 247, etc.

C shows: *ben*, before vowels, 585, etc., etc.; *ben*, before *h*, 2356; *ben*, before consonants, 247, 249, etc., etc.; *be*, before *h*, 125; *be*, before consonants, 638, 1878.

D shows: *ben*, before vowels, 2488, 7296, 7680, 8008; *ben*, before consonants, 5305, 5756; *ben*(*e*), before vowels, 585, 6913; *ben*(*e*), before *h*, 2356; *ben*(*e*), before consonants, 249; *be*, before vowels, 4469, and usually; *bee*, before vowel, 6129; *be*, before *h*, 125; *be*, before consonants, 247, 638, etc., etc.

At the end of the verse: ben, 1276 f (bene D) (: ben *bees*: flen *ind.* 3 *pl.*); be, 1877 f (se *inf.* CD) (: se *inf.*), 5352 f (bee D) (: se *inf.* : she), 5899 f (: she : me); y-be, 5770 f (i-be BD, be C ‡) (: she : preuete).

Note.—Infinitive and perfect participle coalesce in: I haue and shal *Ben* humble (be D), 1913; cf. 7680.

II. *Will.*[1]

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. A has usually *wol* or *wolę* (*wole*). Thus,—wol, (i.) 990, 1294, 1560, 1955, 2512, 3001, 6255, 6846; (ii.) 53, 1330, 1358, 1400, 1564.—wolę, 981, 1033, 2077, 2665, 2719, 2770, 2851, 2933, 3226; wole, 427, 599, 1222, 1363, 2247, 2894.—wol han (*inf.*), 3581; wole haue (*inf.*), 2733.—A also has *wil*: thus,—(i.) 266, 2094, 5121; (ii.) 2144.

B almost always has *wol*. Thus,—(i.) 266, 981, 990, 1033, 1294, 1531, 1955, etc., etc.; (ii.) 53, 427, 1330, 2247, 2894, etc.; before *h*, 2733, 3581. Other forms in B are: wolę, 1053; wil, (i.) 589[2], 3226; wil, (ii.) 1222, 2144; will, (ii.) 599; wel, (i.) 1560.

C has usually *welę* (*wele*). Thus,—welę, 758, 981, 990, 1033, 1531, etc.; wele, 549, 1222, 1330, 1363, etc.; wele han, 3581. But *wil* also occurs: thus,—(i.) 2719, 2933, 3001; (ii.) 1400, 1564; wil han, 2733.

D has: wolę, 1231, 1560, 2077, 2512, etc.; wole, 1222 (?)[3], 1363, 2144; wol, (i.) 1955[4], 2665, 3001 (?); wol, (ii.) 1400, 1564, 2247; wol haue, 3581; wul, (ii.) 2894; wil, (i.) 266, 990, 1033, 1409, etc.; wil, (ii.) 427, 1358; wyl, (i.) 1294; wiH, (i.) 7445 †; wiH, (ii.) 1330.—In 2733 D, *wolë have* (inf.) should be *wole have* (supply [*ye*]). In 3137 D, *wolë abregge* should be *wilne as now tabregge*.

Note.—589 appears to be a 9-syl. verse: "I *wolę* (wil BD, welę C) parten with the al thyn pyne." Mr. Austin makes no note. G agrees with A.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. wilt, wylt, (i.) (ii.) 3254,[5] 3551 (wolt B), 4301 f (whi † B) (: agilt *p.p.*), 4926 f (-(e) D) (: agilt *p.p.* : spilt *p.p.*); cf. 719 † C, 2109 † D, 2148 † C, 3045 ‡ C, 4944 ‡ C.—wolt, (i.) (ii.) 2040 (wilt(e) B)[6], 2514 † C, 3178, 7669 (woldest ? D), 7881. [Var. CD wilt, wylt.]—wyltow, wiltow, 1011 (woltow B, wilt thow CD), 4931 (wilt thou C; D †); woltow, 2446 (wiltow B, wilt thou (thow) CD), 7520 (wilt thow C, wiH thou D);[7] wolt thow, 2532 (wiltow B, wilt thou C).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. Not different from 1 *Sing.* (cf. 1456, 1481, 2042,

[1] For scribe's confusion between *willan* and *wilnian*, see 2963 A, 3137 D, 5277 C.
[2] 9-syl. verse.
[3] Line too long.
[4] Supply [*seyd*].
[5] AB are short by two syllables; CD are 9-syl.: Tel (Telle G) (CD insert *me*) which (-e G) thow wylt (wilt BCDG) of euerychone. No note in Mr. Austin's collation.
[6] Supply [*And*] in A.
[7] Supply [*now*] in CD.

6290, etc., etc.). The following forms may be noted,—wyl be, 1545 A; wyl no, 1015 C; wyll how, 4133 ‡ E; wyllę, 537 C; welë ‡ nedis, 5277 C[1]; wolë ‡ ben, 6265 A; welë ‡ wondere, 6857 C (*l.* wolde); welë ‡ away, 6290 C.

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. wolę go, 2256 (wol BD, welę C); wol the, 4305 (nilę D, welë ‡ no C); wole hym, 2541 (wol B, welyn C); wil haue, 2717 † C; welë ‡ no, 4305 C (wol the AB, nilę the D).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. A has usually *wol* or *wolę* (*wole*). Thus—wol, (i.) 1297, 3774, 3816, 3969, 4010, 4654, 5865; (ii.) 1578; wol han (*inf.*), 5579.—wolę, 2686, 2825, 2866, 3708, 3725, 4133, 7274, 7345; wole, 6034, 6188 (*subj.* ?).—*Willę* occurs once (2963).[2] In 1473, *wole* should be *wolde*, and in 2713 *wole* should be *wolę* (supply [*me*]). In 3946, read *pulle*[*n*] and *wolę*.

B has usually *wol* : thus,—(i.) 1297, 2825, 2866, etc.; (ii.) 1578, 6034; wol haue (*inf.*), 2831 (*subj.* ?), 5579.—But,—wolę, 2713; welę, 3725; wel, (i.) 3774; wil, (i.) 1396 (*subj.* ?), 4010.—In 3946, read *pulle*[*n*] and *willę ye*.

C has *wil* or *welę* (*welc*). Thus,—wil (i.), 2686, 3708, 3816, 3946, 4010, 4133, 5865; welę, 1297, 2713, 2825, 3774, 7274, 7345; wele, 1578[3], 6034; cf. 6188 (*subj.* ?); wele haue (*inf.*), 5579.

D has : wil, (i.) 1297, 2686, 2825, 2866, 3725, 5865; wol, (i.) 2713, 3774, 3816, 4654; wol, (ii.) 1578; wolę, 4010, 4760 ‡ (*subj.* ?); wiH, (i.) 7242, 7345; wiH, (ii.) 6034 (cf. 2715 †) (*subj.* ?), 6188 (?) (ye wiH = ye'll); wiH have (*inf.*), 5579.—wolyn ‡ dweH, 3493; wolë ȝe, 3946.[4]

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. wolę, 3033, 4222 (wyl E)[5], 4785. [Var. BD wol; C welę.]—wol, (i.) 3776 AB, 5249 AB (wul D), 7423 (C ‡), 7428. [Var. C welę; D wil, wiH.]—wol hem, 7256 (wil C, wiH D)[6]; wol hate, 7426 (wele C, wiH D).—wolen til, 3610 (wollen B, welyn C, willyn D).—wolë mucche, 907 A (*but read* wolde *with* CG Cp.; wold[e] BD).

Pres. Subj.[7] 1 Sing. lest I wol ‡ of, 716 B (wold A, wolde C, wold ‡ the D).

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. wolę (*in protasis*), 715 (wil BC; D †); wol haue (*in protasis*), 5968 (wele C, wiH D); wol don (with *if*[8] = *whether*),

[1] The correct reading is *wilneth fro*.
[2] The correct reading is *wilnë that*.
[3] Dele (*c*).
[4] But read *pulle*[*n*] and *wolę*.
[5] Supply [*that*] in E.
[6] Subjunctive (?).
[7] Subjunctive constructions cannot always be distinguished with certainty from indicative.
[8] A has *of* for *if*.

852 (welę C, wil D); lest that the cherl wolę falle, 1017 A (may BCD).[1] Cf. *welë* ‡ *nedis*, 5277 C. *Er I wol forther go*, 3123 B (welę C, wolę D, *om.* † A) is perhaps indicative.

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. wolę (*ind. quest.*), 1396 (wil BC, wol D); -ę (with *but yf*), 4760 ‡ D; wole (with *but = unless*), 462 (wol B; *om.* C † D †); -*e* (with *if that* in *ind. quest.*), 6034 (wol B, wele C, wiH D); -*e* (*in protasis*), 6188 (wol B, welę C, wiH D †); wol, (i.) 1659 (welę D) (*in protasis with* but), 7704 (wele C, wiH D) (with *that*, objective clause of purpose); wille (*ind. quest.*), 2963 (wilne B, wiln C †, wolde D †); wol ‡ have (with *though*), 2831 (*pret.* BCD).

Pret. 1 Sing. wolde, 2919, 3490 (wold ‡ go D), 3854, etc. [Var. BD wold[e].]—wolde, 865, 3769[2], 7462 (wilde ? C, wolde ? D). [Var. BD wold.]—wold I, 2232 (-*e* C, walde B), 3342 (-*e* B, -ë † not C).—wolde here (*dat.*), 2091 (-[e] telle D); -*e* hym, 2966 (D †), 3715 (-d B; D †); -*e* haue (*inf.*), 5168 (-*e* a CD), 8041 (-d B, -*e* a C); wold han (*inf.*), 1499 (-*e* a C, -d have D).—woldę, 2512 ‡ C, 2770 ‡ C, 8140 ‡ D (?).

Note.—In 5903 the correct reading is perhaps *wolde han slawe* (see § 122, XII.); Mr. Austin's collation has no note; ABCDG read,—My (Myn C) selue (self B, seluyn C, silf D, selfe G) I wolde (wolde I C) haue (han B, a C) slayn (slawe C, slayne DG) quod she tho (too D).—In 3864 A *woldë on* should be *wolde vpon* (*so* BC, wold vpon D).

Pret. 2 Sing. woldest, 4487 (-ist C, -ist ‡ thou D), 5103 (-yst C).[3]

Note.—In 4944 we should perhaps read: Nought roughte I whider that thou woldest me stere. Mr. Austin's collation has no note; ABCDG have: Nought (Nouȝte G) rought (rouȝte CG) I wheder (-yr C, whidere B, whedirwardes D, whider G) thow (that thou C) woldest (-ist C, wilt D) me (*om.* D) stere. *Woldst* may be regarded as a subjunctive (see § 106).

Pret. 3 Sing. wolde, 77 (-[e] BD), 2957 f (-d BD), 3064 (-[e] D)[4], 3333 f (-d *pl.* D), 3458 (-[e] D, wald[e] B), 4509 f, 4828 (-[e] D), 4833, 4885, 6475 f, 6653 (-[e] B), 6874 (-[e] B), 6987 f, 7267 f, 7595 (-ë ‡ he D), 8126 f (-d B), etc.; wold[e], 7578 (-e C; D ?); wolde, 1776 (-d BD), 3287 (-d D, wald B)[5], 3301 (-d BD), 3344 (-d D, walde B), 4276, 7241 (-ę D, woolde B); wolde he, 6901; -*e* hem, 3303 (-d BD); wold of, 716 (-*e* C, wol ‡ B, wold ‡ tho D); wold he, 4621 B (-*e* C, -e ‡ ryde A; -d he D (?)); wold hire (*acc.*), 1355 (-*e* BC), 2678 (nulde C, nold D) (for other cases of *wolde* or *wold* before *h* in *hym*, *haue*, *han*, cf. 501, 2164, 3497, 5045, 7999, etc.).—woldę come, 7949 ACD (wol B); wold ‡ do, 6550 A (wol B, wiH D, *line om.* † C); cf. 527 ‡ C, 1294 ‡ C, 2459 ‡ C, 2745 ‡

[1] Supply [*that*] in D. [2] Supply [*And*] in D. [3] Supply [*thus*] in C.
[4] Dele (*deiphebus*) in B. [5] In C read *mys(e)sitt*.

C, 5890 ‡ C, 7241 ‡ D, 7789 ‡ D.—woldë ‡ on, 3539 A (*-e* vpon BC, -d vpon D); -ë I (?), 1830 A (-d BD, -de C); -ë ‡ he, 6839 C[1]; -ë ‡ holde, 7999 C.

Rhyme words.—byholde *inf.* (2957), sholde, shulde *sing.* (3333, 4509, 6475, 7267, 8126), sholde *pl.* (6987).

Note 1.—In 6510 we may read *wrathë* and *woldę* or *woldë* and *wrathe*: That half (-e D) so loth (-e G, soth C) yowre (3oure BC, your DG) wrathe (wreth BD, wrethe C, wreith G) wolde (-d B) deserue. Mr. Austin's collation has no note.—In 3830 *wolde* (-d BD) *the excellence* admits either *woldë* or *-ę*.

Note 2.—The following cases, in which *wolde* appears in wishes (*as wolde god*, and the like), may be put together as indubitably subjunctive,—wolde, 459 (-[e] D), 519 f (: sholde 3 *sg.*) 936 (-[e] D), 4119, 4229, 4607 (B †), 4997, 6487[2], 6590, 6971 (B has *wold*[*e*] in all but 519); *-e*, 526 (-d B).

Pret. 1 Pl. wolde, 3373 f (-d D) (: sholde 3 *sg.*); wold[e], 6854 (-e b(e)leue CD).[3]

Pret. 2 Pl. wolden, (i.) 6226 (-e C, -ę ‡ D), 7754 (-e C); (ii.) 343 (-ë C, -[ë] D); woldęn han (*inf.*), 2831 (-yn C, wol B, wold D), 5896 (wold B, *-e* a CD); woldyn ‡ assent, 2715 C; woldyn ‡ in, 7713 C (nolde AD).—wolde, 2328 (-[e] D, walde B), 2972 (-yn C, -[e] D), 6281, 6536 (-[e] B); *-e*, 2715 (-yn C, wiH D)[4], 6497 (-yn me C, -ë ‡ as D), 8046 ‡ C; *-e* han (*inf.*), 4348 (-d B, -ë ‡ han C, -ę ‡ me D); woldę ‡ be, 3888 C.

Pret. 3 Pl. wolden, (i.) 919 (-e C, -[e] D), 1453? (-[e] B, -[e] D?)[5], 2503 (-[e] D), 3297? (-ę C, -d D)[6], 6233 (- ęn it? D); (ii.) 2517. [Var. C -in, -yn; D -yn.] woldęn han (*inf.*), 915 (*-e* B, *-e* a C, *om.* ‡ D)[7]; wooldyn † ouȝt, 1997 C.—wolde, 150 (-[e] B, nolde C, nold ‡ they D), 3119 (*-e* on C, would vpon D), 4819 (-[e] D), 4832 (-[e] D, -e [that] B), 4837 (-[e] BD)[8], 4879 f (: sholde 3 *sg.*)[9], 7700 (-en BD, -yn C), 7828 ‡ C; wold[e], 907 BD (C †); wold*e*, 2520 (-d B, -yn D, -d *sg.* C), 3867 (-d BD, -yn C †); *-e* hym, 2630 (-d D); *-e* han (*inf.*), 4839 (-d D); *-e* here (*gen. pl.*), 7323; wold afferme, 2673 BD (-yn C, *-e sg.* A).[10]—wold ‡ deme, 1546 A (*-e* BC, -d of D); wold[e], 3333 f D (wolde *sg.* ABC).

[1] But read *thou*[*ue*]*s* and *wolde he*.
[2] Supply [*if*] in AC.
[3] Supply [*that*] in CD.
[4] If we read *it werë good*.
[5] Men wolden (-yn C, -e Cp., wold BD, wole G)wondren (wonderyn C, wondur D) to (*om.* B Cp. John's, that G) se (sen BC Cp., seen G) hym come (-yn CG) or (and CD) gon (gone D, goon G).
[6] So as they dorste (-en G, dorst B, durste C, durst D) how (hough G, so as C, how ferre D) they wolden (wolde CCp., wold D) procede.
[7] Supply [*they*] in C.
[8] The subject is *al the world*.
[9] The subject is *substaunce* (i.e. majority) *of the parlement*.
[10] In C read *of* for *offin*.

III. *nyl.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. nyl, (i.) 758 (welȩ C)[1], 1231 (wolȩ D), 1562, 2246 (wolȩ A), 3009 (wolȩ D), 6846 BC (wol A, wil D). [Var. C nil; D nel.] nyl, (ii.) 2897 (wole D), 3284 (nel D), 6406, etc.—nel not, 1409 (nyl B, nil C, wil D); nel haue, 1100 (nyl B, nel ‡ neither D).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. nylt, (i.) (ii.) 2085 (nelt D), 2109 (C †; wilt † D), 2140 (nelt D)[2], 5190 (nyl thy B, nelt D †).—nyltow, 792 (nylt thou C, nelt thow D), 4912 (nyl-tow B, nylt thou C, nylt(e) thou D), 8071 (nyl to B, nil thou C); cf. 4269, 4965, 5151; neltow, 5150 (nyltow B, nylt thou C, nylt(e) thou D.)

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. nyl, nil, (i.) 2474 (welȩ C, nel D), 6538 (niH D), 6719 (sche nȩ wil C, niH D); cf. 777, 1015, 5275, 6478 ‡ C; (ii.) nyl he, 6704 (nyH D).[3]—nel ‡ be, 1545 D.

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. we nilȩ thee, 4305 (wol AB, we welë ‡ no C).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. nyl me, 6594 AB (niH D); nyl not, 7265 (nil D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. nyl, (i.) 37 (*perh. sg.*) (nyH D); nil it, 3776 C (wol not AB, nel hit D).

Pret. 1 Sing. nolde, 1023 f (I nȩ wolde C[c], nold D) (: sholde 1 *sg.*), 5997[4]; nold[e], 5248 (nylde C, noldȩ ‡ D); nolde, 5899 (-d B, I nȩ wolde C); nold I, 1118 (-ȩ ‡ nat B), 1393 (-d BD, wolde C), 1566 (-*e* C)[5]; I nold ‡ not (?), 3742 (nold[e] setten B, -e settë C, -[e] set D).

* Note.—In 2558 the correct reading seems to be *ne wolde I* (so B Cp.): A has *nold I*, which is unmetrical; D has *wold y*, but improperly omits *ne*: C reads *wolde I*, but has *ȝit* for *ne*.

Pret. 2 Sing. nodestow, 4106 (noldestow B, noldist thou CD). (For subjunctive, see § 106.)

Pret. 3 Sing. nolde, 77 f (-d D) (: sholde 3 *sg.*), 2134 (-*e* B, -d hit D), 2308 (-[e] D, wolde A), 3409 (wolde C, wold[e] D ‡), 4787 (-[e] B, nulde C; D ?), 5299 f (: sholde 1 *sg.*), 7314 (-[e] B); nulde, 2574 C (nold[e] D, wolde A, wold[e] B), cf. 1777 D; as nold[e] god, 5228 (-e CD); nolde han, 5803 (nulde an C), 7087 (nold B, wolde † a C; D ?); -*e* herȩ[6] (*gen. sg.*), 7572 (-d B); -*e* his, 7593 (-d B); nulde hire (*acc.*), 2678 C (nold D, ne wold AB).—noldȩ don, 6478 (nyl C, wil † D); nold, (i.) 2643 A (-e BC, wold D).[7]

Pret. 2 Pl. nolde, 3625 f (-d D) (: sholde 2 *pl.*); nolde, 7713

[1] Supply [*not*] in D.
[2] Supply [*that*] in D.
[3] Supply [*this*] in D; dele the first (*this*) in B.
[4] Supply [*Whom*] in C; [*for*] in D.
[5] Supply [*han*] in B. Read *seȳ*[*ë*] in C.
[6] A has *he* †.
[7] Supply [*to*] in D.

(woldyn C)[1], 8042 (-d B, nolden ? D); -*e* han, 8043 (-d B); nold han, 1503 (nylde an C).

Pret. 3 Pl. nolde, 150 C (wolde A, wold[e] B, nold ‡ they D), 5851 f (: sholde 3 *sg.*)[2], 7828 (-[e] B, -en D, wolde C).

## IV. *do.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. do, 719 (C †).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. dost, (i.) (ii.) 2595, 3238 (-(e) B, doost D), 3244, 4278 (D ?), 6960 (doost B, dedyst C, hast D); dostow, 7097 B (dost thou C, dost(e) thou D, dost[ow] A).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. doth, (i.) (ii.) 626, 671, 1270 f (-e D; B †), 2369 f (-e D), etc. B and D sometimes add an irrational -e, which of course is never pronounced (see 1031, 3876, 5542); so also in 7757 A.

Pres. Ind. Pl. (1) Before consonants,—don, 1237 (doon B, *om.* † D), 2471 (do D), 3647 (don(e) D); cf. 2669, 3724, 6707, 7978; doon, 705 (don C, done D †); do, 426 (don C †), 3143 ‡ D, 3967 (B †), 5575 (doo D), 8063 (doth(e) B, don C, don(e) D); doth, 2391 A (dos(e) B, don C, don(e) D), 2469 (don BC[c], don(e) D).[3] (2) In rhyme,—do, 1111 f (: tho : so). (3) Before vowels,—don, 134 (-(e) D); cf. 345, 1526, 5086, 7217, 8085. (4) Before *he*, *hem*, *here* (adv.),—don, 1124 (doon B, do D), 5845 (-(e) D, don folk C), 7935; do, 2868.

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. dide, 3653 (dede C, did ? D †); dude ‡ dye, 7845 C; did[e] ‡ byseche(?), 3424 D; dide ‖ for, 4233 (dede C) (cf. 699 ‡ D, 1064 ‡ D, 7292 ‡ C); dide, dede, 2316 (did C, dyd D), 2430, 2788 (ded D), 3766 (did D) (cf. 3121[4], 4497, 8099, 8100); Than he *dede* erst thurgh hope and *dide* his myght, 2425 (dide . . . *om.* ‡ B, dede . . . dede C, *om.* † . . . dede D †). For elision before *his*, *hym*, *hem*, cf. 2014, 2654, 3354, 3813.

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. dedest, 3205 (-ist CD, didest B); dedyst, 6960 ‡ C:

Pret. Ind. Pl. deden, (i.) 82 (-yn C, dede him D †); diden, 471 f (deden C, dedyn D) (: riden *ind. pret.* 3 *pl.* : abyden *p.p.*); deden hardely, 3055 (-yn D †, diden B, dudyn C); dedë al, 4247 (diden BE, dedyn C); ded[e] ‡ flene, 1279 D.

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. do, (i.) (ii.) 590, 4142, 5103 (werche D), 5224. [Var. D doo.]

[1] In A read *dayes ten* for *ten dayes*.

[2] Double subject.

[3] In 7321 *al that doth it care* appears to be singular in A (alle that doth B, alle that don C, all that doth D, alle that doth(e) G). (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

[4] Perhaps subjunctive.

Pres. Subj. 2 Sing. do, (i.) 636, 2401 (9-syl. in CD), 5131, 5276. [Var. D doo.]

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. do, (i.) (ii.) 980, 2903, 6201 (put ‡ D), 6305.

Pres. Subj. Pl. do we, 2030; do no, 4022 (don C); do me, 7773; doon vs, 1412 (don BC, do D); don amys, 3015 (do D).

Pret. Subj. Sing. dede his, 369 (dydde B); dide hym, 3764 (dede C, did † D).

Imv. 2 Sing. do, (i.) 833, 1022, 2886, 5176 (doo D), etc.; ne do thou, 586.—*do on*, 2039 C (don AB; D †), 3580 (don B, do this C).[1]

Imv.[2] 2 Pl. doth, (i.) 1407 (do CD), 1663 (doth(e) D), etc.; doth hym, 2294; doth herof, 3781 (C †).—do, (i.) 2268 (doth D), 3430 (y ‡ do *ind.* D), 3891, 4018 (doth D, seith ‡ C); do ye, 2915.

Inf. do, don, to done, etc. See § 119, XIII.

Perf. Part. (1) Before consonants,—don, 63 A (doun B), 2366 (do D), 3044, 3228 (ido B, ydo D), 5148 A (doon B, doon(e) D), 6419 (don(e) B, do C, doon(e) D); cf. 2544, 2577, 3256, 3917, 4460, 4552, 4923, 4939, 6470, 7429, 7721; harm idon is don who-so, etc., 1874 (ydon . . . don D); do, 3086 (D (?); don ‡ euere C; B †), 4024 (don BC, don(e) D), 4402 (don C)[3]. (2) In rhyme,—do, 1095 f (: Cleo *n. pr.*), 1389 f (: wherto), 1878 f (done D) (: go *p.p.* : so); fordo, 74 f (: Appollo : to go). (3) Before vowels,—don, 1129 (-(e) BD), 1446 (do D), 3703; cf. 1010, 2083, 2530, 3340, 3997, 7102, 8047, 8090; fordon, 525 (-doon B, don(e) D †), 8050 (-(e) D); vndon, 4577 (-(e) D, ondon C).

## V. *go.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. go, (i.) 5502 (goo D), 5869 f (goo D) (: wo *n*), 5938 f (goo D) (: two : so).[4]

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. goth, gooth, (i.) (ii.) 514, 1084, 1418, 3242, 5355, etc.; 3950 f (: wroth *pred. adj. sg.* : oth). B and D sometimes have an irrational -e, which is of course never pronounced.—forgoth here (*gen. sg.*), 6426 (-(e) B).

Pres. Ind. 2, 3 Plur. gon, (i.) 5761 (-(e) D, goth *sg.* C), 6740 C (goth *sg.* ABD); (ii.) 6159 (-(e) D).[4] go, (i.) 7494 (gon C, -n(e) D).

Pres. Subj. 1, 2, 3 Sing. go, (i.) (ii.) 1363 f (: so : no), 2774 f (: so : two), 3123 ‡ A, 3125, 3155, 5777, 6407 f (: also : two), 7490. [Var. D goo.]—for-go, (i.) 4953.

Pres. Subj. 1, 2. Pl. go, 1570 f (: two : foo), 3771 f (: wo : so), cf.

[1] In D slur *do on* and read [ɣp]*on*. [2] All the cases cited refer to a single person.
[3] Supply [*me*] in B, [*so*] in D. [4] Perhaps subjunctive.

1299 f, 4358 f; go we, 1700 (gow we B), 2199, 2248, 2690, 2809, 3514, 6187 (goo D), 6765 (goo D), 6886 (goo D); gon, (i.) 7361 (goon D).

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. wente, (see §.99).—yede, 3 *sg.*, 7206 f (ȝode B, ȝede C) (: Diomede); ȝede, 3 *sg.*, 3548 ‡ C; foryede he, 3 *sg.*, 2415 (-ȝede BC).

Pret. Ind. Pl. wenten, wente, yeden. See § 109.

Pret. Subj. 1, 3 Sing. wente. See § 113.

Imv. 2 Sing. go, (i.) 574, 1481, 2609 (so ‡ C), 5285 (goo D), 8149 (go . . . goo D); go hens, 572.

Imv. 2 Pl. goth, (ii.) 3513 ‡ D; go, (i.) 5601 (goth(e) D).[1]

Inf. gon, (1) Before consonants,—gon, forgon, 53 (-(e) B, go D), 357[2] (C?; go D), 1996 (go BD), 4623 (go CD), 5141 (-goo D), 5624; cf. 1204, 4857, 5417, 5946, 6284, 6432, 6649.—go, forgo, 2256, 3533 (gon C, gon(e) D), 4226 (-gon B, -goo E), 5246 (gon C, goo D), 7116 (gon BC, goo D); cf. 1458, 2029, 3582, 5136, 5261, 5989, 7895. (2) In rhyme,—gon, 117 f (gone BD), 1453 f (goon B, gone D), 1627 f (-e BD), 2094 f (-e BCD), 2137 f (-e CD), 2258 f, 2311 f (-e B; D †); cf. 2769 f, 2796 f, 3036 f, 3404 f, 3518 f, 3543 f, 4048 f, 5017 f, 5255 f (goone D), 6023 f, 7270 f; goon, 133 f (gone BD, gon C), 2014 f (gon BC, gone D); gone, 846 f (gon C) (: euerychone), 2686 f (gon C) (: euerychon : anoon).

Rhyme-words.—bon *os* (2014), ston *n.* (2311, 5017), oon, on *num. adj.* (2258, 2769, 3036, 3404, 5255, 7270), noon, non *num. adj.* (133, 1453, 2137, 4048, 6023), anoon, anon *adv.* (117, 1453, 1627, 2014, 2094, 2137, 2258, 2686, 2769, 2796, 3036, 3404, 3518, 3543, 4048, 5017, 5255, 7270), euerychon (2686), euerychone (846), begon *p.p.* (117), ron *prt.* 3 *sg. rained* (3518).

Note.—The rhymes show that in *gone* the -e is merely parasitic. The only ambiguous rhyme is *euerychon, -e.*

go, 75 f[2] (: Appollo : fordo *p.p.*), 628 f (: so : therfro); cf. 838 f, 1033 f, 2650 f, 3291 f, 3421 f, 3490 f, 4267 f, 4316 f, 4422 f, 4519 f, 4604 f, 4798 f, 4825 f (gon † A), 4884 f, 4966 f, 5086 f (D †), 5119 f, 5150 f, 5786 f, 5905 f, 6087 f, 6171 f, 6217 f, 6589 f, 6890 f, 7025 f, 7347 f, 7501 f, 7624 f.—(3) Before vowels,—gon, goon, 517, 863, 3425, 3486, 5408, 6017, 7058; cf. 2598, 6850, 7151, 7173. [Var. BD gon(*e*); D goo, go.] (4) go henne, 1294 (gon BC), 3472 (gon C, gette B).

Note.—In 4181 A has the reading *go-ne* (printed with hyphen): So loth to hem a sondry (asonder B, a sundir C, a sonder E) go-ne (gon it BCCp., gone it E); *leaf wanting in* D; *stanza wanting in* G. Of course *gon it* is right.

[1] Addressed to a single person (perhaps singular).

[2] Old-style figures indicate that *to* precedes the infinitive.

Perf. Part. (1) Before consonants,—gon, goon, agon, forgon, 718 (gone ‡ D (?)), 2107 (go D), 3381 (gon(e) D), 4284, 4527 (ago B, gon(e) D), 4547 (go D), 6598 (gon(e) D †); wo bygon, 2959 (bi- B, be- C); go, 1592 (gon BC, gon(e) D). (2) In rhyme,—gon, 2243 f (-e BD), 3736 f (-e D), 4336 f (-e D), 5309 f (goone D); agon, 1495 f (-e BD), 1807 f (-e D), 4244 f (ygonne † E), 5442 f (gon (?) B, igone C, gone (?) D), 5842 f (-e BD, igon C), 5979 f (-e D), 7688 f (-e D); bigon, bygon, begon,—with *wo, wel, wers, sorwfully*,—114 f (-e BD), 1379 f (-e BD), 1682 f (-e D), 5126 f (-goon D), 5484 f (-e D), 6310 f (-goon D), 7691 f (-goon BD); ago, 5752 f (agoo D, *line om.* † C), 6680 f (ago(n) C, agoo D), 7417 f (agoo D); [a]go (?), 1880 f (ago B, go C, gone D); go, cf. 4358 f C. (3) Before vowels, —gon, 8008 (ben BCD); wo-by-gon, 4372 (-gan B, woo-be-gon C, woo-bigon(e) D) (cf. 6397).—For *went*, see § 121. I.

Rhyme words.—ston *n.* (3736, 5126), won *n.* (5842), oon *num. adj.* (4244), noon, non *num. adj.* (1379, 1807, 3736, 5126, 5842, 6310, 7688, 7691), onerychon(e) (5442), anoon (114, 1495, 4244, 4336, 5309, 5484, 5979, cf. 2243), gon *inf.* (114), don *inf.* (1495);—do *pp.* (1880), so (1880, 5752), fo (5752), two (6680), Escaphilo *nom. pr.* (6680), wo (7417), mo (7417).

## VI. *haue.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. *haue* is the regular form before consonants: cf. 611, 628, 670, 988, 1133, 1298, 1327, 1467, 1760, 1780, 1955, 2370, 2565, 3173, 3251, 3340, 3350, 3531, 3902 BCD, 4024, 4039, 4349, 4460, 4592, 4691, 4953, 5770, 6032, 6159, 6183, 6272, 6327, 6687, 6783, 7234, 7343, 7419, 7463, 7752, 8197. —haue, 2060 f (: yaue *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* : saue *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.*), 2942 f (: saue *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* : graue *p.p.*), 4319 f (: saue *inf.*). —haue herd, 2537; haue hight, 6289,—and so of course before a vowel or weak *h*.—For *hauë* before consonants, (not *h*) see 197 ‡ C, 1179 ‡ A, 1381 ‡ D, 2596 ‡ D, 3902 ‡ A, 7752 ‡ C. Cf. also, —hauë ‡ honour, 5232 C; havë ‡ in, 6042 D, 6946 ‡ A (B?).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. hast, (i.) (ii.) 557, 696, 845, etc.—hastow, 276 (hast thou CD), 4297 (hast thou CD), etc.; ne *h*astow, 5512 (ne hast thou? C, ne have ye? D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. hath, (i.) (ii.) 1255, 1952 (hauyth C), 3457 (has B), etc., etc.—nath, (i.) 1862 AB (ne *h*ath C), 7562 (ne *h*ath C, ne ‡ hath D).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. han, (i.) 4853 (havę D), 5545 (havę D), 5654 (haũ D), 5904 (haue CD), 6757 (haue D), 7519 (haue CD);[1] (ii.) 3779

[1] Supply [*for*] in AD (or, in D, read *hauë*).

(have D, ȝe ‡ han B); han herd, 1186 (have D).—haue, 5642 (han D).[1]—hauë ‡ nat, 7519 D.

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. (1) Before consonants *han* is the regular form in ABC, *have* in D[2]: cf. 25, 27, 28, 1446, 1668, 2209, 2325, 2878, 3395, 4102, 4154, 4401, 4954, 5860, 6505, 7353, 7712, 7721, 8059. But *haue* is found in all four MSS. : thus,—3735 AB, 4768 AB, 5860 B, 7353 C; and when *ye* follows (*haue ye*) *haue* is the regular form in all four: cf. 1373, 1413, 3042, 5855 (han ȝe C),[3] 5977, 6829, 7619, 8040.[4] (2) Before vowels,—han, 2964 (have D, han ‡ routhe C[c]), 3779 ‡ C, 4742 (haue D). (3) Before *h*, han herd, 2051 (have D), 2632, 2953 (have D), 5469 (have D, ȝe *han* ‡ B), 5538 (C (?); haue D); han hight, 1577 (have D); haue herd, 6992 (han B; C †).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. (1) Before consonants *han* is the regular form in ABC, *have* in D: cf. 241, 247, 553, 706, 802, 913, 999, 2478, 3034, 4293, 4299, 4547, 5249, 6877, 7119, 7123 A. But *haue* occurs in 6877 C, *han* in D 241, 247, 2669; and *hath* is found in 242 ‡ BC, 2467 (?) ‡ D, 4299 ‡ B, 4547 ‡ D. Cf. also,—hauë ‡ suffred, 6778 D (*read* haue [y]suffred). (2) Before vowels,—han, 199 (have D), 1129 (have D), 1973 (have D), 3135, 3194 (han(*e*) D), 6143 (hauyn C, haue D), 6632 (haue D), 7614 (haue D), 7975 (haue D); cf. 6778. (3) han here (*gen. pl.*), 5658 ABD.

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. hadde. See § 102.

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. haddest. See § 106.

Pret. Ind. Pl. hadden, hadde. See § 109.

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. haue, 33 AB, 1095, 1740, 3717 ‡ D; haue, cf. 1225, 1609 (*or indic.*), 3632, 3717 ‡ C, 4752; hauë myght(e), 8067 ‡ BD (read *trew*[*ë*]*ly* and *haue*).

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. haue, 955, 1834, 2723, 2771, 7750 ‡ C (hath AD), 7994; hauë ‡ spase, 7305 C; haue, cf. 220, 6465; haue he, 21,[5] 1932 (-ë ‡ he A)[6]; haue his, 805; hauë ‡ in, 6465 D; hauë ‡ hym, 5292 C.

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. haue ye, 1667, 2772.[7]

Pret. Subj. 1, 3 Sing. hadde. See § 113.

Pret. Subj. 2 Sing. See § 106.

Pret. Subj. Pl. hadde. See § 114.

[1] Supply [*as*] in D. [2] D has *han* in 4653. [3] *haue* [*ye*] A.
[4] *haue* [ȝ*e*] BC. [5] Supply [*my*] in D, or read *hauë* ‡ *he*.
[6] Supply [*so*] and read *haue he* in A.
[7] Transpose *clyne* and *the quene* in C.

Imv. Sing. Haue now good nyght, 3183, 3262; haue here my trouthe, 3953.

Imv. Pl. Ne wondreth not ne haueth of it no fere, 3595 (haue BD, hauyth C); haue, 2218 (-yth C), 3908, 4015; haue here (*adv.*), 1409, 3727 (havith D), 6028.

Inf. (1) Before consonants both *han* and *haue* are common in A, B, and C; but *have* is the regular form in D. For *han*, see 467 AB, 638 B, 769 ABC, 872 AB, 900 BC, 915 AB, etc., etc.; for *haue*, see 467 C, 501 AB, 638 A, 899 AB, etc., etc. Cf. 1100, 1277, 1354, 1499, 1566, 1580, 1638, 1796, 2522, 2523, 2717, 2733, 2956, 3255, 3273, 3287, 3581, 4002, 4057, 4683, 4764, 4770, 4774, 4839, 5045, 5046, 5106, 5168, 5232, 5522, 5582, 5653, 5803, 5890, 5896, 5899, 5900, 5968, 6019, 6138, 6247, 6383, 6417, 6431, 6481, 6645, 6887, 7102, 7209, 7268, 7344, 8041, 8046. For *an*=*han*, see 5803 C. In—To (*om.* C) slepe and after tales *haue* (han BG Cp., hauyn C, have D, han a E) reste, 3066, *han* is unmetrical; cf. Ye shul (schal C, shal GCp. John's) nomore *haue* (han BC Cp. John's) soueraynte (-eynte BDG, -eignete Cp. John's, -anitee E, seurete of me C), 3013; cf. also 2717 ‡ D, 3414 ‡ D, 3799 ‡ D, 5968 ‡ C, 6138 ‡ C. (2) In rhyme,—haue, 120 f, 1821 f, 2329 f, 2541 f, 4221 f, 5228 f, 6036 f, 7779 f; hauen, 4305 f (haue BCD) (: grauen *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -e BCD).

Rhyme words.—saue *inf.* (120, 2329, 5228, 6036, 7779), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (1821, 4221), graue *inf.* (2329, 6036), craue *inf.* (2541), graue *n.* (7779).

(3) Before vowels *han* is the commonest form in ABC, *have* in D: cf. 13, 122, 349, 803, 1574, 2224, 2460, 2587, 2831, 2840, 3733, 4348, 5047, 5213, 5967, 7443, 7636. But *haue* is found in all four MSS.: thus,—50 AB, 122 C, 349 B, 709 AB, 2454 AB, 2562 A, 2831 B, 3485 AB, 3786 ABC, 5047 B, 5271 AB, 6407 ABC, 7443 C, 7636 B. In 2224 D *havÿn of* is found (han ABC). (4) Before *h* (*hym, his, here* (*hire*), *had*), both *han* and *haue* are found in A, B, C, and D: cf. 1503, 2164, 2504, 3352, 3856, 4395, 5579, 7747; for cases before other *h*'s, cf. 857, 3497, 6104, 8043. C has *an* for *han* in two instances: an had, 1503 C; an hyȝed, 3947 C.

Note.—The clipped form *a* for the infinitive occurs several times in C (rarely in A and D). Thus,—in C 501, 638, 899, 915, 1499, 1638, 2956, 3273, 4002, 5045, 5046, 5168, 5890, 5896, 5899, 5900, 5903, 6417, 6645, 7087, 7102, 8041, 8046; in A 900; in D 5168, 5896. The form *ha* is rare,—see 5106 C, 5900 D, 6417 D. In all the citations in this note a consonant follows the infinitive.

## METRICAL CHAPTER.

§ 125. Weak *-e* is elided before a vowel and often before *h* (see Child, §§ 74—76; ten Brink, § 269); but final *-e* in the definite article may be preserved (see § 128).[1]

Elision of weak *-e* takes place before *he, his, him, hire* (gen. dat. acc. sg., gen. pl.), *hem;* before *haue* (pres. ind. or subj.; inf.), *hast, hath, han* (ind. pl., inf.), *hadde;* before *how* and *here* (adv.); before French "*h* mute" in *honour, horrible;* before irrational *h* in *Horaste.*

Examples of elision before *h* in pronouns are unnecessary (for possible exceptions to the rule, see § 126). Examples before *h* in the other words mentioned follow: variants are for the most part left unregistered; the occurrence of a cæsura after the elided *-e* is indicated.

dere (*adv.*) haue (*ind.* 1 *sg.*), 4953; blame haue (*ind. or subj.* 1 *sg.*), 1295; Diomede || haue (*ind.* 2 *pl.*), 8040.

wratthe || hast, 933; cause hast, 6913; ioye hastow, 6951.

mone hath, 4598; herte hath, 6501; loue hath, 879 AB; loue || hath, 960; nece (||?) hath, 8090; pùrueyaùnce (||?) hath, 5639; sore hath, 1618; Troye hath, 6220; Criseỳde || hath, 7610.

a lawe (||?) han (2 *pl.*), 2878.

loue hadde (3 *sg.*), 304, 663; ioye || hadde, 3311; cause || hadde, 4069; Criseỳde || hadde, 5487; longe || hadde, 5832.

on lyue han be, 5899; ye koude han, 8046; moste (*sg.*) han, 3733; men sholde (||?) han, 872; sholde (3 *pl.*) han, 3273; I wold han, 1499; she wold (||?) han, 2164; he wolde han, 3497; ye me wolde han, 4348; they wolde han 4839; nolde (*sg.*) han, 5803, 7087; ye nolde han, 1503; ye nolde (||?) han, 8043; sòm tyme (||?) han, 5967 (see note 2, below); cf. also, woldẹn (2 *pl.*) han, 2831.

I dorst haue, 899; he myght haue, 1277; who myght haue, 7102; I wolde haue, 5168, cf. 8041; she wolde haue, 501; who wolde haue, 5045.

In all the following cases of elision before *how*, except 6005, 7145, *how* is preceded by the cæsura: loue, 1752; nece, 4405; Troy, 6005; swete, 4120; at the leste, 4678; thoughte (*ind.* 3 *sg.*),

[1] With reference to the treatment of the final vowel in elision, the following readings are not without interest, though some of them can hardly be called evidence: *tellit* (= telle it), 580 C; *myghty* (= myghte I), 7444 A (myȝty C); *driẽ* (= drie I *potior*), 6659 C; *posẽ* (= pose a), 3152 B; *excuser* (= excuse her *inf.*), 7462 D, see 7460 D (cf. *dethes* = deth his, 469 C); *leuẽ* = leef he, 6247 C.

3282; cast (*pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*), 4823; kowde (3 *sg.*), 1921; he nyste (*ind.*), 7145; if ye wiste (*subj.*), 6280; happe how happe may, 7159.

allone here (*hic*), 806; hadde here-vpon, 3377.

Ne shal I neuere haue *hele* || *honoùr* ne ioye, 6104 (neuere haue || honoùr C, Shal I neuer hauë hele h. ne ioye D). Cf. And that ye d[e]igne me so *muche honoùre* (inf.), 2981 (muchȩl B, mechil C, And yow deigne me so honoure D †).

In *place horrible* makynge ay his moone, 6613.

How that ye louen sholde (sholden louen B Cp., schulde louyn C, shold love D, shulde louen G, shulden loue John's) on that *hatte Horaste* (horast G, on hat h. D, oon atte h. E), 3639. That *Horaste* = *Orestes* (cf. § 139) is evident from Gower's *Confessio Amantis*, bk. iii. (I, 352), where the forms *Horestes* and *Horest* (elided) occur: Chaucer merely uses the name without intending an allusion to the classical Orestes.

Note 1.—In some of the examples just given, the word affected by elision is one that loses its -e rather readily before a consonant: so especially of the "auxiliary verbs," and of the nouns *loue*, *nede*.—It should be observed that in phrases in which an auxiliary verb precedes the infinitives *han* or *haue*, we have often what is to all intents and purposes a single verb-form of which the infinitive *han* (or *haue*) is the unaccented part (or scarcely more than a suffix). In such cases the infinitive had of course no full pronunciation, and in some instances we actually find it written *an* or *a* (§ 124, VI., note at end). Elision before such a form as this has really little in common with elision before a fully sounded *h*, of whatever origin.

Note 2.—Proparoxytone words ending in -e apocopate -e before consonants (ten Brink, § 257): *swètnesse hàne* (638), *Pàndare* || *here* (*adv.*) (868), *Pàndare herde* (876), and the like, have therefore no significance as examples of elision (cf. also *sòm tyme hàn*, 5967, where *som-tyme* is practically a compound, and see § 2, p. 3).

Note 3.—For the treatment of words like *chaumbre*, *lettre*, *temple*, *vncle*, before *h*, see § 136, *f*, *g*. Cf. *heuene* (dissyl.) *hyc* 4587 (§ 14). For *euere*, *neuere* before *h*, see the details in § 90.

## § 126. Hiatus, whether before a vowel or before *h* in the words mentioned in § 125, is very rare.

In a few instances, the evidence for hiatus is either conclusive or, at any rate, considerable. Thus,—

Al this *Pandàrë* || *yn* his herte thoughte, 1063 (C cut out). *Pandare* is the reading of ABDEGCp. John's Phillipps; Durham has *Pandar*; Hl. 2392 has *Al this tho Pàndarè in herte thoht*. Shall we read *Pandàrus* (see § 139)?

Now *good*[ë] *em* for goddes loue I prey, 1394 (goode BG, Now my good eem D John's Hl. 2392, Now myn em C, And good[ë] em

Cp.). C has but nine syllables, and, unless *goodë* be read (cf. p. 128), the same is true of ABCp.

Al *wolde I* (wold I B, wold y D) that noon (no man CD) *wyste* (woste C, wist DG) *of* this thought, 1830. (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.) Read either *woldë I* or *wystë of.*

But hasteth yow to don hym *ioyë haue*, 2329 (ioy[ë] D; no note in Austin, except *doon* Cp.).

Iwys so wolde I (wold I B) and I *wistë how*, 3944 (wist[ë] D; no note in Austin). Rather *wistë how* than *woldë I.*

Were it so that I *wist*[ë] *outrely*, 4328 (wistë B, ȝ[i]t were it so that I woste outerely C, ȝit were it so that I wist vttirly D, Were it so that I wiste entirely G; no note in Austin).

As nold[e] god but yf I *sholdë haue*, 5228 (nold[e] . . . shold[ë] B, nolde . . . schulde C, nolde . . . shulde D, nolde . . . schuldë G; no note in Austin.)

And stod forth mewet (meuyth † D) *myldë* (-[ë] D) *and* mansuete, 6557 (*line om.* C, And stode forthe full mylde and manswete G; no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

*Trewë as* stel in ech condicion, 7194 (Trew B; no note in Mr. Austin's collation). Either hiatus or 9-syl.

I *fyndë ek* (eke G) in storyes (stories DG, storyes C, the stories B) ellys (eH C) where, 7407. The reading of B avoids hiatus; no note in Mr. Austin's collation.

The same hele I shal noon *helë haue*, 7779 (no note in Austin).

Of the examples just given the surest are the three before *haue* (inf.) (2329, 5228, 7779), that before *how* (3944), and that before *and* (6557). Reasonably sure is 4328 (before *outrely*), and so, perhaps, is 1830 (before *I*). 1394 may be a verse of nine syllables, but hiatus makes a much smoother line; 7194, however, will run very well as a nine-syllable verse.—Here perhaps should be considered *haddë had* in 227, though *had* (p.p.) is a part of the verb *have* not mentioned in § 125:

And wende no thing *haddë had* swych myght, 227 (no thing(e) had had swiche myȝt B, hadde had swych amyȝt C, he (*no* and) wend no thing had had such myght D; Cp. agrees with A except that it has *swiche;* And wend no thyng hade had succho myght G; no note as to John's). Possibly *swiche* in BCp. is for *swich a*[1]: Cp. is a good MS. is all respects, but B is not to be trusted as

[1] Cf. 4581 B.

to its *-e*'s. However, *hàddë hàd* is surely more euphonious than *hàd had* (_ ×).

The following two lines may perhaps be more safely regarded as nine-syllable verses than as verses with hiatus, for *loue* almost always loses its *-e* in the *Troilus*, whether a vowel or a consonant follows (§ 8, p. 14). In both verses the reading is quite secure (no note in Austin).

*Loue ayens* the (*om.* C) which who-so defendeth, 603.

*Loue hym* made al prest to don hire byde, 4824.

In 421, it is perhaps safer to read *louë thus* than to allow the hiatus *seydë he* (but cf. ten Brink, § 270. 2) :

And to the god of loue || thus *seyde he*, 421 (seyd he D).

In the following two lines the reading *comynge* must be looked at with suspicion (see § 10). In the first it may be avoided by hiatus (*causë of*); in the second, it causes hiatus, which, however, may be avoided by inserting *ek* (with CD). Apart from these two lines, there are no instances of *-ynge* in the *Troilus*, whether before a vowel or a consonant, except *this forknowyng*[*ë*] *wyse* (§ 59, *b*).

The cause of his comynge (-yng D) || thus answerede, 2187.

Of here comynge || and of his also, 4517 AB (comynge and ek C, comyng and eke D; no note in Austin).

Other lines in which hiatus, though possible, is on the whole unlikely, are :

Quod Pandarus now is *tyme I* wende, 1305 (*so* ABG, now is it tyme C, Now quod Pandarus is it tyme y wende D; no var. in Cp. noted).

I am on(e) (oon B Cp., on G, on of C) the *fairest* (fayreste BC) || *out* of drede (withoutyn drede D), 1831 (no note in Mr. Austin's collation except on *oon*). The choice lies between *the fairèst*[*ë*] || *out* and a 9-syl. verse.

Hym to reuoken she *dide* (did B, dede C) *al* hire (hir D) peyne, 3960. Mr. Austin's collation shows no variants. *Reuoke* and *didë al* certainly give a more agreeable line than *reuoken* and *dide al*; but it is unsafe to assume hiatus. *Hirë* is improbable. G has *Hym to reuoke she dide her bysy peyne*, the last word in a later hand.

Nought (Nouȝte G) *rought* (rouȝte CG) *I* wheder (whidere B, whider G, whedyr that C, whedirwardes D) thow woldest (wilt D) me (*om.* D) stere, 4944 (no note in Mr. Austin's collation). The choice lies between *roughtë I* and *woldest* (cf. § 136, *b*).

She *told ek* (tolde ek CD) how Tydeus (Cithideus † C) er she

stente, 7348 (no note in Austin). The choice lies between *toldë ek* and *Tydēus* : cf. Tydeus sonę that doun descended is, 7877, and see § 141.

In a considerable number of verses the reading of one or another MS., necessitating hiatus, is easily corrected by comparison of MSS., so that the hiatus disappears. Examples are :

Now *Pandare* (*so* ABDCp., Pandar G, Pandarus E John's) || *I* kan (kanne B) no more (mor G) seye, 1044 (cut out of C). Here *Pàndarè*, with its impossible accentuation, should without doubt be rejected in favour of *Pandarus* (§ 139). Cf. Pàndarò || and, 5747 (Pandarus C, Pàndare || In BCp. John's).

And how he *myght*[ë] *here* (acc.) beseche of grace, 1056 (BCp. John's have *best* after *he*).

I *loue* (leue C) *oon* (*om.* G) which (which that BE Cp., wich that C, wheche that G) is most (moost is B Cp., most is G) ententyf, 1923. Read *which that.*

But Troilus *thoughte his* herte bledde, 2035 (thought[e] his B, Troylis that thouȝte his h. b. C, Troylus that thought that his herht bled D, But Troylus thought his herte bledde G ; no note in Mr. Austin's collation). Clearly we should read *But Troïlus that* thoughte *his herte bledde. That* is almost necessary for the construction.

And gan to smyle and seyde (seyde hym BDG) || Em I preye, 2244 (no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

Ye shul (schal G, shal Cp. John's) *nomore* (namore Cp., no moore John's) || *haue* (han BCp. John's) souereynte, 3013, (souereignete Cp. John's, scurete of me C). Read *han* (or *haue*) *sòuereȳnetè* (cf. § 137).

And what *myschaunce* || *in* this world yet is, 3132 (myschauns[ë] C, meschaunce in this world ȝet ther is B, what mischef yet in this world ther is D ; Cp. John's insert *ther* before *is*).

If that ich *grace had* (*so* BG, ich a grace hadde Cp., I hadde grace A, y had grace D, I hadde C *omitting* grace) for (*om.* CD) to do so, 3770. The choice lies between *gracë haldę* and *haldë gracę.*

Of swiche (swhich B, whiche C, wych D) sikes *koude he* (*om.* B) nought blynne (bilynne B), 4207. (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.) Cf. § 138, 1.

That pride *enuyë ire* and auaryce, 4647 ACDE Phill. 8252 Harl. 2392 (That pride and ire enuye and auaryce BCp.; That pride enuye and ire and auarice G John's Selden B 24 ; That ire enuy

and auerice Durham II 13). Hiatus is doubly suspicious on account of the unusual treatment of *-ye* (as *-ÿë*) in the interior of the verse (see p. 84).

And though I *myght*[*ë*] || *I* wol not do so, 5121 (myghtë B, myȝte || I huldë not C, myght || I woldë nat D, myȝte || I woldë not G). (No note in Austin's collation.)

A. (And D) dieu (dey D) the deuel *spede* (haue C) *hym* that (that it BD, at hit G) recche, 5292. The insertion of *it* restores the verse. (No note in Austin.)

Whanne I (*om.* B) the (thyn C) processe (pròces C, procès D) *haue in* memorie, 6946 (haue in myn C, I haue in my D; no note as to Cp. John's; whan wil ye this processe haue in memory Ill. 2392; When I the processe haue in memorie G).

The[r] (Ther BD, There CG, Wher John's) she (he † G) was born (borne BDG, boryn C) and (and there C, and ther D John's) she dwelt (dwellyd CG, duellid D) *hadde* (had BG, *om.* D) *ay*, 7074.

And that to *late is* now me to rewe, 7433 (to late is now for me to rewe B, to late it is now for to rewe C, And to late it is now for to rewe D). (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

And graunte it that ye *soone* || *on* me rewe, 7727 (sone vpon CDG; Cp. John's also have *vpon*).

Other examples[1] are: (*a*) before vowels,—1099 D, 1277 C, 1305 AB, 1405 C, 1608 A, 1956 B, 1957 A, 2287 A (*houdë* acc., see § 13), 2386 D, 2744 C, 2807 A, 3495 C, 3611 D, 4970 Cx, 5070 A, 5258 C, 5401 C, 5436 C, 5885 C, 6073 D, 7110 CD, 7917 D; (*b*) before *h*,—*herdë* (pret. sg.) *hym* (549 D), *tymë* || *hath* (1877 A), *speddë* (pret. pl.) *hem* (2032 AB), *hestë hath* (4587 A), *demaundë he* (7222 D), *seydë* (pret. sg.) *he* (7548 C), *willë hath* (7905 C).—In 6605 A, for *tèndrcssè hòw* (with impossible accentuation) read *tenderncsse how*. In 5747 A, for *Com Pàndarè* || *and* (with impossible accentuation) read *Com Pàndare în* || *and*, with BCp. (Com(e) Pandare in and John's, Com pandarus and C, Com(e) Pàndarè and D). In 7652, read *than*[*në*] *don* rather than *myght*[*ë*] *I*: C has the -e s right.

Instances of consonant + *-re*, *le* not slurred before a vowel are perhaps not strictly cases of hiatus, for it is by no means certain that Chaucer's ordinary pronunciation was *lettre*, *temple* rather than *letter*, *tempel*, or *lettr*, *templ*.

But wel ye wot the *chaumbre* (-er B, -ir C) *is* but lite, 2731.

And of myn *ordre* (ordere C) *ay* (*om.* C) til (til that C) deth (they C) me mete, 5444.

I thenk (thynke C) ek how he *able is* (abele he is C, able he is D) to (for to BCCp.) haue, 1821. Read, however, with BCp.

*Humble* (-bele C, -blely † D) *in* (his D, in his BCECp.) speche and

[1] Cf. also note 3 at the end of § 92, V.

yn his lokynge (tellynge C) eke, 4790. Read, however, with B etc., *humble in his.*

A considerable number of instances of apparent hiatus are due to the reading *-e* instead of *-en* in forms in which both endings are known to Chaucer's language. Thus rather often in the infinitive (§ 119, XI.) and in strong perfect participles (§ 122, XI.), and occasionally in other verb-forms, as *dedë* (pret. pl.) *al*, 4247 (read *diden* with BE Cp.; dedyn Ç) and *they sholdë hirę* (gen. sg.), 4848 (read *sholden* with BCp. John's; -yn D) : cf. the variants in § 96, III. (pres. ind. pl.), § 109, IX., note (pret. ind. pl.). Similarly, for *herę seluë excusynge*, 112, read *herę seluen* (hirę seluen B, hyrę seluë C, herselfë] D); for *aboue euery*, 6517 (§ 88), read *abouen* with B (-yn C, *-e*? D ‡); for *oftë hastow*, 904, read *often* with B (oftë C, oft[ë]D).

Note 1.—No doubt unelided *-ë* before a vowel is to be changed to *-en* whenever such a change is possible, even if the cæsura might protect hiatus. Thus,— *But if thow late* (ȝe lat B, ȝe late CG, ȝe lete D) *hym deyë* (dy[ë] D, deyen G; no note in Austin) ‖ *I wole sterue*, 1408; *God leue hym werke* (-en BCp. John's, -yn G, werk[ë] D) *as he can deuyse*, 2898.—With regard to erroneously substituting *-ë* for *-en* and thereby necessitating hiatus, B is the least culpable of the four MSS. and Cp. appears to be almost exemplary (cf. § 119, XI., note).

§ 127. Before *h* in words other than those mentioned in § 125, there seems to be no special inclination to elide *-e* : the *-e* is sometimes preserved (see list I.) and sometimes lost (see list II.).

In the examples that follow (lists I. and II.) variants are for the most part left unmarked; the occurrence of a cæsura after the elided or unelided -e is indicated.

I. -ë retained :

leuë (*sbst.*) hom(e), 126 A (read *leue* and *hom*).
Pandàrë ‖ herkęne, 658 (Pandàris C).
nomorë hardë grace, 713.
haddë ‖ horn, 1727 (or,—haddë horn ‖ ).
herę seuęnęthë hows, 1766 (or,—herę seuęnęthe hows).
the best[ë] harpour, 2115.
that ye thonkë (*subj.*) ‖ humbely, 2804.
so god me sendë hele, 3163.
thilkë harm, 3560.
myghtë (3 *sg.*) here (*inf.*), 3586.
worsë hap (*sbst.*), 4088; hertë ‖ happę (*subj.*..3 *sg.*), 7159.
sholdë (3 *sg.*) holde, 4726.
thi self[ë] ‖ helpen, 5190 (read *seluen* with B).
termë holde, 7572.
fatë ‖ helpeth, 7915 A (read *fate* ‖ *hym helpeth* with AD; C †).

Note.—No importance attaches to *uncle* (dissyl.) *herde*, 2185.

II. -e lost:

had, hadde (*ind.* 3 *sg.*, see § 102) herd, 750, 5007, 5329;[1] had (*subj.* 3 *sg.*, see § 113) herd, 7086.

abedde ‖ half, 1152 (§ 14); ought (*sg.*) half, 5927 (§ 123, III).

were hanged, 1438.

faste ‖ homward, 2388.

no fors hardyly, 2802 (§ 21).

soone hope (*ind.* 1 *sg.*), 3794 (§ 88).

ioye ‖ halt, 4478 (§ 21); loue halt, 4606 (§ 8); myght (3 *sg.*) (‖ ?) holden, 5260 (§ 123, VIII); hope ‖ halt, 6711 (§ 2).

bothe hèronèr, 5075 (§ 88).

the more harm is, 7299; cf. 1523 (‖ ?).

Note.—Some of the examples in list II. have no significance, since the word affected is one that loses its -e freely even before a consonant: so especially of the "auxiliary verbs" (including *were*), of the noun *loue*, of *more*, and of the phrase *no fors* (which, besides, is, in the instance in question, accented on the *no*).

## § 128. Elision of weak -*e* in monosyllables.

The cases that come under consideration are *the* (definite article) and *nĕ* (simple negative, 'non'). *The* before a vowel or weak *h* may suffer elision or preserve its -*e* at the will of the poet. *Nĕ* is regularly elided.[2] Whether elision in these cases amounts to full ecthlipsis may be doubted. Ten Brink decides for ecthlipsis (§ 269), but the metre is quite as well satisfied by reducing the -*e* to a consonant *i* (*y*). The spelling *nyis* for *nis* (*ne is*) in 7451 C seems to be significant in this regard. On the other side we have the evidence of *toon* and *tother*, and the testimony of Hart (1569): see Jespersen, *Studier over engelske Kasus*, Første Række, Copenh., 1891; p. 154.

I. Elision of *the*.

the aduersite, 25 (D *om.* the).

theffect, 212 (the effecte B; D ?); the effect, 2651 (theffect B); cf. 2305, 3188, 4422, 4519, 4657, 4806, 6740.

the assege, 464 (thassege B, the sege D); thassege, 4724 (thessage B, the sege D (?)); cf. 1192, 1208, 6142, 7220.

at the ende, 1876 (at ende BD, an ende C); cf. thende, 1345 B.

the aleyes, 1905 (thaleyes B, thë a. D).[3]

the alderfirst[e], 2939 (the aldir ferste C; D ‡ *om.* the); cf. 4439.

the experience, 4125; cf. 3830.

the affeccioun, 4432 (thaffeccion B; C ‡ *om.* the).

[1] Supply [*which*] in A.

[2] See exception at end of IV., below.

[3] Supply [*was*] in C.

the ambassiatours, 4802 (thembassadours B, theem-bassatourys C);[1] thembassadours, 4807 (the embassadourys C, thambassiatours D).

theschaunge, 4808 (the chaunge CD); cf. 4820, 4822, 5540 C.

at the other, 5096 (attother B, at other D).

the ymage, 5526 (C †); cf. 1458.

the ordre of causes, 5679.

thaqueyntaunce, 6485 (the acqueyntau[n]se C, the acqueintauns? D).[2]

thenchèson, 6995 (then(e)cheson B, the encheson C, the entencioun ‡ D); cf. 681 ‡ B.

the est seè, 7472 (thë ‡ C, thè est see D).

thauentaylle, 7921 (thauantaile B, the auentayle CD).

thentent, 7993 (the ent. BD, thę ‡ centence? C).[3]

th erràtyk, 8175 A (the erratyk B).

Compare also 1696 C, 2361 D, 2663 D, 3378 CD, 4827 D(?), 7829 C, and the variants under *thilke* (p. 160).

Similarly before *h* :

thonoùr, 120 (the honour BCD).

Note 1.—For *ŧt shal òf*, 5768 C has *the hèd shal òf*, clearly the "correction" of a scribe.

Note 2.—Before *h* in the following words *the* of course suffers no elision : harpe, 731 ; harm, 839, 1539, 3167 ; haste, 2031 ; hil[le], 943 ; hardest, 1814 ; heuęnes, 1989 ; hood, 2266 ; happy, 2467 ; hond, 2689 ; holy, 3384 ; herte, 3913, 5808 ; halle, halles, 5394, 7093 ; hous, 5485 ; hote, 490. So also *the* (A.S. *þý*) in *the hottere*, cf. 1623.

Note 3.—Sometimes one or another MS. has a reading which seems to require or suggest *thę* (definite article) before a consonant (not *h*) : thus,—200 C, 2052 A (?), 2341 A (?), 3191 D (?), 3345 D, 3386 C, 3567 B, 3597 C, 4333 D, 4845 D, 6926 BD, 7392 B, 7993 C, 8232 D. The cases cited may all be corrected by comparison of MSS. But in 4906, ABCD agree in reading : *His hed* to thę wal *his body to the grounde* (no note in Austin).

II. But *e* in *the* may remain unelided. Thus,—

By allę (al B, aH D) *the* (tho Cp.) *othęs* that I hauę to (*om.* BCD) yow sworn(e), 1384. Probably we should read : By allę the othes that I hauę yow sworn. *Allë the othës* or *allë the othęs* is hardly to be thought of.

*The olde* (The old D, Wolde † *for* þolde C) daunce and euery poynt therinne, 3537.

The cause ytold (tolde John's) of herę comyngę (-yng D) *the* (*om.* C) *olde* (old D, *om.* B), 4803. *Comỳngë the olde* is unlikely.

The newe (new BD) loue out (-e BD) cacheth (chaceth B, schakyth C, chasithe D) ofte (oft B) *the olde*, 5077 (no note in Austin).

[1] Supply [*the*] in B.

[2] Thaqueyntaunce (The aqueyntau[n]se C, The acqueintauns D, The acqueyntaunce G) of these (this BC, thes D) Troians (Troyans B, Troylus C, Troiaunes D) to (for to C) chaunge. (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

[3] Supply [*the*] in B.

Here *oft the olde* is perhaps preferable to *oftë the olde*.

*The obseruaunce* (-ns D) euere yn youre absence, 5445 (C *inserts* I *before* in).

And whiten gan *the* (eche † C) *orisonte* (orisoune B, oryȝonte C, orisent D) shene, 6639.

III. Some lines may be read in two ways, one of which preserves the *-e* in *the*, the other of which elides it.

And sith (sithen B, sythe C, seth D, sithe Cp.) *the ende* (thende B Cp. John's) is of (*om.* BCDCp. John's) euery tales strengthe, 1345.

Lo herte (hert D) myn as wolde (wold BD) *the excellence*, 3830 (no note in Austin).

Bygan (Bygunne C, Began D) for ioye *the amorouse* (thamarouse B, the amerous CD, thamorouse Cp. John's) daunce (dauns D), 6093.

IV. In *nĕ* the *Troïlus* regularly elides *-e* before a vowel. There is but one exception : 649 (see end of list).

ne acheueth, 1893 (nacheueth B; CD *om.* ne; eschewith † D).

ne enforce I, 5678 (nen-force B).

naxe in guerdon, 6957 (ne axe CD).

For he that nough[t] nassayeth nought nacheueth, 7147 (nouȝt asayeth nouȝt ne cheuyth C, nouȝt assaieth nouȝt acheueth D).

He ne eet ne dronk for his malencolye, 7579 (ne et(e) BD, he nother ‡ et C).

He ne eet ne dronk ne slep ne word [ne] seyde, 7803 (ne word(e) seyde BD, He net ne drank ne no word he ne seyde C).

But litel bok no makyng thow nenuye, 8152 (D *om.* ne).

So *nam*, *nys* (§ 124). Particularly interesting is *nyis* for *nis* (7541 C). For *nere*, *noot*, *niste*, *nyl*, *nylt*, *nolde*, *noldest*, see §§ 124, 125.

A single exception is :

Ek the *ne oughte* (aught B) not ben yuel apayed, 649 (And ek thou not to ben euele payede C, And eke thow oghtist not ben evil apayed D; no variants in Austin, except *nat* Cp. for *not*). The reading seems to be well established. In : I *ne* (om. D) *ought* (aught B, auȝte C, oght D) not for that thyng hym despise, 1805, read ne ought[ë] not.

## § 129. Elision of close *-e*.

I. Of the elision of (close) *-e* in *me*, *we*, *he*, *she*, *ne* (neque), there are several examples. Ten Brink (§ 269) is inclined to regard such instances as full elision (*ecthlipsis*), but this seems doubtful, except perhaps when the vowel which follows is itself an *e*.

And yet me of-thynkęth that this auaunt me asterte, 1043 A (mathynkęth . . . may † sterte B, me athinkith . . . me stert D ‡).

me offendeth, 605 (me off. C ‡; D †).

me assaylleth, 607 (massaileth D †; me ass. C ‡).

me allone, 1021 (malon B, me a. D ‡); so 2486.

mauyse, 1361 B (me auyse C, me a. D ‡; A †).

me enspire, 3554 AB (me enspire D, ny3t ens. C).

me anon, 5172 BCD (A ?).

me assayle, 6257 (messaile B, me a. C ‡; D †).

And go we anoon for as yn myn entente, 6187 (C †).

In to the gardeyn go we and ye shal here, 2199.

he answèręd, 5097 (B *om.* he; he answerde C, he answerd D).

she abod, 127 (D *om.* she; sche bod C); cf. 2736 ‡ C.

she abreyde, 5874 (she brayde B, sche brayd C).[1]

she alighte, 6552 (shalighte B, she light D; C †).

Ne yn hym desir doon (*l.* noon)[2] othere fownes bredde, 465 (Nyn hym C).

Ne auaunter certeyn seyth men is he non, 1809 (Navauntour B; D ‡).

Nen-tendement considere ne tonge telle, 6358 (Ne † mendement B).

Ne of ladyes ek so fayr a companye, 6810 (Nof B).

Ne encens vp on here auter sette a fyre, 7829 (Nencens B, The ensens ‡ C, Ne encense D).

Ne (Ny B, Ne y D) neuere (G *inserts* man) saw (saugh BCp., ne say C) a more bounteuous

Of here estat (-e B, astate D) ne (non C) a (*om.* BCDG John's; nagladder Cp.) gladder (-ere John's) ne (*om.* D, nor B) of specche

A frendliour (frendelyere C) na (ne a DE, ne non C, ne G) more gracious, 883-5.

Examples of hiatus are:

Whi hastow (D *inserts* thus) mad (-e B) Troylus (Tr. made Cp., tr. mad C, tr. me made D) to (*om.* D) *me* (*om.* D) *vntriste* (-truste B, -trust CD), 3681 (no var. noted for Jn's.). But the reading in Cp. is perhaps to be preferred.

As for a frend ye may in *me assure*, 7987.

And after this (*om.* C) with sikynge *he abreyde* (vpbrayd D), 724.

[1] In D read *of swogh* for *A swogh*.

[2] none B, non CD. For *desir* C has *desyred* †; for *hym* BD John's have *his*; for *fownes* D has *fantasye*. Cp. reads: Nyn hiin desire noon other fewnes bredde.

I thenk ek how *he able* is (abele he is C, able he is D) to (for to BC) haue, 1821.

That sorwest thus and *he answered* (answerede C, answerde hym B, answerd him D) nay, 5302.

That yf that *he encrese* myghte or eche, 6473 (C † D †).

In furye as doth *he* (the D) *Ixion* in helle, 6575 (In furie as ᵗthow he leye in helleᵉ Cᵉ).

To which (-e D) no word (-e B) for sorwe (sorw B) (for sorwe no word D) she answerede (-swerde BC, -swerd D), 4369; cf. 5897.

Cf. also : mè alsò, 5978; gò we ùncle, 2809; hè || allàs, 3919; he ìnto, 3939 BC (he hym into A; D †); hè iwỳs, 4023 f; hè || aboùte, 4904; he òfte, 6980 f; he ònys, 7402; shè || allàs, 3945; shè alsò, 4419; that shè vntrèwe bè, 7660 f.

In 1097 : For-whi to euery louere (louer BDGJn's.) I *me excuse* ABDG Cp. Jn's. (C *cut out*), *e* in *me* may or may not be elided.

Note 1.—There are no instances of elided *the* (pron. 2 pers.) or *ye* (pron. 2 pers.). For instances of hiatus with these words, see, for *the*, 3139 (*thè alègge*), 4100 A (*the Ìmenèus*), 4299 (*thè agìlt*), 4454 (*thè || obligal*); for *ye*, 682 (*yè endùre*), 6598 (*ye aùdience*). Cf. also *the oùghte*, 3106 f; *the òflë*, 3127, and see note 2, below.

Note 2.—When the word that follows is a monosyllable, elision of *me* (etc.) is not to be expected, whichever of the two words has the ictus. See 528 (*mè || it*), 1011 (*mè || and*), 1102 (*mè || yf*), 3768 (*mè is*), 4265 (*mè is*), 5176 (*mè at*), 5411 (*mè || and*), 5671 (*mè in*), 6278 (*mè || and*), 6607 (*mè || o*); 2017 (*wè ourę*), 2030 (*dò wè às*); 90 (*hè || and*), 226 (*hè a*), 299 (*he èrst*), 326 (*hè || yn; cf.* 358, 377, 543, 720 ‡ A), 1165 (*hè yn*), 1210 (*hè || as*), 1363 (*hè || and*), 1663 (*hè and Ì; cf.* 5545 f), 1743 (*hè and*), 2158 (*hè of*), 2166 (*he ay*), 2281 (*hè I*), 3855 (*hè al hoòl*), 5185 (*he || àt*), 4633 (*hè || yf; cf.* 1441), 4634 (*hè it; cf.* 2636), 6448 (*he àl*), 6646 (*he òn*), 6999 (*he òf*), 7103 f (*he is*), 7802 (*he ỳn*), 8198 (*hè or shè*); 467 (*shè on*), 660 (*shè || and; cf.* 2274, 2341, 5879, 6552), 937 (*shè || of; cf.* 1028, 1268), 1691 (*she oùght*), 1808 (*she is*), 3829 (*she || òf*), 5072 (*shè is*), 5573 (*she òn*); 1811 (*ne àls*), 5926 AD (*yè ne Ì*); for *the* (2 pers.) see 585, 648, 766, 922, 2485, 2619, 5149, 7667; for *ye* see 1314, 2885, 3042, 4215, 4331, 4359, 7237, 7352, 7436.

Note 3.—In 98 A : Of ony frend to whom *shę dorst* make hirę mone, we should omit *make* (with BCDEGCp.).

II. *Ne I* is several times reduced to a single syllable (sometimes written *Ny*). Thus,—

Ne I nyl forbere yf that ye don amys, 3015 (Ny nyl B Cp. John's, Ne y wil D ‡).

Ne I welę not serteyn broke ȝourę defence, 4141 CE (Ne I wolę certeyn A, Ny wol certein B).[1] Cp. reads *Ny*, but otherwise appears to agree with A.

[1] B is unmetrical : supply [*not*].

*Ne* I nyl not rakle as for to greuen here, 4484 (*Ne* I wil C, Ny nyl BCp., Ne rakyl nel y be for to grevyn here D).

Ny say not nay but in conclusioun, 7366 B (*Ne* I sey C, Ne sey AD). (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

*Ne* I sey not this al only for thesę men, 8142 (Ny sey B Cp. John's). See also 883, just quoted.

III. Ten Brink (§ 269) remarks that the elision of close *-e* occurs "nur vor vocalischem Anlaut, nicht vor *h*;" but there seems to be no good reason why weak *h* should have interfered with the operation of this elision, and in one verse of the *Troilus* one is tempted to follow B in reading *maddë* for *me hadde*: Allas I *madde* ytrowed on ȝoure lore, 7099 B. The other MSS., however, except D, read differently: I *ne* haddë trowed AG; that I *ne* haddę trowid C; me haddë trowed D; no note in Mr. Austin's collation. Both *me hadde* and *ne hadde* make sense. If the former reading be adopted, the line means, "Would I that I had trusted myself to your counsel!" If the latter, "Alas! to think that I should not have trusted your counsel!" But *ne hadde* is ambiguous: it could mean, "Would that I had not trusted!" which is contrary to the obvious purport of the passage. Perhaps this explains the reading *me hadde* as a scribe's purblind attempt to correct what he did not understand. —In 2017, D has: Now letę *we her* slepe and forth our talis hold, but ABCG omit *we* (no note in Mr. Austin's collation) before *her* and insert it before *oure*, having no *forth*.—Similarly in 3939 A reads: For this or that *he hym* into beddë caste, where the correct reading is undoubtedly *he into bed hym caste* (so BCp.; he into bedde him cast C; For this or for that he into the bedde him cast D); and in 2413 D reads Thus to the more worthi part(e) he hym held, where ABC have no *hym*.

Note 1.—For hiatus before *h* see, *e.g.*, 4135 (*mè* ‖ *how*), 5207 (*mè* ‖ *hast*), 5222 (*mè* ‖ *his*), 5563 (*mè* ‖ *hath*), 6947 (*me hàst*), 7328 (*mè hath*); 3779 (*we hàn*), 6757 (*wè han*); 83 (*hè hath*; cf. 3667, 3917, 4402, 7464), 301 (*he hoŵ*), 318 (*hè hadde*; cf. 750, 6986), 491 (*he hàdde*; cf. 1718, 2435 f, 6086 f, 7808), 695 (*he hàth*; cf. 1794, 2870), 2051 (*hè hym*; cf. 3542), 3907 (*hè herę* poss. sg.), 4029 (*he hère* acc.), 4459 (*he hỳm*), 7455 (*hè herę* acc.; cf. 2157, 7143); 124 (*shè hym*), 1823 (*shè here* poss. sg.), 3424 (*she hỳm*; cf. 7567), 4835 (*shè* ‖ *haddę*), 7467 (*shè hadde*); 3851 (*ne hoŵ*). Cf. also *the hàddę* (4998), *yè han* (25, 28, 1446, 1577, etc.), *yè his* (5590), etc. Elision is of course out of the question in such cases as *me hatë* (1798), *me hèlpeth* (4688), *me hólly* (5106), *he hèld* (1288), *he hèrde* (2036), *he hènte* (2863 f), *he hèng* (3921), *the hèryę* (3793 f), *the hàrme* (4473), *ye hèlpe* (1405), *ye hère* inf. (3774 f, 7217 f), *ye hàte* (6508).

Note 2.—In 7910, the reading of C: *ffrom day to day til they be in were of ioye*, makes sense, but is certainly to be rejected in favour of *ben hire of* ABD.—In 1972 read *ye wys* A instead of *ȝe i wis* CD (B has *ȝe yis*). In 4979 C *ye ilkë* is to be corrected.

IV. A remarkable case of the elision of close *-e*, and one which seems to indicate that the phenomenon in question is not full ecthlipsis, is 2199 :

Into the gardyn go *we* ‖ *and* ye shal here. So ABCDG; no note as to Cp. John's.

V. Instances of the elision (*synclisis*) of close *-e* in other words than the monosyllables just discussed are very rare (cf. § 33).

As he that feltë *pyte on* euery syde, 5486 (pitie Cp., pitë hadde B, pitë felte D). Here the cæsura comes after *pyte*. Perhaps we should scan *felte pytè*, but that seems not so likely. C lacks the stanza. Cf. also 2662 ‡ C, 7462 ‡ D.

On euery nymphe and *dèïte infernàl*, 6205 (deyte BD, deth † C). Possibly *deïtë*, with synæresis.

Note.—The *-e* in *Dane* (=Daphne) seems to have been weak (cf. the rhyme *Diane* : *Dane*, K.T. 1205-6) : hence we have ordinary elision in *O Phebus thenk whan* Dane *herę schuen shette*, 3568 (diane her self shet D).[1] No doubt the *-e* in *Tarbe* is of the same kind : *Flexippe she* Tharbe *and Antigone*, 1901 (Illexippe & Schetarbe & Antigone C, Flexipe & she tarke and Anteigne D) ; *Antigone hirę sister* Tarbe also, 2648 (Tharbe B, Tarb C, Marbe D). So *Alète* (=Allecto) in *Megera* Alète *and ek Thesyphone*, 4686 (Megera aliete thow thesiphone D). On the other hand, we have final close *-e* slurred in *Flexipe* in the (doubtless erroneous) reading of D in 1901 (just quoted). As to these *-e*'s cf. ten Brink, § 94.

## § 130. Elision (or slurring) of final *o* and final *a*.

I. Final *o* in the preposition *to* is treated like final *-e* in the definite article. It is safer to regard the elision in this case, too, as not complete ecthlipsis. The elision is commonest with the infinitive.

*to* auaunce, 518 (tauaunce B, to a. D).

tassayen, 921 B (*to* assay[e]n A, to asayen C, for cesyng † D); tassaye, 7146 (tasaie B, to asaye C †, *to* assaie D).

*to* arede, 1217 (thede † B; C † D †).

to endite, 1342 (to en. CD), 1785 (tendite B; C ? D ?).

*to* entende, 1938 (tentendo B; D †).

*to* appere, 1994 (tapere B, to apere CD).

*to* auyse, 2300 (tauyse B, to ‡ vyse D).

tonfolde, 2787 B (to vnfolde AD, to onfolde C).

*to* abrygge, 3104 (tabregge B, to abregge CD); tabregge, 3137 f (*to* a. C, abregge D †); cf. also 5088, 5587.

*to* encrese, 4177 (tencrese BC, ten(en)crece E); cf. 5588 C.

*to* aproche, 4538 (taproche B, ta-proche C).

[1] The reading of D shows that Chaucer's caution in distinguishing *Diana* and *Daphne* in the passage cited from *The Knight's Tale* is evidence that he "knew his public."

*to* abyde, 4652 (tabide B, to ‡ abyde D); tabyde, 6396 (*to* a. ? D); cf. also 6716, 6859 C (?), 7133, 7518, 7546.

*to* acheue, 4741 (tacheue B, shal ‡ cheue D).[1]

*to* enqueren, 5672; cf. 4526 C.

*to* arede, 6232 (tarede B, torede C).

*to* amendẹn, 6501 (tamende B, to amendyn C, *to* amende D).

tenbrace, 6587 (*to* embrase C, *to* enbrace D). (9-syl. verse.)

tabreyde, 6883 (*to* a. CD, to breyde B).[2]

tacoye, 7145 (ta-coye C, to accoy D).[3]

*to* vnlouen, 8061 (*to* vnloue CD).

Cf. also 1781 D (teschewe), 1986 (?) B, 2682 C, 6796 B, 7816 C.

But instances of this slur also occur when the word that follows *to* is not an infinitive:

Vn *to* ony louere and his cause auayle, 20 (D †).

For *to* eueṛy wight som goodly auenture, 1366 (*to* eueṛychẹ C, for eueṛy D); And his comyng vnwyst is *to* eueṛy wyght, 3754 (teueṛy B, vnwist to eueṛy C).

And into a closet for *to* auyse herẹ bettre, 2300 (tauyse B, in a closet for to vyse D ‡).

Out wente anoon *to* Elyne and Deiphebus, 2726.

That passed was and thus he drof *to* an ende, 6838 (tanende B).

Examples of hiatus with *to* are:

to àrten hirẹ, 388 (for to àrtyn C; B †).[4]

tò èntrepàrten wò, 592 (intyrpartyn C).

to èche, 887 f.

to vse, 1096 f.

to èueṛy lòueṛe, 1097; to èueṛy wight, 1273.

tò argùe, 1779 f (BCD *om.* to).

tò agàste, 1986 f, is doubtful.

to vsen, 2123 (to vse D).

to èrre, 5211 f.

Note 1.—For examples with monosyllables, see 14 (*tò a*), 1057 (*thèr to* ‖ *ànd*), 2529 (*to àl* (*alle* BC) *honoùr*), 3328 (*to èse* inf.), 3360 (*tò it*), 3462 *tò vs*), 4814 (*tò it*), 4818 (*vntò it*; cf. 5187), 5779 (*vntò vs*).

In a few instances *to* suffers elision before *h*:

As for *to honoure* hirẹ goddes ful deuoute, 151 AB (CD *seem wrong*).

*To honouren* hem that hadde worthynesse, 4631.

[1] Read [*to*] *shende* in B.
[2] Read (*be*)*gan* in D.
[3] Supply [*herte*] in B, [*for*] in C.
[4] Dele one (*hirẹ*) in A.

*To honouren* yow as wel as folk of Troye, 6482 (To honourë C1).[1] Cf. also 4104 D.

I thenk ek how he ablë is for *to haue*, 1821 B Cp. (I thynke ek how abele he is for to haue C, I thenk ek how he able is to haue A, I thenk eke how able he is to have D, I thyng eke howe able he is to haue G, Ek wot I wel he worthy is to haue John's, Yit wot I weel he worthi is to haue Harl. 2392). Perhaps *able is.*

Cf. also,—*to* his (?), 2546 C; *to* hir, 7666 CD;[2] *to* hirę, 7671 C; vnt*o* her, 3762 D; int*o* harm, 7739 C.

But *to* is the usual form before *h*. Thus,—to han, cf. 13, 769, 2224, etc.; to haue, cf. 50, 709, etc.; to here (*dat.*), cf. 443, 2094, etc.; to herę (*poss. sg.*), cf. 5226, etc.; to hym, cf. 858, 998, etc.; to his, cf. 2179, 2219; vnto his, cf. 2627; etc. For cases before strong *h*, cf. *e. g.*, to holde (128 f, 161 f, etc.), to herkęnen (164), to helpen (836), into helle (872 f), into halle (2255 f), to hyde, (6393 f), to haten (7442), etc.

Note.—Sometimes a similar slur seems to take place in *to, into, vnto*, before a consonant; but most of the cases noticed are aberrations of the scribe, easily cured by a comparison of MSS. Thus,—*to secche*, 704 A; *to lede*, 6379 A; cf. also 1318 C, 1327 C, 2196 D, 2519 D, 2956 A, 3699 D, 3939 D, 4356 D, 6178 D, 6355 B, 6678 A, 7000 A, 7218 B, 7350 A, 7406 C, 7518 A, 7740 C, 8158 B.

Men wolden (wold BD) wondren (-dęryn C, wondur D) *to se* (B Cp. John's *om.* to; to sen C; to se D) hym come or gon, 1453.

To late herę go thus *vnto the* Grekes ost, 5261 AB (into C; C *om.* thus; thus to D). No note in Austin.

II. Elision of final *-o* is rare except in *to* :

He cursed Ioue *Appollo and* ek Cupide, 6570 (C *om.* ek).

Of Ioue *appollo of* mars of swych rascaylle, 8216.

Note.—The following cases disappear on comparison of MSS. : *go away*, 574 C (go wey AB, go hens D); *do away*, 1195 C (do wey ABD), cf. 1196 C; *do on*, 2039 C (don ABD), 3580 A (don B); *tho and*, 834 C (ABD *om.* and). In 1559, AD have *No ywys*, but we may read *No wys* (with B[3] C Cp. John's).[4] In 3027, C reads : *O inmortal god quod he that mayst not deyȝen;* ABD have no *O*); cf. 7424 D, where for *O yrolled* we should read *O rolled.*

III. The *Troilus* affords one good instance of elision (slurring) of final *-a* :

*Megera. Aleto.* and ek Thesyphone, 4686 (Megera alicto thow thesiphone D).

[1] In B supply the second [*as*]. [2] In C, however, perhaps *wrete* (p.p.) *to hirę.*
[3] In B supply [*he*].
[4] Cf. 2196, where A has *now ycome*, but *now come* (BC) is the correct reading. Cf. also 7070 D.

## § 131. Slurring of final *y*.

Final *-y* is sometimes united with the initial vowel of the following word (*synclisis*).

Obviously, in the case of adjectives accented on the penult, this slur can take place only when the word that follows either has no ictus or is accented on the second syllable. Thus we have: "How *bysy if* I loue ek most I be," 1884; and so in the case of most adjectives in *-y* there is no slur before an initial vowel: as,—*gredy*, 4600; *hasty*, 6229 (hastif B, hastyth † C); *redy*, 3372, 7327, 7733; *sondry*, 1112; *sory*, 2436, 8089; *sturdy*, 2465; *wery*, 5369, 6636 (*slur in* D); *vnwery*, 1924; *worthi*, 1243, 1424. See also *lady* (§ 5), *ruby* (p. 94), *euery* (§ 79), *ony* (§ 79), adjectives in *-ly* (§ 72), adverbs in *-ly* (§ 84).

The commonest instance of the slur is in the phrase *many a*, *many an*: as,—This knoweth *many a* wys and worthi wyght, 1265 (mony a D). So also 163, 165, 166, 540, 810, 934, 1148, 1236, 1726, 1900, 3145, 3147, 3657, 3953, 3989, 4072, 4301, 4555, 4701, 5289, 5755, 6147, 6505, 6527, 6585, 6696, 6968, 7301, 7409, 7424, 7557, 7640, 7945, 8124. Variants have not been registered, for in none of the cases cited is there any doubt as to the true reading, so far as this phrase is concerned. The *Troilus* knows only the slurred *many a*; no unslurred example occurs which a comparison of MSS. does not correct (thus, *e. g.*, 4695).

Other instances are:

And I with *body and* soule synke in (into CD) helle, 6216.

Charitable estatlyche *lusty and* fre, 7186 (D Cp. John's *om.* and; Scharite abele statlyche lyȝt lusti & fre C; G agrees with A, except for the spelling *estateliche*).

I shal therof as *fully excuse* me, 3652 (ful BC; *but* Cp. John's *seem to have* fully).

Note 1.—Here and there one or another MS. has a slurred *-y*, which comparison of MSS. causes to disappear. Thus,—*lâdy vnto*, 1164 A (§ 5); *hardy(e) as*, 7193 D; *saucry and*, 942 C; *worthy and*, 2163 C (cf. 1951 C, 4382 CD, 5160 B); *wery on*, 6636 D; *certaynly I*, 1531 A (cf. 3938 C); *gladly as*, 592 D; *hardily and* (?), 2097 C; *nedfully as*, 5668 D; *wisely as*, 7728 C. In 5427 A: *How sholde I a fyssh without water dure*, omit *I*.

Note 2.—In 4873 C: *ffor wich delyuervd* (*l.* delibered) *was by a parlement*, omit *a* (with ABD Cp. John's).

A similar slur of final *-ey* is found in 3287 A: *But yn swych cas men is nought* alwey yplesed; but the correct reading is *alwey plesed* (so BCp.; alwey plesid D; man is not † wel plesed C). In 2986, however, the preponderance of MS. authority is in favour of *ay i-lyke*:

To seruen (-yn CG, serve D) and ben (bene D) *ay* (*so* ABG; *om.* DE; C *has* ay ben *for* ben ay) *I-lyke* (ylike B, I-lik C, y-lyke D, I-lyke G) diligent (Cp. John's appear to agree with A).

An effect precisely similar to the slur of final *-y* takes place when a word in *-ye* (unaccented) suffers elision before a word the first syllable of which has no ictus. The instances of this phenomenon are in the *Troilus* confined to words in *-rye* like *contràrye*,[1] and to the word *remedye* (the forms of which may be seen in full at p. 86, cf. ten Brink, § 87, Anm.).

By sort and by *augùrye ek* trewëly, 4778 (trew[e]ly B, By sort and augury eke truly D).

In *consistòrie among* the Grekes soone, 4727.

By eche (*l.* his) *contràrie is* euery thing declared, 637 (-rye *is* BC).

Retorneth in his part *contràrie agayn*, 5665 (-rye *a*gayn B). But the form *contràire* also occurs : see § 51, p. 120.

Be *necessarie al* seme it not therby, 5682 (necessar*ye al*(le) D). But *necessaire* occurs : see § 51, p. 120.

And som(e) so ful of *furye is* and despit, 3879 (furie *is* BCD).

Anoy smert (-ę D) drede (dred[e] C) *fury and* ek (ekę D) sikęnesse (seknesse C), 5507 (furye *a*nd BD, furie *a*nd C).

For which the grete (gret[e] D) *furye of* his penaunce, 6091 (furie *of* C).

In *furye as* doth he Ixion in helle, 6575 (-rie *as* B, -r*y as* D; In furie as thow he leye in helle C).

And God *Mercùrye of* me now woful wreche, 6684 (-rie *of* B, -rye *on* C; D *om.* now).

Into *mysèrie yn* which I wol bywayle, 4934 (Into myn deth ‡ C).

And certeinly in *story it* is yfounde, 7197 B (stori as it is founde C, story as it is founde D, storye it is yfounde Cp., storye it is founde A).

Though that I *tarye a* yer som tyme I mot, 4037 (tar*ie a* BCD).

For that I *tarye is* al for wykked speche, 7973 (tar*ie is* CD).

When the word that follows has the ictus, there is of course no synclisis. See examples in § 30 under *còpye, fòlye, pàrtie*, and in § 31 under *augùrye, furye*. In 4915 *furye and*, BC have the slur, but AD have none. Of *merye, mery* (§ 46, p. 113) the *Troilus* affords no example before a vowel.

[1] In 6240 C, read *filthe it* for *folye* it.

## § 132. Weak *e* in two successive syllables (*syncope* or *apocope*).

Ten Brink's rule: "Enthalten zwei aufeinander folgende Silben je ein schwaches *e*, so verliert eines von diesen nothwendig seinen Silbenwerth, sei es durch Syncope oder Apocope durchaus, sei es annähernd, jedoch für das Bedürfniss der Betonung und des Verses vollkommen ausreichend durch Verschleifung" (§ 256), has been abundantly illustrated in the preceding chapter.

In the case of *-ede* in the preterite singular (§§ 99-105) the *Troilus* shows not a single exception to the rule, except perhaps in 7089: Here (Hire BC, Hir DG) *nèdèdè* (nedèd BDG, nedit C) no (non B John's, none CG Cp.) teris for to borwe (see 146, I, *b*). In 129 A, *dwèlled[è] yn* should be *wàs dwellyng yn*. In the case of *-eden* in the preterite plural (§ 109), there are several exceptions (cf. ten Brink, §§ 194, 256), *nàkkedèn* (apparently the correct reading in 4783, see § 109, I.), *strèmedèn* (§ 109, III.), *iòynedèn* (§ 109, III.), *assègedèn*, *bysègedèn* (§ 109, I.), *comèndedèn*, *comèuedèn* (§ 109, III.), *èntrechaùngedèn* (§ 109, IV.).

For the application of this rule in the inflection of nouns see the genitives *fadẹres*, *fadres* (§ 36), *heuẹnes* (§ 36, n. 1), *somẹres*, *widẹwes*, *wydwes* (§ 35, I.), the plurals *arwes* (§ 38, IV.), *candẹles*, *heuẹnes* (§ 38, V.), and *maydens* (§ 39, III.); and the numerals *seuẹne* (§ 67, *d*);[1] cf. *owẹne* (§ 53, V.), plural *othẹre*[2], *otheres* gen. sg. pl. (§ 79).

So in verb forms: as,—*flekẹred* (A.S. flicerian) *pret. sg.* (§ 101),—*fetered* (A.S. ge-feterian) *p.p.* (§ 121, III.), *hameled* (A.S. hamelian) *p.p.* (§ 121, III.), *opned* (A.S. openian) *p.p.* (§ 121, III.), cf. the adjective *fethẹred* (§ 121, X.).

The weak *-e-* (either not found or usually syncopated in A.S.) which, according to ten Brink (§ 61, III.), is inserted "zwischen *v* und Dauerlaut," and sometimes after *th*, is, of course, syncopated or slurred like the *e*'s just discussed: *sweuẹnes* pl. (§§ 38, V., 44), *euẹre*, *neuẹre* (§ 90), *brotheres* gen. (§ 36), *brethẹren* (§ 41), and *fethẹres* pl. (§ 38, V.). The morphological value of this *-e-*, however, is rendered dubious by the occurrence of such spellings as *fyngẹres* pl. (§ 38, V.: *fyngres* A), *monẹthes* (as well as *monthes*: § 38, I.) pl., taken in connection with the tendency of some Middle English scribes to use *ene* (*ele*, *ere*) indiscriminately for *ne* and *en* (or *n* ?), etc.: see *heuene*, with variants, § 14, p. 42, cf. p. 38, and the C spellings *chaumbere*, *lettere*, *letteris*,

[1] Cf. the ordinal *seuẹnthe*, *seuẹnthe* (§ 53, I.).

[2] Cf. ten Brink, § 272.

*coupelys*, etc., (§§ 29, 38, V.), *-bele* for *-ble* in Romance adjectives (§ 51, II.), *susterin*, *schildęryn* (§ 41), *angery* for *angry* (562), *sundery* for *sundry* (440, 742, 957, 5174). Cf. also the next paragraph.

In native verb-forms, too, an *-e-* is sometimes written where it has no etymological status : as,—*herkęnen* inf. (164, cf. 1180), *forthęren* inf. (8070, *ferthren* B), *herkęned* pret. sg. (§ 101), *herkęneth* 3 sg. (1116), *herkęneth* imv. pl. (§ 118, I.); but cf. *wondren* (A.S. wundrian) *inf.* (1453, 5309, 6857), *handle* (A.S. handlian) *inf.* (5434), *wondred* p.p. (§ 121, III.), *vnbrydled* (A.S. bridlian) *p.p.* (3271, vnbridęled B), *bytokneth* 3 sg. (7876), *wondreth* imv. pl. (6525).[1] A similarly intrusive *-e-* shows itself in some Romance and Latin verbs : as,—the infinitives *coueren* (2597), *discoueren* (675), *recoueren* (4248), *delyueren* (3958), and *deliberen* (4831), *coered* pret. (§ 105), the participles *considered*, *coered*, *recoered*, *delibered*, *delyuered*, (§ 121, VIII.); but cf. the infinitives *remembren* (4470) and *suffren* (971, 2996, 5865), the imv. pl. *suffreth* (5866), the pret. *remembred* (§ 105), the participles *assembled*, *medled* (§ 121, VIII.), and the adj. *sacred* (§ 121, X.), though in these instances, too, C usually interpolates the irrational *-ę-*.

## § 133. Apocope or syncope of weak *e* after an unaccented syllable which is capable of bearing an accent.

The metrical fact conveniently expressed by ten Brink (§ 257) in the rule: "Nach unbetonter, jedoch tonfähiger Silbe muss ein schwaches *e* verstummen," has been abundantly illustrated in the grammatical chapter.

For apocope see *hoùsbondę*, *sòm tymę*, *òft tymę*, *wèlcomę* (or *welcòmę ?*) (§ 2), *lòuerę*, *lyerę*, *màkerę*, *mòrter*, *rèderę* (§ 7), *frendship*, *lordship* (§ 7), *ànswerę* (§ 8), *sỳknessę* (§ 9), *fèlawę*, *wyndowę* (§ 15), *fòrtunę*, *pùrsuytę* (§ 21), *sèruisę* (§ 26), *mànerę*, *mànęr*, *preyerę* (§ 28), *gòter* (§ 28, note at end) *Èleynę* (2532), *Pàndarę* (§ 139); cf. also *àngwyssh*, *àngel*,[2] *còncord*, *cùrtyn*, *ràket*, *rèlyk*, *skàrmyssh*, *tràuers*, *ỳssuę* (§ 22).[3] This principle may, of course, also prevent the addition of an inorganic *-e* : see *-ynge*, *-yng* in substantives (§ 10, III.) and participles (§ 120, III.), and cf. *fòrward* (A.S. foreweard, § 11), and the spelling *àcessę* (§ 32).

For syncope see the plurals *sèruauntz* (§ 39, I.), *rèsonęs*, *Tròians* (§ 39, III.), *lòuers*, *màneręs*, *pòterys*, *preyers* (§ 39, IV.), the subjunctive

[1] C, however, shows *wondęryn*, *wondęre*, *onbrydęlid*, *handęlyn*, *betokęnyth*, *wondęrith*.

[2] Cf. ten Brink, § 221.

[3] *Refuyt* (§ 22) can appeal to O. Fr. *refuit*.

*làbouręd* (§ 113), and the participles *ànswęręd* (§ 121, III.), *enlùmyneḍ*, *pùrueyęd* (?) (§ 121, IX.).

Doubtful lines[1] are the following:

Ymagynyngę that *trauaylle* nor grame, 372 · ABG (-ing . . . travaiH & game † D, neyther trauayle nor † gaine C).

Ne remuable (renuable B, resonable D, remeveable G) *fortune* deface (to deface D), 6344 (*cut out* C).

Than wold (-e D) I of hise (his BD) *battaylles* endite, 8130 (*leaf cut out* C).

## § 134. Apocope of weak *-e* after a syllable having a secondary accent (ten Brink, § 258).

Apocope of weak *-e* after a syllable which has a secondary accent is on the whole not common. Examples are: *haselwodę* || *there*, 7537 (but, *haselwodë* || *thoughte*, 6868, see § 6), *prescięncę*, 5683 (§ 24). For preservation of the *-e*, see *secrenesse*, *selynesse*, *worthynesse* (§ 9), *sauegard*[*e*] (§ 21), *chàritàble*, *còuenàble*, *dìscordàble*, *èxcusàble*, *hònourable*, *rèmuable*, *rèsonable* (§ 51, II.) Cf. also, in the "definite" inflection, *wòmmanl*)*che*, *fòrknowę*)*nge*, *àmoroùse*, *dìspitoùse* (§ 59, *b*), and superlatives like *goòdlyèste* (§ 59, *a*),—but, of course, *the tèmpestoùs matère*, *his èxcellènt prowesse* (§ 60).

In several Romance words in which the *-e* is not apocopated in the interior of the verse it makes little difference whether the syllable that precedes is regarded as bearing the main or the secondary accent: *ìnfortùne*, *òrisònte* (§ 21), *gèntilèsse* (§ 25), *còueytìse* (§ 26), *crèatùre* (§ 27), *ìmpossible* (§§ 21, 51, II.), *ìnuysible* (§ 51, II.). For the treatment of final *-es* after the secondarily accented syllable, see §§ 37—39.

☞ Note.—Ten Brink's remark that weak *-e* "in Wortauslaut" "nach nebentoniger Silbe" "zählt im Vers wohl in der Mehrzahl der Fälle nicht als Silbe mit; wie es scheint sogar nach Muta cum Liquida, wo Verschleifung eintreten kann" (§ 258), does not hold true of the *Troilus* unless elided *-e* be included in the reckoning.

## § 135. Apocope of weak *-e* immediately after the syllable bearing the main accent.

I. Ten Brink (§ 260) holds that *-e* never counts as a syllable (except in rhyme) in certain words and forms which he enumerates (§ 260, (*a*—*η*). His list, however, requires modification.

(*a*) The accusative *herë* must be read as a dissyllable in 7948: Biseching *herë* (hirë B) syn that he was true, That she woldę come, etc.,

[1] Cp. John's throw no light on the scansion. In 372 Cp. has *grace* †; in 6344 Cp. John's agree with A letter for letter; in 8130 Mr. Austin notes no variation from A.

unless we accept *hire ę that* C (hir that D); the repetition of *that* is ungrammatical, however, and there seems to be no good reason for rejecting the reading of the best MSS. (Mr. Austin's collation makes no note.) In 973, Forthi some grace I hope yn *herë* fynde (hyrë C, hirë Cp., in her y D, in hyrę to B, in hir to G), the dissyllabic form has pretty good MS. authority; besides, the word is emphatic in sense besides having an ictus.—The singular possessive *hire, here,* is probably never dissyllabic in the *Troilus*, though one or two lines are doubtful (see § 74). The plural possessive, however, seems to be fairly entitled to two syllables in : Of *here* teris and the herte vnswelle, 5808 (hirë B, *om.* † D; no note in Austin; G, which is beneath contempt in this stanza, reads : Of hir teres and the herte gan vnswelle). As a verse of nine syllables the line would certainly be no credit to its author (cf. § 146).—In 423 : Mi spirit which that aught[e] *yourë* be (ȝourë C, ȝoures G Cp., youres John's Hl. 2392, ȝour[e]s B), *yourës* is doubtless right.—In 4173 : For *myne* wordes here and euery part (*so* ABC, my E; no note in Austin), we have our choice between *mynë* and an unpleasant nine-syllable verse. *Allę* before *myne* would be an easy insertion.

(β) *Somë* (pl.) is found once, if And *somë* wolde muche herę mete alone, is, as it seems to be, the correct reading of 907 (see the variants, § 78).—The *Troilus* gives no support to the hypothesis of a "dative *eche*" (see § 78).

(ε) Final *-e* never counts as a syllable, according to ten Brink, "in den Formen *were* und *made* nicht nur im Sg., sondern auch im Pl. bei apocopirtem *-n*." But the *Troilus* affords several examples of *werë* in the subjunctive singular (see 1027, 2715, 3379, 3416, 4359 : § 113), and several of *werë* in the indicative and subjunctive plural (see 140, 1671, 1997, 3075, 5894, 6637, 8123 : §§ 109, VII., 114). For dissyllabic *made* ten Brink would substitute always *maked* in the singular, *maden* in the plural. The substitution of *maden* for *made* depends upon the general principle that in the plural *-en* rather than *-e* shall stand before consonants,—a principle which, however probable, can hardly be regarded as well established; the substitution of *maked* for dissyllabic *made* in the *Troilus* would necessitate considerable tampering with good MSS. (see § 101).

(ζ) That *sone* may retain its *-e* as a syllable is certain (§ 6, p. 10); for *wone*, however, see § 2. The *Troilus* affords no certain example of *-e* pronounced in Romance words in *-le* in the interior of the verse (§§ 30, 126).

(*η*) In 5681 *beforë* or *beforen* seems necessary : Of thinges wyst (wiste BG Cp. Durh.) *byforn* (*bifor* B, *before* DG, *byfor* Cp., *biforn* John's, om. Durh.) certeynly (fulĦ certeinlye Durh.).[1] *Therë* appears to be necessary in : And *ther* (*there* CG) lat (lete D, lett G) vs speken (-e D) of oure wo, 5906 (no note in Austin). In 3915, however,—That he cam *there* (*ther* BG) and (or CD) that (that that Cp.) he was born,—the reading of Cp. *that that* is clearly right. In 6841 we should doubtless read *herę beleue* rather than *herë bleue* (see p. 204).

II. Other special instances of apocope deserve notice.

(1) The form *loue*, whatever its construction, shows a marked tendency to apocopate *-e*. Thus,—the noun (§ 8), the pres. ind. 1 sg. (§ 92, V.), the imv. sg. (§ 115, III.), the inf. (§ 119, X.).

(2) Ten Brink's remark (§ 261) that *-e* is " stets silbenbildend im Plural des attributiven Adjectivs, wenn dieses vor seinem Substantiv steht " (cf. his § 236) is contradicted by one line in the *Troilus* (1251, § 69). In this passage *good condicòns* occurs (notice the accent, and see § 54). Cf. also, *wyse men* 3166 (*man* CD), which perhaps may be regarded as a sort of compound (the singular is written *wysman* in 5749 AC, *wys man* in C, *wise man* in D). *Lordes oldę* occurs in 7824. Cf. also 4, below.

(3) When a monosyllabic adjective in the definite construction immediately precedes a substantive accented on the second syllable, the inflectional *-e* of the adjective is necessarily lost (see § 54). Thus,—*this heigh matère* (3358), *yowre heyghę scrutyce* (4130), *here heyghę compleynte* (5467), *thy wrong conceyte* (692), *my lowę confessiòun* (1613), *the pleyn felicitè* (8181). A plural *-e* must also disappear under similar circumstances : *of good condicions*, 1251 (§ 69).

(4) In a very few phrases the constant association of an adjective with a noun seems to have resulted in the formation of a sort of compound, freed from the necessity of the " definite " inflection of the first part (see § 54). Such are *good wil* (his good wil, 2294), *good word* in the sense of *commendation* (my, youre good word, 7444, 7985). Less certainly of this sort is *this good plit*, 3981. *Meanwhile* might be thought to belong here, but *this mènë while* occurs (2892) as well as *in this menę whìle* (see § 52). Cf. also 2, above.

(5) Monosyllabic adjectives standing in the predicate do not always take *-e* in the plural (§ 69). Monosyllabic participles standing in the predicate seldom take *-e* in the plural (§ 68).

(6) For the use of *allë*, *allę* as the plural of *al*, see § 80.

[1] The passage is not in CE.

(7) The comparative *more*, adj. (§ 64), subst. (§ 64), or adv. (§ 86), often loses *-e*.

(8) In the case of certain adverbs in *-e*, the possibility of a confusion with some adjectival construction makes suspicious what might otherwise be regarded as good examples of apocope; see *longe*, *low*, and cf. the Romance words *cler*, *pleyn* (§ 82).

Note.—*Lyk* (cf. A.S. gelice) may be due to adjective influence (§ 83): *ilyke* also occurs (§ 82). For *ryght*, see § 83; for *lest*, see § 83, n. 2; for *down*, *adown*, see § 88, n. 1; for *graf*, see § 88, n. 2: all these words have lost their *-e* for good and all.

(9) Verb forms in *-eye* lose *-e* more or less freely. Thus,—inf. *seye* (§ 119, XIII.), *preye* (§ 119, X.); pres. ind. 1 sg., *deye*, *seye*, *preye* (§ 92, V.); pres. ind. pl. *sey* (§ 96, X.); subj. pl. *sey* (§ 112, V.); pret. ind. pl. *say the*, 656, *sey ye*, 1362 (§ 109, X.). Note also that in the imv. sg. of A.S. *licyan* (A.S. *lige*) we have *ly* and *lye* (§ 115, V.), and in the imv. sg. of the Romance verb *preyen*, *prey* (§ 116, IV.).

(10) In *as helpe me Gòd* and other idiomatic invocatory or optative phrases containing a subjunctive, the arrangement of the accents, fixed by sense and usage, brings together the subjunctive *-e* and another unstressed syllable after the accented root-syllable of the verb. Since the accentuation of phrases of this kind cannot be interfered with, the *-e* of the subjunctive disappears in Chaucer's verse. Thus,—*help me God, as help* (*helpe*) *me God* (*Iuno, Pàllas, hère Pallàs*), *as wysly helpe me God, God help* (*helpe*) *me so, helpe me so the mone, And helpe me yol so at my most*[e] *nede, God yeue your herte care, Ioues yeue the* (*me*) *sorwe, I bidde god so yeue yow bothe sorwe, Yet preye I God so yeue yow right good day.* So *wo worth that day*, etc. The aggregate of instances of apocope that come under this head is not far from thirty (see § 111, III.).

(11) In a considerable number of instances the curtailed form of the Imperative Plural loses its *-e* entirely (§ 118, IV.). Some of the cases may be due to an extension of the singular form to the plural or to the petrifaction of the singular in an idiomatic use (cf. especially *lat* in the periphrasis *lat us* with the infinitive).

(12) The form *haue* (§ 124, VI.) has always apocope before a consonant. Thus,—pres. ind. 1 sg., pres. ind. pl. (also *han*), pres. subj. sg., pres. subj. pl., imv. sg. and pl., inf. (*hauen* occurs once in rhyme, 4305, *rh. grauen* ind. 3 pl.). In the pret. ind. and subj. sg., both *halde* and *hadde* occur (§§ 102, 113).

(13) In the imperative singular of *tellen*, *telle* or *tel* is the usual form (see many examples in § 115, I.): there is no certain instance of *tellë*.

(14) The praeterito-praesentia and the verb *wil* show considerable confusion, the singular form having sometimes intruded into the plural or even ousted the historically correct form. In the preterite, however, the *Troilus* shows no very striking proportion of forms with apocope of *-e*. See the paradigms, §§ 123, 124.

III. When the special cases discussed in I. and II. are provided for, a considerable number of examples of apocope are left. For obvious reasons the following words are not here considered: the nouns *wille, wil* (§ 2), *sight, sighte* (§ 9), *flyght, flyghte* (§ 14), *wey, weye* (§ 14), *tryst, tryste, trust* (§ 15); the nouns already treated in §§ 7, 11, 22; nouns in *-ynge, -yng* (§ 10); the adjectives already treated in §49; *cler, clere* (§ 52); the adverbs *oute, out, sith, thanne, than, whanne, whan* (§ 88), *aweye, awey* (§ 89), and adjectives and adverbs in *-lich, -liche, -lichę, -ly* (§§ 72, 84); participles in *ynge, -yng* (§ 120). There remain the following instances:[1]

(1) In nouns:[2] (*a*) Germanic,—*hopę* ‡ (§ 2), *wel-comę* * (§ 2), *wonę* * (§ 2), *erthę* ‡ (§ 3; cf. *erthëles*, § 49, n. 5), *heggę* ‡ (§ 6, only case of the word in the poem), *dorę* ‡ (§ 8), *kyndę* (§ 9), *nedę* (§ 9), *strelę* * (§ 9), *trouthę* (§ 9), *tid* * (§ 9), *whilę* (§ 9), *hewę* (§ 14), *teer* * (§ 14), *yatę* (§ 14), *bolę* ‡ (§ 15), *hedę* (head) (§ 15); (*b*) Romance,—*gracę* (?) (§ 21), *necę* (§ 21; no case in rhyme), *fayrę* * (§ 21), *sciencę* * (§ 24), cf. *prèsciencę* * (§ 24). (*c*) Proper names,—*Criseỳdę* (1774, 4969), *Dìomèdę* * (6455), *Eleỳnę* (2788), *Pandàrę* (§ 139) *Pòliphètę* * (2704).

Note 1.—In several of the nouns just cited the disappearance of *-e* may be regarded as merely a return to a form etymologically more correct. For *col, lossę*, etc., see § 18 and cf. p. 38, note 1. The form and etymology of *ferde* (?) are too uncertain to rely on *ferd* as a genuine case of apocope (see § 15, § 121, p. 305).

Note 2.—There is no instance of the apocope in *tyme* except in the phrases *sòmtymę* and *òftę tymę*, which, as compounds, come under the head of § 133. There is no certain instance of *hertę* (§ 3); the two lines 889 and 4529 admit of a satisfactory scansion with *hertë* (see p. 6). In one verse, 3197, *wysę* (§ 3) is required if the reading of AB be followed; CD have *-ë*; there is no note in Mr. Austin's collation.

Note 3.—The case of the noun *helpe* is curious. This word occurs several times in the *Troilus*, but never in rhyme and never with *-ë* in the interior of the verse (it is always *helpę, helpe*, or *helpe*, § 9). In the *Canterbury*

[1] For instances of apocope that depend on false readings easily corrected by a comparison of MSS., see, for example, *herte, lyne, myte, sonne, tonge* (§ 3), *eye* (§ 4), *spere* (§ 6), *hete* (§ 8), *leue, -nesse, reste, rote, sorwe, soule, trouthe, tyde* (§ 9), *game* (§ 12), *fere* (§ 14), *hede* (§ 15), *ioye*, (§ 21), *gyse* (§ 26), *cure* (§ 27), *stille* (§ 46), *lasse* (p. 136), *tweye* (p. 143), *sone, stille, vnnethe* (§ 82), *raughte, besoughte, tolde* (§ 99), *praide* (§ 104).

[2] An asterisk indicates that the word in question is found in the *Troilus* in rhyme with some word in *-e*, but that it is not found with *-ë* in the interior of the verse; a double-dagger indicates that the word occurs neither in rhyme nor with *-ë* in the interior of the verse; a word left unmarked is found both in rhyme with a word in *-e*, and with *-ë* in the interior of the verse.

*Tales* (see Child, § 16) it occurs but once in rhyme (260), and in that case its rhyme-word *whelpe* (A.S. *hwielp*, m.) has no right to final *-e*; in the interior of the verse *helpë* is never found (in 9202 T. read *helpe vnto*). So far as the forms of the rest of Chaucer's poetry have been recorded, the word occurs nowhere in rhyme and only once with *-ë* in the interior of the verse. This highly exceptional instance is *Leg. G. W.*, 1616: *Withouten deeth but I his helpë be*, where one is tempted to think of *helpe*, weak substantive, formed on the analogy of *hunte* (A. S. *hunta*).

(2) In adjectives a few examples of apocope besides those already discussed occur in the endings of adjectives. *At the laste‖ the*, 2009; *at the laste‖ this*, 5034; *the firste‖ that*, 7430; *loue the wers‖ though*, 1950; *hym is wors‖ that*, 5144; *now is wors‖ than*, 7056; *good goodly*, voc., 458 (p. 128); *swych thornes*, 2359; *swych festes*, 7792.

Note.—In 5144, 7056, cited above, *wors* may be regarded as adverbial in construction.

(3) In adverbs and prepositions (§§ 88-89): *aboute, aboue, bothe, theryn, withinne, withoute, ofte* (in *ofte-tyme*), *saue*.

(4) In verbs.—Besides the cases already mentioned, apocope of *-e* occasionally takes place in the inflection of verbs. See pres. ind. sg. (§ 92), pres. subj. sg. (§ 110), pret. ind. sg. (see § 99, under *broughte, felte, lefte, lyste, mette, thoughte, tolde*; § 102 under *seyde*, cf. subj. pl. *seyde*, § 113; § 103, under *highte*), imv. sg. (see *make*, § 115, III.; *byd, set*, § 115, V.), inf. (§ 119, X., a considerable number of examples; see especially *come*, which is fond of *-e*; *wete, dorre*, § 123), p.p. (§ 122, X., rare).

Note 1.—Ten Brink's remark (§ 261) that the -e is silent rather less often in the present subjunctive than in the present indicative does not hold good of the *Troilus*. In the ind. pret. sg. *thoughte* and *seyde* seem to show a tendency to apocope, but there are not instances enough to generalize from, even if any principle other than the abrasion of frequent use suggested itself.

Note 2.—*Gan* (3957) and *quod* (4856) are merely examples of the singular form used in the plural (see § 109, X.).

Note 3.—In the case of *wepte, wepte*, pret. sg. (§ 103), one cannot be certain that *wepte* is not an error for the strong form *wep*, which also occurs.

IV. Apocope of *-e* is apparently not influenced by the quality of the consonant that begins the following word, for there is hardly a consonant before which *-e* is not sometimes apocopated. There are perhaps more examples before *th* than before any other letter, but this may doubtless be explained by the fact that a number of monosyllables, either ill adapted in general to bear an ictus or apt to lose their stress altogether when not actually emphatic, begin with *th*. Such are,—the definite article *the*; the pronouns *thow, the, thin, this, that, tho*; the particles *that, there* (relative), *than, though, thurgh*: see, e. g.,[1] 267,

[1] Several of these places are cited merely for comparison: viz.,—376 (*than* perhaps has an ictus), 3162 (*than* has an ictus); 1950, 5144, 7056, in which the word in *th*, coming immediately after the cæsura, may have an ictus (cf. also III., 2, above).

305, 376, 413, 495, 532, 863, 1048, 1425, 1452, 1799, 1950, 2009, 2788, 3162, 3310, 4133, 4592, 4904, 4930, 5034, 5144, 5758, 6395, 6455, 6803, 7019, 7056, 7096, 7537, 7541, 7544, 7662, 7824, 8178. Apocope before *who*, *which*, *where*, *whan* (see, e. g.,[1] 1656, 1736, 2272, 3418, 4243, 4521) can hardly be ascribed to any other cause (though *who* is sometimes spelled *ho*, § 77). So always perhaps in cases like *trowę ye* (6231), *yeuę ye* (6598), *sendę yow* (1489), for apocope before *y* is not common enough to allow us to ascribe it to the "semi-vocalic" character of that sound.

Since a good many cases of apocope fall before the cæsura, the recognition of the doctrine of the "extra syllable" in that situation may reduce materially the number of silent -e's in the *Troilus* (see § 144 for the evidence). But it is important to remember that, even if it can be established that Chaucer occasionally allowed the extra syllable before the cæsura, we are not therefore justified in assuming that we have an instance of this license when its sole utility would be the preservation of a final -e. There are too many examples of undoubted apocope *elsewhere in the verse* to make such an inference anything but a begging of the question.

The upshot of all this appears to be that apocope, except in the case of a few words like *louę*, etc., must be regarded as a license for the nonce and cannot be brought under any rules but those of metrical exigency (see Child, § 92).

## § 136. Syncope or slurring of *-e* in final syllables when the noun accent falls on the syllable immediately preceding (cf. ten Brink, § 259).

Undoubted instances of full syncope are perhaps rare, but, since it is seldom possible to distinguish between full syncope and slurring (ten Brink's "Verschleifung") with certainty, it seems best to discuss the phenomena under a single head. The sign of syncopation (*-ę-*) has been used for convenience, but without any intention of implying full syncope in all cases.

(*a*) *-es*: in the plural, *louèrę̣s* (§ 39, IV.); in the possessive pronoun *herę̣s* (but also *herës*, *yourës*, § 74). For *-ę̣s*, *-s*, in adverbs, see § 91.

(*b*) *-est* in pres. ind. 2 sg.: *lyst* (jaces), *seist*, *seyst*, *spekest*, and

[1] In 2272, 3418, 4243, 4521, however, the word in *wh*, coming immediately after the cæsura, may have an ictus.

probably *rennęst*,[1] are genuine (§ 93, II.); *flest* and *sleest* are not to the point; in 8154 the question is between *steppęs* and *seëst* or *steppës* and *sēēst* (§ 93, II., note), but the former gives much the smoother verse.— *-est* in pret. 2 sg. is almost always fully sounded: in 4944 perhaps *woldęst* is to be read (see the variants, § 124, II., note); in *louedest*, 3562 (-ist CD, § 106), read *louędest* (rather "verschleifung" than full syncope).

Note.—Possible cases of syncopation in the superlative ending *-est* are: *myn alderleuest lord*, 3081 (-e C), and *myn alderleuest lady* ([myn] aldyr louęlȳest ‡ C), 6939: in both of which either *lèuest* or *leuęstë* satisfies the metre. Compare the extraordinarily common syncopation in this ending in the Elizabethan dramatists.

(*c*) *-eth*: for syncope in the ind. 3 sg., see § 94, II. (forms like *abit*, *halt*, *lyst*, in § 95); for syncope in the ind. 3 pl. in *-eth*, see § 97; for syncope in the imv. pl., see § 118, II. (cf., however, the curtailed imv. pl. in *-e*, *-ę*, § 118, III., IV.).

(*d*) For syncopated weak preterites in *-de*, *-te*, and unsyncopated weak preterites in *-edę*, *-ed*, see §§ 99—105. Pairs are *dwelte* (§ 114), and *dwelled* (§ 99), *kyste* and *cussed* (§ 99), *made* and *maked* (§ 101), *sighte* and *siked* (*sighed*) (§ 105). A. S. *andswarode* appears before consonants as *answèrędę*, *answèrde*, *answèrëd*, before vowels and *h* as *answèrędę*, *àswèrde*, *answèrędę*, *answèrëd* (§ 101), the last form before a syllable that has the ictus. In Romance verbs *aspyde* and *cride* (§ 104) are assured by rhyme; *cride*, *criędę* occur before vowels, and *cryędę* is found in the plural (see §§ 109, VIII., IX., 114); *paste* (§ 104) is assured by rhyme and *passed* by the subj. sing. *passed* before a vowel (§ 113); *preyde* is assured by rhyme, but we have *preyëde hem*, and this suggests the correction of *praydë here* (see § 104).—In verbs that make their preterite in *-ed* (*-edę*) exclusively, syncope (or slur) of this ending is rare: *louędę* || *that* occurs, however, in 1071 (§ 101), but *louëdę*, *louëd* is the usual form; cf. also *louędę ek* (4991), *louędę hym* (2928), *lokęd into* (2312; but *lokëd he*, 2833), *leuędę* || *yn* (5155, if the verse is 9-syl.), *lyuędę* || *vnto* (subj., 6242); *likęd wel* (2129) is perhaps not quite secure (§ 101).—For weak perfect participles, see in general, § 121. Worth notice are *afered* and *ferd* (§ 121, I)., *maked*, *maad* and *mad* (§ 121, III.); *abaysshed* (4075), *abayst* || *and* (2936) (§ 121, VII.); *purueÿëd alle* (5670), *purueÿëd* || *certaynly* (5714), *purueÿęd* || *but* (5668) (cf. § 121 IX.); *crięd* || *than* (5249). *I-louęd the* (594) occurs, and, before vowels or *h*

[1] In 6211, where John's reads *Troye ay rennëst* (smoother, perhaps, but lacking in authority).

are found—*belouęd* || (131), *mysbeleuęd* (3680), *sheweęd* (7812). In 6947 *werreẏęd* || *on* is doubtless the correct reading (see under Synizesis). Note *pleyëd tyraunt* (2325); *vnlẏd in* (§ 121, IV.). For *wont*, *woneęd* 'accustomed'; *wonëd* 'dwelt,' see § 121, III.

Note.—In the preterites *flekered*, *opened*, etc. (§ 101), we should read rather *-ęred*, *-ęned* than *-ereęd*, *-eneęd* (§ 132), and so in *coueręd*, etc.

(*e*) *-en*. Syncope is regular in the participles *born*, *shorn*, *sworn*, *torn* (§ 122, V.), *lorn* (§ 121, IV.), *slayn* (§ 122, XII.), *seyn* 'seen' (§ 122, XIII.); instances of *-ęn* before vowels, as *fallęn*, *growęn*, are of course suspicious, and may almost always be reduced to the elided form (*falle*, etc.) by comparison of MSS. (§ 122, V.). In the infinitive *seyn* (cf. the gerund *to seyne*) syncope is regular, but *seyen* also occurs (§ 119, XIII.); as to *hauen*, *han*, *haue*, *haueę*, see § 124, VI.; for infinitives in *-ęn* before consonants (no sure instance) and before vowels or *h*, see § 119, V. In the pres. pl. of *seyn*, *seyn* is common (§ 96, V.), but *seggen* also occurs (§ 96, I.), cf. *liggen* (§ 96, I., III.); for *han*, see § 124, VI.; for *arn*, see § 124, I.; for the plurals of *shal* and *wil*, see §§ 123, VII., 124, II.; for plurals in *-ęn* before vowels, see §§ 96, V., 109, V. For the treatment of adverbs in *-en*, see §§ 88, 89.

These final *-en*'s are all inflectional, but other final *-en*'s may suffer syncope (or be slurred) under similar conditions, *i. e.* when they are immediately preceded by the accented syllable, and when the following word begins with a vowel (or weak *h*). Final *-ene*, under the same conditions, loses *-e* by elision and, thus becoming indistinguishable from final *-en* in sound, is treated like *-en* with regard to slurring. It is accordingly difficult to ascertain what the full forms of the Modern English *heaven*, *welkin*, *own* (proprius), etc., were in Chaucer's language, — whether *-ën*, *-në*, *-ṇ*, or even *-ënë* (see pp. 38, 42, 126). A similar uncertainty prevails with respect to *-er*, *-re*, *-el*, *-le*, *-em*, *-me* (see below).

The question between full syncope and slurring in the case of *-en* is often very nice. When *-n* is written (as in *born*, *sworn*), there is of course no doubt; but when *-en* (*-ene*) is written, no certain conclusion can be arrived at. Of the different ways in which it is phonetically and metrically possible to read *-ęn* before a vowel (or weak *h*), that seems preferable which, allowing the *-e-* to disappear, makes the *-n* vocalic and retains it at the end of its word as a very light "extra syllable." This method seems almost certain for lines in which the cæsura falls directly after the *-ęn*, particularly if the cæsura coincides

with an insistent pause in the sense. Ten Brink (§ 272) takes the ground that *-ẹn* should be emended to elided *-e* when the latter is possible: "Ueberall da, wo tonloses *n* apocopirt werden kann, wird man besser solche Apocope and in Verbindung damit Elision als Verschleifung annehmen, so beim Part. Perf. Pass. mancher Verba, und durchweg beim Inf. und dem Plur. Präs. oder Prät. des verbi finiti." This seems too sweeping. There is nothing against the *-ẹn* slur *a priori*, and Chaucer certainly had no objection to it, for, if our texts be manipulated throughout in accordance with the rule suggested by ten Brink, there will still remain cases enough in which the *-ẹn* slur, or something precisely the same in its effect on the ear, must be left undisturbed (see *heuẹne, heuẹn, or heune*, § 14), to say nothing of kindred phenomena with regard to *ẹl, -le, -ẹr, -re, -me, -ẹm* (below). There seems to be no good reason, then, why Chaucer should always have preferred elided *-e* to slurred *-ẹn* in forms in which, as in most infinitives, for example, a choice was open to him. True, the evidence of the best MSS. is that he *usually* preferred the elided *-e*; but there is no antecedent probability of a rigid rule; indeed, it does not seem unlikely that now and then his ear may have been better satisfied by the fuller form, especially, one might conjecture, before the cæsura. Nothing short of an autograph MS., however, can ever settle such questions as this.

(*f*) *-er.*—Final *-er* may be slurred when the following word begins with a vowel (or weak *h*). Whether this slur amounts to full syncope of *-e-* must be left undecided. For convenience, the mark of syncope (*-ẹ-*) has been used, but with no intention of necessarily implying anything more than ten Brink's "Verschleifung" (§ 272). Examples of both slurred and unslurred *-er* have been given in the Grammatical Chapter: see *feuẹr* (p. 55), *brother* (p. 62), *tendẹr* (p. 121), *othẹr* (§ 79), *tymber, wonder* (§ 18, p. 61), *fader, moder, suster, doughter* (§ 18, pp. 62, 63), *coler, corner, daunger, dyner, leyser, qüarter, soper, squyer* (§ 34, I., p. 90), *other, eyther, neyther* (§ 79), *ferther* (§ 86). Here belong the comparative adjectives *leuẹre* (§ 64, p. 135), *hardere, hotter, leuere, wysere, lengere* (*ibid.*), and the comparative adverbs *leuẹre, rathẹre, ferther, lengere, rathere* (§ 86); for the proper ending of these words in Chaucer is *-er* not *-ere*. As to the comparative adjective and adverb *bettre* (*better*), one may hesitate whether to put it here or in the next paragraph, but the classification is of no consequence for our present purpose (for forms and slurs, see §§ 64, 86, observing

the variants under *bet*, pp. 135, 136). Cf. also the variants under *mànər*, the reduced form of *manère* (§ 28, p. 82). *Euere* and *neuere* may be placed here or in the next paragraph: for a full discussion of their behaviour before vowels and consonants, see § 90. *Angre* perhaps belongs here (§ 19: read *anger*?): it is not slurred in the *Troilus*. For *after*, *whider*, *yonder*, *other or*, *neither*, *whether*, see note at end of § 86. *Ouer* before consonants (except *h*) regularly counts as two syllables (cf. 2598, 2634, 7508; *ouer-thwart*, 3527); but before a vowel or *hys*, *hym*, a slur is common, as: *ouęr vs*, 4269; *ouęr his*, 2756 (on ‡ D); cf. 386, 3970, 4638, 5062, 5734; see also 2170, where cæsura intervenes: And radde it *ouęr* ‖ *and* gan the lettre folde AB. But we have also *ouër al* (=überall), 921 f (ouer alle B, oueral C; D †) (: in general: I shal) (cf. 5689 ‡ B), and, on the other hand: There is in loue som cloud is *ouęr that* sonne, 1866 (ouęrę B, -ęr ‡ the C, somę cloudis in ‡ that sunne D), and And that the mone hath lordship *ouęr the* nyghtes, 4598 (-ęrę B; D †) (cf. 243 ‡ f C). In 1259, 1488, we are hardly to read *vndęr* before consonant: instead, we may read *lyue* for *lyu th* in 1209 and *growe* for *growen* in 1488.

Note.—An interesting line is: *For al so syker as thow lyst here by me* (sekyr C), 2076. Here it would be impossible to tell whether one should read *sykër às* or *sykęr as*, if it were not for the rhymes *lyme* and *pryme*.

Under the circumstances defined at the beginning of the last paragraph, *-re*, *-ere*, are reduced to *-re* (by elision), *-ęre* (by elision and syncope), and are thus slurred with the following word, producing the same effect as the slurring of *-er* (last paragraph). As before, the precise nature of the slur (or syncope) cannot be determined. The uncertainty in scribes' spelling between *-re* and *-er* (*-ere*) renders impossible a rigid distinction between the words that belong here and those that belong in the preceding paragraph. Examples both of slurred and unslurred *-re* and *-ere* have been given in the Grammatical Chapter: see *answęre* (§ 8); *chaumbre*, *-ęr*, *iaspre*, *lettre*, *ordre*, *poudre* (§ 29); *louęre* (§ 7, p. 11); and, for unslurred forms before vowels, *chaumbre*, *ordre* (§ 29), *endere*, *fyndere*, [*harpour*,] *holdere*, *louere*, *lyere*, *makere* (§ 7). Compare the proper name *Cassandre* (=Cassandra): *Cassandre Eleyne or ony of the frape*, 3252 (Cassaundir C); *Cassandre hym gan right thus hys drem expounde*, 7819 (Cassandrę bygan B, Cassaundere hym gan ryȝt thus expounde C)[1]; *That called was cassandre ek* (*om.* BC) *al aboute*, 7814 (cassaundere C.).[2] Of slurred

[1] A is no doubt right. No note in Mr. Austin's collation.
[2] No note in Mr. Austin's collation.

verb forms the following will serve as instances; *why suffre ich it*, 6403 (suffęre C); *if that ye suffre hym*, 3705 (ȝif [that] ȝe suffęre hym C); *and ye suffre hym*, 3723 (suffęre C); *How may ye suffre allus it be repeled* (repeles † A), 4956 (sufferyn that it be C); *I shal wel suffre vnto the tenthe day*, 6260 (suffęre C); *suffure vs*, 5865 B; *And if that yow remembre I am Calkas*, 4735; *deliuęre it* subj. 3 sg., 7321; *ne iompre ek* imv. sg., 2122 (iumpęre C); *persęuęre yn* imv. sg., 951; *delyuęre herę* (eam) imv. sg. or inf., 8106 (deliuęr hirę B); *And gan to motre I not what trewely*, 1626 (motęre C); *recouęre a blysse* inf., 3023; *recouęre another* inf., 5068 (rekeuęre a nother C); *mokre and* inf., 4217 (mokęre C, moke A).

(*g*) Final *-el*, *-le* are treated in the same way as final *-er*, *-re* (see *f*, above). Thus,—*yuęl apayed*, 649 AB (C †); *yuęle* (adv.) *as*, 6601 A (-ęl B); cf. *yuel* sbst. (§ 18, p. 62), where the cases of slurs before consonants are, as indicated, easily corrected by comparison of MSS. For *lytęl*, *muchęl*, see § 48. For words in *-le*, see *nelle* (§ 3) *temple* (§ 14), *ensample*, *moeble peple*, *title*, *vncle* (§ 21), *egle*, *table* (§ 21). Romance adjectives in *-le* (§ 51, n. 1, p. 121); *bridle* (imv. sg.) *alwey*, 4477 (-dęle C, -dęl D); *iangle* (ind. 3 pl.) *of*, 1885 (-ęle C, ianglyn of D); *rakle* (inf.) *as*, 4484 (-ęle C; D †). Cf. *deuël haue* (p. 54), *epistol hem* (p. 55).

Note.—Apparent cases of slur or apocope like *-ęr*, *-rę*, *-ęrę*, before consonants (not *h*) are almost always easily corrected by comparison of MSS. For examples, see the variants under *lettre* (§ 29), *bet* (§ 64, cf. 481 D), *yonder* (§ 86, note at end). Cf. And I ther (*om.* C) *after* gan rome (roman B) to and fro, 1601; Nentendement *considre* no tonge telle, 6358 (see readings of ten MSS. in § 144). In the latter case, at least, we must allow the "syllable before the cæsura." For apparent slurs of *-el* before consonants, to be corrected by comparison of MSS., see variants under *yuel* (§ 18).

(*h*) *-ęm* (or *-me*). See *botme it*, § 14, p. 39.

§ 137. The treatment of interior weak *-e-* ("schwaches e zwischen dem Hauptton und dem Nebenton," ten Brink, § 262) varies, sometimes in the same word. Thus,—

(*a*) In compounds, whether Germanic or Romance: *lodësterre* (§ 2), *wodëbynde* (§ 3), *feldëfare* (§ 5), *lechëcraft* (§ 6), *stoundëmele* (§ 9), *mylnëstones* (§ 12), *lettëgame* (§ 15), *sauëgarde* (§ 21), but *forward* (§ 11), *stedefast* (§ 49, n. 3); (*b*) in nouns in *-nesse* (§ 9): *kyndënesse*, *rudënesse*, but *fieblenesse* (read *feblesse*, see § 25, I.); (*c*) in adjectives and adverbs in *-les* (§§ 49, n. 5, 85): *botëles*, *dredëles*, *drynkëles*, *endëles*,

*helēles, hertēles, knottēles, makēles, nedēles, restēles, rotēles, routhēles, spechēles, sterēles, causēles, doutēles, gracēles, giltēles* and *giltles* (cf. *lyghtles, vertules*); (*d*) in adjectives and adverbs in *-ly, -lich, -liche* (§§ 72, 84): *byhouēly, hastely, hertely* and *hertely, mekely, namely, softely* and *softly, sternelyche, trewely* and *trewely* (*trewly*), *vnkyndely, dignēliche, fermely, formely, largely, nicely, richely, secundelich, straungely*, but *erthely, nedely, nedly* (cf. *helply, lowely, lowly, febely*)[1]; (*e*) adjectives in *-ful*: *blysful* (p. 147), *dredful* (pp. 119, 130),[2] *forfulleste* (p. 132), *sorweful, sorwful* (pp. 119, 130, 147), but once, perhaps, *sorwēful* (5393); (*f*) nouns and "gerunds" in *-ynge, -yng* (§ 10): *festenynge, rekenynge, cheterynge, slomerynge, titeryng, wonderynge*, but *tokenynge, whysprynge* (p. 31); (*g*) Romance nouns in *-ment* (§ 34): *accusëment, auisëment, elëment* (cf. the plural, p. 104), *entendëment, iuggëment, parlëment, sentëment*; (*h*) Romance nouns in *-aunce* (§ 23), *-aunt* (§ 34, IV.), *-ence* (§ 24): *delyueraunce, desseueraunce, disauenaunce, ordenaunce, perseueraunce, sustenaunce, difference, reuerence*, but *remenaunt* (cf. *remembraunce*) (cf. *mountenau[n]s*, 2792 C ‡; *rememb[e]raunce*, 7807 ‡ C); (*i*) Romance nouns in *-ie* (§ 30): *baudery[e], frenēsye, poēsye, poētrie, prophesie* (cf. the plural, p. 103), *remēdye* and *remedye, trecherye*, but *nouellerye*; (*k*) miscellaneous English words: *euērich, euēry(?), euery, euerychon* (§ 79), *heuenyssh* (§ 49, n. 3), cf. *scryuenyssh* (§ 84, n. at end), *nathēlès* (§ 86), *felawship* (§ 7); (*l*) miscellaneous Romance and Latin words: *collateral* (p. 149), *funeral, general* (p. 122) but *generally* (§ 84, II.), *cheual[e]rous* (p. 122), *frenētyk* (p. 148), *appetit* (§ 34, VII.), *conquerour* (§ 34, II.), *sorceresse* (§ 25, II.; cf. *deuyneresse*), *dūētè, nicētè*, but *surete, scurte* (§ 33), *souereyne* (p. 122) and *souereyn* (pp. 131, 134) (cf. *sōuēreynētè*, § 126). On the forms *April, Aperil, Aprille*, see § 32, n. 3, p. 88.

Note 1.—Interior *-e-* has given place to *-in-* in *nyghtyngale* (§ 3), A.S. *nihtegale*.

Note 2.—*Lovely, sunnelich, heuenliche* (§ 72) are false readings.

Note.—Of interior *e*'s due merely to the scribe (and of course not pronounced) many may be found among the variants registered in the Grammatical Chapter. Such are *frendeschipe* (§ 7), *gladdenesse, goodenesse, sikenesse, wittenesse* (§ 9).

## § 138. Syncope of other vowels than *-e-* and of consonants is rare (cf. ten Brink, § 263).

(1) The nicety of the question between *bileue* and *bleue* 'manere' may be seen in the following lines. In all of them *bleue* may be read without doing violence to the measure, but in 6019 alone is *bleue*

[1] *Hardely* is for *hardily*.

[2] Cf. *dredfully, nedfully* (§ 84).

compulsory, in 6841 *here bileue* is certainly more probable than *herë bleue* (see p. 204), and in 1820 *nomorę . . . bileue* is at least quite as satisfactory as *namorë . . . bleue.*

And whanne (when B) hem leste nomore || lat hem *byleue*, 1820 A (bileue B; CD have an entirely different line; Austin notes *leue* from E, but registers no variants from Cp. John's).

And euery wight han (haue CD) liberte (liberteis C) to *bleue*, 6019 (beleue CD; no note in Austin).

Intendestow that we shul here (her D) *bleue*, 6841 (beleue CD Harl. 2392; no note as to Cp. John's).

Syn (sythe D) that (*om.* D) we (ȝe C) seyden (-e CD) that (*om.* C) we wold (wolde CD John's) *bleue*, 6854 (beleue CD Harl. 2392).

Or al the nyght they most (moste Cp., mosten John's, muste D, muste hem *for* they most C) *b*[*l*]*euen* there, 7543 (bleuen B, bleue C, beleue D Harl. 2392).

Another doubtful case is 4207, in which we must choose between *bilynne* (A.S. blinnan) and hiatus:

Of swiche (swhich B, whiche C, wych D) sikes koude he (*om.* B) nought *blynne* (*so* ACD, bilynne B; no note in Austin).

(2) Of the A.S. *bi lífe* the usual form in the *Troilus* is *blyue*, which occurs frequently (§ 88); but in

Thow shalt gon ouer (to) nyght and that *blyue*, 2598 (belyue C, bylyve E, as blyue D Ill. 2392; Cp. John's appear to agree with A),

*belyue* (*bylyue*) is doubtless correct.

(3) The noun *errand* (A.S. ærende) occurs but once in the *Troilus*, in v. 1157, where the MSS. vary as to its form: *erand was* A, *herand* B, *ernde* D (Cp. John's appear to agree with A; the leaf is cut out of C); cf. § 7.

(4) The treatment of *rauysshen* by the *Troilus* MSS. is interesting. In 5299, 5305, 7258, we have our choice between *rȧuysshen* (with syncope or slur) and *rȧuysshe* (with elision).

To (Go BC) *rauysshe* (rauyshe B, rauysch C, rauisshe D) here ne (*om.* C) kanstow (canst thou CD) not for shame, 5192 (stanza om. in Cp.; no variation noted from John's).

To *rauysshen* (rauasche C, rauissh D, rauyssche John's) hire but yf hereself it (*om.* C) wolde, 5299.

To *rauysshen* (rauasche C, rauissh D) here syn (sithe that D) thow hast not ben there, 5305 (no note in Austin).

That *rauysshen* (rauisshe D, he rauassch shal C) he shal yow with his speche, 6136 (no note in Austin).

From hen[ne]s (hennes B, henys C) forth the *rauesshynge* of a (to rauysshen any B Cp. John's, to rauych ony C, to rauissh any D) queene, 7258.

Cf. the verbal noun *ràueshỳng* (p. 29), *ràuysshỳng* (p. 30).

(5) Other more or less certain instances of syncope (or slur) of vowels are seen in :

And *finally* (fynali B, finially C, fynally G, final D) cause of wo that ye (the C, thow D) endure, 682 (no note in Austin).

Ne scryuenyssh (stryuenyssh B, coryously C, scryvenlich D, skryuenyscher G) or (ne C) *craftily* (craftyliche C, craftly D Cp., craftili G) thow it (*om.* CE) wryte, 2111.

Vp to (Vnto G) the (*om.* B) *holwghnesse* (holughnesse B, halownesse G) of the seuenthe (seueneth G) spere, 8172 (cut out of C; stanza not in D; no note in Austin).

Lord trowe (trow B) ye a *coueytous* (covetours D) or (*om.* CD) a (*om.* D) wrecche, 4215 (stanza not in G; no note in Austin).

Ye bothe for the *seson* || and for the feste, 168 (BC *om. the second* for; D *reads* and eke for; no note in Austin). (Cf. 7275 C).

And yn here *bosom* || the lettre doun he thraste, 2240 (And in her bosom doun the lettre cast D; no note in Austin).

O olde *vnholsom* || and mysbyleued (myslyued B, mysbeleuyd C, mysleuyd D) man, 4992 (no note in Austin).

Note.—In *Maugre Polydamas or Monesteo*, 4713, we should doubtless read *Mònesteò* (trisyllable) rather than *Polydamas* : the movement of 4715, which rhymes with 4713, seems to be conclusive : *Polyte or eke the Troian daun Rupheo* (cf. also 4716). For *Pàndarus, Pandaràs*, when those forms occur, we should doubtless read *Pàndare, Pandàre*, with elision or apocope of *-e* (see § 139).

(6) Syncope *th* of is certain in *wher* = *whether* : *wher*, 2348 (whe[r] A, wher(e) C), 2736 (wher(e) C), 2908 (wher(e) C), 3888 (wher(e) B, whether ‡ C, wher D †), 5493 A (ther † B, wheider D †; stanza not in C), 5824 (whether (?) C ‡, wheither? D ‡), 6356 (wher(e) B); *wher(e)*, 270 (C †, whethir ‡ D);[1] *whether* (monosyl.), 2551 B (wher C, whether? AD); cf. 7663 ‡ D. In 7098 A *wher* should be *whether* (emended by Furnivall). In 2348, 2736, 5824, 6356, a vowel or weak *h* (*he, hym*) follows, so that *whether* would be possible (§ 136, *f*), but 270, 2908, 3888, 5493, in all which consonants follow, are decisive. So far as the *Troilus* is concerned, the syncopated form

[1] The scribe of C mistook *where* for the adverb of place.

*wher* seems to be confined to the unstressed part of the foot, but one cannot be certain of this, since it usually begins the verse (270, 2736, 2908, 3888, 5493, 5824, 6356).—For *other*, *or*, see note at the end of § 86.—Other words in *-ther* occasionally syncopate or slur *-e-* when the following word begins with a vowel or weak *h*, but there is no evidence that they lose *th* : see § 136, *f*. In 5309 C read *whedyr thou art gon* for *whedyr thou art thus gon;* in 372, the reading of C, *neyther*, which, if correct might suggest syncope of *th*, is pretty certain to be wrong.

(7) For the few instances in which *euere* or *neuere* before a consonant (not *h*) counts for but a single syllable, see § 90. We have no certain means of knowing whether there was syncope of *-v-* in these cases; if so, we should expect to find readings like *ere*, *nere* or *er*, *ner* (cf. *where*, *wher*, for clipped *whether*). A trisyllabic foot, however, seems more likely than ten Brink's *eur*, *neur*, in spite of *paraunter* for *paraunenture* and *mysaunter* for *mysauenture* (see § 27).

(8) The exclamatory *benedicite* occurs three times in the *Troilus*, each time as a trisyllable : 780 f (: be *inf.*), 3599 f (: he), 3702. In 780 the spelling is *bèndistee* in B, *bèndistè* in Cp. John's, *benedi'ste* in C. This seems to settle the pronunciation of the trisyllabic clipped form as *bèndistee* rather than *bencite* (Child, § 96; Skeat, *Prioresses Tale*, etc., p. 141; ten Brink, § 263) or *bendcite* (ten Brink, *ibid.*). The dissyllabic *benste* (*Towneley Myst.*, pp. 85, 99, quoted by Mätzner, *Poesie*, p. 109) might come through *bendistee* as well as through *bencite*. (Cf. also Kölbing on *Ipomadon A* 4480 (p. 421), A. Kaufmann, *Trentalle Sancti Gregorii*, p. 55, *Erlanger Beitr.*, No. 3).

(9) In one instance, *comprehende*, inf., is perhaps shortened to *comprende* : As muche ioye (ioy D) as herte (hert D) may (myght D) *comprende*, 4529 (comprehende BCG, comprehend D, comprendo Cp. John's).

(10) *Dèsespeìr*, *despeỳr* (§ 34, VII.), *desèsperaùnce* (1615 f), *despeỳred* p.p. (36 f, 42, 779), occur in the *Troilus*. There is naturally some confusion in spelling : thus A reads *desespeyred* in 36, 42, and *desespered* in 779, though the metre shows that the shorter forms are right; and C reads *desperaunce* in 1615, where the metre requires *desesperaunce*, A *desper* in 1091, where the metre requires *desespeir*.

## § 139. Apocope of consonants (cf. ten Brink, § 264).

I. Apocope of *-n* in verb-forms has already been referred to in § 136, *e*. See the material in the Grammatical Chapter under Present

Indicative Plural (§ 96), Present Subjunctive Plural (§ 112), Preterite Indicative Plural (§ 109), Preterite Subjunctive Plural (§ 114), Infinitive (§ 119), Perfect Participle (§ 122).

II. On the so-called apocope of *-eth* in the Imperative Plural, see § 118.

III. Many proper names have lost a final *-s*, sometimes with further change of form (cf. ten Brink, § 264). The following list is thrown together for convenience, with no attempt at classification.[1]

Achìlle, 8169 f (-ȟ D) (: wille *n.*); Achìlle thorugh, 7922 (-es BCD). But,—Achìlles, 3216; Àchillès, 1501 f (: douteles).

Adoòn, 3563 (Adon BCD). [Adonis.]

Amète, 664 f (: bete *inf.* A.S. bétan).

Arge, 7168 f (: large); Arge, 7297. [Argos.] But,—Argus [the guardian of Io], *as Argus eyed*, 6121.

Dēiphèbe, 8015, 8017 (Deyphèbe C). But,—Dēiphèbus (before vowels, *h*, and consonants), 2487, 2493, 2507, 2510, 2528, 2571, 2581 (Delphebùs ‡ D), 2634, 2686, 2778, 2787, 3068; Dēiphebùs, Deyphebùs (before vowels, *h*, and consonants, and in rhyme) 2483, 2565 f, 2627, 2643, 2654, 2696 f, 2726 f, 2760, 3046 f (D ?), 3063.

Diomède, Dÿomède, 6378 f (: blede *inf.*), cf. 6546 f, 7387 f, 7401 f, etc.; *-e*, 6409, 6469, etc.; *-e* he, 8120; *-e* here (*gen. sg.*), 7880; *-e* haue (*ind.* 2 *pl.*), 8040 (Diamede C); Diomède ‖ that, 6455 (Dy- B).

Dìte, 146 f (Dyte CD) (: write *pres. ind.* 3 *pl.*). [Dictys.]

Horàste, 3639 f (: his laste); *-e*, 3648 (-ast D, -este C). [Orestes, cf. § 125.]

Iùuenàl, 4859 (-ȟ D).

Lukàn and, 8155 (-can BD).

Mercùrye (*trisyllable*), 3571 (Mercure B, -ie C, -y D), 8190 A (-ie B); Mercùrye ‖ of, 6684 (*-ie* B, Mercùrye ‡ *trisyl.* D).

Mÿda, 4231. [Midas.]

Omèr ‖, 8155; Òmer or [2], 146 (Omere C, Homere D).

Ouÿde, 8155 (Oulde D).

Pandàre, 610 f (: care *n.*), 3445 f, 3947 f, etc.; Pandàrë (before consonants), 2292 (-dàris C), 2360 (-dàrus C), 2500 (-dàrus C; D †), etc.; Pandàrë (before vowels), 1063; Pandàrë ‖ herkęne,

[1] A consonant (not *h*) follows unless the contrary is noted. The list gives the forms of ABCD.

[2] A *of* †.

658 (-dàris C); Pandàre, 4397 (-dạrùs C, -d[à]re D), 5244 (-dàr answerd[e] D), cf. 829, 1002, 1152, 2136, etc., etc.; Pandàrẹ, 3471 (-dàrus C, -dàrë D), 5468 (-dàrë BD); Pàndare, 736 (-dạrys C †), 1038, cf. 1030, 2577, 2761, etc.; Pàndare || here (*adv.*), 868 (-dạrys C); Pàndare || herde, 876 (-dạrys C); Pàndarẹ, 582, (Pandàrë ‡ D; C †), 2646 (-dạrus C), 2957 (-dạrus. C), cf. 5015, 5303, 6644; Pàndarè || I, 1044; Pàndarè || and, 5747 (Pàndarùs C, Pàndare in || BCp. John's). But,—Pàndarùs, 618 f (-is C), 1178 f, 1205 f, 1514 f (-is C), etc.; Pàndarùs (before consonants), 1142 (-darè D), 1170 (-dàris C, -dàrë D), cf. 761, 2024, 2227, 2311, etc.; Pàndarùs (before vowels), 1191 (-è C), 2022 (-è D), etc.; Pàndarùs (before *h*), cf. 6917, 6920, etc.; Pàndạrus (before consonants), 1575 (-dạris C, -darẹ D), cf. 2178, 8072; Pándạrus hym, 2337 (-dare D), cf. 2059 (*he*), 3050 (*it*)[1]; Pàndạrùs || alweỳ, 2437 (-dàre B, -dạrùs || was C, -dàrẹ || was D); Pandạrùs || and, 932 (-dạrỳs C, -dàre D); Pandạrùs || that, 3604 (Pàndarùs BC, Pàndarè D).

Pòlyphète, Pòliphète, 2552 f (Polyfete D) ( : swete 1 *sg.* : plete *inf.*), 2701 f (: spete *inf.*); Pòliphètẹ || they, 2704 (-phètë || gun[ne] they ‡ D).

Pòlymỳte, 7301 (-myȝt C, Polymites D).[2] But,—Polỳmytès, 7851 f (Poli- B, Polymites C, Polemites D) (: Thebès : Ethỳoclès).

Polỳte, 4715 (Polìte B, Pòlyte D).

Prỳam may, 5583 (Prìam BC; D †); Pryàm (before consonants), 4804 (Priàm B, Priàm(us) D; C †)[3]; Pryàm (before vowels), 3633 (Priàm B, Priàme C), cf. 5868, 6647, 7589;[3] Pryàm his, 4801 (Priàm BC, Priàm(us) ‡ herẹ (*gen. pl.*) D).[4] But,—Prỳamùs was, 4719 (Prìamùs BD); Prìamùs || and, 6055.

Quyrỳne, 4687 f (Qwyrine D) (: pyne *n.* : fyne *inf.*).

Santìppe, 4714 (Sartipe † D). [Xanthippus.]

Satùrne, 3558 f (: disturne *inf.* : turne *inf.*); *-e*, 3467 (D †) (first word in verse).

Stace, 8155 f (: pace *inf.* A, space BD).

Virgile, 8155 (first word in verse).

A remarkable line is :

Virgile Ouyde (Ouide D) Omer Lukan (-can BD) and (or D) Stace, 8155 (cut out of C; no note in Austin).

[1] Or, *Pàndarùs it is.*

[2] Polymyte (Polymyȝt B, Polymites D) and many a (*om.* C) man to (al to C) skathe (no note in Austin).

[3] First word in the verse.

[4] Read *sane-gard[e]* in A.

Note.—Besides *Iuppiter* and *Ioue*, the form *Ioues* (nom., voc., acc.) occurs. *Iuppitèr*, 1318 (Iupiter C, Iubiter D), 5331 (Iubiter CD), cf. 6315. *Ioue*, 4270 f (: houe *inf.*); *Iouë* (before consonants), 3564 CD, 3857 ‡ A, 4997 (Iouo B), 5778 ‡ CD, cf. 5306; *Ioue* (before a vowel or *h*), 3167 (Iovis D †), 3857 BCD, cf. 3564 AB, 5741, 5811, 5854, 6570. *Ioués* (before consonants), 2692 (-is CD), 2857 (-is D), 7320 (-e C; D †), 7888 (Iouus[1] C, Ioue D), cf. 7809; *Ioués hath*, 6365 (-ë D).

## § 140. Synæresis (cf. ten Brink, § 266).

In proper names: *Symoÿs* (6210), *Troÿlus*[1] (568, 596, 834, 871, 1768, 2027, 2751, 3330, 3681 (?), 6035, 7404, 7483; but *Troÿlùs* is the usual form). Besides *Criseÿdë* (passim), *Criseÿdę* (1774, 4969), and *Crìseydà* (169 f), there occur *Crisèÿdà* (2509, 2729) and *Crysèÿdè* (1734). *Dei-* in *Deiphebus* (*Delphebùs*, *Deiphèbus*, *Deiphèbe*) always makes one syllable in the *Troilus* (see references in § 139, s.v.). *Phèton*, 7027, was to be expected. There is no knowing how Chaucer pronounced the name of *Pyrous*, one of the sun's team: the word occurs in 4545: That *Piros* (Pirors B, Pirus C †, Pirous D, Pyrous G; no note in Austin) and tho swyfte stedes thre.—*Obeyssaunce* (with synæresis of *-ey-*) is given by ten Brink as the only form of this word in Chaucer; but *obèÿsaùnce* occurs in 3320.—In *hèÿnoùs* (2702) there is no synæresis.

## § 141. Diæresis (cf. ten Brink, § 267).

In Greek proper names in *-ēus*: *Tȳdeùs*, *Tydeùs*, 6451, 7166 f (Thèdeoùs C), 7295 (Thèdeùs C), 7843 f (thìdiùs C), 7856 (thèdeùs C), 7864, 8109 f; *Tȳreùs*, 1154 (Tryeux † B, Thèreùs D); *Cappàneùs* (7867) (Campàneùs D). *Ōenonè*, 654 f (oonone B, senome † C[c], Tynome † D) is curious.

Note 1.—*She told ek how Tydeus* (Tideus BD, Cithideus † C) *er she stente*, 7848, and *Tydeus* (Tideus BD, Thedeus C) *sone that doun descendeth is*, 7877, suggest the pronunciation *Tidèus*. The readings are not suspicious, and Mr. Austin's collation contains no note on either line.—In the *Hous of Fame*, *Orpheùs* (1203) occurs, and in *B. Duch.* 569 *Orpheus* (dissyl.), but the *Troilus* has only the latter (5453).—*Imenèus* (4100) is for *Hymenaeus*.

Note 2.—In 4036 A *soür* is an error: the correct reading is *sucre*.

## § 142. Synizesis (ten Brink, § 268).

The Romance dissyllabic vowel combinations *-ia-*, *-iau-*, *-ie-*, *-iou-*, *-uau-*, *-ue-*, *-uou-*, regularly retain their dissyllabic character in the *Troilus*. Thus, *-ia-* in *celestial* (972, 976 f, 6203 f); *special* (260 f, 894 f, 974 f, 1048 f); *marcial* (6331 f); *-iau-* in *alliaunce* (4588 f);

[1] MS. *iou* with sign of contraction (expand *ioues* or *iouis* ?).

[1] Var. *Troïlus*.

*variaunce* (5617 f, 7125 f, 8033 f); *-ie-* in *audience* (4732 f, 5207 f, 6598 f); *conscience* (554 f); *experience* (4125, 7620 f); *pacience* (7760); *prescience* (5649, 5660, 5683, 5726 f); *sapience* (515 f); *science* (67, 7618 f); *pacient* (1083, 2984 f, 6249); *Ariète* (6254 f, 7553 f); *quiète, quiete* (p. 72); *-ioun* in *abusion*[1] (5652 f, 5722); *affeccion, -ioun* (296 f, 4206, 4432 f, 4815); *attricioun* (557 f); *augsions* (6737 f (*-iounys* C)); *champioun* (2512); *compassioun* (50 f, 467 f, 3245); *complexions* (6732 f); *conclusion, -yon, -ioun* (466 f, 480 f, 1344 f, 2385 f, 4868 f C, 5114 f, 5946 f, 7128 f, 7366 f, 7673 f); *condicion, -ioun* (3659, 7194 f, 7330 f); *confessioun* (1613 f); *confusion, -ioun* (4785 f, 4848); *consolacioun* (708 f); *constellacioun* (5407 f); *correccioun* (4174 f); *curacioun* (791 f); *deliberacion* (3361 f); *destruccion* (141 f); *devocioun* (187 f, 555 f); *diffusioun* (3138); *discrecioun, dyscression* (3736, 4176 f, 4868 f); *disgression* (143 f); *disposicion, -ioun* (1611 f, 6365 f, 7906 f); *dyminucioun* (4177 f); *entencion, -ioun, -ioun* (52 f, 211 f, 345 f, 683 f, 1343 f, 1380 f, 7130 f); *execucion* (3363 f, 6367 f); *illusioun* (3883 f); *illusions* (6731 f); *impressioun* (298 f); *impressions* (6735 f (*enpressiounnys* C)); *mencion* (7966); *mocion* (5953 f); *oppressioun* (2503 f); *opynion, -yon, -ioun, -youn* (347 f, 710 f, 790 f, 2382 f, 5115 f, 5650 f, 5657, 5687, 5692, 6157, 7221 f; *passion, -ioun* (3882 f, 5367); *permutacion* (7904 f); *possessioun* (2504 f); *presumpcion* (213 f); *proporcion* (7191 f); *protestacion, -ioun* (1569 f, 5951 f); *redempcion* (4770 f); *regioun* (5405 f); *reprehencion* (684 f); *repressioun* (3880 f); *revelacions* (6729 f); *salvacioun, savacion* (464 f, 1466 f, 1571 f, 1648 f, 6044 f (*-cyone* C)); *suspecion* (1646 f, 8010 f); *tribulacion* (7351 f); *delicious* (6806); *envyous, ènvyoùs* (1751, 1942, 4296, 4542); *gracious* (885 f); *melodious* (6940); *religious* (1844 f); *-eau-* in *continuaunce* (2919); *-ue-* in *casuel* (5081); *cruel, cruwel* (9, 1422, 1427, 1520, 3224, 4292, 4537, 4687, 4756, 4958, 5492, 5506, 5846, 5851, 5854, 6962, 7085, 7259, 7831, 7897, 8048, 8114, 8124); *cruelte, cruwelte* (586 f, 1076 f, 5434 f); *cruwellyche* (5966, cf. 8119); *mewet* (6557); *growel* (3553 (gruwel B, grewel D)); *-non-* in *vertuous* (254, 891 (*-tyuous* C)); *voluptuous* (6235 (-tevous C)).

But there are a few cases of synizesis. Thus,—*opynyon, -yon* (5635, 5700, 5702); *entencioun* (6995 f D; cf. 681 f C); *furious*[2] (1521 D; *read* furyes); *voluptevous*[2] (6235 C); *significaunce* (6725,

[1] The rhymes *adown, doun, toun,* show that the proper spelling of these words is in *-ioun.* Other rhymes are *lyon, preson, enchesoun, sermon, comparyson, Lamadoun.*

[2] Easily corrected by comparison of MSS. so that the synizesis disappears.

7810); *prescience* (5673, 5724); *perpetuely* (4596); *preciously*[1] (5252 C). In 1090, D reads *tèmpestuòs* (for *-tuous*?) but the true reading is *tèmpestoùs*. In *còrageùs* (7163 f) and *cèngeaunce* (8071) the *e* after *g* is not pronounced.

Of classical proper names *Cynthia, -ea* (6270, 7381), *Lollius, Lollyus* (394 f, 8016 f), *Lcìòn* (6575), *Palladion* (153 f; cf. *Pallàdiòn*[*e*]*s feste*, 161) occur without, *Layus* (1186), *Pallalion* (164) with synizesis; cf. *Mercùrye*, below. *Mònesteò, Rupheò, Phèbaseò*, rhyme with each other (4713, 4715, 4716).

The superlatives of adjectives of *-y* show no synizesis : *frendlyeste, goodlyest*[*e*], *thriftieste, worthiest, -e* (§§ 57, *a*, 59, *a*, 70, *a*). Synizesis occurs in the comparative adverb *gladlyer* (8140), but not in the comparative adjectives *frendliour* (885), *worthier* (251).

In words in which the accented syllable is followed by *-ie, -ien, -ial, -iynge*, the *i* may become consonantal : in the case of *-ie* this synizesis is necessary in the interior of the verse. Thus *augùrye, contràrye* (noun) (cf. § 51), *consistòrie, fùrye, letuàrye, memòrie, Mercùrye, mysèrie, stòrie, victòrie, comèdye, purpòdye, tregèdie* (§ 31); the plurals *aduersàries, contràries, fùryes, làdyes* (so the genitive, § 36), *stòryes, victòries* (p. 103); *mèrye* (p. 113); *contràrye* adj. (§ 51), *transitòrie* (3669 f). So also in the verb forms : pres. ind. 1 sg. *herye* (3793 f : *merye* pl.), *warye* (7741 f : *contrarye*); pres. ind. 3 pl. *carye* (7105 f : *letuarye*); inf. *taryen* (2104, 2707 f), *varyen* (2706 f), *waryen* (2704 f), *vnbodye* (7913 f : parodye); perf. part. *yburyed* (2396), *heryed* (4599, 4655), *iheried, yheryed* (2849, 4646),[2] *taried* (2824, 7499, 7712). *Astonyed* and *astoned* (p.p.) both occur[2] (see 1512, 1688, 3931, 8091). In one instance the p.p. *heried* has three syllables : *hèrièd* (4098). Forms in *-ynge* occur both with and without synizesis : *bùrynge* (i. e. *bùryinge*), *tàrynge; hèriynge, tàryinge* (see § 10). In 7225 we have *tàrièth*. In *How thow me hast waryed on euery side*, 6947 (weryed BC, weryhed D, werreide G; no note in Mr. Austin's collation),[3] *werreyd* is no doubt the correct reading).[4]

Note 1.—In *ladyes* ten Brink (§ 257) prefers syncope *ladyes* : see the variants in § 38, VII., above. Cf. also *enemys* and *prophesies* (?) (*ibid.*).

Note 2.—Ten Brink's remark (§ 268) that *scur* (O. Fr. *scür*) is always monosyllabic in Chaucer, seems to be true; but *asèuraunce* occurs (7622 f).

[1] For *louelyest*, 6939 C, read *leuest*.

[2] Cf. *yhèrëd*, 2058 A (yheried BD, iheried C).

[3] BG omit *on*, which should be supplied.

[4] Compare the context, especially *victorie* and *spille*.

Note 3.—In *As thoughte hym tho for pitous distresse*, 1286 AC (pitouse D), we must read either *pitous* with B or *pitous* with Cp.

## § 143. Miscellaneous slurs and contractions.

*This is* is occasionally reduced to one syllable and written *this*. Thus,—1448 (this is D), 3778 (this seyd (is) D), 5552 (this is C, thus ‡ D), 5855 (in A read *haue ye* for *hauë*), 5936 (C †), 6514 (be ‡ this C); this is, 419 ‡ D, 5965 ‡ C, 7357 ‡ C. (Cf. Child, § 96; ten Brink, § 271; Skeat, *Minor Poems*, p. 304.)

For *nas*, *nere*, *nil*, *nolde*, see § 124; for *noot*, *nyste*, see § 123.

*Is it* and *it is* are both found in the *Troilus*: there seems to be one trustworthy example of each:

What wonder *is it* though he of me haue ioye, 1834. In this line ABD have *is it* (i. e. *is it*), C indicates the pronunciation by by reading *ist*. (There is no note in Austin.) Cf. also *what wonder ist*, 6425 C, where ABD read *is*. In 6949, C has *ist* for *is it*, but the line is incorrect in this MS. Similarly *wast* for *was it* occurs in 3209 C, where, however, *was it* should be restored. These last two examples, though worthless as readings, have their value in determining the nature of the slur in 1834.

Ek (Eke G) som tyme *it is* a craft to seme fle (flee G), 747 ABG (Ek it is a craft for summe sumtyme to fle C, Eke it is craft some tyme to seme sle D; no note in Austin).

Note 1.—In *What nede were it this preyere for to werne*, 4773 AB (cut out of C; D †; no note in Austin), we may choose between *nedë were it* and *nede were it*.

Note 2.—A considerable number of slurred *it*'s and *is*'s disappear on a comparison of MSS. Thus,—*telle it the*, 599 C; *be it*, 2060 C (cf. 7293 C); *is it* (?), 1435 A; *as it was*, 3295 A; *do it redresse*, 6403 A; *may it not*, 7926 (cf. 2242 C?); *help it*, 1405 D; *no thing it turneth*, 1883 D; *I wil it sow* (?), 2289 C; *can it*, 5553 D; *if it so be*, 7059 C; *whèn that it is ago*, 1880 B (or *that it is*); *seith it is* (or *it is*) *told*, 3638 C; *soth it is* (or *it is*) *seyd*, 4054 C (cf. 6117 D); *that it is* (or *it is*) *a folye*, 6688 D; *certis it is* (or *it is*) *non*, 6771 C; *it is of*, 7038 A; *now it is wors*, 7056 A; *that is*, 1431 D; *ther is*, 3707 D, 4570 D, cf. 3872 C; *now is*, 3389 A; *weye is*, 1702 A; *what is*, 681 C; *wo is*, 694 C; *lone is*, 6307 D; *counseill is this*, 7655 D.

*Thow art* is slurred once:

*Thow art* (Thart B Cp. John's, Thu art C, Thou art D) wys (wys(e) B, wis(e) D) ynowh forthi do nought amys, 4471. Here the reading *Thart* found in B Cp. John's is particularly noteworthy.

Not so certain is the slur of *at* in

The grete sweigh (swough B, swey C, sweyf D, swigh G) doth (makith C) it to (*om.* G, than D) come (falle C, fal D) *al* (*om.*

D) *at onys* (ones BDG), 2468 (no note in Austin). Here it is possible that either *to* (with G) or *al* (with D) should be omitted, in spite of the weight of MS. authority.

Of the running together of *I* (*he, she*) *nẽ* into *In'* (etc.), the *Troilus* affords no good example: see *y nẹ dar(e)*, 2946 D (I dar ABC); *I nẹ wolde*, 5899 C (nolde AD, nold B) (cf. 1023 f C[c]); *he nẹ kyst*, 812 C (AB *om.* ne); *he nẹ may*, 2212 C (he may ABD); *sche nẹ wil*, 6719 C (nyl AB, nilt D). See Child, § 96; ten Brink, § 272, and *Compl. to Pite*, n. to v. 105, p. 177.

For *at the* B occasionally writes *atte*. Thus,—*atte laste*, 1230 B, 5097 B; *att*[*e*] *laste*, 916 B; *atte leste*, 7313 B; *atte meeste*, 7310 B; *atte fulle*, 209 B; see § 53. Cf. *attother*, 5096 B (at the other AC, at other D †); *the tother side*, 7050 A (that other BCD). *Attan(e)*, 3407 f B (at oon A, at on C, at on(e) D), is different. In 7732 C, for *at the writyng* read *at writyng*. In the phrase *at erste* (§ 54, n. 2) the readings are interesting,—*at erst*[*e*] AC, *at erste* BCp., *att erst* D †, *atte erst*[*e*] G: the reading of G suggests the conjecture that in *firstẽ vertu* (§ 54, n. 2) the demonstrative *the* has been swallowed up by the preceding *that* (conjunction),—*that the, thattẽ, that.*

Note 3.—A considerable number of miscellaneous slurs disappear on comparison of MSS. Thus,—*I am*, 720 A, 967 C, 1516 C, 2198 A, 4490 D; *I have*, 6460 B, cf. 1384 A, 7549 B; *thow hast* (?), 5153 D; *he hath*, 3917 C; *ye han*, 5958 A, cf. 5469 B, 5538 C; *ye with*, 6188 D; *prey him*, 2536 C; *therfore as a*, 680 A (cf. 1321 C, 2268 D, 2341 A, 5031 C (?), 5562 D); *lete vs goo*, 6888 D; *in his armes*, 4029 D (?), 5881 D;[1] *now in a*, 1550 B (cf. 363 D, 850 C, 1290 D (?), 1320 † D, 7658 D); *the in thyn*, 5306 C (D ?); *here an ensaumple*, 4863 A; *down of here*, 6876 A (cf. 474 C, 1004 D, 1945 D, 2052 A, 3263 D, 3855 D, 5346 C, 6513 C, 6733 D, 6790 C, 7275 C, 7825 A); *and yf she*, 7665 A (cf. 7629 D); *plaunte or a*, 5429 D; *sorwe or in*, 641 C; *wel for I*, 613 C (cf. 1692 D, 3151 D, 3689 B, 5320 D, 6124 D, 7128 A);[2] *nati at a bene*, 6726 D; *and at after none*, 7493 D; *can not thanke*, 3840 C; *yow with*, 3474 D. So in apparent examples of slurred *that*;[3] *whil that* (quasi *whil't*), 468 CD; *so that* (quasi *so't*), 2247 D; *thenk that al* (quasi *thenk'l't*) 2824 A; *wel that this* (quasi *wel'l*), 2994 A; *er that he* (quasi *er't*), 4435 A; *whan that he* (quasi *whan't*), 7516 A; cf. 1437 B, 2805 C, 3073 C, 3208 A, 5138 D, 5279 C †, 5350 A, 5986 C, 6035 AB, 6170 † C, 6180 D, 6483 D, 7073 B, 7541 D, 7662 C, 8051 D. In 953 the right reading is doubtless *he that parted is* (John's; -yd CD) rather than *he that departed* (AB) with slur of *that*. So also in apparent examples of slurred *and*: *Al day for loue* and *in swich a manor cas*, 1542 C; cf. 1239 C, 1941 C, 2184 D, 2604 C, 3651 D, 4212 C, 4232 C, 4586 D, 5770 C, 6615 D (?), 7151 D; see also the apparent slur of *than* in *lèuer(e) than bèn*, 7287 B. In 6139 C *I*

[1] In 1037 A, 4047 C, the slur *on his, in his* may be avoided, if *Troylus* be read as a dissyllable (§ 140); but in both lines *his* is an interpolated word.

[2] In 2532 no one will hesitate between What wolt thow seyn yf I *for Èleyne* sente, and *for Eleynë*.

[3] In most cases the corruption consists in the insertion of a superfluous *that*.

*schal ben* has the time of two syllables (cf. Scotch *I'se*), but the line is manufactured by the corrector of C.

Note 4.—It is just possible that in 4166, 4984, the scribe of B intended *thought* for a shortened *though that*.

Note 5.—*Through* (A.S. þurh) is variously spelled (*thurgh*, *thorugh*, *thour*, etc.), but is always monosyllabic, except perhaps in 7846 : *Thorugh* (Thorwgh B, Of C, Thurgh D) his (hire C, *om.* D) wol I yow (*om.* Cp.) telle. Now and then one or another MS. seems to make the word dissyllabic elsewhere, but comparison affords an easy correction (see the MSS. in 1444, 4130, 4738, 7132).

## § 144. The extra syllable before the cæsura.

In many verses of the *Troilus* the retention of an unaccented syllable (*-e*, *-eth*, etc.) before the cæsura would convert a masculine cæsura into a feminine, and produce the phenomenon known as the extra syllable before a cæsural pause (cf. Skeat, *Prioresses Tale*, pp. lxi ff.; ten Brink, § 307, 3). In these cases (with the rarest exception) it is possible to reduce the verse to the normal movement by apocopating *-e* or by syncopating the vowel of the syllable in question (*-eth*, etc.). In the Grammatical Chapter apocope has accordingly been assumed for such cases (in accordance with my own conviction); but, since the question cannot be regarded as settled, it is perhaps worth while to give a special section to the matter. In the following list the aim has been to enumerate all verses which the advocates of the extra syllable theory could reasonably adduce in support of their contention. Examples in which the verse may be made regular by eliding *-e* (*i. e.* in which the word after the cæsura begins with a vowel or weak *h*) have of course been left out of account.[1] The readings of D have been disregarded throughout the section, and the same is true of trivial variations, except when they concern the point under consideration.

### I. Cases of -e.

1. Weak nouns (§§ 2, 3) :

This litel spot of *erthe* ‖ that with the se, 8178 (erth B).

But now of *hope* ‖ the kalendes bygynne, 1092.

For neuere sith the *tyme* ‖ that she was born, 1228 (tyde C; B *om.* the).

Right in that selue *wyse* ‖ soth for to seye, 3197 (C *om.* for).

So *bole* (§ 15, p. 47) :

Right yn the white *bole* ‖ so it bytydde, 1140 (bool B); similarly 4901.

[1] Such are 14, 41, 88, 107, 116, 118, 160, 176, 180, 189, 224, etc., etc.

Note 1.—In 889, read rather *hertë* ‖ *semęth* than *hertę* ‖ *semath*; in 6823, rather *hertë* ‖ *beręth* than *hertę berth*.

Note 2.—For *wil* or *willę* (sbst.) before a pause, see 228, 861, 1564, 3165, 4362, 8000 (cf. p. 4).—*The pleye* / occurs as the first foot of 5528, but see p. 9. Cf. also Wel-come *my knyght* / ‖ *my pes* / *my suffisaunce*, 4151, where there is of course no cæsura after *wel-come*.

II. Masculine nouns having *-e* or *-u* in A.S. (§ 6) :

He loketh forth by *hegge* / ‖ by tree / by greue, 7507 (hegge B, hegis ‡ C, hegges D, hege G). Better,—*forth* ‖ *by*. As to the form *hegge*, see p. 10.

From *haselwode* ‖ there Ioly Robyn pleyde, 7537.

Tydeus *sone* / ‖ that doun descended is, 7877. See p. 10, where ten Brink's remark (§§ 260, 261) on *sone* is corrected.

III. Feminines in A.S. *-u* (§ 8) :

And seyde ‖ here in this closet *dore* ‖ withoute, 3526.[1]

Here at this secre trappe *dore* ‖ quod he, 3601.

To scornen *loue* ‖ which that so soone kan, 234.

Blyssyd be *loue* ‖ than kan thus folk conuerte, 308. Other instances of *loue* ‖ with the cæsura after the second foot may be seen in 16, 46, 436, 677, 744, 1129, 1759, 1789, 1823, 1866, 1912, 3014, 3359, 3622, 4103, 4158, 4433, 4830, 5084, 5243, 5761, 6296, 6314, 6844, 7443, 8039. So perhaps, 518 : Of hem that *loue* lyst febely for to auaunce. Cf. also 3851 ‡ A$^{c}$.

At which the god of *loue* ‖ gan (to) loken rowe, 206 (BCCp. John's *om.* to).

Kan he wel speke of *loue* ‖ quod she I preye, 1588 (of louë ‖ I ȝow preie C ‡).

Ayens the god of *loue* / ‖ but hym obeye, 6530. So perhaps, But al so cold yn *loue* ‖ towardes the, 523 (or,—*cold* ‖ *yn*); Thow koudest neuere yn *loue* ‖ thyn seluen wysse, 622 (or,—*neuere* ‖ *yn*); I that haue yn *loue* ‖ so ofte assayed, 646; My name of trouthe yn *loue* ‖ for euere mo, 7418 (ἄλλως C) (or,—*trouthe* ‖ *yn*).

In *loue* ‖ for which yn wo ‖ to bedde he wente, 1147.

Of *loue* ‖ that made hire herte fressh and gay, 2007 (Of loue wich that made his herte gay C).

For *loue* ‖ that euery other day ‖ I faste, 2251.

In *loue* ‖ but as his suster hym to plese, 2309 (second cæsura after *suster* ?).

To feffe with ‖ youre newe *loue* ‖ quod he, 8052.

Note.—In *For goddes loue what seith it telle it vs*, 1181, scan *it* ‖ rather than *loue* ‖. In *Refuseth not to loue for to be bonde*, 255, scan *not* ‖. In *Aquyt*

[1] Cf. And they that layen at the dore withoute, 3587 (lay A, leye C).

*hym wel for goddes loue quod he*, 2285, and *Bysechyng hym for goddes loue that he*, 3004, the cæsura is after the second foot, but there is also a pause after *loue*.—*Made loue withinne hire* (hir G) *for to myne*, 1762 ABCG, appears to be a 9-syl. verse; D reads *Made love within her hert for to myne* (there is no note in Mr. Austin's collation).—In 4586, 4587, *Loue that* (with a pause in the sense after *loue*) begins the verse.

IV. Monosyllabic feminine nouns with long stem-syllable (§§ 9, 11):

On his *byhalue* || which that vs alle sowle sende, 2819. But perhaps we should read (with GCp.): On his half which that soule vs alle sende (see variants, p. 17, under *halue*).

But to thyn *help* || yet somwhat kan I seye, 672 (helpë || sumwhat C). (Or,—*help yet* || ?)

Ne to thyn owen *help* || do bysynesse, 795 (hele C).

To fynde vnto oure *helpe* || the beste weye, 5954 (help B).

God for thi *might* || so loue it wel to fare, 7322. Cf. 8151.

Withouten *nede* || there I may stonde in grace, 1799.

And hast [the] lesse *nede* || to countrefete, 2617 (ABC *om.* the, *but* GCp. John's *have it*; B *om.* to; C *inserts* to *before* countyrfete).

For now is *nede* || sestow not my destresse, 2888.

I shal to morwe at *nyght* || by est or west, 7114. Cf. 7544.

But so nyl not an *ok* || whan it is cast, 2474. Cf. 2420.

In thus good *plit* / || lat now non heuy thought, 3981. Similarly 4396.

And of my *sped* || be thyn al that swetnesse, 1036 (speede / B).

Thow be my *sped* || fro this forth and my muse, 1094 (spede / B). (Or,—*forth* ||.)

And men cryede in the *strete* || se Troylus, 1697.

Thenk (that) al swych taried *tid* || but lost it nys, 2824 (BC *om.* that; C *has* on *for* al).

And haue my *trowthe* || but thow it fynde so, 831 (treuthë || but thou fynde it so C).

And be my *trouthe* || the kyng hath sones tweye, 1255.

And al the *while* || which(e) that I yow deuyse, 3277 (C *om.* yow).

A woful *wight* || to han a drery feere, 13 (see p. 33).

That in this *world* || ther nys so hard an herte, 5802. Cf. 6308, 7085, 8060. So also:

And by my *thryft* || my wendyng out of Troye, 6292 (thrifte B). Cf. Now by my *thryft* (thrifte B) quod he that shal be sene, 3713, where the cæsura comes after *he*.

Note 1.—Several of the examples just cited have little or no significance: see § 11. The same may be said of lines in which a verbal noun in *-ynge*, *-yng* (§ 10) is followed by the cæsura or a strong pause: see 1089, 4303.

Note 2. In 4061, *And now swetnesse* || *semeth the more swet*[e], *the* is

clearly to be omitted (with BCCp. John's) : otherwise, we should probably read *sweetnèssë* || *semyth.*

V. Masculine and neuter nouns that sometimes take an irrational *-e* or a dative *-e* (§ 14).

In several instances in which a dative *-e* might perhaps be expected to occur, but in which the cæsura directly follows, no *-e* is pronounced (and sometimes none is written). That most of these instances have no significance, however, will be seen by comparing them with the idioms discussed on pp. 36-37.

Vp on his *bed* || but man so sore grone, 1642 (bedde / B).

He softe into his *bedde* || gan for to slynke, 4377. Cf. 5017, 5395, 6644, 6657, 6772. In 1152 *a-bedde* || loses its *-e* by elision or apocope before *half.*

Hath right now put to *flyght* || the Grekes route, 1698.

For ay the ner the *fyr* || the hotter is, 449.

Wel neigh doun of (on ‡ A) here *hors* || she gan to sye, 6545.

But by thi *lyf* || be war and fast eschuwe, 2103 (or,—*war* || ?).[1]

Lest yn this *town* || that folkes me dispise, 6002 (folk[es] C). Cf. 7486, 7517.

Out of the *wey* / || so priketh hym his corn, 219 (woye C). Cf. 2388, 6864, 7025.

Monosyllabic neuters with short stem-syllable stand on a somewhat different footing (see p. 38, n. 1) :—

But at the *yate* || there she sholde oute ryde, 6395 (see p. 46).

Thorugh more wode and *col* || the more fyr, 2417 (cole C, colë || more B, or col || the Cp. John's). (See p. 54.)

But al that *losse* || ne doth me no dishese, 4751 (los B; *cut out of* C; no note in Mr. Austin's collation). (See p. 58.)

The same may be said of *hewe* (p. 42) and *tere* (p. 45) :

It shewed in his *hewe* || bothe euen and morwe, 487 (hewe || on C).

For euery *teer* || which that Criseyde asterte, 3912 (tere B).

Compare also *weye, wey* (but see p. 46) :

For which that *weye* || for ought I kan espye, 6131 (wey B; *om.* † C).

Note.—It is perhaps worth mentioning that the two instances in which *borw, bourgh* occurs as a monosyllable, are before the cæsura (the other cases are in the phrase *to borwe*) ; see p. 39.

VI. *Ferde, hede* (§ 15) ; *smert* (p. 64) :

Whi sholde thanne of *fered* || thyn herte quake, 5269 (for ferd C). (Or,—*thanne* || ?).[2]

[1] In 7637, scan rather *day* || than *with lyf* ||.

[2] Cf. 6073, where the right reading is perhaps *for-fered* (pp.) || *out* (for fered ΔCp., for ferde || out B, for fer C †).

Now taketh *heed* || for it is for to done, 7266 (hede / B).

The proper form of the noun *smert* seems to have no -e (see p. 64) :

Ney ded for *smert* || gan bresten out to rore, 5035 (smerte B). In 6780 *smert* is perhaps a verb (= smerteth) : if so, the cæsura follows *harm*.

VII. Romance nouns which have a right to -e (§§ 21, 22) :

As man / bryd / *beste* / || fissh / herbe and grene tre, 2852 (best B).

A *broch* || that he Criseyde yaf || that morwe, 8024 (broche B ; C †).

Was there noon other *broche* || yow lyste lete, 8051 (broch B). In 8053 scan rather : But thilke *broche* that I || with terys wete, than *broche* ||. The cæsura of 4212 : But wel I wot a *broche* gold of asure, is not quite certain (*broche* || ?).

To morwe. || allas. that were a *fayre* || quod he, 3692 (fair B, fayr C).

Yf that I hadde *grace* || for to do so, 3770 (gracë had || B ; C *om.* grace †).

And seyde *Nece* || who hath arayed thus, 2272 (nece || he C).

And seyde *Nece* || se how this lord can knele, 3804 (B † ; nece || how C).

But alwey good[e] *nece* || to stynte his wo, 1468 (goode nece || alwey to-C).

In 1340 read *nece* || *alwey* (with BCCp. John's) instead of *nece* || *lo* A.

That in *science* || so expert was that he, 67.

That *prescience* || put fullyng necessarie (*l.* necessaire), 5683.

God wot the *text* || ful hard is soth to fynde, 4199 (tixt ‡ is C).

Note 1.—*Ioye* ||, 4478, suffers elision before *halt*. In 4535 : *This ioye* || *may not ywrete ben* || *with inke*, we should perhaps cut out the prefix *y-* (with BC John's), but Cp. has *i-writen*. In 6093, read *ioyë* || and *the amorousë daunce*.

Note 2.—The reading is doubtful in 5504 : *Peyne torment* (*turnement* † C) *pleynt* (pleynte B, *om.* C) *wo and* (*om.* BCp. John's ; and ek C) *distresse*.

Note 3.—In 4592 : *Bynd this* acord || *that I have told and telle* (acorde B), *acord* may be referred to the corresponding O. Fr. form (see p. 74). *Pres* in the sense of *crowd* never has an -e in the *Troilus* (see p. 74).

Note 4.—In *Towchyng thi* lettre || *that thow art wys ynowh*, 2108, we may omit *that* with BC (no note in Mr. Austin's collation). In *Forgef and with here* vncle || *gan for to pleye*, 4120, we may omit *for* before *to* with BC (no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

Note 5.—In 2917 *sire* (first word in the line and followed by the usual vocative pause) apocopates its -e (syr B).

VIII. Proper names :

Vnto *Criseyde* || that heng here hed ful lowe, 1774.

And folwe alwey *Criseyde* || thi lady dere, 4969 (or,—*alwey* ||).

This *Diomede* || that ladde here by the bridel, 6455.

And *Poliphete* || they gonnen this to waryen, 2704.

Cf. *Pandare* || which that sente was || from Troylus, 5468 A.

Particularly noteworthy is :

Fro *Meleagree* || that made the bor to blede, 7878 (Meleagre B, meliagre C ; no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

IX. *More* (sbst. and adv., §§ 64, 86), *worse* (adj., § 64) :

Nor axen *more* || that may do yow disese, 1232.

By god I shal *nomore* || com here this wyke, 1515.

For euere *more* || myn herte lust to reste, 1915 (mo BC). Similarly 4243, 4946.

Withoute *more* || to (is † B) Troylus yn thei went, 2751.

I kan no *more* || but that I the wole serue, 3232. Similarly 4035, 4115, 4156, 4654, 7731.

There was no *more* || to speken (*l.* skippen *with* BECp. John's ; schepe C) nor to traunce, 3532. (Or,—*skippen* || ?.)

He dar *nomore* || come here ayen for shame, 6130 (nomor B).

Note 1.—In *And yf I more dorste prey yow as now*, 2521 (dorst preye B, durste preye as now C), read probably *dorstę preyę*[ë] rather than *dorstë preyę*. In *For ay thurst I* (*I preste* † C) *the more that I it dryuke*, 406, the position of the cæsura is probably *more* ||.

Or loue the *wers* || though wrecches on it crien, 1950.

That hym is *wors* || that is fro wele ythrowe, 5144.

For now (it) is *wors* || than euere yet I wende, 7056 (BC *om.* it).

Note 2.—The construction in 5144 and 7056 may be perhaps be regarded as adverbial (§ 86).

X. Monosyllabic adjectives in the "definite" use (§ 53) :

That *at the laste* || the dede slep hire hente, 2009.

But *at the laste* || this woful Troylus, 5034.

Til *at the last* || this sorwful wyght Criseyde, 5914 (laste BC).

Al be I not *the firste* || that dide amys, 7430.

Note.—In 3407 *the laste* || suffers elision before *herof*.

XI. The plural of monosyllabic adjectives and perfect participles (§§ 67-70) :

Hath lordes *olde* / || thorugh which withinne a throwe, 7824 (old C).

In the following instances the adjective is in the predicate and the subject refers to a single person (cf. § 69, *b*) :

Now be not *wroth* || my blod my nece dere, 1679.

And ben so *loth* || to suffren hym yow serue, 2996.

Now beth al *hol* || no lengere ye ne pleyne, 3010.

Ye ben to *wys* || to do so gret folye, 3709 (C *has* swich *for* so gret).

And beth wel *war* || ye do no more amys, 4022.

And ye so *feyr* || that euerich of hem alle, 6533.

Note.—In *If ye be* swych || *youre beaute may not strecche*, 1426, *ye* refers to Criseyde, and *swichë* would be surprising (swiche || B).

In the two examples of *al* that follow, we cannot be quite certain that we are dealing with a plural (see § 80) :

This is o word for *al* || this Troylus, 4502.

And of the furyes *al* || she gan hym telle, 7861 (furies also ? C).

Perhaps we should read *als*.

Note 2.—In *Criseyde which that* all *these thynges say*, 2350 (al B ; C †), and *Criseyde which that* alle *these thynges herde*, 3611 A, perhaps the only cæsura is after *Criseyde*. 3225 perhaps runs : *And this* || *ȝn* alle *the temples* || *of this town*. 7857 may be scanned *She told ek* || al *the prophesies by herte* (al B, al the profecy ‡ C).

Monosyllabic perfect participles (§ 68) :

Of wommen (whom ‡ men C) *lost*. || thorugh fals and foles bost, 3140.

O nece pes || or we be *lost* || quod he, 3937. (Or,—nece ||.)

Now be ye (*sing. in sense*) *kaught*. || now is there but we tweyne, 4049.

This wordes (*om.* C) *seyd* (seyde BC) || she on here armes two, 5573.

Of thinges that ben *wyst* || byfore that tyde, 5739 (wiste B ; *cut out in* C).

XII. The pronoun *hire, here*, dat. acc. sg. (pp. 152-3).

Since *hire* is seldom or never dissyllabic in the interior of the verse, cases of apocope before cæsura present no interest. Such may be seen in 315, 370, 443, 454, 2307, 3497, 4820, 4827 (*herë* || *do* A), 5089, 5100, 5149, 5192, 5299, 5305, 6480, 7599 ; cf. also 7948 (see p. 153).

XIII. Adverbs.

For the reason just mentioned, no interest attaches to *herę, therę* before cæsura (cf. § 89) : examples may be seen in 187, 2904, 4844, 6111, 6542, and perhaps in 4658. *Whannę* in : But ryght as *whannę* || the sonne shyneth bright, 1849 (when B, whan C) (see § 88) is also of no account. More interesting are : And *namelyche* || my dere herte ye, 5996 (nameliche B, namely C) ; *Secundelich* || ther yet deuyneth noon, 2826 (secound[e]ly B, secundeli C) (§ 84). In the following the constructions are not certainly adverbial :

For hygh and *low* || withouten ony drede, 3260 (see § 82, n. to *lowe*).

This short and *pleyne* || theffect of my message, 5552 (pleyn C).

XIV. Present Indicative of Verbs (§ 92, V.) :

But wel I *rede* || that by no maner weye, 495.

As thus I *mene* || that ye wole be my stere, 4133 (mene || ȝe wol ȝe BCp., menë || wil ȝe C).

Wherfor I *seye* || that from eterne yf he, 5640.

I *seye* || that yf the opynion || of the, 5692 (or,—*yf* || ?).

So how I *deye* || ye nyl me not rescowe, 6594 (dye B ; ἄλλως C).

Compare the plural :

For which men *say* || may nought disturbed be, 1707 (seyne B, seyn C).

XV. Present Subjunctive of Verbs (§ 111) :

But if that I *consente* || that it so be, 413 (BC *om.* so).

And yf the *lyke* || than maystow vs saluwe, 2101.

Wher so yow *lyste* || by ordal or by oth, 3888 (list B, Whether ȝe wolde C).

And yf she *write* / || thow shalt ful soone (soon B) see, 7662 (And ȝif that sche write thow schat sone se C).

Or yf you *lyst* || no manere vpon me se, 7751 (ȝe lust no more C).

Note.—In the case of the impersonal *list* it is not always possible to distinguish the apocopated subj. 3 sg. from the syncopated ind. 3 sg. See the following verses, in which the verb in question is followed by the cæsura : 1407, 2245, 2865, 3215, 5245, 6295, 7360, 7780, and cf. § 95.

XVI. Weak Preterites (§§ 99, 102) :

Or he me *tolde* || who myght ben his leche, 1656 (told / who myghte B, told ho myȝte C). (Or, perhaps,—*toldë* || *who myghte*).

That to hire seluen she *seyde* || who (ho C) yaf me drynke, 1736.

And gan to iape and *seyde* || lord so ye swete, 2028 (seydë || lord ȝe smete † C).

For which she *thoughte* || that loue al come it late, 3310 (tought B). (Or perhaps better,—*loue* ||.)

What that she *thought* || whan that he seyde so, 3418 (thought[e] || when B, thouȝte || whan C ; BC *om.* the second *that*).

For wel he *thouhte* || ther was noon other grace, 5614.

Abedde *brought* || whan that hem bothe lesto, 4521 (C *om.* hem).

Note 1.—In 4367 : *He seyde farewel myn herte and dere swete*,[1] the cæsura is of course after *farewel*, but there is a pause in the sense after *seyde*.

Note 2.—In 5486 : *As he that felte pyte* (pitie Cp.) *on euery syde, feltë pyte* || *on* (with a slur of the final -e in *pyte*) is more probable than *felte* || *pytë on*.[2]—In 7088 : *So tendrely she* wepte || *bothe eue and morwe*, we cannot be sure that *wep* (strong pret.) is not what Chaucer wrote (§ 103). In 4998 : *That I the* hadde (*subj.*) || where *as I wolde in Troye*, BCCp. John's omit *as*.

Note 3.—For *answèrde*, etc., see II., v., n. 2, below.

Note 4.—The reading *maule* ||, in 312, is not supported by any MS. (see variants, p. 245).

Compare also :

As she best *kowde* / || she gan hym to disporte, 2758 BCp. (§ 123, IV.).

As Crassus *dide* || for his affectis wronge, 4233 (§ 124, IV.).

XVII. Imperatives :

[1] Instead of *herte and dere swete* read *dere herte swete* with BCp. John's. C has *dere h. s.* without *my*.

[2] As he that pite hadde B ; cut out of C.

Go *loue*. || for old(e) ther wil no wight of the, 1481. (§ 115, III.)

And *seye* || thou mayst no lengere || vp endure, 2603 (seye B, sei C). (§ 115, V.)

Now spek / now *prey* / || now pitously compleyne, 2584 (*sing.*) (preye B, preye || and ‡ C). (§ 116, IV.)

Now *vnderstonde* || for I yow nought requere, 1443 (B ‡ *om.* nought; vndyr-stond C). (§ 118, IV.)

And seyde *awake* || ye slepen al to longe, 1630. (§ 118, IV.)

Now *stynte* || that ye no longere || on it honge, 2327 (§ 118, IV.)

XVIII. Infinitive (§ 119, X.):

A man to *loue* || til that hym lyst to leue, 686 (C ‡ *om.* that).

Nomore to *speke* || for trusteth wel that I, 2511 (C *has* of this *for* to speke).

Now doth hym *sitte* || now gode neee dere, 3817 (hardly,—*now* ||). But BCGCp. John's omit the second *now*; D has it.

I may here *haue* || right sone douteles, 4764. (§ 121, VI.)

That it shal *come* / || but they seyn that therfore, 5661. Similarly 5662.

That thing to *come* || be purueyed trewely, 5717. Similarly 5726.

I moste *come* || for wheder sholde I gon, 6023 (com C).

Than shal [s]he *come* || that may me blisse brynge, 7021.

She wolde *come* || ye but she nyst[e] whanne, 7791.

So myght I *wene* || that thynges alle and some, 5730.

The folk wol *wene* || that thou for cowardyse, 6775 (seyn ‡ C).

The existence of the monosyllabic infinitive form *seyn* (§ 119, XIII.) makes the following examples inconclusive:

That is to *seye* || for the am I becomen, 3095 (seyne C). Similarly 3126 (seyn B, seine C).

This dar I *seye* || that trouthe and diligence, 4139 (seyn C). Similarly 4779 (seyn C).

The gerundial forms *to sen*, *to seyn*, and *to don* are too common elsewhere in the verse to make the following examples before the cæsura of any significance (§ 119, XIII.):

He was *to sen* || fulfild of heigh prowesse, 1717. Cf. 3384, 3910, 4972.

That is *to seyn* || that I foryeue al this, 4020 (say C). Similarly 6037 (seyne C), 7261 (seyne C).

And soth *to seyn* || she nas nat al a fo, 1769 (say C).

That what *to done* || for ioye vnnethe he wyste, 4095 (don B).

Note.—In 1781, scan probably : *And what to done best were and what eschue* (C *om.* were).

XIX. The Perfect Participle of Strong Verbs (§ 122, X.) :

To Troye is *come* || this woful Troylus, 6560 (comyn C).

Note.—In 8161 the correct reading is : *That thow be vnderstonde* (or *-an*) *god beseche* ; B inserts *I* after *god*.

II. Cases of Unaccented Terminations ending in a Consonant.

I. *-eth* in the pres. ind. 3 sg. (cf. § 94, II.) :[1]

Fro whennes *cometh* || my walyng (wele † C) and my pleynte, 408.

Whan that it *cometh* || but wylfully it weylen (weyuen BC, *which is right*), 1369.

That ofte ycleped *cometh* || and endeth peyne, 5166. Much more energetic than *ycleped* || *cometh*.

For al that *cometh* || comth by necessite, 5620 (not in C).

Nough[t] that it *comth* (comes B) || for it purueyed is, 5715 (not in C).

Whan (Til C) that she *cometh* (come C) || the which (and that C) shal (may C) be right[t] sone, 6754. Cf. also 7516.

Wher it *bycometh* || lo no wyght on it sporneth, 1882.

Men seyn || the suffraunt *ouercometh* || parde, 6246 (C †). (Or perhaps,—*suffraunt* ||.)

Ek wostow how it *fareth* || on (of BC) som seruice, 956.

And yet *me of-thynketh* (mathynketh B) || that this auaunt me (may B) asterte (sterte B), 1043 (cut out of C).

Whan that hym (*om.* B) *thenketh* (*om.* B) || a womman bereth (berth B) here heighe, 1486.

That wher he *cometh* (comth B) || he prys and thank hym geteth, 1461.

Which that myn vncle *swereth* (swerth B) || he mot be ded, 1739.

Al that now *loueth* || asonder sholde lepe, 4605.

Criseyde *loueth* || the sone of Tydeus, 8109 (cut out of C).

Note 1.—So perhaps in 1292 : *To suche as hym thenketh* || *able for to thryue*, but the cæsura may as well come after *able*.

Note 2.—There are no certain examples in the imv. pl. owing to the instability of the ending in that form (§ 118), but note : *But yet* (om. C) *I seye* aryseth || *and lat vs daunce*, 1306 (perhaps,—*seye* || *aryseth*). The same may be said of the pres. ind. 3 pl. in *-eth* (§ 97) : see *As ony men that* lyueth (-en B, leuyn C) || *vnder the sonne*, 1259, and *Which that men* clepeth (-yn C) || *the* (om. BC) *wode ialousye*, 7576. *Lyth* 3 sg. (§ 91, III.) and *seyth* 3 sg. (§ 94, II.) and 3 pl. (§ 97) have, for obvious reasons, not been taken into account.

[1] *Seyth* ind. sg. (§ 91, II.) and *pl.* (§ 97) has been left out of account.

II. *-est* :

Thorugh Troye *rennest* || ay (*om.* C) downward to the see, 6211.

Note.—*Lyst, seyst* have been left out of account (see § 93).

III. *-en* :

Thenne wolde I *hopen* || the rathere for to spede, 865 (hope rathere C).

That men hem *wrien* (wren B) || with asshe[n] (asshen B, asschin C) pale and dede, 1624.

I kan not *trowen* || that she (*om.* B) wol write ayen, 7661 (trowë || sche C).

Ne yf she kan *here-selven* (self BC) || distorben it, 5765.

For examples before a vowel or *h*, see § 136, *e*.

Note.—In the examples before a consonant, it is of course possible to read *-e* for *-en* (*here-self* for *here-selven*; in the examples before vowels, *-e* (elided).

IV. *-es* :

(i.) In the plural :

Both of his *ioyes* (ioie B Cp., ioy D) || and of his cares colde, 264. The sg. *ioie* is probably right.

By alle the *othes* || that I haue to yow sworn(e), 1384 (BCD *om.* to). The omission of *to* (BCD) gives *othës* || *that*. Cp. John's appear to have *to*.

To make *amendes* (amend B, an † ende C, amendis D) || of so cruel a dede, 1427. No note in Austin : *amendes* is probably right.

It is oon of the *thynges* (-is CD) || that (*om.* BCp.) furthereth most, 2453 (D has *that*).

In gentil *hertes* || ay redy to repaire, 2847 (C cut out). D om. *ay*, but Cp. John's agree with A.

Swych *argumentz* (-tȝ B, -tis CD) || ne (*om.* CD) ben not worth a bene, 4009. (No note in Austin). Cf. 466.

That *elementes* (-tȝ B, -tis C) that ben so discordable, 4595.

The *ambassiatours* (Thembassadours B, Theem-bassatourys C) || to Troye streyght thei (*om.* B) wente, 4802.

*Thembassadours* (The embassadourys C) || ben answered for fynal, 4807.

Theschaunge (The chaunge C) of *prisoners* (presoneris C) || and al this nede, 4808.

O ye *loueres* (-ers B, -eris C) || that heyhe vpon the whiel, 4985.

So gan the *peynes* || here hertes for to twyste, 5791 (peyne B, peine D; ἄλλως C †). (No note in Austin.)

Of al the (that B) *londes* (lond BC, londe D) || the sonne on shyneth shene, 5901. (No note in Austin.)

His *enemys* (enemyis C) || and in here hondes falle, 6615.

Note.—In some of the lines just quoted it will be observed that the reading is doubtful.—In 7397, read *sykes sore* ‖ *adoun* rather than *sore sykes* ‖ *adoun*. In 8154, the question is between *steppes* ‖ and *sëst* or *steppe* and *sëest* : the latter scansion gives a more satisfactory line. *Knees* is of course a monosyllable in 3025 (*knees* ‖ *and*) and 3922 (*knee* ‖ *and*).

(ii.) *-es* gen. and adverbial :

Shal han me holly *heres* ‖ til that I deye, 5106 (C †). See § 74.

Ther *ayenis* (ayeyn B, ayen C) ‖ answere I thus anoon, 1454.

Thenk here *ayens* (ayenis B) ‖ whan that the sturdy ok, 2465.

Or she vs bothe *at ones* ‖ or that ye wende (at onys ‖ or), 2961.

So as we shulle *togederes* ‖ euere dwelle, 5984 (shal togideres B, That we schal eueremore togedere d[w]elle C).

He hadde in herte *alweys* (alweyes B, alwey C) ‖ a manere drede, 6415.

Note.—The variability of form in adverbs in *-es* (§ 91) renders most of the examples given above of little significance in the question of the extra syllable.

V. *-ed* in the perfect participle ; *-ede* in the preterite :

Ful wel *beloued* / ‖ and wel men of here tolde, 131.

As he was *woned* (wont BC) ‖ and of hym self (seluyn C) to (*om.* C) iape, 3397. Cf. *woned* ‖ *to*, 4697. See § 121, III

Thow *mysbeleued* ‖ and (*om.* C) enuyous folye, 3680.

For when men han wel *cried* ‖ thau wol they rowne (let hem roune C), 5249.

That ben *purueyed* ‖ but nedely as they seyn, 5668 (not in C).

That cen(e) hym *louede* (loued B) ‖ that loked on his face, 1071.

And ay the peple *cryede* (cryed C) ‖ here cometh oure ioye, 1728.

I that *leuede* (hauede C) ‖ yn lust and in plesaunce, 5155.

Ne (And B) though I *lyuede* (-ed B) ‖ vnto the worldes ende, 6242.

Note 1.—In 6947 *werreyed* should doubtless be read (*warped* A, *werred* BC, *hast me werryhed* D, *haste me werreide* G) : *How thow me hast* werreyed ‖ *on* (om. DG) *euery syde*. (Austin makes no note.)

Note 2.—Wherever the pret. sg. of *answeren* occurs in the form *answèred* before cæsura and the word after the cæsura begins with a vowel or weak *h*, we may read rather *answèrde* than *answèred* : there is then no question of the extra syllable (see, *e.g.*, 3767, 3974, 4019, 5351, 6777, 7491. 7533). For *answèrede* ‖, cf. 4498, 5042, 5783, 7638 ; for *answèrde* ‖, cf. 1961 (?). 6686.

In one line, however, the retention of a light extra syllable before the cæsura seems to be unavoidable, if the reading of the best MSS. is to be followed :

Nentendement[1] *considere*[2] ‖ ne[3] tonge[4] telle, 6358.[5]

[1] So AECp. John's Selden B 24 ; *Nintendement* Durh. ; *Ne entendement* D Phillipps 8252 ; *Ne* † *mendement* B.

[2] So ABCp. John's ; *considre* D, *consider* Durh. Seld. ; *concider* Ph. ; *counsil red* † E.

[3] So ABDCp. Durh. Seld. Ph. ; *or* E John's.

[4] *tuny* Durh. ; *tong* Seld.

[5] *Non* † *tendement nor tonge considere or tell* Harl. 2392. Leaf cut out of C.

Cf. And I ther (*om.* C) *after* / || gan rome (roman B) to and fro, 1601 (*rome* I).

Less certain than 6358 (for slurs are easy) are :

What wonder *is it* (ist C) || though he of me haue ioye, 1834. For *ist* see § 143.

And yn here *bosom* || the lettre doun he thraste, 2240 (And in her bosom doun the lettre cast D ; no note in Austin).

Ye bothe for the *seson* || and for the feste, 168 (BC omit the second *for* ; D reads *and eke for* ; no note in Austin).

O olde *enholsom* || and mysbyleued (myslyued B, mysbeleuyd C, mysleuyd D ; no note in Austin) man, 4992.

Compare :

And to *Pandarus* (-ris C, Pandare DCp. John's) || he (*om.* B) held vp bothe his hondes, 2059.

But to *Pandarus* (-dare BD) || alwey was (was alwey C) his recours (cours † D), 2437 (no note in Austin.)

And thow *Symoys* || that as an arwe clere, 6210.

Note.—In 2059, 2437, we are of course to read *Pandàre* (with elision) : on the forms of this name, see § 139.—Chaucer apparently pronounced *Symoys* as a dissyllable with the accent on the ultima, making *oy* a diphthong (§ 140).

## § 145. Some interest attaches to the treatment of the following unaccented final syllables before the cæsura :

(1) Consonant + *-le, -me, -ne, -re ;* (2) *-ne, -re,* preceded by weak *-e-* ; (3) *-el, -en, -er ;* (4) *-we* (*-ewe, -owe, -ow*) ; (5) *-y, -ye.* When one of these syllables stands before a cæsura which is followed by an unstressed syllable beginning with a vowel or weak *h*, it is of course easy to scan the line as a normal verse by depriving of syllabic value (by elision, syncope, or slurring) the syllable (or syllables) immediately preceding the cæsura. Thus in *He seyde he haddo a feuer* || *and ferde amys, feuer* may syncopate the vowel of the final syllable ; in *He seyde o lettre* || *a blysful destine, lettre* may elide its final *-e ;* in *But like a dredful louere* || *he seyde this, louere* may syncopate one *e* and elide the other, and so on. On the other hand, it may be maintained that the preferable way to scan such verses is to admit the extra syllable before the cæsura.

Note.—I have used the terms syncope and elision above merely because they are short and convenient. In strictness, we cannot speak of *lettre* as eliding its *-e* or of *feuer* as syncopating its *-e*, unless we are ready to maintain that Chaucer's ordinary pronunciation of *lettre* was really *lettre* and not *letter* or *letr* and that his ordinary pronunciation of *feuer* was really *feu-er* and not *feure* or *feur* : and these are theses which few would

undertake to demonstrate. Exactly what the quality of the "extra syllable" would be in each case, if the verse is to be scanned so as to admit an extra syllable, is of course also a question that depends on the normal Chaucerian pronunciation of the words in hand. See the remark of Skeat, *Prioresses Tale*, 4th ed., p. lxii, and cf. § 136.

I. Consonant + *-le*, *-me*, *-ne*, *-re*. (For *heuene*, see II., below.)

Variations in spelling are seldom recorded.

For al be that his *moeble* || *is* hym by-raft, 6122.

Among the *peple* || *as* who seyth alwed is, 3110. Cf. 1731, 4845.

In thilke large *temple* || *on* euery syde, 185. Cf. 3382.

Out of the *temple* || *al* esilyche he wente, 317. Cf. 162.

Withinne the *temple* || *he* went hym forth pley[i]nge, 267. Cf. 5609 (in which insert, with Cp. John's, *al* before *allone*).

The[r]for a *title* || *he* gan hym for to borwe, 488.

Vs from *visible* || *and* inuysible foon, 8229.

Ne I nyl not *rakle* || *as* for to greuen here, 4484.

Note 1.—A remarkable line is 7186: *Charitable / estatlyche / lusty and fr* (see the variants given in § 146, I).

Note 2.—In 3031 C, for *meràkele* || *I*, read *meruayle* || *I*.

That to myn hertis *botme* (*om.* † A) || *it* is i-sownded, 1620 B (botome it is foundit † C).

And nere it that I *wilne* || *as* now tabreggo, 3137.

Into a *chaumbre* || *and* fond how that he lay, 1641. Cf. 5394 (?).

Into the grete *chambre* || *and* that yn hye, 2797. Cf. 5016.

And to the *chambre* || *here* (the C) wey than (*om.* C) han thei nomen, 6877.

Right as oure first[e] *lettre* || *is* now an a, 171.

And seyde *lettre* || *a* blysful destene, 2176. Cf. 2232, 7761 (?).

At writynge of this *lettre* || *I* was on lyue, 7732. Cf. 2146, 2178.

Note 3.—In 2091 the sense seems to make *A lettre* || *in which I wolde here telle*[n] *how* imperative in preference to *A lettre in which* || *I*. So in 7963:

*Youre lettre* || *and how that ye requeren me*. Cf.
*The poudre in which myn herte ybrend shal torne*, 6672.

In feith youre *ordre* || *is* ruled in good wyse, 336.

For pity of myn *aspre* || *and* cruwel peyne, 5509.

Note 4.—In *That called was Cassandre ek al aboute*, 7814, *ek* is by no means a secure reading. In 2314 the position of the cæsura is dubious:

*Of iaspre vpon a quysshon gold ybete.*

Ye may the *bettre* || *at* ese of herte abyde, 6013.

And gan to *motre* || *I* not what trew[e]ly (-ely BC), 1626.

And if that yow *remembre* || *I* am Calkas, 4735.

I shal wel *suffre* || *vnto* the tenthe day, 6260.

For *euere*, *neuere*, *lenere*, *delynere*, see under II., below.

II. *-eue, -ere.* (Some of the words under this heading are here considered rather because they are spelled *-ere* in good MSS. than because they have any right to both e's.) Variations in spelling are seldom recorded.

It was an *heuene* || *vpon* hym for to se, 1722. Cf. 4093 (A †).
Thou hast in *heuene* || *ybrought* (brouȝt C) my soule at reste, 4441.
It was an *heuene* || *his* wordes for to here, 4584.
And seyde he hadde a *feuer* || *and* ferd (ferde al C) amys, 491.
Sey that thi (*om.* C) *feuer* || *is* wont the for (*om.* C) to take, 2605.
As of a *feuere* || *or* othere gret(e) sykuesse, 4055. For the spelling of the word (which rhymes with *leuere* inf.), see § 18.
Forwhi to euery *louere* || *I* me excuse, 1097.
But as a dredful *louere* || *he* seyde this, 2130 (louère || seyde he C).
That hadde I *leuere* || *euerych* for sorwe dye, 2594. (Or, *euerych* ||.)
Me were *leuere* || *a* thousand fold to dye, 3416. See § 64.
Amonges alle these *othere* || in general, 893.
Here to *delyuere* || *I* holden haue my pes, 4762.
He spak and called *euere* || *yn* his compleynte, 541 (euere he callyd / C). (Or,—*called* ||?)
I who seygh *euere* || *a* wysman faren so, 5749. (Or,—*wysman* ||.)
Ne herd I *neuere* || *and* what that was his mone, 1643. Cf. 1522, 2954 (*neuere* || *how*), 4375, 4763 (?).
I may not slepe *neuere* || *a* Mayes morwe, 2183. Cf. 2623, 6213, 6317 (?), 7198.
They speken || but they bente *neuere* || his bowe, 1946.

III. *-el, -en, -er.* (For *bettre*, see I.; for *feuer, feuere*, see II.)

But tho bygan a *lytel* || *his* herte vnswelle, 6577 (his herte a lite B).
For goddes *speken* || *in* amphibologies, 6068.
For thei *proceden* (-e B, -yn C) || *of* thi malencolye, 6723.
And thus thei (*om.* C) *wolden* (-e BC) || *han* brought hem self a lofte, 915.
For what to *speken* (-e B, spek C) || *and* what to holden inne, 387.
Or nyl not *heren* || *or* trowen how it ys(se), 1013 (here / B, heryn C).
And gan to *casten* (caste B) || *and* rollen vp and down, 1744.
Shal I not *louen* (-e B) || *in* cas yf that me lyst (*l.* leste), 1843.
Let no wight *rysen* (rise B) || *and* heren of oure speche, 3598 (Let hem not rysyn and heryn oure speche C).
As for to *loken* (looke B, loke C) || *vpon* an old romaunce, 3822.
And thus shal Troye *turnen* (torne B, turne C) || *in* (to B, tyl C) asshen dede, 4781.

Ne koude he sen her *laughen* (-e B) || *or* make (-en B) ioye, 7144 (hyre se laughe ne make C).

For which she may yet (3it may C) *holden* (-e BC) || *al* here lyfleste, 7554.

Who shal now *trowen* (-e BC) || *on* ony other (*l.* othes *with* BC) me, 7626.

And art now *fallen* (-e BC) || yn som deuocioun, 555.

Til crowes feet ben *growen* (grow B) || *vnder* youre eye, 1188 (hem waxen *for* ben growen C).

Thanne yf I ne hadde *spoken* (speke C) || *as* grace was, 5895.

Criseyde *comen* || *and* therwith ban he synge, 6867.

To berf *vnknowen* (onknowe C) || of folk that weren wyse, 7912.

Note 1.—The perfect participles of the verbs *sleen* and *seen* have not been taken into account (see § 122. XII., XIII.)

Note 2.—With regard to the probability that elided *-e* should be read, wherever possible, instead of *-en*, see § 136, *c*.

My dere *brother* || *I* may the do no more, 8094. But the weight of MS. authority is for *brother deere* (*dere*): so BCp. John's. C is cut out.

I mene as loue (-yn C) an *other* || *in* this mene (*om.* C) while (wyse C), 3618.

And radde it *ouer* || *and* gan the lettre folde, 2170 (ἄλλως C).

IV. *-we*, etc.:

A *morwe* || *and* to his neces paleys sterte, 2179.

To bere the wel to *morwe* (-w C) || *and* al is wonne, 2583. Cf. 3690 (*l*).

He straught a *morwe* || *vnto* his nece wente, 3394. Cf. 7555.

Graunted on the *morwe* || *at* his requeste, 7312.

That neuere was yn *sorwe* || *or* (or in C) som distresse, 641. Cf. 530 B (right reading), 3932, 4527, 5171, 5541, 6540, 7405.

So lef this *sorwe* || *or* platly he wol deye, 5586. Cf. 1, 5743, 6821, 6895, 6921, 7012, 8107.

He was no *narwe* (harde C) || *ymaked* (ymasked B, imaskid C) and yknet, 4576.

Gan hym *saluwe* (salue B, seluyn † C) || *and* womanly to ploye, 2753.

Saue a *pilwe* (-wo B, pillowe D, pilowe G) || *I* (*om.* C) fynde nought (nou3te elles G) tenbrace (to embrase C, to enbrace D, to embrace G), 6587. Read probably *pillow* || rather than *pilwe* || (which makes the verse 9-syl.).

V. *-y*, *-ye*:

Wher is my *lady* || *into* (to B) hire folk seyde he, 1164 (C cut out).

This knoweth *many* || *a* wys and worthi wyght, 1265.

That Ector with [ful] (ful B) *many* || *a* bold baroun, 4695 (C cut out.)
Thourgh girt with *many* || *a* (*om.* BC) wyd and blody wounde, 5289.
Ye god wot and fro *many* || *a* worthi knyght, 6696 (C *has* so hath *for* fro).
I shal therof as *fully* (ful BC) || excuse (-en Cp.) me, 3652. *Fully* is probably right.

Note.—Cæsura has been assumed between *many* and *a* in 1265, 4695, 5289, 6696, with some hesitation.

By sort and by *augurye* || *ek* trewëly (trewly B), 4778.
In *consistorie* || *among* the Grekes soone, 4727 (C cut out).
For which the grete *furye* || *of* his penaunce, 6091. Cf. 4915 BC.
In *furye* || *as* doth he Ixion || in helle, 6575 (ἄλλως C$^{c}$).
And god *Mercurye* || *of* me now woful wrecche, 6684.
Be *necessarie* || *al* seme it not therby, 5682 (C cut out). *Necessaire* is also possible (see § 51).
For that I *farye* || *is* al for wykked speche, 7973.

Here may be put the interesting verse:
In to the gardyn go *we* || *and* ye shal here, 2199.

### Verses lacking the Unaccented Part of the First Foot ("9-syllable verses").

§ 146. The occurrence in Chaucer of heroic verses lacking the unaccented part (the *senkung*) of the first foot can no longer be doubted.

Such verses may be conventionally called "nine-syllable verses" even when, from ending in a feminine rhyme, they actually contain ten syllables. The material here collected is arranged in four lists.

List I. (meant to be exhaustive) contains those verses of the *Troilus* which are either certainly nine-syllable verses or which must at least be seriously reckoned with before being otherwise scanned. Some of the verses in I. may easily be emended so as to run regularly, and in some of these a variant reading actually anticipates the emendation; but it seemed better to include in I. a few verses that might have been put in II. than to run the risk of excluding any which might with an appearance of reason claim a place in the list. Under the heading I*b* are collected a number of verses which (in MS. A) might be scanned as of nine syllables, but may better be scanned as of ten.

List II. contains verses which in A must be read as nine-syllable verses, but which are easily corrected by a comparison of MSS.

List III. contains a number of verses in which A is restored to order by the insertion of a single letter (or syllable) required or justifiable by grammar or usage. Some other MS. or MSS. will usually be found to furnish the required form. At the end of this list are given references for a number of similar lines from other MSS.

List IV. contains specimens of lines absolutely unmetrical in A, but curable in the same manner as the lines in III.

For the lines quoted at length in these four lists, ABCDG have been used throughout, and all the significant Cp. and John's variants recorded in Mr. Austin's collation have been registered. When no note is made of the reading of Cp. or John's, it is to be inferred that Mr. Austin records no such variants.

## I.

For (ffor why D) it were (were here C) a long (-e B) disgression (discrecioun BG, disgrecioun C, digressioun D), 143 A. Mr. Austin notes the reading of Harl. 2392 (For whi it were of to long discusciouu), but gives no other variants. The reading of either C or D makes a normal verse : *here* may have been accidentally dropped on account of its similarity to the preceding word *were*. *Fŏr it wèrĕ || a lòng*, with lyrical cæsura, hiatus, and dissyllabic *were* (§ 135, ε) is very unlikely.

Of this kynges sone of which I tolde, 261 ABCG. D reads *As of*, etc.

Shewed (Schewede C) wel that men myght (myȝtyn C) yn here gesse, 286 ABG (She † shewyd D).

First to hide (-en BCp., -yn C) his desir in (al in D) muwe, 381 (First he hid his desire in mewe G; in the margin of G, in another hand, are the words "al for to hide," a reading which, with the change of *hide* to *hiden*, would make the verse regular).

That tho (al tho D) Grekes as tho (*om.* G) deth hym dredde, 483 (That the grekys hym as of the deth dredde C; Harl. 2392 seems to read *aH* for *the* before *Grekes* : no other note in Austin).

That the hote fyr of loue hym brende (for brende G), 490 (stanza om. in D).

I wole partyn with the al thyn peyne, 589 ABCDG.

Loue ayens the (*om.* C) which (wheche G) who-so defendeth, 603. *Lonë* would cause hiatus: besides, this word is usually monosyllabic (§ 8).

I that haue yn loue so ofte assayed (asaied G, asayde B), 616.

Dorstestow (Dorestow G, Trist thow D) that I telle (tolde BCp.

John's, told hyre C, told it D, tolde it G) in hire eere, 767. Probably read *tolde it* (or *hire*).

Twenty wynter that (er that G) his lady wyste (wist D, not † wyst C), 811.

Of (And of CDE) that word toke (took Cp. John's) hede (hed CDG) Pandarus, 820. *And of* is perhaps best.

Were it for my suster al thi sorwe, 860 ABCDG.

Next (-e B) the foule (foul D) netle rough and thikke, 941.

Alderfirst (Aldirfirst Cp. John's) his purpos for to wynne, 1062 ABDG (C cut out).

Of the sege (segee B) of thebes while (whil BD) hem leste, 1169 AG (C cut out).

How (How that G) the bisshop (bysshope G) as the bok kan (gan DG) telle (telleth *for* can telle C), 1189. G makes the measure normal.

Now (And Cp.) good (goode BG, myn C, my good D John's Harl. 2392) em for goddes loue I prey, 1394. Read *goodë em* (with hiatus) or *my goode em.*

Ther ayenis (ayeyn B, ayen C, ayens D, ayens G, ayeins Cp.) answere I thus anoon, 1454.

For his loue which (-e B, wheche G, *om.* D) that vs bothe made (made B), 1585 (CD have *loue of god* instead of *his loue*). If ten Brink's "lyrical cæsura" be allowed, the same may be read *Fòr his lòuë* ‖ *which thàt*, etc.; but *loue* is seldom a dissyllable (§ 8).

Who sey euere (-er D) or this so (or this euere so C) dul a man, 1633 ABG. If ten Brink's "lyrical cæsura" be allowed, the verse may be read *Whò sey èuer* ‖ *or thìs*, etc. (for *euër* before a vowel, see § 90).

And (ȝe CD, A E) lord (-e E) he (she D, how he C, as he G, so he E) was glad and wel bygon, 1682. No doubt a word has dropped out in the best MSS. between *lord* and *he*. Cp. John's appear to agree with A.

Made loue withinne (within D) hire (her hert D) for to myne, 1762 ABCG. With lyrical cæsura and dissyllabic *louë* (see last example but one), the verse might run *Màdë* (or *Màdest*) *lòuë* ‖ *withìnne hire*, etc. The reading of D (which would make the verse normal if *herte* be substituted for *hert*) lacks authority.

I am one (oon BCp., on CG) the (of the C) fairest (fayreste BC) out of (ought of G, with-outyn D) drede, 1831. The reading of C looks like a corruption in the interest either of modesty or the more usual

idiom, but may be right: at any rate, it decidedly helps the metre. *Fayrèstë* does not help much.

Fro the skarmuch (scarmich B, charmys C, scarmysshe D, scarmuch G) of the whiche I tolde, 2019. *Frò the skarmùch[ë]* || *òf the*, etc., would be highly improbable and no great improvement.

Sire (Sir B) my nece wole (wol B, wele C, wel G) do wel by the, 2042. In spite of the fact that the vocative *sire* is usually monosyllabic in Chaucer, we should doubtless read *sìrë* here and save the verse.

Of (Ry3t of C, Right of D) myn owene (own B, owne D) hond (-e BD) write here (hire C, her D) right (*om.* D) now (how D), 2090 AG. Perhaps *Right* should be restored (cf. 2140).

Were hise (his BDG) nayles poynted (-ede C, -es B) neuere so sharpe, 2119.

Of (Ry3t of C, Right of D) here (hire BC Cp., her D, hir G) hond (-e B) and yf that (*om.* D) thow nylt non, 2140. If *right* be rejected, *here* may perhaps be regarded as a dissyllable (see § 135, I.). As to *right*, cf. 2090.

He song as who seyth (seith BDG, seth C) sumwhat (se what G) I brynge, 2394. *Seyèth* will hardly do. One is tempted to combine G with the other MSS. and read: He song as who seyth se sumwhat I brynge.

If (3if it C, If it D) youre (3our D) wille (wil D) be (were D) as I yow preyde, 2687 ABG. *Yourë* is unlikely (§ 74). The insertion of *it* (with CD) seems best.

Pleynly (-lich B, -liche GCp.) al (*om.* D) at ones they (al thei D) here (her D) hyghten (behighten E), 2708. Hardly *Pleynlìchë àl*, etc., with hiatus?

Dred[e]les (Dredeles BCCp., And dredles E) it clere was (cler was C, was clere D) in the wynd, 3368 AG. *And dred[e]les*, which would make the verse normal, has only the indifferent authority of E.

With a (*om.* G) certayn of here (her D, hir G, hire Cp.) owene (own B, owne D) men, 3438. *Herë owenë* seems highly improbable (see § 74).

Heren noyse of reynes (rayn D, reyn G, reyne Cp.) nor of thondre, 3504 ABC. *Hèren noy3së* || *of reynes*, with lyric cæsura and hiatus, does not commend itself as likely.

Shul (Shal B, Schal C, Shul DG) youre wommen slepen wel and softe, 3509. *Yourë* is improbable (§ 74). Perhaps we should read *shullen* (§ 123, VII.).

Reson wil (wol B, wole C, wyl D, wole G) not that I speke of (on C) slep (slep BG, slepe CD), 4250. No note in Mr. Austin's collation, though it seems incredible that Cp. John's have the absurd *slep* of A. One might conceivably scan: *Reson wil not that I ‖ spèken of slèp.*

Thonkynge (Touchinge D, Thankyng G) loue he (she BCp.) so wel here (hir D) bysette, 4394. *Thònkynge lòuë ‖ he sò wel*, etc., with lyric cæsura, hiatus, and dissyllabic *loue*, is not probable. *Thonkỳngè lòue* is perhaps possible, but *-yngë* in the interior of the verse is highly suspicious, whether in noun or participle (§§ 10, 120, III).

With the shete and wax for shame al (*om.* D) red, 4412 ABCG. Lyrical cæsura would give *With the shètë ‖ and wàx*, etc.

At whiche (At which B, Atte which D, Atte whiche G) day was taken Antenor, 4712 (C cut out). An unbearable verse if scanned with nine syllables. Taking a hint from DG may we perhaps read *Attę* for (*At the*) *whichë day?*

Which that drawen (drawn B) forth the sonnes char (-e BDG), 4546.

Loue hym made (made hym G) al (alle G) prest to don hyre bydde, 4824 ABCD. *Louë hym* is very doubtful.

Ector (H[ec]tor D) which (-e G, with C) that wel (-e BDG) the Grekis herde, 4838.

Of (O C) this (thilke D, ye ilke C) woful soule that thus crieth, 4979 ABG. Perhaps we should read *Of thilke; ye ilke* (C) is no doubt due to confusion between *y* and þ.

I that leuede (hauede C, leued D, loued G) yn lust (loue C) and in plesaunce, 5155 (stanza not in Cp.). With lyrical cæsura this would run *I that lèuede ‖ yn lùst*, etc.

Helpeth hardy man (men C) to (vnto B) his emprise, 5263 ADG.

Wende (-en BG) that she wepte and syked (syȝede C) sore, 5378.

By which (whiche D, swiche G) reson (resoun Cp.) men may wel y-se (I se John's), 5710 AB (not in C).

Of here (hire B, hir G, *om.* D) teris and the herte vnswelle (vnswelt D, gan vnswelle G), 5808. Shall we read *herë* (here possessive plural, see § 74)? Emendation (with the help of G) is easy: Of teris and the (or *here*) herte gan vnswelle.

And ther (there CG) lat (lete D) vs spoken of oure wo, 5906 AB. *Therë* seems to be inevitable: the word is emphatic (§§ 89, 135, *η*).

May ye not (nouȝte G, not than C) ten (x D) dayes thanne (then G, *om* CD) abyde, 5990 AB. Read *mowen* for *may* (§ 123, VIII.)?

Of vs sely Troians (Troian D, Troilus † C) but yf routhe (ȝe roughte † G), 6152 AB.

Thries (Thrieȝ Cp.) hadde (had DG) al (alle BD, aH G) with his (hise Cp., hir John's) bemes clere (*so* ABG Cp. Durham, shene D Seldon, cleene John's, clene Phillipps), 6372 (C cut out). *Thrès hàdde* ‖ *al with*, with lyrical cæsura and hiatus, is unlikely. It is barely possible that *allë* (plural, referring to *snowes* in the next line) is right, and that we may read *Thrès hadde àllë* ‖ *with his*, etc.

Passynge (Passing D) al (alle G) the valey (valeye B) fer (ferre G) withoute, 6430 AC.

Thaqueyntaunce (The aqueyntau[n]se C, The acquecintaunce D, The acqueȳntaunce G) of these (this BC, thes D) Troians (Troyans B, Troylus † C, Troiaunes D) to (for to C) chaunge, 6485. Though C alone has *for to chaunge*, yet that seems to be the correct reading.

Hath his lady gon (gone D, forgon C, gone ȝee G) a fourtenyght, 6697 AB.

Go (So D) we pleye (pley CD) vs in som (sommo DG) lusty rowte, 6765 AB. With lyrical cæsura we might scan *Gò we pleyen* ‖ *vs in*, but it will not do to separate the reflexive *us* from its verb.

Charitable (Scharite † abele C) estatlyche (statlyche C, estalich † D, estateliche G) lusty (lyȝt lusti C) and (*om.* DCp. John's) fre, 7186 AB. With lyrical cæsura the line might run: Chàritàblë ‖ estàtlych(e) lust*y* and (or om. *and*) fre: *charitablë estatlych* would not be a real hiatus. It satisfies the ear quite as well, however, to elide *-e* in *charitable* and make the cæsura after *estatlyche:* we have then a pretty sonorous 9-syl. verse.

Tendre (-dry C) herted (herte C) slydynge (-yng CD) of corage, 7188 ABG.

Trewe (Trew B) as stel in ech condicion, 7194 ACDG. Hiatus?

Sholde (-en BGCp. John's) spille a quarter of a (1 D) tere, 7243 AC. With lyrical cæsura the verse might run *shòlden spillen* ‖ *a quàrter*, etc.

Trusteth wel (-e G) and vnderstondeth me, 7250 ABCD. An easy emendation would be to insert *me* before *wel*.

Polymyte (Polymyȝt C, Polymites D) and many a (*om.* C) man to (al to C) skathe, 7301 ABG. Shall we read *Polȳmytès* ‖ *and*? Cf. *Polȳmytès*, 7851 f, rhyming with *Ethȳoclès* and *Thebès* (§ 139).

Graunted on the morwe (morowe G) at his requeste, 7312 ABCD.

For to speke (-en BCp., -yn John's) with hym at the leste (atte leste BG), 7313 ACD.

For to sen (se CD, sene G) yow in aduersite, 7116 AB.

Ferthere (Ferther B, Further D, Ferther G) than (thanne B) this (the BCDG) story (storie B) wol (wele C) deuyse, 7457.

I comende hire wysdom (witte D) by myn hood, 7514 ABCG.

And that (that that C) Ioues (-ys C, Ioue D) of (hadde of C) his purueyaunce, 7809 ABG. Is it possible that *that that* is right? With *that Iouys* cf. the well-known *that god*. *Hadde* (C) is wrong.

Of the (a G) stronge (strong Cp.) bor with (with his C) tuskes (toschhis C) stoute, 7817 ABD.

Wrak (Venged D, Wroughte G) here in a wonder cruwel wyse, 7831 ABC.

Thorugh (Thorwgh B, Thurgh D, Thoroughe G, Of C) his (*om.* D, hire † C) moder wol I yow (*om.* GCp.) not (naught Cp.) telle, 7846.

At (Atte G) a scarmych (-e B, scharmoth C, scarmissh D, scarmusch G) eche of hem slowh other, 7871.

Peyneth here on ladyes for to lye, 7887 ABCDG. *Pèyneth hèrë* ‖ *on làdyes*, etc., with lyrical cæsura, hiatus, and dissyllabic *here*, is very improbable.

Of his loue I haue seyd (seide G) as (that D) I kan, 8132 AB. *Òf his lòuë* ‖ *haue*, etc., with lyrical cæsura, hiatus, and dissyllabic *loue* is very improbable.

## I *b*.

Some lines in A that might perhaps be scanned as of nine syllables may better be scanned as of ten.

But the Troiànë (troyan BCG, troyanys D) gestes as they felle, 145. For *Troiànë*, see §§ 59, *b*, 70.

Al this Pandàrë ‖ yn his herte (-t D) thoughte, 1063. *Pandare* is the reading of ABDEGCp. John's Phillipps; Durh. has *Pandar*; Harl. 2392 has *Al this tho Pandare in herte thoht*; cut out in C. Hiatus may be avoided by reading *Pandàrus* (cf. §§ 126, 139). Cf. *Pàndarè* ‖ *I*, 1014, where we may read *Pàndarùs* ‖ *I*.

Cryseyde (Criseyda B, Cresseide C, Creseide G, Cryseyd anon D) gan al his (the D) chere aspien, 1734. Read *Crysèÿdè*, or rather *Crysèÿdà* (§ 140); cf. 2509, 2729, below.

Al (As D) wolde (wold BD) I that noon (no man CD) wyste (weste C, wist DG) of this thought, 1830. Unless *no man* be preferred to *noon*, read, with hiatus, Al wolde I that noon wystë of, etc. (rather than *wolde I* and *wyste of*) (cf. § 126).

Criseyda (Criseyde B, Crisseyde C, Creseide G, Of Cryseyd D) my

frend he seyde (seyd D) yis, 2509. Mr. Austin's notes the reading of E: Criseide my frende pandare he seid sir yis, but gives no other note on the line. Read *Crisèÿdà* and cf. 1734 above, 2729 below.

So heynous (haynous DG) that men myghte (might D, myght G) on it spete, 2702 ABC. Read, of course, *hèÿnoùs* (§ 140).

Criseyda (Crisseide C, Criseide D, Creseide G) my lady that is here, 2729 AB. Read *Crisèÿdà*, and cf. 1734, 2509 above.

Now thannë (than B, *om.* DG) thus (this D) quod she I wolde (wold D) hym preye, 2966.

So secret (secrete BD, discret G) and of (in D) swych (such DG) obeysaunce (obseruaunce D), 3320. Read *sècret* and *obèysaùnce* (§ 140).

For myne (my E) wordes here and euery part, 4173 (stanza om. in DG). Read perhaps *mynë* (§ 74).

Love that with an (a E) holsom (holesome E) alliaunce, 4588 ABCG (not in D).

Loue that knetteth (endytyth C, kennyth E) lawe (law E) of (*om.* E, and BCp.) companye, 4590.

Nought (Nouȝte G) rought (rouȝte CG) I wheder (whidere B, whider G, whedirwardes D, whedyr that C) thow woldest (wilt D) me (*om.* D) stere, 4944. The readings of C and D lack authority. A may perhaps be read: Nought rought I wheder thow ‖ woldest me stere, (cf. ten Brink's remark on the separation of subject from verb by cæsura, § 313), or, with hiatus and with syncope of *-est* in *woldest*: Nought rought[ë] I ‖ wheder thow woldest me stere.

Euery thing (thynge B, thinge G) that sowned into badde (harde † G), 6338 AD (C cut out).

In a vessèl that men clepeth (clepe D, callyn C) an (*om.* C) vrne, 6674. One has little temptation to read *vèssel* and *clepeth*.

Here nedede (neded BDG, nedit C) no (none CG Cp., non John's) teris for to borwe, 7089. As a 9-syl. line, the verse would be unendurable, and *nonë* is surely not Chaucerian; it is probably best to read *nèlëdèn* (plural influenced by *teris*, which, indeed, may even be regarded as the subject, *for to borwe* serving as a sort of complement). Cf. § 132.

Yong fresche (fresshe BG, frosch C, freisshe D) strong and (*om.* C) hardy (*om.* C) as (as a D) lyon, 7193. Read *fresshë*, by-form of *fressh* (§ 49), though this is the only case in which the form occurs in the *Troilus*.

I fynde ek (-e G) in storyes (storyies C, the stories B) ellys (elt C)

where, 7407. An impossible 9-syl. verse: read *fynalë ek* (with hiatus) or *the storyes* (with B).

How myght (myȝte CG) I (*om.* B) than (thanne C, then G) do (don BC Cp. John's, done G) quod Troylus, 7652 AD. Read *thannë don* || *quod* (§ 88).

Euerych (-y CD, -ich G) ioye or (*om.* D) ese (crese D) in (is in C, in to D) his contrarye, 7742 A.

Tydeus sone that doun (-e DG) descended is, 7877. Read *Tydëus* (§ 141).

Come (Com B) I wole (wolde C, wil D) but yet in swich disioynt, 7981.

Lines which in A might be read as of nine syllables as they stand, but which in that MS. are so corrupt as not to make sense (*e. g.*, 400, 1928, 2720, 2925, 6326; cf. 2575, 5206) are of course not considered.

II.

In this list are included a number of verses in which A has nine syllables, but which are easily corrected by comparison of MSS.

For loue of the whan thou tornest ofte, 196 ADG. BCCp. have *ful* before *ofte*.

Or hastow remors of conscience, 554 A. BCDG have *som* before *remors*. Mr. Austin notes that Harl. 2392 has *som*, but registers no other variants in this line.

If thei (men D John's) ferd (-e BGCp., seide John's) yn (with D) loue as men don here, 1124 (C cut out). BDGCp. John's have *that* after *if*, which restores the metre.

Ywys vncle quod she grant mercy, 1324 ABG. CD have *myn* before *vncle*. Mr. Austin notes that Harl. 2392 and Harl. 4912 have *myn*, but registers no other variants in this verse.

In which ye may se youre face a morwe, 1490 ABCD. GCp. John's read *which* (wheche G) *that* for *which*.

Eke I knowe of long (-e BDG) tyme agon, 1807. Read *And ek*: BCDCp. John's have the *And*.

Chese (And chese BECp., And sches C, And ches John's, And these † G) if thow wolt synge or (*om.* C) daunce (daunce synge G) or lepe, 2010. *And ches* is of course right.

Worth (-e C, Lepe E, worth thow BCp., worthe thou D, wurthe thou G) vp on a courser right a non, 2096. *Worth thow* is of course right.

But wel wot I (I wot C) yow (thow BG, thou D, that thow C) art now (*om.* D) yn (in a D) drede, 2589.

And hast lasse (the lesse D, the lasse GCp. John's) nede to (*om.* BD),

the to C) countrefete, 2617. Read *the lasse nede to* (or, possibly omit *to*).

He rong hem a (hem oute a ECp., hem out a G John's, hym oute a B) proces lyk a belle, 2700 AC (He rong out the processe as a belle D).

And lord so (so that BGCp. John's, how that C, so as D) his herte gan to quappe, 2899.

And to (And I to CEG, And y to D) han (have DG) right as yow lyst comfort, 2978 AB. Mr. Austin notes the reading of E, but registers no other variants in this line.

And what mischaunce (myschauns C, mischef yet D) in this world (o B) yet (ther D, ȝet ther BCp., yet ther John's, ȝet † or G) is (this † G), 3132. Read *yet ther is*.

How this (the Cp., is this CDE John's) candele in the (this G) straw (-e E) is (*om.* CDE Jn's.) falle (yfall D, I-falle John's, fall E), 3701. The right reading is: How is this candel in the straw yfalle.

That he cam (come C) there (ther BG) and that (that that Cp.) he was born, 3915. ABCDG all omit one of the *that*'s and Cp. seems to be the only MS. that has both of them; yet both are needed by the construction as well as by the metre.

So thenk (thynkith C, thinketh DE, thyng G, thynk that B, thenk that Cp.) thowgh (*om.* C) that I vnworthi be, 4128. *Thenk that though that* is probably right.

Were (ȝt were C, ȝit were D) it so that I wist (wiste BG, woste C) outrely (outerly B, outerely C, vttirly D, entirely G), 4328. Either *ȝet were* or *wistë* (with hiatus).

Who-so seth yow knoweth (knowe C) yow ful lite, 4410. BDGCp. John's have *O* before *who-so* (D reads: O ho seeth ȝou knoweth ȝou but a lite).

For wistow (wistist thou C, wystestow Cp. John's, wist thou D) myn herte (hert D) wel Pandare, 4486 ABG. *Wististow* is of course right.

Of here (his D) comynge (-yng DG) and (and ek CD, and eke G) of his (here D) also, 4517 AB.

That (They Jn's.) maden (makkeden B, makeden Cp. John's, madyn CD) the (alle the C, al the D) walles (wall C) of the toun, 4783 AG. *Makkeden* is doubtless right; *al* seems to be a scribe's insertion to make metre.

In o (oone D) thyng (-e B) were and (and in BCDGCp. John's) noon (none G) other wyght, 5070.

Nay (Nay nay D Harl. 2392) god wot (woote B, wote DG; *in* CE

John's Harl. 1912 *the line begins* Nay Pandarus *instead of* Nay god wot) nought (not C, nouth D, noȝte G) worth (worthi B) is al thi (this CD Harl. 2392) red, 5160. *Nay nay god wot* seems to be right. Cp. omits the stanza.

Quod (Quod the BG) the thridde (thrid G) I hope ywys (iwisse I hope D) that she, 5353 (C *reads* The threde answerede I, etc.).

Right a[s] (That right as BDCp. John's, That riȝte as G) when I wot ther is a thing, 5735 A (C cut out).

Com Pandare (Pandarus C, Pandar G) and (in and BGCp. John's) seyde as ye may here, 5747.

For myn honour yn swych (suche D, swiche G) auenture, 5991 AC. BGCp. John's Harl. 2392 have *an* after *swych*.

For (For when B, For whan DG, ffor whan Cp. ffor when John's) he saugh (saught John's) that she ne myghte (-t BD John's) dwelle, 6361 (C cut out).

Sauf a pilwe (pilwo B, pillowe D, pilowe G) I (*om.* C) fynde nought (not C, nauȝt elles G) tenbrace (to embrase C, to enbrace D, to embrace G), 6587. Read *pillow* rather than *pilwe* (cf. § 145, IV.).

For tohdresse (tendrenesse B John's, tendirnesse C, tendernesse Cp., tenderesse G, the tendirnesse D) how (-e G) shal she this (ek C, eke D) sustene, 6605.

That vnnethe (wel vnneth B, wel onethe C, weH vnnethe D, wole vnnethe G) it (vs D) don shal (schal don C, done shaH DG) vs (*om.* D) duresse, 6762.

As seyden bothe the (*om.* C) meste and (and ek BC, and eke DG) the (there C) leste, 6803.

Shal (Ne shal BD, Ne schalle G, He schal C) he (*om.* C) neuere thryue (-yn C, -en Cp. John's) out of drede, 7122.

How he may best with short (shortest BDG John's Harl. 2392, schort C) taryinge, 7137. Intolerable as a 9-syl. verse.

As konnyng (-e B) as (and as BCp. John's) parfit (-e BG, tharfit C, perfite D) and as kynde, 7333.

So wel (-e G) for hym self he (he for hym self BCp. John's, he for hym seluen G) spak (-e G) and seyde, 7396 ACD. *He for hym seluen* is no doubt right.

For she sory (so sory CDGCp. John's) was for (*om.* B) here vntrouthe, 7461.

But why (*om.* D) lest (lest that Cp. John's, liste that B, leste that D) this lettre founden were, 7965. Intolerable as a 9-syl. verse.

Other lines of a similar character, when the correction is certain on comparison of MSS., are the following (in some cases the verse begins with a word or syllable that we should expect to have no accent or ictus: these instances are marked by old-style verse numbers): 652, 690, 764, 1091, 1124, 1372, 1457, 1480, 1923, 1932, 2044, 2087, 2138, 2150, 2153, 2194, 2575, 2902, 3082, 3123, 3193, 3405, 3431, 3546, 3564, 3655, 3789, 3864, 4015, 4111, 4160, 4522, 4695, 4842, 5182, 5314, 5329, 5311, 5363, 5403, 5840, 6053, 6384, 6878, 7519, 7843, 7865, 7978, 8098; cf. 7368.

## III.

In some lines the insertion of a single letter (usually weak -e or -e- justified or required by grammar or usage) restores a normal line.

That *ought*[*ë*] (auȝte C, oughte John's, owghte Cp.) wel ben (wel to ben CG, be wele D) oure opynyoun, 710.

Stond *fast*[*ë*] (faste CCp.) for to good part (-e Cp.) hastow rowed, 962.

For *dred*[*ë*]*les* (dredeles CCp. John's) me were leuere (lever to DG) dye (dethe † C), 1027. Cf. 1270, 3844, 4738, 5940, 6156, 7245, 8103, 8118.

I *rought*[*e*] (roughte BCp. John's, rouȝte C, roght D) nought though that (*om.* C) she stode and herde, 1032.

To *good*[*e*] (goode BC) mot it turne of yow I mette, 1175 (see § 14).

In whom that (*om.* G) *al*[*le*] (alle Cp., euery DE), vertu lyst abounde, 1244 (C †). *Allë* is surely right, see § 80, III. (cf. especially 1848, 1918, 1930, 6311).

For *trew*[*e*]*ly* (treweliche B, trewely C, truly DG, trewelich Cp.) I hold it gret deynte, 1249. Cf. 7986.

Thus *gilt*[*e*]*les* (gilteles BCG) than haue ye fysshed faire, 1413. Cf. 7447.

O (B inserts *thou* above the line) cruel god o *dispitous*[*e*] (dispitouse B, dispituse C, dispetous G) Marte, 1520.

Ye *dout*[*e*]*les* (douteles CG, doutelees Cp., trewly B) quod she myn vncle dere, 1579 AD.

She *thought*[*e*] (thouȝte C) wel (ek C, ferst D) that (this C) Troylus persone, 1786.

Be *drynk*[*e*]*lees* (drynkeles CCp., drenkynlees B) for alwey as I gesse, 1803.

Men *moste*[*n*] (miste C, must D, most G) axe (axen C, ask D) of (at BCGCp.) seyntes if it is, 1979.

Quod Pandarus *lok*[*e*] (looke B, loke DG, loke that C), alwey ye (ȝe alwey C) fynde, 2194.

And *sent*[*e*] (sente Cp., sent to D) you this lettre here by me, 2208.

Out of *disdayn*[*e*]*s* (desdayns B, disdaynys C, disdeynous D, disdaynes GCp., desdaignes John's) prison but a lyte, 2302.

Al *soft*[*e*]*ly* (softely BCD) and thederwardes (thiderward BCCp., thedirward G, thidirward D) gan (gan he D) bende, 2335.

Yet of (for E) hym self (my selfe E) no thyng (-e B) nold I (ne wolde I BCp.) recche (ȝit of him self ȝit wolde I no thyng rech C, ȝit of him self wolde I nothyng recche G, D = A with *wold* for *nold*), 2558.

The line is restored by reading either *hym seluen* or *ne wolde I*.

And shortly made (makes B, mad C, made D, maked GCp. John's) eche (*om.* G) of (*om.* G) hem his fo, 2567. Read *maked* for *madë*.

*Tel*[*le*] (Telle G, Tel me CD) which (-e G) thow wylt of euerychone, 3254. Read either *tellë* (which is not so common as *tel*, see § 115) or *tel me*.

So *help*[*e*] (helpeth BEGCp., helpyth C, helpith D) to this work that is bygonne, 3577.

With (which † B) *pi*[*e*]*te* (piete BCp., pete C) so wel repressed is, 3875.

As she that *iust*[*e*] (iuste BCD) cause hadde hym to tryste, 4069.

Nought (Now C, Noo E) *swych*[*e*] (swiche B, such C, suche E) sorwful (soruful C, sorowful E) sykes as men make, 4203 (wanting in DG).

God *myght*[*e*] (myghte B, myȝte C, miȝt D, myght G) not a (oo D, o G) poynt my (of my D) ioyes eche, 4351.

Why nylt (nylte G) *thi* (thyn C, the John's, thou D) *self* (seluen BG John's, selue C, *om.* D) helpen (helpe to D, help to John's) don (doone D, to G) redresse, 5190. Read *thi seluen* (stanza om. in Cp.). Cf. 5253.

And *nam*[*e*]*ly* (namely BGD, namelich C) syn (sythe C, sithe D) ye two (ye bothe tuoo D) ben al oon, 5254. Cf. 6220.

Graunt (-e BG) mercy (mercie G) *good*[*e*] (goode BCp., god DG, iwis goode C) myn (myne DG) ywys (*om.* C) quod she, 6322.

Fro *then*[*nes*]*forth* (tennes forth B, thennes forth Cp. John's, thennes riȝte forth G) he rideth vp and down, 6924. For similar cases cf. 3009, 6970, 7016, 7034, 7248, 7258, 8080; see also § 91, s.vv. *hennes*, *thennes*, *whennes*.

Lord *whe*[*the*]*r* (whether BCG, whethir D) yet thou thenke (thow thy[n]ke ȝet B, thou thynke ȝit C, thou thinkist yet D, thou ȝitt

thenke G) vpon (on CG) Criseyde, 7098. For *whether wher*, see § 138, 6.

Shal *knot*[*te*]*les* (knotteles C, knottles D) thorugh (thour C, oute D thoroughe G) out (oute G, of D, *om.* C) here (hir DG) herte slyde (glyde C, glide D), 7132.

Hardy testyf (testis B, testy D) strong (-e DG) and (*om.* D) *che-ual*[*e*]*rous* (chiualrus B, chyualrous DG), 7165.

He shal no terme *fynd*[*en*] (fynden BG, fynde C, finde D) out of drede, 7453.

Hym self (seluen B, selue C) lyk (-e BD) a pylgrym (pilgryme D) to degyse (disgise C, disguise D, desgise Cp.), 7940 (not in G). Read *hym seluen*.

The *which*[*e*] (whiche CDG) cote (cote armur D) as telleth Hollius, 8016. Cf. 8187.

And *shuld*[*en*] (sholden BCp. John's, shulden E) al oure herte on heuene caste, 8188 (not in D).

For other examples (some harsh enough) see 1797, 2011, 3323, 4080, 4646, 5018, 5226, 5228, 5248, 6285, 6320, 6383, 6535, 6595, 6930, 7018, 7153, 7171, 7710, 7854, 8100.

Of instances in which this or that MS. (not A) has a verse that might, in its present condition, be scanned (though sometimes very harshly) as of nine syllables, but that is easily corrected by a comparison of MSS., the following will serve as examples. The necessary correction is often very slight, consisting sometimes merely in a single final -e. The list is not meant to be exhaustive. 78 C, 92 B, 93 C, 128 C, 145 BC, 147 CD, 157 B, 292 CD, 338 C, 411 BCD, 454 B, 498 B, 502 C, 623 C, 761 C, 968 BC, 1276 C, 1277 CD, 1453 B, 1473 BD, 1668 C, 1961 C, 2035 C, 2204 CD, 2206 C, 2215 C°, 2401 CD, 2417 B, 2464 C, 2535 CD, 2580 B, 2595 C, 2791 CD, 2826 B, 3239 BD, 3311 CD, 3349 BD, 3836 CD, 4624 C, 5148 C, 5288 C, 5510 C, 5763 C, 6544 C, 6694 C, 6886 C, 6935 C, 6949 C, 7135 C, 7330 C, 7339 C, 7346 C, 7423 C, 7687 B, 7842 C, 7895 C, 7917 C.—Particularly interesting is: Wherfore (-for BD, Where-fore C) my (A John's have *my*, BCDG omit it) lord (-e G) if my (*om.* Cp.) seruyse or I, 430, in which A and John's alone show both *my*'s.

## IV.

A large number of lines absolutely unmetrical as they stand in A, and quite incapable of being read as verses of nine syllables, admit

of the simple cure just mentioned: the addition or insertion of a single letter (or two letters), usually e (final or interior), required or allowed by grammar or usage. Samples are:

This is the *right*[*e*] (ryȝte C) lyf that I am inne, 1936.

For Pandarus (-re D) and *sought*[*en*] (soughten BGCp. John's, souȝte C, soghtyn D) hym ful faste, 2022.

And don (do on CG, do † doun D) thyn hod (-e B) thi nedes *sped*[*de*] (spedde BCE) be, 2039. Cp. apparently has *sped*. On the plural participle *spedde*, see § 68.

Wolde on (vp on CD) the *best*[*e*] (beste BCCp.) sounded (sowned BGCp., sounede C, sownyd D) ioly (*om.* G) harpe (hare † B), 2116. Read *the beste sowned* (§ 87); the *best ysowned* would also be possible.

For whi men seyth *impression*[*e*]s (impressyons B, impressiou[n]s C) lyghte, 2323.

Thow shalt gon ouer (to D) nyght and that (*om.* G) *b*[*e*]*lyue* (belyue C, bylyve E, as blyve D Harl. 2392), 2598. On *belyue*, *blyue*, see § 138, 1.

Of *thing*[*es*] (thynges BCp., thingis D, thinges G John's) which that folk (-es John's) on wondren (wondre on John's) so, 2874.

Herynge here come and *short*[*e*] (schorte C, shorte Cp., for John's) for to syke, 2900.

Nyl I nought swere although he *lay*[*e*] softe, 3284. No -*e* in *laye* in ABCDG; no note in Austin.

Was euere *ylik*[*e*] (yhold B, ilik C, ylyk D, alike G) prest and dyligent, 3327.

And they that *lay*[*en*] (layen BCp., leye C, lyen D, leyn G) at the dore withoute, 3587.

But lord so she wax *sodeynlych*[*e*] (-lyche B, -li C, -ly G, sodenly D) red, 3798.

Haue ye no care hym *lyst*[*e*] (list BG, liste C, lest D) not to slepe, 3908.

Hadde of hym take here *thought*[*e*] (thouȝte C) tho no fere, 3986.

Whan she his trowthe and clene *entent*[*e*] (entente B, entent clene D) wyste, 4071.

And syn (sithe C, sythe D) thow list myn *argument*[*e*]ȝ (-ment CG, -mentes D) blame (to blame BCDG John's), 5189. Perhaps we should read *argumentȝ* and *to blame*; but *argumentes* is an unobjectionable form (§ 39, I).

But shortly lest this tales *soth*[*e*] (sothe BCDG) were, 5333.

She herd hem ryght as though she *then*[*ne*]*s* (tennes B, thense D, thennes GCp. John's) were, 5357 (Sche herde riȝt nouȝt thow sche there were C). (Cf. 6766, 6852.)

Cryseyde ful of sorwful (sorweful C, sorwefuH D, sorowfuH G, sorowful John's) pite (piete Cp.), 5393. Read either *sorweful* or *pïte*.

Or elles thinges that *purucy*[*e*]*d* (-ueied BJohn's, -ueid D, -veide G, -ueyed Cp.) be, 5718 (C cut out).

And thanne (than BD, that G) at (att D, atte G) *erst*[*e*] (erste BDCp.) shal we ben (best D) so (*om.* D) fayn, 5983. (See §§ 51, *n.* 2, 143.)

Than (Thanne B, There C, Then G) shal (shalle G) no mete or (ne C) *drynk*[*e*] (drynke G) come (com B) in me, 5437.

For which Pandare (-dar DG) *nyght*[*e*] (myȝte CG) not restreyne, 5534.

The gold [*y*]*tressed* Phebus heighe on lofte, 6371 (cut out in C). The correct reading must be *the gold ytressed Phebus*, but the MSS. do not have it: *goldtressed* is in ABCp. John's (separation in B), *gold tressid* in Phillips 8252 Harl. 2392, *gold tresses* in Selden B 24; D has the diverting lection *The Auricomus tressed Phebus*, due, of course, to the intrusion of a gloss (Harl. 2392 has the gloss *auricomus* over the reading *gold tressid*, and *sol* over *phebus*); in the readings of E (*goldetressed*), Durham (*golde tressed*), and G (*golde dressed*), perhaps the lost *y-* may be discerned.

Whan Diomede on *hors*[*e*] (horse CD) gan hym dresse, 6400.

But syn (sithen G) of *fyn*[*e*] (fyne BD, *om.* G) force I (it † G) mot aryse, 6784.

Whan he was there (ther BD) as (that C) no (*om.* BG) wight (man CD, nought B, nouȝte G) *myght*[*e*] (myght hym BJohn's, myȝt hym C, might him D, myȝte hym G) here, 6827. Probably (with Furnivall) we should supply *hym* in A.

The lettres ek that she of *old*[*e*] (olde BDG) tyme, 6833. C stops the line at *sche*, but the corrector has added *oftyn tyme*.

Intendestow that we shul here (her D) *b*[*i*]*leue* (beleue CD Harl. 2392. bileue G), 6841.

With *soft*[*e*] (softe CG, lofte † D) voys he of his lady dere, 6999.

Conseyued hath myn hertes *pi*[*e*]*te*, 7961 (pete C, pietee Cp.). (Not in G.)

To com ayen which (-e C) yet (*om.* C) [*ne*] (ne BCp. John's) may not be, 7964. C stops the verse with *not*, and the corrector adds *ȝet be*.

Other examples may be seen in 1351, 1838, 2064, 2440, 2469, 2488, 2525, 2667, 2874, 3169, 3194, 3351, 3456, 4089, 4183, 4415, 4451,

4476, 4505, 4709, 4737, 5064, 5188, 5298, 5489, 5560, 5813, 6194. 6543, 6715, 6854, 7011, 7080, 7172, 7175, 7231, 7272, 7308, 7539, 7543, 7566, 7578, 7619, 7726, 7791, 7849, 7884, 8087, 8093.

On the whole matter of "nine-syllable verses," see the excellent monograph of M. Freudenberger, *Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts in Chaucers heroischem Verse, Erlanger Beiträge*, 1889.

# ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

p. 2, s.v. *hosbónde.* On the shortening of *o* in A.S. *-bónda* (*husbonda, -banda*, Chron. 1048), see Manly, p. 2.

p. 2, s.v. *stere.* The causes of the M.E. confusion of form between A.S. *stéora* 'gubernator,' and *stéor* 'gubernaculum,' are doubtless more or less complex; but one of them is perhaps the tendency (which has come so far in Modern English) to give to the names of implements, etc., the form of *nomina agentis* (cf. *boiler, cultivator, governor, generator, pipe-cleaner, mower*, etc., etc.; in America one even hears a *dining-car* occasionally spoken of as a *diner*). Cf. also Manly, p. 3.

p. 3, s.v. *tyme.* On *somtyme, oftę tyme*, cf. § 133.

p. 3, s.v. *wele.* The Laȝamon forms are accidentally omitted (L.$^{ab}$ wele, L.$^{a}$ wela, weolla, wella, weole, wæl).

p. 4, s.v. *wrecche.* For *L. wreche* read *L$^{a}$. wræcche, etc.*

p. 5, s.v. *blase.* For *blése* read *blæse.*

p. 6, s.v. *myte.* On this word see Skeat, *Trans. Philol. Soc.* for 1888-90, p. 305. I see no evidence that the M. L. G. word ever replaced the A.S. *mîte* in English. The most that can be said is that it influenced its meaning.

p. 8, *wodebynde* was put here with considerable hesitation. Both A.S. *wudubind, wudebind*, and *wudebinde* occur, apparently as nominatives, in glosses (see Wrt.-W., 137/5, 418/25, 556/39).

p. 8, *wyse.* Cf. *gyse*, § 26.

p. 9, I feel great doubt whether *feldefare* and *felofor* have anything to do with each other.

p. 10, s.v. *ache.* Insert the A.S. form *æce.*

p. 10, s.v. *sone.* See this article in *Studies and Notes in Philology and Literature, published under the Direction of the Modern Language Departments of Harvard University*, II, 1 ff. (on *sum*, see p. 7).

p. 14, s.v. *loue.* As further instances of *loue*, cf. 16, 46, 234, 677, 1762, 3004, 3359, 3622, 3851 ‡ A$^{c}$, 4158, 4830, 5084, 5761, 6530, 7443 (old-style figures indicate that the cæsura follows *loue*).

p. 15, s.v. *shame.* Insert *L$^{a}$. scome, sreome, sraame; L$^{b}$. same, seame.*

p. 17, s.v. *chyste.* Klæber, *Das Bild bei Chaucer*, 1893, p. 392, has an ingenious but futile note in this passage.

p. 18, s.v. *help*, note But cf. "Sir, thine help now on hast!" *Arthour and Merlin*, ed. Kölbing, 1736, "O now thyn help thy socour and releef," Hoccleve, *Male Regle*, 55, *Minor Poems*, ed. Furnivall, p. 27; with which may be compared such phrases as *thin ore!*

p. 22. On *routhe, slouthe, trouthe*, etc., see Zupitza, *Anzeiger f. d. Alterthum*, II, 17, 18.

p. 31, s.v. *benche*. Insert *L. dat. benche*.

p. 31, s.v. *bok*. Insert *L. boc*.

p. 31, s.v. *forward*. Insert *L. forward, forewarde*, etc.

p. 34, s.v. *game*, Insert *L*$^{b}$. before *game*.

p. 36, § 14, l. 6. *Serfu* is of course neuter, as is indicated below, *s.v.*

p. 38, § 14, *n.* 1. The explanation of this *-e* in neuters with short stem-syllable as derived from *-u* of the plural is Zupitza's (*Anzeiger f. d. Alterthum*, II, 11).

p. 41, s.v. *fyre*. On the form *fere* see Skeat, *On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect* (Chaucer Soc. *Essays*).

p. 47, § 15. For *myte*, see § 3, p. 6 (cf. *Additions and Corrections*).

p. 48, s.v. *felawe*. Add *félawe* (before cæsura), 696 (*felow* B, *felaw* D).

p. 48, *ferde*. The comparison with M.H.G. *gevêrde* seems to have little value. The history of the English word is very obscure, and its form doubtful (cf. p. 392).

p. 51, § 16. For *kne*, see pl. *knes, knëes* (*knowes*), § 39, V., p. 105, and the phrase *on knowe*, § 14, p. 42.

p. 52, l. 1, *first word*. For *bodiy* read *body*.

p. 52, § 18. In our uncertainty as to the etymology of A.S. *cræft*, it would perhaps have been better to put this word among the *o*-stems.

p. 52, § 18. Among the neut. *o*- stems insert *soot*.

p. 60, § 18. Insert,—soot (A. S. sót, *n.*), 4036 f BCp. John's (sote C1), sot A) (: in hire foot, in his fote A, in his foote D). The correct reading is *sucre be or soot*. A took *soot* for the adj. (see § 46, p. 113) and wrote *sour* for *sucre*.

p. 63, § 19, s.v. *cros*. On this word, see now the *New English Dictionary*.

p. 70, § 21. Insert,—thou lantèrne, 6906 (lantèrn, C, [thou] lantèrne D).

p. 71, s.v. *nece*. Add: good[ë] nece ‖ to, 1468 (goodë nece C, good[ë] nece D).

p. 73, § 21. Add: sclaue, 3233 ‡ B (*read* knaue).

p. 79, s.v. *heirdesse*. I transcribe a passage from advance sheets of Professor Skeat's essay *On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect*, p. 662: "We . . . also find the riming words *wirdes, hirdes*, in *Troil.* iii. 617, which would rime in any dialect; and I draw special attention to this passage, because the latter word is wrongly explained in *Morris*, and omitted in *Stratmann*, though it was solved by Tyrwhitt in the last century. The passage is:—

> 'But O, Fortune, executrice of wirdes,
> O influences of thise hevenes hye!
> Soth is that, under god, ye ben our hirdes,
> Though to us bestes been the causes wrye.'

The Campsall MS. writes *wyerdes, hyerdes;* but all that we are concerned with are the A.S. forms. *Wirdes* is the pl. of *wyrd*, fate; but *hirdes* is not a plural at all. It is the feminine of *hirde*, A.S. *hyrde*, a shepherd. The word *ye* is merely the polite substitute for *thou*:

and the person addressed is the goddess Fortune, who is here said to be our shepherdess. Morris's explanation of 'guardians' is clearly to be rejected. It may seem strange that Chaucer should adopt *-es* as a feminine suffix instead of the more usual *-esse*, but the context clearly demands it; and we thus have a bright light thrown upon l. 15 of the *Envoy to Scogan*, where the form *goddes* is rimed with *forbode is*. The comparison of these two passages clears up both of them." Professor Skeat's explanation of this passage from the *Troilus* (3459 ff.) seems inadmissible; certainly it is not clearly demanded by the context. *Hirdes* = *shepherds* or *herdsmen* (*bestes* in the next verse carries out the figure); the *influences of the stars* are apostrophized as well as *Fortune*, whence the plural, which may refer either (*a*) to *Fortune* and *influences*, or (*b*) to *influences* alone. The latter interpretation is perhaps better. The influences of the stars are the shepherds or herdsmen, who, under God, control us mortals, who, like the beasts of the field, cannot perceive the causes of what the shepherds force us to do.—I have never been able to accept Professor Skeat's interpretation of *goddes* as = *goddesse* (*Minor Poems*, p. 389) in *Envoy to Scogan*, 15. All the seven gods ("the brighte goddes sevene," 3) may be regarded as feeling the blasphemy against one of their number, or, if this will not do, *this goddes* may perhaps refer to Cupid and Venus. It is unnecessary to remark, in connection with the former and preferable of these two explanations, that *this* (pl.) is often used in Chaucer with little difference of meaning from that of the definite article (cf. O. Fr. *ces*).[1]

p. 86, § 31, s.v. *contrarye*. Add: cf. also 418, 637, 615 (*pl.* see p. 103), and cf. the adj. (§ 51, p. 120); cf. also § 142.

p. 87, § 31, *n.* at end. Add: Cf. 6684 (§§ 131, 139, 145, V.).

p. 89, § 33, s.v. *soueraynté*. The correct form for this line (3013) seems to be: *sȯuereȳnëtè* (see §§ 126, 137).

p. 89, § 33, n. 1. Add: For *pèrde* (i.) (ii.) cf. 1040, 1451, 2493, 2608.

p. 89, § 33, n. 2. On *benedicite* cf. § 138, 8.

p. 90, l. 4. For nouns in *-ion*, *-ioun*, see § 142.

p. 92, s.v. *crois*. See now the *New English Dictionary*, s.v. *cross*.

p. 93, § 34, s.v. *pes*. For *pes* interjectionally used cf. 753: *pes and cry no more* (pees BD, lyę ‡ stylle and cryę no more C).

p. 97, § 35, l. 3. For *past*, read *part*.

p. 98, § 35, I., *note*. Cf. "As thou art a man of life" (= *a lives man*), *Little Musgrave and Lady Barnard*, A, st. 10, Child, *Ballads*, II, 244.

p. 113, s.v. *merye*. On the forms of this word in Chaucer, see Skeat, *On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect*, p. 661.

p. 114. As to *lyte* in the adjectival use, cf. Manly, in the Harvard *Studies and Notes in Philology*, II, 50.

[1] I take this opportunity to remark that Mr. Skeat's suggestion that *olde grisel*, Scogan, 35 = *old gray horse*, is supported not only by Gower, *Conf. Am.*, viii. ed. Pauli, III, 356 ("Olde grisel is no fole"), but by *bonny grissell* = *bony gray horse* in the ballad of *Johnie Armstrong*, B, st. 20, Child, III, 369. Cf. "Mine hed is hore and al for-fare I-hewid as a grei mare," *Old Age*, st. 6, Furnivall, *Old Engl. Poems*, Philol. Soc., 1862, p. 119.

p. 120, § 51, s.v. *contraire.* Cf. §§ 31 (p. 86), 38, VII. (p. 103), and 142.

p. 122, § 52, s.v. *souereyne.* Add : But,—thilkë sòueyren (*dissyl.*) pureyaunce, 5732 (sòuereyn D); cf. §§ 63, 137.

p. 122, § 52, n. 3, *l. penult.* See Metrical Chapter, § 142.

p. 123, l. 13. Add (for 1766) : seuenethe A.

p. 127, § 54, n. 2. As to *atte*, cf. § 143, where it is suggested that in *firstë rerta* the demonstrative *the* has been swallowed up by the preceding *that* (conjunction). The quotation from *Rom. Rose*, 13117-21, II, 48, should probably be replaced by "Virtutem primam esse puta compescere linguam," *Distichа Catonis*, i, 3; cf. Kittredge, *Modern Language Notes*, VIII, 465.

p. 138, § 67. Add, as a noté : The adj. pl. *ynowe* (with elided *e*) occurs in 3141 (inow B, ynow D), 4769 (inowe B, ynow D), 5523 (inoughe B, inow C, ynow D); see the adj. sing. *there is art ynow* ‖ *for*, 5928 (vnough B, inow CD), cf. 7357 C. As a subst. (i.) bef. consonants, *ynough*, 912 (inough B, inow C, ynow D), *ynowh*, 6177 (inough(e) B, inow C, inough D); (ii.) before vowels, *ynough*, 881 (inow C, ynow D), *ynow*, 5904 (inowgh B, inow CD).

p. 151. In *Wherof* artow (*ertow B, art(e) thou D*) *quod Pandare* (*-dar D*) *thau amayed*, 5303 (*Whereto quod pandarus art thou thus amayed* C; no note in Austin), the ictus falls on *-ow* in *artow*. In

> Thenk ek how Parys hath that is thy brother
> A loue and whi shaltow not haue a nother,

5270-1 (shaltow(e) B, schuldist ‡ not han another C, shulde nat † I haue a nother D; no note in Austin), *-ow* in *shaltow* certainly has both the ictus and the sense-accent. Perhaps we should read *thow* in both these instances.

p. 168, § 79, s.v. *oon.* In : And for a soth they tellen .xx. lyes, 6069, *a* apparently = *one*.

p. 176, § 82, s.v. *hote.* Cf. *hadde ich* (*I* CD) *it so hoote*, 5245 f B Cp. D (for hote A, so hote C), where *so hoote* is surely the correct reading (no note as to John's).

p. 189, § 85, at end, n. 5. The Northern use of *til* for *to* (of space or direction) is occasionally found : see 128 B, 506 C, 1273 C, 1999 AB, 2271 C, 2431 C (till(e) B), 2438 AB, 4423 AB, 4781 C; on-tyl, 351 C (vn-til B, vn-to AD). [Var. BC tyl.] In all these cases *til* stands before a vowel or weak *h*. In 2215 f D, *seyd hym till* (: *stonde still*) is a very bad reading. For *through*, etc., see p. 389 (and *Additions*).

p. 221, l. 1. See also § 111, III., n. 1, p. 266.

p. 242, § 100, note. On *thraste, thriste, threste*, cf. Skeat, *On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect*, pp. 668-9.

p. 246, second line of § 102. For *second*, read *third*.

p. 248, § 103. It is unlikely that, in *Til in a temple he* fonde *hym al allone*, 5609 (fond AC, fonde BD, fownde John's; ABCD om *al*, Cp. John's have it), *fonde* is to be referred to W.S. weak preterite *fonde*, though John's has the spelling *fownde*.

p. 303, l. 14. For *V.* read *IV.*

p. 389, § 143, at end, n. 5. For *thourgh, thurgh, thorugh*, monosyllabic, cf. 998, 1853, 2402, 2417, 2421, 2425, 2858, 2926, 3089, 3140, 3443, 3629, 4060, 4130 4455, 4566, 4656, 4680, 4829, 7922, 7923, etc.

[Advance-sheets of Professor Skeat's paper *On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect* reached me in time to be of assistance in preparing the *Additions and Corrections.* Professor Skeat's edition of the *Troilus*, however, did not appear in time for me to use it in any part of these *Observations.* This note is added at the last moment, in the proof, to prevent possible misapprehensions.

G. L. K.]

Richard Clay & Sons, Limited,
London & Bungay.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 26 June, 2018

Damaged books
physically verified by
B.V.P & M.C.G.
26/06/2000
Lot No:- 9